A

Aalto, (Hugo) **Alvar** (Henrick) (1898–1976). Finnish architect and designer. He set up practice in 1923 in central Finland, moving to Turku in 1927, then to Helsinki in 1933, collaborating with his wife **Aino Marsio** (1894–1949). He gained a national reputation with the Viipuri Municipal Library (1930–35), destroyed in World War II, and an international one with his Finnish pavilions at the World's Fairs at Paris (1937) and New York (1939–40). He made imaginative use of wood with brickwork, glass, copper and cement and also developed functional plywood furniture, mass-produced in his own factory. His range of commissions, including the Maison Carré in Paris, Baker House in Cambridge, Mass., and the Finlandia Concert Hall, Helsinki, was extensive: factories, museums, churches, theatres, department stores, private houses and public housing. He was professor of architecture at the Massachusetts Institute of Technology 1945–49.

Aaron (c.14th–13th centuries BCE). Hebrew High Priest. In the Bible story, with his brother *Moses, he led the Israelites from Egypt to Canaan (Palestine) and became their first high priest, but while Moses was receiving the Ten Commandments on Mount Sinai he made a golden calf for the people to worship (Exodus xxiii).

Abbado, Claudio (1933–2014). Italian conductor, born in Milan. He was principal conductor of La Scala, Milan 1971–86, the London Symphony Orchestra 1979–88, the Vienna State Opera 1986–91 and succeeded von *Karajan at the Berlin Philharmonic Orchestra 1990–2002. He won many awards for his recordings.

Abbas (566–653). Arab merchant. Uncle of *Muhammad, and a Hashemite member of the Quraysh clan in Mecca, he was ancestor of the Abbasid dynasty which overthrew the *Umayyads and held the caliphate 750–1258 until destroyed by the Mongols.

Abbās I (the Great) (1571–1629). Shah of Persia 1587–1629. Fifth ruler of the Safavid dynasty, son of Shah Mohammad Khodabanda, he inherited a weak and divided empire, but proved to be decisive, effective and brutal. He established Esfahan as his capital, commissioned magnificent buildings, and extended his rule into Mesopotamia, the Caucasus and eastern Anatolia.

Abbas II (Abbas Hilmi Pasha) (1874–1944). Ottoman khedive of Egypt 1892–1914. He supported the nationalist and Pan-Islamic cause and clashed with the British de facto rulers *Cromer and *Kitchener. When the Ottoman Empire entered World War I in support of Germany and Austria-Hungary he was deposed and succeeded by his uncle Hussein Kamil (brother of *Fuad I) who took the title of sultan. Exiled to Switzerland, he died in Geneva.

Abbas, Ferhat (1899–1985). Algerian politician. Trained as a pharmacist, he founded the Algerian Popular Union in 1938 and in 1943 sought political concessions from the Allied authorities who rejected his moderate demands and jailed him. In 1956, in Cairo, he became leader of the Front de Liberation Nationale (FLN) and was first president of the provisional government of the Algerian Republic 1958–63 until displaced by his rival Ahmed *Ben Bella and imprisoned 1963–64.

Abbas, Mahmoud (also known as Abu Mazen). (1935–). Palestinian politician, born in Safan. Educated in Damascus, Cairo, and Moscow, he became active in the Fatah movement. Premier 2003, he succeeded Yasser *Arafat as President of the Palestine Liberation Organisation (PLO) 2004– and of the Palestine Authority 2005– . The last presidential election was held in January 2005.

Abbasids *see* **Abbas**

Abbott, Tony (Anthony John) (1957–). Australian Liberal politician, born in London. Son of expatriate Australians who returned home in 1960, he was educated at Sydney University and won a Rhodes Scholarship to Oxford in 1981, graduating MA in politics and philosophy. He was active in sport and boxing, returned to study for the priesthood (1984–87) but turned to journalism instead. Deeply influenced at first by B. A. *Santamaria, he became active in the monarchist campaign to oppose Australia becoming a republic. Member of the House of Representatives 1994–2019, he served in the *Howard Government as Minister for Employment Services 1998–2001, for Employment and Workplace Relations 2001–03 and for Health and Ageing 2003–07. Leader of the Opposition 2009–13, he was an unrelenting critic of *Rudd and *Gillard, a climate-change sceptic but sympathetic to Indigenous Australians. In the September 2013 election the Liberal-National Party Coalition won a commanding victory and he became Prime Minister 2013–15. His pugilistic style, highly effective in opposition, proved counter-productive in government, and he was defeated by Malcolm *Turnbull in a party room ballot in September 2015. He campaigned passionately against recognition of same-sex marriage and against effective action to combat climate change and played a major role in forcing Turnbull from the prime ministership (August 2018).

Abboud, (El-Ferik) **Ibrahim** (1900–1983). Sudanese soldier and political leader. His military service was mostly spent with the Sudan Defence Force, serving with the Allies in World War II. He became Commander-in-Chief of the army of independent

Sudan in 1956 and in November 1958 led a *coup d'état* to end anarchy, becoming both President and Prime Minister 1958–64. However, internal divisions in Sudan between the Muslim north and the non-Muslim south led to outbreaks of violence and Abboud was forced from power and retreated to England.

Abd al-Raḥmān I (Abd al-Raḥmān ibn Mu'awiya ibn Hishām ibn Abd al-Malik ibn Marwan) (c.730–788) Arab ruler in Spain (al-Andalus): Emir of Córdoba 756–88. Born in Damascus, he was a member of the *Umayyad dynasty which was overthrown and slaughtered by the Abbasids in 750. He escaped to Islamic Iberia, built up alliances, defeated Abbasid fiefdoms and established his rule as Emir of Córdoba (756). There was religious tolerance for monotheistic religions and he built alliances against *Charlemagne, the Abbasids and the Berbers. In 785 he began the great mosque (*Mezquita*) in Córdoba, extended by his son **Hisham I**, which became a World Heritage site in 1984.

Abd al-Raḥmān III (Abd al-Raḥmān ibn Muḥammad ibn 'Abd Allāh ibn Muḥammad ibn 'Abd al-Raḥmān ibn al-Ḥakam al-Rabdī ibn Hishām ibn 'Abd al-Raḥmān al-Dākhil) (c.891–961). Arab ruler in Spain (al-Andalus): first Caliph of Córdoba 929–61. Born in Córdoba, a seventh-generation descendent of *Abd al-Raḥmān I, he succeeded his grandfather as Emir of Cordoba 912–29. His mother was a Christian Frankish slave. The greatest ruler of the *Umayyad dynasty, he fought against the Fatimid (Muslim) dynasty and the Christian rulers of Leon and Navarre, capturing Seville (913) and Toledo (933). He promoted toleration for Christians and Jews and his reign was the golden age of Andalusian civilisation in architecture, the arts, education and science. From 936 he built the great palace Medinat al-Zahra, near Córdoba, a World Heritage site since 2018.

Abd el-Krim, Mohammed (1882–1963). Moroccan nationalist leader. A Berber, he was a teacher, editor and judge who organised the first liberation movement in North Africa against French and Spanish rule. He proclaimed the Republic of the Rif in 1921 and was its president until 1926 when his forces were defeated by a large Franco-Spanish army commanded by Marshal *Pétain. Exiled to the island of Reunion 1926–47, he went to Egypt to head the Maghrib Bureau and died in Cairo. He was a major influence not only on African nationalists but also on *Ho Chi Minh.

Furneaux, R., *Abdel Krim: Emir of the Rif*. 1967.

Abdulaziz Ibn Sa'ud (Abdulaziz ibn Abdul Rahman ibn Faisal Al Sa'ud, known in the West as Ibn Sa'ud) (1875–1953). King of Nejd and Hejaz 1926–32, and Saudi Arabia 1932–53. Born in Riyadh, son of the Emir of Nejd, his family was overthrown and exiled in 1890. In 1902, he organised a force that seized Riyadh and made it the base for a revival of the Wahabis, a puritanical Muslim sect dating from the 18th century. By 1906, he had forced the Ottomans out of the Nejd and expanded his emirate to the east coast of Arabia by 1912. During World War I, he declined to join the Arab revolt organised by T. E. *Lawrence but used the opportunity to throw off Turkish suzerainty and greatly expanded his territories. Recognised from 1921 as the sultan of Nejd, he came into conflict with *Hussein, King of Hejaz, whom he dethroned and whose kingdom he annexed (1926), thus acquiring Mecca, with the prestige and wealth attached to its possession; in 1932 he assumed the title King of Saudi Arabia. The discovery of oil (1938) and the lucrative concession to the Americans provided him with great wealth, which he used personally or by distributing to the tribal sheiks, mainly his relatives. The British flattered him with honours (GCB, GCIE, KCSI, KBE) but from 1947 his principal alliance was with the US, although he shrewdly avoided international alignment in the Cold War or the Middle East. A great Arab warrior of the traditional type, he had 22 wives and about 100 children, but thought it was 'permissible' for females to read.

Howarth, D. A., *The Desert King*. 1964; Darlow, M. and Bray, B., *Ibn Saud*. 2010.

Abdulhamid II (1842–1918). Ottoman sultan and caliph 1876–1909. Son of Abdulmecid I (1823–1861), he was brought to power after the mental collapse of his brother Murad V (1840–1904) and appeared at first to be sympathetic to reform. He ruled as an absolute monarch from 1878. He lost Romania, Bulgaria and parts of Serbia and Bosnia after the Russo-Turkish War (1877–78), was known as 'the Red' or 'the Damned' in Europe after the massacre of 200,000 Armenians (1894–95) and went to war with Greece (1896–97) over Cyprus. He used Germans to train his army and encouraged the completion of the Berlin to Baghdad railway. He encouraged Pan-Islamism as a counterbalance to Western influences and became obsessed with the fear of assassination. Deposed by the Young Turks, he was succeeded by his brother *Mehmed V and held as a prisoner in Istanbul until his death.

Abdullah I (Abdullah bin al-Hussein) (1882–1951). King of Jordan 1949–51, formerly Emir 1921–46 and King 1946–49 of Transjordan. Born in Mecca, son of *Hussein, later King of the Hejaz, with the rest of his Hashemite family he actively supported Britain in World War I in bringing down the Ottoman Empire. Designated as king of the newly created Iraq in 1920, he declined the throne; it was taken up by his brother *Faisal, who had been rejected in Syria. Abdullah took control of the Emirate of Transjordan instead, working closely with the British in Palestine, and showing some willingness to co-operate with Jewish settlement. The Hashemite Kingdom of Transjordan became fully independent in 1946 and was renamed as Jordan in 1949. On the creation of Israel (1948) and the partitioning of Palestine,

Abdullah annexed the West Bank for Jordan and was assassinated by a Palestinian nationalist. His great-grandson **Abdullah II** (1962–) succeeded *Hussein as king in 1999.

Abdul Rahman Putra, Tunku (1903–1990). Malayan prince (Tunku) and politician. Educated at Cambridge University, he was called to the bar, and joined the public prosecutor's department of his state of Kedah in 1949. In 1952 he was nominated to the federal executive and legislative councils, became Chief Minister (1955) and then first Prime Minister 1957–70 of the Malayan Federation (renamed Malaysia in 1963). Signapore was pushed out of the federation in 1964 and Sabah (British North Borneo) and Sarawak added. The UK awarded him a CH (1961) and Australia an AC (1987).

Abe Shinzō (1954–2022). Japanese politician, born in Nagato. Member of a political dynasty and grandson of *Kishi Nobusuku, he studied at Seikei University and in California. He worked for the steel industry, then as an organiser for the Liberal Democratic Party (LDP). Member of the House of Representatives 1993–2020, President of the LDP 2006–07, 2012–20; and Prime Minister 2006–07, 2012–20 (the first since *Yoshida to hold non-consecutive terms). In 2013 the LDP won a majority in the upper house as well. Abe was an economic interventionist and right-wing nationalist who argued a revisionist position about Japan's role in World War II. His 'apology' for wartime excesses, given on the 70th anniversary of the Japanese surrender (August 2015) was regarded as grossly inadequate by China and the Republic of Korea. He was assassinated in Nara.

Abelard, Pierre [Peter in English usage] (1079–1142). French philosopher and theologian. Of a noble Breton family, he became a lecturer in Paris. He seduced and married a 17-year-old pupil, *Héloïse, whose uncle, Fulbert, canon of Notre Dame, eventually had him castrated. She became a nun and he a monk. Later his retreat at Nogent-sur-Seine, known as Le Paraclet, was visited by scores of disciples. Convicted of heresy, he was eventually absolved by the pope. His own account of his life and his correspondence with Héloïse have perpetuated one of the most famous love stories of the world. In 1817 the two were laid together in one tomb in the Père Lachaise cemetery in Paris. His contribution to the philosophical problem of universals was that a general word (e.g. 'pink') does not have meaning by standing for a single quality (e.g. pinkness) that somehow exists, but rather by being tied to a mental concept we acquire by noticing similarities between different things (e.g. pink ones). He extolled the use of reason in religion while giving a place to faith. One of his best known works is *Sic et non* (*Yes and No*), which revealed the contradictions in the works of the early Christian Fathers.

Gibson, E., *Héloïse and Abelard*. 1953.

Abercrombie, Sir (Leslie) **Patrick** (1879–1957). British town planner. He first practised as an architect in Manchester and was professor of civil design at Liverpool 1915–35. During these years, plans for preserving Stratford-on-Avon and other English towns made him well known. He was professor of town planning at University College, London 1935–46. The 'Greater London Plan' 1943 was his major achievement.

Abercromby, Sir Ralph (1734–1801). Scottish soldier. After being trained for the law he was commissioned in the 3rd Dragoon Guards in 1756, and fought with distinction in the Seven Years War and the French wars at the close of the century. He was knighted in 1795 and, as leader of the West Indies campaign which immediately followed, received fresh acclaim. While Commander-in-Chief of British forces in the Mediterranean he made (June 1801) a successful choice of landing at Aboukir Bay, Alexandria. The French counter-attack was repulsed but Abercromby died of wounds.

Aberdeen, 4th Earl of, George Hamilton-Gordon (1784–1860). Scottish Peelite-Whig politician, born in Edinburgh. His family owned large estates, his parents died early and he succeeded his grandfather as earl in 1801. Educated at Harrow and Cambridge, he had a passion for the classics and archaeology. Originally a diplomat and a successful negotiator, as a youthful Ambassador to Vienna 1813–14 he organised the final coalition against *Napoléon and felt haunted by war. Originally a Tory, he was Foreign Secretary 1828–30 and again under *Peel 1841–46. He broke with the Conservatives over the Corn Laws and became leader of the Peelite faction in 1850. Prime Minister 1852–55, he led a coalition between the Whigs and his own minority group. He cultivated good relations with the United States. He took Britain, reluctantly, into the Crimean War 1853–56 and military failure, coupled with internal tensions between *Palmerston and Russell, enfeebled his government and he was happy to resign. *Gladstone regarded him as 'lovable', a sentiment not widely shared: *Disraeli detested him.

Aberhart, William (1878–1943). Canadian politician. Originally a clergyman, then a schoolteacher, he became Premier of Alberta 1935–43 and attempted to implement in Canada the Social Credit policies of Major C. H. *Douglas. His scope of action was limited by the overriding authority of the Federal Government.

Abraham (Abram) (c.2100–2000 BCE). Hebrew patriarch, born in Ur of the Chaldees (Mesopotamia). According to the biblical account (Genesis xi:26ff), by his wife Sarah (Sarai) he was ancestor of the Israelites, through *Isaac. The Qu'ran (Koran) claims him as progenitor of the Arabs by his wife Hagar (through his son Ishmael: *Muhammad was a descendant). Genesis describes how Abraham, at

the call of God, migrated with Sarah and his whole household to Canaan (Palestine). His faith was tested when God commanded him to sacrifice his son Isaac. Only at the last moment, he was told to substitute a ram. According to tradition, Abraham was buried in Hebron.

Abu-Bakr (Abdullah ibn Abi Quhaafah) (c.573–634). First caliph of Islam 632–34. Born to a merchant tribe in Mecca, he became the first male convert to Islam and *Muhammad's chief advisor in Medina (622–32). His daughter A'ishah (Ayesha) became one of Muhammad's wives. On his son-in-law's death he assumed leadership of Islam as *khalifa* ('deputy or successor'). His claim was disputed by Muhammad's son-in-law *Ali, whose followers became known as Shi'ites. He was succeeded as caliph by *Umar. The first four caliphs, known as 'Rashidun' ('rightly guided'), were chosen by consensus among the imams.

Achebe, Chinua (1930–2013). Nigerian novelist, poet and critic. His *Things Fall Apart* (1958) was the biggest selling novel by an African writer: 10 million copies in 50 languages. He won the Man Booker Prize in 2007.

Acheson, Dean Gooderham (1893–1971). American lawyer, born in Connecticut. Educated at Yale and Harvard, he was a law clerk to Justice *Brandeis and became an attorney in 1921. Undersecretary of the US Treasury 1933, he resigned over a matter of principle, worked as an international lawyer in Washington, then went to the State Department as Assistant Secretary 1941–45 and Undersecretary 1945–47. He formulated the *Truman Doctrine (1947), in which US aid was offered to countries under threat from the USSR. He was a major architect of the *Marshall Plan (1947) which provided support for the rebuilding of Western Europe. As Truman's Secretary of State 1949–53, despite his hard line in the Cold War in organising NATO (1949), he was attacked as a Communist sympathiser after *Mao's victory in China and the onset of the Korean War. Memoirs of his years at the State Department, *Present at the Creation* (1970), won the Pulitzer Prize for history.

Brinkley, D., *Dean Acheson: The Cold War Years 1953–71*. 1993.

Acton, John Emerich Edward Dalberg Acton, 1st Baron (1834–1902). English historian, born in Naples. Grandson of a former Prime Minister of the Kingdom of Naples, he was brought up in the household of the 2nd Earl Granville, who married his widowed mother. Excluded from Cambridge University as a Catholic, he studied in Munich with von *Ranke, mastered historical analysis and travelled extensively. A Liberal MP 1859–66, he supported *Gladstone, who made him a peer in 1869. He strongly opposed *Pius IX's proclamation of the dogma of papal infallibility (1870). *Rosebery appointed him Regius Professor of Modern History at Cambridge 1895–1902, where he planned the original *Cambridge Modern History*. Fluent in several languages, he had a library of 60,000 volumes, now held at Cambridge. He published little but had a profound influence on his contemporaries. He coined the maxim (1887): 'Power tends to corrupt and absolute power corrupts absolutely.'

Mathew, D., *Lord Acton and His Times*. 1968; Mathew, D., *Acton: The Formative Years*. 1972; Chadwick, O., *Acton and History.* 2002.

Adam, Adolphe Charles (1803–1856). French composer. A professor at the Paris Conservatoire from 1848, his best known work is the ballet *Giselle* (1841), but he also wrote popular operas, now forgotten, for the Opera-Comique.

Adam, Robert (1728–1792). Scottish architect, born in Kirkcaldy. Brought up on the family estate in Kinross-shire, in 1754 he was sent by his father (himself an architect of distinction in the Palladian tradition) to Italy, where, without neglecting the Renaissance masters, he made a special study of the antiquities of Rome, Pompeii and Herculaneum. Across the Adriatic the ruins of *Diocletian's palace at Spalato (Split), much more complete than they are today, provided a theme for a book, fully illustrated by his own drawings; published in 1764. In 1760 he set up in practice in London with his younger brother **James Adam** (1730–1794) who acted mostly as his assistant.

Out of his studies gradually emerged the so-called Adam style, based on the principle that exterior, interior and furnishings should form a harmonious whole. Details were largely elegant adaptations of Roman and Greek models. They designed and built the Adelphi (i.e. the brothers) Terrace (1768–72), an unfortunate financial speculation but an artistic triumph which was destroyed and replaced in 1936–38. Outstanding among the many Adam country houses are Harewood in Yorkshire, Kedleston in Derbyshire, Syon and Osterley near London. The famous town houses were a later phase. Robert, unmarried, a Member of Parliament 1768–74, elected FRS, was buried in Westminster Abbey.

Adams, Ansel Easton (1902–1984). American photographer. His richly textured, stark images of landscape, especially national parks in California and the southwest, established his reputation. He helped to secure recognition of photography as an academic subject and wrote technical manuals.

Adams, Gerry (Irish: Gearóid Mac Ádhaimh) (1948–). Irish politician, born in Belfast. An active civil rights campaigner in Northern Ireland, he was interned 1971–76, and worked with the Provisional wing of the Irish Republican Army (IRA). His autobiography *Before the Dawn* (1996) is essentially a work of fiction, asserting that he was not a member of the IRA: indeed, he knew little about it. President

of Sinn Féin 1983–2018, he was an abstentionist MP 1983–92; 1997–2011 in the UK House of Commons. He supported an end to terrorism after 1994, was a Member of the Northern Ireland Assembly 1998–2010, then transferred to the Dáil Éireann 2011–20.

Adams, Sir Grantley Herbert (1898–1971). Barbadan Labour politician. Educated at Oxford University, he became a successful lawyer (and cricketer) in Barbados. He was premier of Barbados 1954–58 and the first and only Prime Minister of the West Indies Federation 1958–62.

Adams, Henry (Brooks) (1838–1918). American historian, born in Boston. Grandson of John Quincy *Adams and son of **Charles Francis Adams** (1807–1886), he was educated at Harvard and travelled extensively in Europe. His father became US Minister to Great Britain 1861–68 and Henry served as his private secretary throughout, returning to the US to find that his services and knowledge were rebuffed in *Grant's Washington. He taught history at Harvard 1870–77 and edited the *North American Review* 1870–76. In 1872 he married **Marian Hooper** (1843–1885), better known as '**Clover**', a gifted observer, writer and photographer who inspired Henry *James. She committed suicide and the Adams memorial in Rock Creek has a memorable statue by Augustus *Saint-Gaudens. In 1877 Adams had moved to Washington, opposite the White House, and there wrote his great *History of the USA. During the Administrations of Thomas Jefferson and James Madison* (9 volumes, 1889–91), which set new standards in documentation and was published at his own expense. Lesser historical work followed, but in later life Adams turned to general literature, having already written *Democracy* (1880), a slashing satirical novel of Washington society. He largely avoided the issues of race, slavery and the status of women. He toured the world (including Polynesia and Australia) with John *Hay 1890–92. Living in France in 1897, he became anti-Semitic and anti-Dreyfusard.

Mont-Saint-Michel and Chartres (privately published 1904, commercially 1913) is a study of the unifying forces of medievalism symbolised by these great buildings. *The Education of Henry Adams* (privately published 1907, commercially 1918), is an ironic and deeply pessimistic autobiography, written in the third person, which speculates about the disintegrative forces of modern life. *The Education* posthumously won the Pulitzer Prize (1919), for all the wrong reasons.

Samuels, E., *The Young Henry Adams*. 1948, *Henry Adams: The Middle Years*. 1958, *Henry Adams: The Major Phase*. 1964, *Henry Adams* 1 vol. condensation 1989; Levenson, J. C., *The Mind and Art of Henry Adams*. 1957; Brown, D. S., *The Last American Aristocrat: The Brilliant Life and Improbable Education of Henry Adams*. 2020.

Adams, John (1735–1826). 2nd President of the US 1797–1801. Born in Braintree (Quincy), Massachusetts, and educated at Harvard College, he was cousin of Samuel *Adams. He became a leading lawyer and politically a strong supporter of the colonial cause, relying upon the argument 'No taxation without representation'. However, he revealed his fairness by defending British soldiers who had fired upon and killed some of a group of Boston citizens who had been baiting a sentry. He was prominent in the continental congresses, and signed the Declaration of Independence (1776) which he had helped to draft. He was appointed diplomatic representative to France (1778) and Holland (1781) and with *Franklin and *Jay negotiated the treaty of Versailles (1783), which brought the War of Independence to an end. After serving as the first US minister to Great Britain 1785–88, he returned home, and as a leading member of *Washington's Federalist Party he became the first vice president of the US 1789–97, bewailing the lack of power of 'this most insignificant office'. When Washington announced his retirement in 1796 he was elected President of the US, narrowly defeating *Jefferson in the first contested election. Under the existing system, Jefferson served as vice president 1797–1801 and defeated Adams for the presidency in 1800. Adams retired to Quincy, wrote several books analysing the machinery of American Government, and died on the 50th anniversary of the signing of the Declaration of Independence on the same day as Jefferson. Dying at 90 years 8 months, he was the longest lived US President until Ronald *Regan. He never owned slaves. In 20 Presidential ranking lists by US historians and political scientists, Adams scored No. 11 in the aggregate.

McCullough, D., *John Adams*. 2001.

Adams, John (Coolidge) (1947–). American composer, born in Massachusetts. A clarinettist, he studied composition at Harvard with Roger Sessions and Leon Kirchner, taught composition himself at the San Francisco Conservatory 1971–81 and was composer in residence with the San Francisco Symphony Orchestra 1982–85. His works include *Shaker Loops* (originally a string septet 1978, set for orchestra 1983), *Grand Pianola Music* (1982), *Harmonium* for large orchestra and chorus (*Donne and *Dickinson, 1984), the successful opera *Nixon in China* (1987), the song cycles *Fearful Symmetries* (*Blake, 1988) and *The Wound-Dresser* (*Whitman, 1989). The opera *The Death of Klinghoffer* was premiered in 1991. Later works include Violin Concerto (1993), *On the Transmigration of Souls* (choral, 2002), *Dr Atomic* (opera, 2005), *The Gospel According to the Other Mary* (opera-oratorio, 2013), *Scheherezade.2* (dramatic symphony, 2014) and *Girls of the Golden West* (opera, 2017). He describes himself as a 'post-style' composer.

Adams, John Couch (1819–1892). English astronomer and mathematician, born in Cornwall. Self-taught, then educated at Cambridge, in 1845 he

predicted the existence of the planet Neptune from calculations on irregularities in the orbit of Uranus. Delay in publication resulted in his sharing credit for discovery of the planet with *Le Verrier who, working independently, presented similar calculations to the Académie française in 1846. Other notable work by Adams included researches on the moon's motion. Awarded the Copley Medal in 1846, he was professor of astronomy at Cambridge from 1859–92.

Adams, John Luther (1953–). American composer, born in Mississippi. He played in rock bands, studied in California and lived in Alaska 1978–2014. Enormously prolific and experimental, his works, profoundly influenced by the environment and a sense of place, include *Become Ocean* (2013), *Ten Thousand Birds* (2014) and *Become Desert* (2018).

Adams, John Quincy (1767–1848). 6th President of the US 1825–29. Born in Braintree, eldest son of John *Adams, his natural precocity was increased by accompanying his father on diplomatic missions. At the age of 14 he was secretary to the American Ambassador in St Petersburg and at 16 to his father, Ambassador in Paris. He graduated at Harvard in 1787, started work as a lawyer, but was soon recalled to diplomacy as minister to Holland 1794–96, to Portugal 1796 and Prussia 1797–1801. US Senator from Massachusetts 1803–08, he supported *Jefferson on the Louisiana Purchase, disagreeing with the Federalist Party. Minister to Russia 1809–14, he was appointed a justice of the United States Supreme Court in 1811 but declined this office. He negotiated the peace treaty of Ghent with England in 1814, and was Minister to Great Britain 1815–17. As Secretary of State under President *Monroe 1817–25, he negotiated a treaty with Spain (1819) which added Texas, California and the Oregon Territory to the US, fixed the border with Canada and formulated the 'Monroe Doctrine' (1823). There were four major candidates in the 1824 presidential election: Andrew *Jackson, Adams, Henry *Clay and William Crawford (1772–1834). As no candidate had a majority in the Electoral College, with Clay's support, Adams was elected by the House of Representatives. He imposed tariffs, promoted national infrastructure and encouraged education and science. Embittered by slander and defeat by Jackson in the presidential election of 1828, he retired to Quincy only to show his resilience by securing election to the House of Representatives. Here, from 1831 until his death he was known for his vehement attacks on slavery. In 1841 he argued before the Supreme Court to secure the freedom of slaves on the ship *Amistad*. The earliest surviving photograph of a US president was taken of Adams in 1843. Known as 'Old Man Eloquent', he died in the House after a vigorous speech.

Lipsky, G. A., *John Quincy Adams: His Theory and Ideas*. 1950; Bemis, S. F., *John Quincy Adams*. 2 vols, 1949, 1956; Nagel, P., *John Quincy Adams: A Public Life, a Private Life*. 1999; Remini, R. V., *John Quincy Adams*. 2002.

Adams, Phillip (Andrew Hedley) (1939–). Australian broadcaster, writer and film producer. He left school early, went into advertising, was central to the revival of the Australian feature film industry, produced 12 films and, from the 1980s, was an influential broadcaster, interviewing thousands of major figures and pursuing unpopular causes. He chaired the Commission for the Future 1985–90 and was a prodigious collector of artefacts. Author of 20 books, he became a 'living national treasure'. Minor planet 5133 Phillipadams was named for him in 1990.

Adams, Sam(uel) (1722–1803). American politician, born in Boston. The first distinguished member of the Massachusetts family which played such an important part in American history, Adams squandered his inheritance, mismanaged his post as a tax collector, but showed great talent as a political agitator and fiery propagandist. By fomenting and publishing the grievances of the American colonists as a radical leader in the state House of Representatives, he played a decisive part in the contrivance of events, such as the Boston Tea Party (1773), that led to the Declaration of Independence, of which he was a signatory.

Adams, William (1564–1620). English sailor. The first Englishman to settle in Japan (1600), he became the principal advisor on shipbuilding and trade: because of his usefulness he was not allowed to leave. He established a post there for the East India Company.

Addams, Charles Samuel (1912–1988). American cartoonist. A regular contributor to the *New Yorker* from 1940, his black humour, often featuring a family of grotesques, was the basis for the television series 'The Addams Family' (1964–66) and a film (1991).

Addams, Jane (1860–1935). American social reformer, born at Cedarville, Illinois. She founded (1889) the Hull House social settlement in Chicago and worked for female suffrage, social justice and the cause of peace. From 1916, she received 91 nominations for the Nobel Peace Prize, sharing it in 1931 with N. M. *Butler.

Tims, M., *Jane Addams of Hull House*. 1961.

Addington, Henry, 1st Viscount Sidmouth (1757–1844). English Tory politician. He entered parliament in 1784, was Speaker of the House of Commons 1789–1801 and Prime Minister and Chancellor of the Exchequer 1801–04, during *Pitt's temporary retirement. The Treaty of Amiens 1802 with *Napoléon was a brief respite, but war broke out again in 1803. Pitt turned against him but after reconciliation took him into his own ministry. He received his peerage in 1805 and was almost continuously in office until 1824. As home secretary 1812–22 he was responsible for many repressive measures and incurred odium as a result of the 'Peterloo Massacre' of 1819. Minister without Portfolio 1822–24, his opposition to *Canning's policy of recognising the independence of

the Spanish colonies in South America led to his final retirement. He opposed Roman Catholic emancipation and parliamentary reform.

Ziegler, P., *Addington*. 1962.

Addison, Joseph (1672–1719). English essayist. He was chiefly remembered as the founder of and chief contributor to the *Spectator* (first published 1711). A sickly, precocious child, he was educated at Charterhouse and Oxford. His poem *The Campaign* (1704), written to celebrate *Marlborough's victory at Blenheim, won him a post as Commissioner of Excise. Similar posts maintained him in comfort for the rest of his life. He became the main contributor to the *Tatler*, founded (1709) by his boyhood friend Richard *Steele, who later joined him on the *Spectator*. The declared aim of both men was to 'enliven morality with wit and to temper wit with morality', and it is likely that the influence of both on English manners in the 18th century was more profound than the elegance and sober good sense the papers would suggest. Addison's tragedy *Cato* (1713) was highly successful.

Smithers, P., *The Life of Joseph Addison*. 1954.

Addison, Thomas (1793–1860). English physician and pioneer endocrinologist. His early work was on the action of poisons on the human body, and in his *Elements of the Practice of Medicine* (1839) he printed an important account of appendicitis. But he is mostly remembered for his researches into the glands, and for his pioneering work on anaemia. On the basis of autopsies, he suggested in 1849 a connection between anaemia and diseases of the suprarenals. This work was extended in his book *On the Constitutional and Local Effects of Disease of the Supra-Renal Capsules* (1855), in which he identified 'idiopathic' anaemia (later known as Addisonian anaemia). He also identified what became known as 'Addison's disease', a condition of the suprarenal capsules which produced weakness, a bronze pigmentation of the skin, and fatality in the patient.

Singer, C. and Underwood, E. A. *Short History of Medicine*. 1962.

Adelaide (1792–1849). British queen consort 1830–37. Daughter of the Duke of Saxe-Coburg-Meiningen, she married (1818) the Duke of Clarence, later *William IV of Great Britain. The capital of South Australia is named after her.

Hopkirk, M., *Queen Adelaide*. 1946.

Adenauer, Konrad (1876–1967). German Christian Democratic politician, born in Cologne (Köln). Son of a civil servant, he was educated at the universities of Freiburg, Munich and Bonn, became a lawyer in 1900, a Cologne councillor in 1906 and Lord Mayor (Oberburgermeister) 1917–33 until removed by the Nazis. Imprisoned briefly 1933 and 1944, he was inactive in politics until the end of World War II. Lord Mayor again 1945, in 1946 he founded the Christian Democratic Union (CDU), which although largely Catholic included Protestants and narrowly won the first post-war election of August 1949. He served as the first Chancellor of the Federal Republic of Germany 1949–63. At 73 his appointment was intended as provisional but *'Der Alte'* kept hold until his unwilling retirement at the age of 87. He was also Foreign Minister 1951–55. His shrewdness and stubbornness won him respect inside Germany and he established friendship with *Churchill and *de Gaulle. He negotiated the Federal Republic's entry into NATO, the Common Market and other international bodies and, with his successor Ludwig *Erhard, initiated Germany's 'economic miracle'.

Adès, Thomas (1971–). English composer, pianist and conductor. He studied at King's College, Cambridge, with early successes paralleling Benjamin *Britten. His works include a piano quintet (2000); operas *The Tempest* (based on *Shakespeare, 2004) and *The Exterminating Angel* (based on *Buñuel's film, 2016); *Todtentanz* for mezzo and orchestra (2013) and *Piano Concerto* (2019).

Adler, Alfred (1870–1937). American psychologist. He was an eye specialist before taking up psychiatry and working with *Freud, from whom he finally broke in 1911 (mainly because he disagreed with Freud's undue emphasis on infantile sexuality), and established his own system. He stressed the link between hereditary physical defects and psychological states but is best known for the importance he ascribed to the will to dominate and its frustration. He coined the term 'inferiority complex'.

Bottome, P., *Alfred Adler: Apostle of Freedom*. 3rd ed. 1957.

Adler, Felix (1851–1933). American sociologist, born in Germany. Son of a rabbi, he established the first child-study group and the first free kindergarten in the US. He was a pioneer of the Ethical Culture movement aimed at providing ethical and moral teaching outside the churches.

Adler, Larry (Lawrence Cecil) (1914–2001). American harmonica virtuoso, composer, actor and writer. He toured constantly from the 1930s, appeared in five films, adapted works by *Gershwin, *Ravel and *Vivaldi, and commissioned *Vaughan Williams, *Milhaud and *Arnold. During the McCarthy period he moved to London (1950) and wrote for *Private Eye*.

Adorno, Theodor W(iesengrund) (1903–1969). German philosopher and musicologist. He worked in the UK, US and Germany, attempting to explain modern music in the context of Marx and Freud and wrote extensively on *Mahler, *Schoenberg and *Berg.

Adrian (Hadrianus) **IV** (Nicholas Breakspear) (c. 1100–1159). Pope 1154–59. The only English pope, born near St Albans, he became a canon of a monastery at Avignon in France and was cardinal bishop of Albano

in Italy (1146–54). As Pope he reasserted papal power (*Arnold of Brescia), crowned *Friedrich I (Barbarossa) Emperor in 1155, but later opposed him on the basis of his theories of papal supremacy.

Adrian (Hadrianus) **VI** (Adriaan Florensz Boeyens) (1459–1523). Pope 1522–23. Born in Utrecht, he became a distinguished theologian. As tutor to the young Charles of Burgundy and the Low Countries (later King of Spain and emperor *Charles V), he attained political and ecclesiastical preferment. Inquisitor-General of Aragon in 1516, cardinal in 1517, he became (1522) the last non-Italian pope until *John Paul II. Zeal for reform within the Church combined with opposition to all doctrinal change won him enemies both in Rome and among Luther's adherents. Moreover his inability to prevent the Turkish seizure (1522) of Rhodes from the Knights of St John marked his political failure.

Adrian, Edgar Douglas, 1st Baron Adrian (1889–1977). English physiologist, born in London. He was educated at Westminster and Trinity College, Cambridge, and trained for medicine at St Bartholomew's Hospital, London. Foulerton Research Professor at the Royal Society 1929–37, he discovered methods for measuring electrical signals in the nervous system and demonstrated the transmission, by nerve impulses, of sensation and muscular control. He shared the 1932 Nobel Prize for Medicine or Physiology with Sir Charles *Sherrington for their discoveries on the function of neurons. In Cambridge he became Professor of Physiology 1937–51, Master of Trinity College 1951–65 and Chancellor of the University 1967–75. Awarded the OM (1942), the Copley Medal (1946) and a peerage (1955), he was President of the Royal Society 1950–55. His later research was on the electrical activity of the brain itself.

A.E. (pen name of George William Russell) *see* **Russell, George William**

Ælfric of Eynsham (c.955–1010). Anglo-Saxon scholar and writer. The best known scholar of his time, and the most prolific writer in Old English, he wrote homilies, sermons, a colloquy between the teacher, the pupil and such characters as ploughman, hunter, etc., a paraphrase of the early books of the Old Testament and *Lives of the Saints.*

Aeschines (389–314 BCE). Athenian orator. The great rival of *Demosthenes, the famous speech against Ctesiphon and only two others survive. He was important as chief spokesman of the party of appeasement in the face of the encroachments of *Philip II of Macedon and so delayed the resistance advocated by Demosthenes until too late.

Aeschylus (c.525–456/5 BCE). Greek tragic dramatist, born near Athens. A member of an old noble family, he was a soldier who fought against Persia at Marathon (490), Salamis (480) and Plataea (479). Comparatively little is known of his life, except that he was popular in Athens, acted in his plays, was regarded as impious and made three long visits to Gela in Sicily, where he died. The earliest Greek tragedian, and, with *Sophocles and *Euripides, one of the three greatest, he was the first dramatist to present two characters on stage simultaneously (additional to the chorus). He also developed the use of dialogue, costumes, music and scenery. (In the *Oresteia* trilogy he first presented three characters on stage.) Of about 80 plays, only seven survive. He competed in the Dionysia, an annual drama competition, more than 20 times, winning 13 of them (losing once to Sophocles). *The Persians* deals with the historic struggle of the Greeks against *Xerxes, the remainder are inspired by ancient legends of gods and heroes. Comprising the great trilogy of *The Oresteia* are *Agamemnon*, telling of the King's murder on his return from Troy by his wife Clytemnestra and her lover Aegisthus, *The Choephoroe*, in which Orestes and his sister Electra avenge their father, and *The Eumenides*, which relates the pursuit of Orestes by 'Furies', his trial and final acquittal by the goddess Athena. Other surviving plays are *The Suppliants*, *Seven Against Thebes* and *Prometheus Unbound*. All deal with the expiation of sin.

Murray, G. G. A., *Aeschylus the Creator of Tragedy*. 1940.

Aesop. Greek author of beast fables, probably legendary. He is supposed to have lived in the 6th century BCE but even his existence is uncertain. The first collection of Greek fables, now lost, was made in the 4th century BCE by Demetrius of Phaleron. A metrical collection by Babrius (probably 2nd century CE) contains the first Greek fables to survive. Clearly, the fables ascribed to Aesop originated in many countries and were the work of many hands.

Æthelberht (or **Ethelbert**) (c.560–616). King of Kent 560–616. Overlord of southern England, he married a Christian, the Frankish princess Bertha. which facilitated his own conversion (597) by St *Augustine of Canterbury. This link with the Franks probably stimulated him to issue a code of laws, the first known to have been written down in England.

Æthelred (or **Ethelred**) **I** (840–871). King of Wessex 865–71, brother and predecessor of *Alfred (Ælfræd) the Great. The brothers worked in perfect harmony in their efforts to keep the Danes at bay, and, though the devout king was still at his prayers when the Battle of Asldown (871) began, the Danes sustained their first decisive defeat. He died soon afterwards at Merton.

Æthelred (or **Ethelred**) **II** (known as '**the Unready**') (968–1016). King of England 987–1016. The son of *Edgar the Peaceful he succeeded his murdered half-brother *Edward the Martyr. He was called 'Unraed' (lacking in counsel or good sense) because of his vacillating policy towards the Danes, sometimes

bribing, sometimes fighting them. His reign was one of unrest and treachery to which he contributed, for example by a general massacre of Danes on St Brice's Day 1002. The Danish leader, *Sweyn Forkbeard, responded with fierce reprisals, defeated Ethelred and compelled him to flee to the court of the Duke of Normandy, the brother of Emma, Ethelred's second wife and mother of *Edward the Confessor. He returned to England in 1014.

Roach, L., *Æthelred the Unready*. 2016.

Æthelstan (or **Athelstan**) (c.895–939). King of the Anglo-Saxons 924–27, King of the English 927–39. Son of *Edward the Elder, and grandson of *Alfred the Great, he continued and extended their policy of unification by bringing the north of England and much of Wales under his rule. The marriages arranged for his sisters with the royal houses of France and Germany confirmed his position as one of the great medieval kings. He ruled England firmly but also addressed his efforts to the liberation of slaves, care of the destitute and improvement of the coinage. At the end of his reign (937) he defeated a confederacy of Scots, Welsh and Danes in a desperate encounter at Brunanburh (Bourne in Lincolnshire).

Æthelwulf (d. 858). King of Wessex 839–58. Son of *Egbert and father of *Alfred the Great, he was pious, judicious and absentee, but kept the Vikings at bay.

Aga Khan. Hereditary title held by the spiritual head of the Isma'ili (Shi'ite) Muslims, which claims descent from Fatimah, daughter of the prophet *Muhammad. The first Aga Khan, **Hasum Ali Shah** (1800–1881), fled from Persia to India, where his services to the British won him recognition and the title 'His Highness'. His grandson, **Aga Khan III** (1877–1957), born in Karachi, who succeeded his father as 48th Imam of the Nizari-Isma'ili Muslims in 1885, was educated at Eton and Cambridge. He became first President of the All-India Muslim League 1912. A moderate reformer, he advocated ending purdah, represented India at international conferences and at the League of Nations 1932–38, and was President of the League of Nations Assembly 1937–38. He gained notoriety as a racing enthusiast whose horses won the Derby five times. He was buried in Egypt. His grandson **Shah Karim al-Hussaini, Aga Khan IV** (1936–) campaigned to relieve global poverty and advance women's rights.

Agassiz, (Jean) **Louis** (Rodolphe) (1807–1873). Swiss-American biologist, born in Switzerland. A pupil of *Cuvier and *Humboldt, he graduated in medicine (1830), worked in Paris and in 1832 accepted a professorship at Neuchâtel. His early work on fossil fishes was followed by a systematic study of glaciers. In 1846 he went to America and in 1848 became professor of natural history at Harvard, and became an influential, and much admired, teacher. A vigorous critic of *Darwin's theories of natural selection and the origin of species, he proposed 'polygenism'—the concept that human races had different origins. His ideas were used to provide a scientific justification for racism, unfairly, as Agassiz opposed slavery. A scientific expedition to Brazil 1865–66 led to the publication of *A Journey in Brazil* (1868). Only four volumes of his *Contributions to the Natural History of the United States* were issued before his death. His son **Alexander Agassiz** (1835–1910), who became curator of the Harvard Museum on his father's death, wrote much on oceanography, coral formations and the embryology of star fishes, etc.

Marcou, J., *Life, Letters and Works of Louis Agassiz*. 1972.

Agesilaus (c.444–360 BCE). King of Sparta. Famous for his military skill, his early successes were against the Persians in Ionia, but it was in the long war against an alliance of the other Greek states that he won his most famous victory, that of Coronea (394). In the Theban war, though defeated by *Epaminondas at Mantinea (362), he maintained his country's defence.

Agnelli, Giovanni (1866–1945). Italian industrialist. Originally a soldier, in 1899 he founded FIAT (Fabbrica Italiana Automobili Torino) which became the biggest Italian car and weapons manufacturer. *Mussolini appointed him to the Senate in 1923 and he was a generous philanthropist.

Agnew, Spiro Theodore (1918–1996). American Republican politician. Son of a Greek migrant (the family name was Anagnostopoulos), he served in the forces, then became a supermarket manager. County executive in Baltimore 1962–67, he had a meteoric rise to become Governor of Maryland 1967–69 and Richard *Nixon's Vice President 1969–73 and seemed a likely nominee for president in 1976. When the Justice Department prosecuted him for receiving 'kickbacks' from Maryland contractors, he pleaded 'no contest' in court, was fined, placed on probation and resigned (October 1973) as Vice President. He then joined an international real estate investment firm.

Agoult, Marie Catherine Sophie, Comtesse d' (née de Flavigny: pen name 'Daniel Stern') (1805–1876), French journalist and historian, born in Frankfurt. Painted by *Ingres, and unhappily married, she became the mistress of Franz *Liszt 1835–39 and mother of Cosima *Wagner. Her *History of the Revolution of 1848* (3 vols., 1850; 1853) is outstanding for its acute observation, research and analysis.

Agricola, Georgius (Georg Bauer) (1495–1555). German scholar. Trained as a humanist at Leipzig, and a friend of *Erasmus, he became a physician in the mining town of Joachimstal, Saxony (1527–33). His close observation led to the writing of his great work *De re metallica* (1533–53), posthumously published in Venice. Regarded as the foundation of systematic metallurgy, it was translated into English by Lou and Herbert *Hoover (1913).

Agricola, Gnaeus Julius (40–93 CE). Gallo-Roman soldier and administrator. Born to a senatorial family, Governor of Britannia (Britain) 78–85, he consolidated the Roman hold on Wales, pushed the frontier into Caledonia (Scotland), built a large fort at Inchtuthil (in modern Perthshire), and his fleet made the first circumnavigation of the British Isles since *Pytheas. Shortly after defeating the Caledonians at Mons Graupius (83)—although the scale of the battle was probably exaggerated—he was recalled by the jealous emperor *Domitian. His biography, written by his son-in-law *Tacitus, survives.

Agrippa, Marcus Vipsanius (63–12 BCE). Roman engineer, architect, commander and governor. As governor of Gaul (39), he crossed the Rhine and began colonising Germany. A strong supporter of Octavian, later known as *Augustus, he destroyed the navy of Sextus *Pompeius off Sicily (36). From 33 he enlarged and expanded Rome's water supply. His victory at Actium (31) over the fleets of *Antony and *Cleopatra enabled Octavian to become the undisputed master of Rome. Augustus' daughter Julia became Agrippa's third wife and their daughter *Agrippina continued the imperial line. His Pantheon (27–25 BCE), originally rectangular, was destroyed by fire in 80, rebuilt, first by *Domitian, then (126 CE) by *Hadrian, but Agrippa's portico remains. He also developed the Campus Martius (24 BCE). The Pont du Gard, one of the greatest Roman aqueducts, originally regarded as Agrippa's work, is now dated to 40–60 CE.

Agrippa von Nettesheim, Heinrich Cornelius (1486–1535). German physician, theologian, philosopher and courtier, born in Cologne. Educated at his birthplace, he had a stormy career, became court physician and astrologer to *François I, and was jailed as a heretic. His major work *De occulta philosophia* (1531) attempted to link scientific knowledge with magic, the occult and cabbalistic tradition. The Faust legend owes much to his reputation.

Agrippina (14 BCE–33 CE). Roman matron. Daughter of *Julia and *Agrippa, she became wife of Germanicus, nephew of *Augustus' successor, *Tiberius, whom she wrongly blamed for her husband's death. She died in exile. Of her children Gaius, nicknamed *Caligula, became emperor, her daughter, the younger **Agrippina** (15–59), was the mother of the emperor *Nero by her first husband and probably poisoned her third, the emperor *Claudius. Notorious for her cruelty and depravity, she was eventually put to death by her son Nero.

Aguinaldo y Fama, Emilio (1869–1964). Filipino politician and insurgent. Born to a wealthy and influential family, he led guerrilla campaigns against the Spanish occupation, and, after invasion by US forces, became head of a revolutionary government 1898–99 and first President of the Philippines 1899–1901, the first head of a constitutional republic in Asia. Aguinaldo designed the national flag. When the United States invaded and defeated the Spanish, establishing direct rule in 1901, the first Filipino Republic ended and Aguinaldo retired to private life. In 1935 he contested the first election for the Presidency of the Commonwealth of the Philippines, losing heavily to his former supporter Manuel *Quezon. In 1945 he was accused of collaboration with the Japanese occupation and was jailed.

Ahab (d.c.853 BCE). King of Israel c.875–852 BCE. His confiscation of Naboth's vineyard earned him the wrath of the prophet Elisha. His evil genius was his wife *Jezebel who persuaded him to introduce the worship of Baal. He was killed in battle with the Syrians by a man who 'drew his bow at a venture'. See I Kings xvi:29–xxii:40.

Ahasuerus. Biblical name of several Persian kings. The one who made *Esther his queen has been questionably identified with *Xerxes I (reigned 485–464 BCE). The name Ahasuerus was also attributed to the legendary Wandering Jew.

Ahern, Bertie (1951–). Irish politician. He was Lord Mayor of Dublin 1986–87, Leader of Fianna Fail 1994–2008 and Prime Minister (*Taoiseach*) 1997–2008. He worked with Tony *Blair in negotiating peace in Northern Ireland (1998).

Ahmad Shah Durrani (1722–1772). Emir of Afghanistan 1747–72. At first a successful general in the service of *Nadir Shah, on the latter's death he conquered extensive territories of which Afghanistan was the central part. This survived the collapse of his wider empire on his death and he is thus regarded as the founder of modern Afghanistan. He was also a poet.

Ahmadinejad, Mahmoud (1956–). Iranian politician, born in Abadan. A Shi'ite, his father was a grocer and barber and his mother claimed direct descent from *Muhammad. Trained as an engineer and teacher, he held a series of appointed offices, including Mayor of Tehran 2003–05, and became a leader of the Alliance of Builders of Islamic Iran. Elected as President in 2005 (narrowly defeating Hashemi *Rafsanjani), he served 2005–13. As President, he directed domestic and economic policies, but was subordinate in religious and cultural areas, and foreign policy, to the supreme leader, Ali *Khamenei, and the Council of Guardians. An intransigent opponent of Israel, he clashed repeatedly with the United States, especially over Iran's nuclear program. There were massive protests against the conduct of the 2009 election.

Ahmed Khan, Sir Sayyid (1817–1898). Indian Muslim educator and jurist. He worked in the judicial department of the East India Co. 1841–76, was a major influence in the revival of Urdu as a literary

language, and reformed the organisation of Muslim education. In 1875 he opened the Anglo-Oriental College, later called the Aligarh Muslim University.

Ahtisaari, Martti Oiva Kalevi (1937–2023). Finnish politician and diplomat. A professional diplomat who served with the UN, he was President of Finland 1994–2000 and received the Nobel Prize for Peace in 2008 for his work in negotiating settlements in Kossovo, Namibia, Indonesia and Iraq.

Ai Weiwei (1957–). Chinese artist and political activist, born in Beijing. Son of a dissident poet, Ai Qing (1910–1996), he grew up in exile in Xinjiang, returning to Beijing in 1976. He studied animation, cinematography and photography, lived in the US 1981–93, then became an architect (with the FAKE design group). He made many documentary films about urban and social problems, became an influential blogger in China from 2005, campaigning for human rights and exposing government failures in the Sichuan disaster relief. He was imprisoned and beaten up several times, and accused of fraud and plagiarism. He created powerful sculptural installations, for example *Forever Bicycles* (2011) and *Tree* (2013).

Aidan, St (d.651). Irish monk. Summoned by King *Oswald to become bishop of Northumbria, he left Iona in 635 and founded the monastery and see at the island of Lindisfarne. Thence his missionary journeys restored Christianity in northern England.

Aiken, Conrad (Potter) (1889–1973). American poet, critic and novelist, born in Georgia. He lived in England for many years. His *Selected Poems* (1929) won the Pulitzer Prize for Poetry (1930). His novels include *Great Circle* (1933).

Hoffman, F. J., *Conrad Aiken*. 1963.

Ainsworth, William Harrison (1805–1882). English novelist, born in Manchester. Articled to a solicitor, and for a short time a publisher, he edited *Ainsworth's Magazine* (1842–53) and wrote over 40 historical novels, including *The Tower of London* (1840), *Guy Fawkes* (1841) and *Old St Paul's* (1841).

Airy, Sir George Biddell (1801–1892). English astronomer, born at Alnwick, Northumberland. Educated at Trinity College, Cambridge, in 1828 he became Plumian professor of astronomy at Cambridge and director of the new observatory there. As astronomer royal 1835–81 he reorganised Greenwich observatory, designed improved instruments and started meteorological and magnetic observations as well as solar photography and spectroscopy. He was elected FRS in 1836 and knighted in 1872.

Akbar the Great (Abu'l-Fath Jalal-ud-din Muhammad Akbar) (1542–1605). Emperor of India 1556–1605. The third of the Mughals, he succeeded his father **Humayun**, and having gained the allegiance of the warlike Rajputs extended his rule over most of India. Fatehpur Sikri, 35 km from Agra, his wonderful new capital of red sandstone, symbolised the new era. He divided the country into provinces, each under a viceroy to secure law and order, promote trade and collect taxes, but Akbar himself maintained absolute central control. One of his aims was to establish a new religion containing all that was best in existing faiths and so abolishing the strife between the various sects. Among the religious leaders summoned for this purpose were Jesuit missionaries from Goa.

Smith, V., *Akbar the Great Mogul, 1542–1605*. 2nd ed. 1919; Giri, S., *Akbar*. 2009.

Akhenaten (or Ikhnaten: 'Servant of the Sun disc') (d.c.1336 BCE). Egyptian pharaoh of the XVIIIth dynasty. As Amenhotep (or Amenophis) IV, he succeeded his father Amenhotep III around 1379 BCE and may have been co-ruler with him. His mother was a commoner. He became a devotee of the sun disc ('Aten'), an entirely rational object of worship, changed his name, and is sometimes exaggeratedly claimed as the founder of monotheism. This new religious emphasis may have been aimed at the political power of priests devoted to Amun (or Amen)-Re, also a sun-god. Amun's name was replaced by Aten in the official religion, essentially optimistic nature worship. Weak physically, Akhenaten was no hunter, athlete or warrior but patronised the arts which flourished in his time. Some of his poems have survived. He moved his capital from Thebes to a new city Akhenaten, now Tell el Amarna. The beautiful sculptured head of his wife *Nefertiti, frequently reproduced, is in the Neues Museum, Berlin. The religion of Amun was restored by his son *Tutankhamun.

Aldred, C., *Akhenaten: Pharaoh of Egypt*. 1972.

Akhmatova, Anna (pseudonym of Anna Andreyevna Gorenko) (1889– 1966). Russian poet. Her poems, in the style of Pushkin, were extremely popular and collections included *The Rosary* (1914) and *The Willow Tree* (1940). She was a leader of the Acmeist movement which was led by her husband Nikolai Gumilov and included *Mandelstam. Gumilov was executed in 1921 and Akhmatova was placed under ban 1923–40 and 1946–56. Her long *Poem Without a Hero* (1940–62) achieved international recognition and she is regarded as Russia's greatest woman poet.

Akihito (regnal name Heisei, i.e. 'achieving peace') (1933–). Emperor of Japan 1989–2019. Son of *Hirohito, he was educated at the Gakushuin High School and Gakushuin University, graduating in political science. He travelled widely and married a commoner, Michiko Shoda, in 1959. He pursued interests in ichthyology, publishing 25 papers on a taxonomic study of the gobiid fish. In 1992 he became the first Japanese emperor to visit China, then went to the United States in 1994 and to the United

Kingdom in 1998, where he was made an honorary KG. He abdicated in favour of his son *Naruhito in April 2019.

Aksakov, Sergei Timofeivich (1791–1859). Russian novelist. After retiring from the civil service, he wrote a notable autobiographical trilogy of Russian family life, *Family Chronicle* (1856), *Years of Childhood* (1858) and *Reminiscences* (1856).

Alain, Jehan (1911–1940). French composer and organist. Member of a distinguished musical family, he composed chamber, piano and vocal works but is remembered for his organ music, especially the powerful *Litanies* (1937). He was killed in action in World War II. His sister **Marie-Claire Alain** (1926–2013) was an organist and teacher who recorded more than 200 CDs.

Ālam II, Shah (né Ali Gohar) (1728–1806). Emperor of India 1760–1806. One of the last Moghul emperors, he ruled, in name only, under the domination of the Marathas whose army was run by skilled French mercenaries. In 1788 he was blinded by a Sikh insurgent. In 1803, the army of the British East India Company defeated the French and Alam Shah was placed under 'protection'. (Richard *Wellesley). He was a gifted poet.

Alanbrooke, Alan Francis Brooke, 1st Viscount (1883–1963). British field marshal, born in France. From a leading Ulster family (*Brookeborough) he joined the army in 1902. As GOC 2nd Army Corps, in France 1939–40, he showed great skill in extricating his troops at Dunkirk (May–June 1940), then became Commander-in-Chief of home forces 1940–41, succeeding Sir John *Dill as Chief of the Imperial General Staff 1941–46 and Chairman of the Joint Chiefs of Staff. He had the best strategic mind of the British generals and *Churchill wanted him to be Supreme Commander for the reconquest of Europe, although their relations were sometimes stormy. In 1946 he was created Viscount and given a KG and the OM. His war diaries, published as *The Turn of the Tide* (1957) and *Triumph in the West* (1959), were very critical of Churchill. He was an expert ornithologist and photographer.

Alarcón y Mendoza, Juan Ruiz de (1581–1639). Spanish dramatist, born in Mexico. He came to Spain and moved in the circle of Lope de *Vega. He is best known for his comedies of manners but also wrote heroic dramas. Interest in his work revived in modern times after a period of neglect.

Alaric (c.370–410). Visigoth chief 395–410. A nobleman, born in modern Romania in the reign of the emperor *Theodosius I, he commanded Gothic auxiliaries in the Roman army, but on the death of the emperor in 395 broke with Rome and invaded Greece. The eastern emperor *Arcadius tried to win him over by appointing him Governor of Illyricum 396–400. He invaded Upper Italy on behalf of the emperor but in 402 was defeated by *Stilicho, the general of the western emperor Honorius. After another defeat (403) he changed sides but the bribe of huge sums of gold made by Stilicho was not paid by the emperor. When two advances upon Rome (408 and 409) had failed to secure a satisfactory settlement, Alaric entered the city as a conqueror and gave it over to pillage (410), though as an Arian Christian he forbade the desecration of religious buildings. A plan to reach Africa by way of Sicily to find a home for his people was foiled by his death in southern Italy.

Alba, Fernando Alvarez de Toledo, Duke of (1507–1582). Spanish soldier and administrator. Alba had already gained a military reputation with the armies of the emperor *Charles V in Italy, Tunisia, France and against Lutheran princes in Germany, but had equally incurred odium for intolerance and pride when Charles' son, *Philip II of Spain, sent him (1567) as Governor-General to the Netherlands to crush the independence movement and stamp out Protestantism. In the first task he began successfully by forcing *William the Silent (of Orange) to disband his army and take refuge in Germany. However, his subsequent cruelty (in five years 18,000 people were executed by his Council of Blood and 100,000 forced into exile) stirred up the antagonism that inspired William the Silent's subsequent leadership and led to the emergence of Holland as a separate state. Meanwhile in 1573, ill and exhausted, Alba had asked to be recalled.

Alban, St (d.209 or 251 or 304 CE). Roman-British martyr. Alban's very existence is a matter of controversy, and his name may be drawn from 'Albion', or from 'alba' ('bright') with a feast day on the summer equinox. He may have been a soldier, possibly a Roman convert, condemned for giving shelter to a priest. Most early accounts agree that he was the first Christian martyr in Britain, beheaded in Verulamium, now St Albans. A church was built on the presumed site of his execution in 429. *Bede's account is the longest, but he sets the date too late, after Christianity was being tolerated in the Roman empire. Many shrines were devoted to St Alban in Britain and Europe, and he has been proposed as a replacement for St *George as England's patron saint.

Albanese, Anthony Norman (1963–). Australian Labor politician, born in Sydney. Brought up by a single mother, he first met his father in Italy in 2009. Educated at St Mary's College and Sydney University, he became a ministerial staffer, party official and Federal MP 1996– . Under *Rudd and *Gillard he was Minister for Infrastructure and Transport 2007–13 and Deputy Prime Minister 2013. Defeated by Bill *Shorten in 2013, he was Leader of the ALP 2019– . He pursued a 'small target' campaign against the *Morrison government, but won the

2022 election, promising to act on climate change, an integrity commission and gender equality, and became the 31st Prime Minister of Australia 2022– .

Middleton, K., *Albanese. Telling It Straight*. 2017.

Albee, Edward Franklin (1928–2016). American dramatist. His early plays were influenced by *Jarry and *Ionesco but after *Who's Afraid of Virginia Woolf?* (1962) he returned to mainstream naturalism. He won Pulitzer Prizes with *A Delicate Balance* (1967) and *Seascape* (1975).

Albéniz (y Pascual)**, Isaac** (Manuel Francisco) (1860–1909). Spanish composer. A prodigy as a pianist, he later studied under *Liszt, and toured the US, South America and Europe. He worked in London 1890–93 and four of his six operas have English libretti. His greatest work was the piano suite *Iberia* (1906–09, later orchestrated by E. F. Arbos). He was a friend of *Debussy and a student of folk music.

Alberoni, Giulio (1664–1752). Italian cardinal. Son of a gardener, he went to Spain as secretary to the Duc de Vendôme. He soon gained ascendancy at court, which was strengthened when he brought about the marriage of *Felipe V with Elizabeth (or Isabella) Farnese, whose ambition to endow her sons with Spain's lost Italian duchies Alberoni (first minister 1714, cardinal 1717) fostered. The policy, which involved war (1718) with the Quadruple Alliance (Great Britain, France, Austria, Holland), failed and despite his sound internal administration Alberoni was dismissed.

Harcourt-Smith, S., *Alberoni*. 1963.

Albers, Josef (1888–1976). German-American painter and designer. He worked at the Bauhaus, migrated to the US in 1933 and taught at Harvard and Yale. His famous series *Homage to the Square* influenced the development of op art and Minimalism.

Albert I (Albert Léopold Clément Marie Meinrad de Belgique) (1875–1934) King of the Belgians 1909–34. Studious, he married *Elisabeth, a Bavarian duchess, in 1900. An enthusiastic alpinist and pioneer conservationist, he succeeded his uncle *Léopold II and gained worldwide admiration for his defiance of German aggression in World War I and for leading the remains of his army throughout. In 1919 he made sensible suggestions at the Paris Peace Conference and became the first European monarch to visit the United States. In 1920 he changed the royal family's name from Saxe-Cobourg-Gotha (or Wettin) to de Belgique (French) or van België (in Dutch). He was killed in a mountaineering accident in the Ardennes, and was succeeded by *Léopold III. His grandson, **Albert II** (1934–) was King of the Belgians 1993–2013, abdicating in favour of his son **Philippe**.

Albert of Saxe-Coburg-Gotha (Franz Albrecht August Karl Emmanuel von Wettin) (1819–1861). British Prince Consort, born in Coburg. The second son of Ernst, Duke of Saxe-Coburg-Gotha, he was educated in Brussels and Bonn and (after strenuous encouragement from their uncle *Leopold I of Belgium) married his cousin, Queen *Victoria in February 1840. The marriage was passionate and happy and they had nine children. For several years he was virtually the queen's private secretary, which aroused political mistrust although his judgment was good. Deeply interested in music, the fine arts, architecture, science and manufacturing, the Great Exhibition of 1851 at the Crystal Palace was a tribute to his organising skills. He became a field marshal, chancellor of Cambridge University 1847–61 and was created prince consort in 1857. His death, now thought to have been from Chrone's disease, devastated the queen who remained in seclusion for many years. London's Albert Hall (1867) is one of many memorials to him.

Weintraub, S., *Albert: Uncrowned King*. 1997.

Albert Victor Christian Edward (von Wettin), **Duke of Clarence and Avondale** (1864–1892). British prince, born in Windsor. Eldest son of the future *Edward VII, he was second in the line of succession to Queen *Victoria. Known as 'Prince Eddie', he died of influenza. His fiancée *Mary of Teck married his brother, the future *George V, in 1893. A poor student, amiable but dim, he became, decades after his death, the subject of wild speculation, completely unsupported by evidence, that he was *Jack the Ripper.

Alberti, Leon Battista (1404–1472). Italian humanist and architect, born in Genoa. Son of an exiled Florentine nobleman, he was one of the most versatile figures of the Italian Renaissance. His 10-volume treatise on architecture, *De re aedificatoria* (1485), was the first printed book on architecture and encouraged interest in classical forms. His buildings include churches at Mantua and the Rucellai palace at Florence. His plays, educational and moral treatises, and essays on law, politics and science reflect the extent of his interests.

Gadol, J., *Leon Battista Alberti*. 1969.

Albertus Magnus, St (Albrecht, Count of Bollstadt) (1193–1280). German philosopher. Renowned for the depth and breadth of his knowledge, he proved himself a great teacher of the Dominican order, his most famous pupil being St Thomas *Aquinas, with whom he contributed to the infusion of Aristotelianism into medieval theology. His work in natural science drew on many sources and he introduced the notion of affinity into chemistry. His work in these scientific fields gave him a reputation as a magician. Bishop of Regensburg 1260–62, he was canonised in 1931.

Albrecht of Magdeburg (Albrecht von Hohenzollern) (1490–1545). German prelate. Son of the elector of Brandenburg, he became Archbishop of Magdeburg 1513–45, Archbishop and Elector of Mainz 1514–45, Primate of Germany and a cardinal in 1518.

Originally sympathetic to humanism, and influenced by *Erasmus, he spent extravagantly and borrowed heavily from the *Fuggers. His sale of indulgences, permitted by Pope *Leo X, provoked *Luther to publish his 95 theses.

Albright, Madeleine Jana Korbel (née Korbelová) (1937–2022). American administrator, born in Prague. Daughter of a diplomat, her family migrated to the US in 1948. Educated at Wellesley and Columbia, she was US Ambassador to the UN 1993–97 and Secretary of State 1997–2001, the first woman so appointed. She became a professor at Georgetown University, rejecting bids to enter Czech politics, and wrote the memoir *Madam Secretary* (2003). She received the Presidential Medal of Freedom in 2012.

Albuquerque, Afonso de (1453–1515). Portuguese soldier. Raised at the court of King Alfonso V, he led an adventurous life, which included fighting against the Turks, before going to the East, where he succeeded (1507) Almeida as Viceroy. Goa, captured in 1510, became his capital and he gradually asserted control over Malabar, Ceylon, Malacca and some of the Indonesian islands. Intrigues at home led to his dismissal and he died on the way home.

Alcaeus (620–after 580 BCE). Greek poet. He lived and worked on the island of Lesbos. Of his work, mainly battle songs, love songs and hymns, only fragments survive, but his Alcaic metre was used by others, especially by the Roman poet *Horace.

Page, D., *Sappho and Alcaeus*. 1955.

Alcalá Zamora, Niceto (1877–1949). Spanish politician, born in Priego. A Catholic conservative, he was a Cortes member 1905–31, Minister for Works 1917 and for War 1922 and Prime Minister 1931, negotiating *Alfonso XIII's abdication. Elected as first president of the Spanish Republic 1931–36, he tried to reconcile all factions but showed little leadership and was distrusted by left and right. Removed in 1936, he went into exile in France, then Argentina, where he died.

Alcibiades (c.450–404 BCE). Athenian leader. Brought up in the household of *Pericles, he became a brilliant but wayward member of the group of talented young men who found inspiration in discussions with Socrates. In the Peloponnesian War between Athens and Sparta which began in 431, Alcibiades planned and jointly led the disastrous expedition to Syracuse. On the eve of departure all the statues of the god Hermes were mutilated. For this Alcibiades was blamed and to avoid prosecution took refuge with the Spartans, whom he helped by stirring up revolts among the allies of Athens in Asia Minor. Failing, however, to retain Spartan confidence he fled to the Persian satrap Tissaphernes, whom he tried to win over to the Athenian side in the hope of obtaining his own recall. He failed with Tissaphernes, but, chosen by the Athenian forces in Samos to lead them, he was so successful in the Hellespont (Dardanelles) that he returned home in triumph. But his command was not renewed and he withdrew to Thrace, where he was murdered.

Alcock, Sir John William (1892–1919). English aviator. With Arthur Whitten *Brown, he made the first aeroplane crossing of the Atlantic (14 June 1919) in a Vickers-Vimy, travelling about 3,154 km (1,960 miles) from Newfoundland to Clifden in Ireland in 16 hours 12 minutes. He died after an air accident in France.

Alcott, Louisa May (1832–1888). American novelist. Her stories of family life in America, especially *Little Women* (1868), had phenomenal sales. She served as a nurse in the American Civil War. She never married: as she wrote, 'I'd rather be a free spinster and paddle my own canoe.'

Stern, M., *Louisa May Alcott*. 1971.

Alcuin of York (né Ealhwine, in Latin Flaccus Albinus Alcuinus) (735–805). English scholar, born in York. From an Anglo-Saxon family attached to the nobility, he acquired his great learning at the cloister school in York, where he later taught and became head. He was a deacon, but not a priest. In 782 he accepted an invitation from *Charlemagne to foster the revival of Latin language and literature throughout his empire. Master of the Palace School at Aachen 782–90; 792–96, he became Charlemagne's chief educational advisor and his pupils included the young princes and the emperor himself. He promoted the use of Carolingian minuscule as lower case writing, and this became standard in Western Europe. He returned to England 790–92, and in 1796 became Abbot of Marmoutier, in Tours, where he taught and died.

Aldanov, Mark (né Mark Aleksandrovich Landau) (1886–1957). Russian-Jewish-French historical novelist, biographer and critic, born in Kiev. He studied chemistry, and left Russia after the Revolution, living in France 1919–41, 1946–57 and the US 1941–46. He wrote on the French and Russian Revolutions, *Napoléon, *Lenin and his once popular novels included *The Key* (1931). A hero to literary emigrés, he was nominated 13 times for the Nobel Prize.

Aldington, Richard (1892–1962). English poet, novelist and biographer. He wrote several volumes of Imagist and other poetry, the disillusioned war novel *Death of a Hero* (1929), and lively, controversial biographies of D. H. *Lawrence (*Portrait of a Genius, but … ,* 1950) and T. E. *Lawrence (*Lawrence of Arabia, a Biographical Enquiry*, 1954). He married (1913) the American poet Hilda *Doolittle.

Aldrovandi, Ulisse (1522–1605). Italian naturalist, born in Bologna. From a noble family, after studying medicine at Bologna University and travelling, he became professor in 1560 and later first director of

the botanic garden. Like many Renaissance scholars, Aldrovandi's interests were wide ranging, and included archaeological remains and medicine. But his main passion was for natural history, especially the branches of botany, ornithology, embryology and the study of monsters. He observed the development of chicks by opening their eggs successively on each day of the incubation period, confirming that *Aristotle was correct in stating that the heart is formed prior to the liver in the embryo. Aldrovandi's work had lasting interest chiefly through his pioneer collecting activities. His museum of natural history was amongst the largest in Europe. He planned to catalogue his collections in 14 volumes, but lived to complete only four—one on insects, and three on birds. He bequeathed his collections and manuscripts to Bologna.

Bodenheimer, F. S., *History of Biology*. 1958.

Aldus Manutius *see* **Manutius, Aldus**

Aleichem, Shalom *see* **Shalom Aleichem**

Alekhine, Aleksandr Aleksandrovich (1892–1946). Russian-French chess master. He left Russia for France in 1921 and was world chess champion 1927–35 (defeating José *Capablanca, losing to Max Euwe) and 1937–46 (defeating Euwe). He joined the French army in 1940 but then collaborated with the Germans and held his title, without a rematch, until his sudden death in Portugal (possibly a murder).

Alekhine, A., *My Best Games of Chess, 1924–1937*. 1939.

Aleksandr I (Aleksandr Pavlóvich Románov) (1777–1825). Tsar of Russia 1801–25. He came to the throne after the murder of his father *Paul I. His education in humanitarian but abstract principles was directed by his grandmother, *Catherine the Great, but though he was at first liberal in outlook and ordered the preparation of elaborate schemes of reform, he shrank from putting all but a very small part into effect. He joined the coalition against *Napoléon, but was forced to conclude the treaty of Tilsit (1807). There the two emperors met and Aleksandr conceived a hero worship for the conqueror which postponed a further clash for five years. However, in 1812 Napoléon made the disastrous invasion into Russia which brought about his downfall. Aleksandr, the hero of the hour, was thus a leading figure at the Congress of Vienna (1814–15). With Austria and Prussia he formed the 'Holy Alliance', intended to preserve the *status quo*, but under the influence of *Metternich became increasingly reactionary, though he gave Russian Poland a constitution under his sovereignty. He was succeeded by his brother, *Nikolai I.

Palmer, A., *Alexander I.* 1974.

Aleksandr II (Aleksandr Nikolaievich Romanov, known as 'the Liberator') (1818–1881). Tsar of Russia 1855–81. Son of *Nikolai I, as Tsarevich he travelled extensively, from Siberia to England, succeeding to the throne after defeat in the Crimean War. Defeat created the atmosphere for reforms, the greatest of which was the emancipation of 10,000,000 serfs and their families (1861). He sold Alaska to the US in 1867, reformed the judicial system, abolished corporal punishment in the military, created limited local self-government (zemstvo), built railways and was sympathetic to the Finns. He married his mistress in 1880. He survived assassination attempts in 1866, 1879, 1880 but was killed by a bomb in St Petersburg.

Mosse, W. E., *Alexander II and the Modernisation of Russia*. 1958; Radzinsky, E., *Alexander II: The Last Great Tsar*. 2005.

Aleksandr III (Aleksandr Aleksandrovich Romanov) (1845–1894). Tsar of Russia 1881–94. He succeeded on the assassination of his father, *Aleksandr II. Under the influence of Konstantin *Pobedonostsev, he set out to reverse the liberalising reforms of his father, and was devoted to 'Orthodoxy, Autocracy and Nationality'. He married the Danish Princess **Dagmar** (1847–1928) in 1866. He survived an assassination attempt in 1887 for which *Lenin's brother was hanged. He died of nephritis.

Thomson, O., *Romanovs: Europe's Most Obsessive Dynasty*. 2008.

Aleksandr Nevsky (1220–1263). Russian hero. He gained his surname after defeating the Swedes on the River Neva (1240). In 1242 he overcame the Teutonic knights on the frozen Lake Peipus (on the Estonian border). Aleksandr, who ruled as grand prince in Novgorod 1236–52 and from 1252 in Vladimir, was canonised after his death. A knightly order named after him was founded by *Peter the Great and was revived by Soviet Russia in 1942 for deeds of valour.

Aleksandra Fyodorovna (Aleksandra Fyodorovna Románova, née Alix Viktoria Helene Luise Beatrix von Hesse-Darmstadt) (1872–1918). Tsarina consort of Russia 1894–1917. Born a princess of Hesse-Darmstadt, and a granddaughter of Queen *Victoria, she married *Nikolai II of Russia (1894). Belief in the power of *Rasputin to cure the young tsarevich **Aleksei** (1904–1918) of haemophilia brought her under his disastrous domination and led her to exert nefarious political influence. After the 1917 revolution she was murdered with her husband and children at Yekaterinberg. She was proclaimed a saint by the Russian Orthodox Church in 2000.

Massie, R. K., *Nicholas and Alexandra*. 1969.

Aleksei Mikhailovich (1629–1676). Tsar of Russia 1645–76. Son of Mikhail Romanov, known as the 'quiet one', he gave Russia a new code of laws in 1649, favouring the landowners and confirming serfdom, which remained in force until the early 19th century. He approved the Church reforms of Metropolitan Nikon which led to the dangerous schism in the

Orthodox Church. He fought wars against Poland (1654–67) and Sweden (1656–61), and won Ukraine for Russia. A serious revolt by Cossacks under Stenka Razin was quelled in 1671.

Aleksievich, Svetlana Aleksandrovna (1948–). Belorusian investigative journalist, essayist and oral historian. She was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature in 2015 for her polyphonic writings, 'a monument to suffering and courage in our time'. She also received the Herder, Sonning, Sakharov and Médicis Prizes. She lived in Germany from 2020.

Alemán (y Enero), Mateo (1547–c.1616). Spanish novelist, born in Seville. He was famous for his *Guzmán de Alfarache* (translated into English in 1622 as *The Rogue*), a vigorous story, with moralising digressions, of a boy who ran away from home and became involved with much sordid crime and vice before eventually being condemned to the galleys. Alemán, though a university graduate and for a short time in government service, spent much of his life in poverty, was twice in prison and in 1608 went to Mexico and died there.

Alembert, Jean Le Rond d' (1717–1783). French philosopher and mathematician, born in Paris. Illegitimate son of the Chevalier Destouches, he was abandoned on the steps of the Church St Jean-Le-Rond, hence his name, and was later generously provided for by his father and brought up by a grazier's wife. Educated by Jansenists, he studied law, medicine, then mathematics. He expounded a positivist philosophy but it was in mathematics that his genius lay. He wrote a notable study of dynamics and threw light on the precession of the equinoxes. From 1746 to 1758 he worked with Denis *Diderot as an editor of the great *Encyclopédie*, then continued to write entries on science and mathematics. He became a friend of *Voltaire, gained a great reputation for wit and wisdom in the Paris salons, but refused important offers from *Friedrich II ('the Great') of Prussia and Empress *Catherine of Russia. He was admitted to the Académie française in 1754.

Grimsey, R., *Jean d'Alembert*. 1963.

Alexander (Aleksandar) (1876–1903). King of Serbia 1889–1903. A member of the *Obrenovíc dynasty, he became king after the abdication of his father King Milan. An unpopular marriage to Draga Mashin, a lady of the court, and his own pro-Austrian policy provoked a revolution during which he and his wife were murdered by a group of army officers. *Peter I of the rival Karageorgevic dynasty then took the throne.

Alexander (Aléxandros) (1893–1920). King of Greece 1917–20. He was chosen by the Allies to replace his father *Constantine, who had been forced to abdicate because of his pro-German attitude in World War I, ruling as a puppet under the Prime Minister, *Venizelos. He married morganatically, and died of blood poisoning after a bite from a monkey in the palace grounds. Following a referendum, his father was restored to the throne.

Alexander I, II, III Tsars of Russia *see* **Aleksandr I, II, III**

Alexander I (1077–1124). King of Scots 1107–24. Son of *Malcolm III (Canmore), he succeeded his brother Edgar. He ruled only north of the Forth. Clyde, his brother, and successor *David I governed the country to the south.

Alexander I (Aleksandar Karađorđević) (1888–1934). King of the Serbs, Croats and Slovenes 1921–29 and of Yugoslavia 1929–34. Born in Montenegro, educated in Switzerland and Russia, his father became King *Peter I of Serbia after a coup (1903). As regent for his father, he commanded Serbian forces through World War I and, after the Allied victory, the Slav lands in Austria-Hungary were joined with Serbia in a single state, which in 1929 was renamed 'Yugoslavia'. Violent conflicts between Serbs and Croats, the rise of Ustasha (fomented by *Mussolini), and a killing in Parliament led to Alexander suspending the Constitution (January 1929) and imposing a personal dictatorship. He was assassinated in Marseilles by a Romanian terrorist working for Ustasha, the French Foreign Minister Jean-Louis *Barthou becoming collateral damage.

Alexander II (1198–1249). King of Scots 1214–49. He succeeded his father *William the Lion and was almost immediately excommunicated for helping the barons against the English king *John. Two years later the sentence was lifted and the liberties of the Scottish Church confirmed, while peace with England was secured by his marriage to a sister of *Henry III. Alexander extended his rule over much of the western Highlands but died while seeking to win the Hebrides from Norway.

Alexander (Aléxandros) **III ('the Great')** (356–323 BCE). King of Macedonia 337–323 BCE. Born in Pella, son of *Philip II, he was educated by *Aristotle, who had great influence over his mind and character. He first distinguished himself at the battle of Chaeronea (338) against the Thebans, while his father was still king. He was only 19 when his father was murdered and he succeeded to the throne. He had still to put down rebellions in his own kingdom, and secure his rear in Greece before he could cross the Hellespont (334) to begin the war against Persia for which his father had long prepared by creating a magnificent army based on the supremacy of the Macedonian line of battle known as the phalanx. Alexander won his first victory on the River Granicus, and in 333 marched through Phrygia to Issus, where he defeated King *Darius III and captured his family and treasures. He now conquered Syria and Phoenicia and, rejecting offers of peace, reached Egypt (332) where the inhabitants, tired of the harsh Persian rule,

welcomed him; in the following year he founded Alexandria, also visiting Luxor and Siwa. He returned to the east and fought Darius once more (331) near Arbela on the upper Tigris and inflicted on him an even heavier defeat than at Issus; from Arbela he marched to Babylon, Susa and Persepolis, all of which surrendered. Pursuit of Darius, whom he was too late to save from a rebellious satrap but whom he buried with full honours, took him northeastwards to the furthest corners of the empire in Sogdiana (Bukhara and Samarkand). It was on this campaign that he captured and married the beautiful Princess Roxana. In 327, starting from Balkh in Bactria, Alexander began his conquest of India. He crossed the Indus near Attock, and defeated Porus near the Hydaspes (it was here that he lost his famous charger, Bucephalus), and then went on through the Punjab. His troops, greatly depleted, would go no further. He returned to the ocean and having ordered one division to embark and sail to the Persian Gulf, he with the others marched back through Baluchistan and finally reached Persia in 325. At Susa he took a second wife, Barsine, daughter of Darius, and then remained in Babylon, ruling in great pomp until his death, from unknown causes—fever, complicated by alcohol and/or poison. His remains were entombed in Alexandria. *Augustus visited the tomb 300 years later, but it later disappeared. His posthumous son by Roxana, **Alexander IV** (323–310 BCE), ruled in name only and was murdered. Hailed as divine by many of his followers, he had already shown signs of megalomania. His judgment suffered and excesses had lost him the friendship of Clitus, whom he killed in a drunken brawl. But his achievement remains tremendous. With an army which probably never exceeded 35,000 fighting men he came to rule an empire stretching from Italy to India, although it was soon divided among his generals *Antigonus, *Ptolemy and *Seleucus. Through them the civilising influence of late Greek culture, known as Hellenism, spread and left enduring effects.

Green, P., *Alexander the Great*. 1970, *Alexander of Macedon*. 1974; Everitt, A., *Alexander the Great*. 2019.

Alexander (Alessandro) **III** (Orlando Bandinelli) (c.1100–1181). Pope 1159–81. Born in Siena and educated in Bologna, he became a canon lawyer, chief advisor of *Adrian IV, a cardinal in 1150, but not a bishop. After his contested election as Pope, the Emperor *Friedrich I (Barbarossa) challenged his authority and recognised three successive 'antipopes', beginning with Victor IV. He was three times forced out of Rome and exiled for much of his pontificate. Equivocal in his support for *Becket, after his murder he made him a saint and forced *Henry II to do public penance. Alexander canonised *Edward the Confessor, probably laid the foundation stone for Notre Dame, Paris, recognised an independent Portugal, and supported the growth of universities. Friedrich's forces were defeated at Legnano in 1176 by the Lombard League and in the Peace of Venice (1177) he accepted papal authority. At the Third Lateran Council (1179) Alexander established the rule for papal election by cardinals, which (with minor modifications) is still used. Even *Voltaire regarded him as one of the better popes.

Duggan, A. J. and Clarke, P. D., *Pope Alexander III: The Art of Survival*. 2012.

Alexander III (1241–1286). King of Scots 1249–86. He succeeded his father *Alexander II at the age of 8. He resumed his father's conflict with the Norwegians and by a decisive victory at Largs (1263) the Scots acquired the Hebrides and the Isle of Man. Alexander's children all died before him and his heiress was Margaret (Maid of Norway), whose mother, Alexander's daughter, had married Eric II of Norway.

Alexander VI (Rodrigo de Lanzol y Borja. Borgia in Italian) (1431–1503). Pope 1492–1503. Born in Játiva, near Valencia, he adopted the name of his maternal uncle Alonso de Borja, later Pope *Callistus III. Created cardinal by his uncle in 1456 he became Vice Chancellor of the Curia and gained some reputation as an efficient financial administrator. But he was far more notorious for his profligacy, for his many mistresses, and for the complete lack of scruple with which he advanced the careers and fortunes of his numerous children, of whom the best known are Cesare and Lucrezia *Borgia. (Their mother was **Vannozza Catanei**.) The Florentine reformer *Savonarola, who denounced such evils, was excommunicated and executed (1498). Politically, Alexander made it his principal purpose to build up a strong, unified papal state in central Italy, making use of Cesare's military skill and not hesitating to invite help from *Charles VIII and *Louis XII of France. In 1493 he proposed dividing between Spain and Portugal those parts of the world not already under Christian rule. This principle was adopted in the Treaty of Tordesillas (June 1494) and confirmed by Pope *Julius II in 1506. (In modern maps, the 'Pope's line' is found between 48 and 49 degrees W of Greenwich, or 131 or 132 degrees E.) Alexander's patronage of the arts, especially by inviting *Bramante to the Vatican and commissioning Pintoricchio to decorate the Borgia apartments there, has at least proved of benefit to mankind. He died probably of a fever but, according to tradition, of poison intended for his guests at dinner. One of the most infamous figures in papal history, he reached the highest office through nepotism and bribery.

Alexander, Samuel (1859–1938). British-Australian-Jewish philosopher, born in Sydney. Educated in Melbourne, he won a scholarship to Balliol College, Oxford, in 1877. Elected (1882) as a Fellow of Lincoln College, Oxford, he was the first practising Jew to hold a fellowship at Oxford or Cambridge. He was professor of philosophy at Manchester 1893–1924. His theory of 'emergent evolution' was that everything

evolved, first things and then minds, from a beginning of pure motion or space-time. God, he held, is being evolved but does not actually exist. His *Space, Time and Deity* (1920) argues that there are three hierarchies of reality—matter, life, and mind—each striving towards perfection or deity. Alexander was the first Australian-born recipient of the OM (1930).

Alexander of Tunis, Harold Rupert Leofric George Alexander, 1st Earl (1891–1969). Anglo-Irish field marshal, born in London. Third son of the 4th Earl of Caledon, he was educated at Harrow and Sandhurst, joined the Irish Guards, served with distinction (MC and DSO) in World War I and (1934–38) on the Indian frontier. He commanded the 1st Division in France in World War II and was left in command on the beaches after Lord *Gort had been recalled. When Japan entered the war Alexander was sent to Burma and conducted the retreat with such skill that when *Rommel's victories (1942) threatened Egypt he was chosen for the supreme command in the Middle East and was thus General in Charge of *Montgomery's brilliant campaign which started at Alamein. Later he was *Eisenhower's deputy (and successor) in the campaign that cleared North Africa, Sicily and eventually Italy of the enemy. One of the most successful generals in World War II, he served as Governor-General of Canada 1946–52 and Minister of Defence in *Churchill's Government 1952–54. He was created Viscount in 1946, promoted to an earldom when he left Canada and given the OM in 1959.

Jackson. W. G. F., *Alexander of Tunis*. 1971, Nicolson, N., *Alex: The Life of Field Marshal Earl Alexander of Tunis*. 1973.

Alexander Severus (originally Marcus Julius Gessius Bassianus Alexianus) (208–235). Roman Emperor 222–35. Born in Syria (now in Lebanon), son of a magistrate and his Syrian wife, he succeeded on the murder of his cousin *Elagabalus. Weak, amiable and popular**,** he lacked the forcefulness necessary for imperial rule. A campaign against the Persians (231–33) had failed to achieve decisive results when he was forced to return to the west by German attacks. Here his caution and indecisiveness provoked an army mutiny and his murder.

Alexandra (Caroline Marie Charlotte Louise Julie) (1844–1925). British queen consort 1901–10. Daughter of *Christian IX of Denmark, she went to England to marry the future king *Edward VII in 1863. Striking for her beauty (although lame and deaf in later years), she was very popular. *George V was her second son.

Battiscombe, G., *Queen Alexandra*. 1972.

Alfieri, Vittorio, Conte (1749–1803). Italian dramatist. He inherited a fortune and his early life was occupied with travel and love affairs until the success of his first play, *Cleopatra* (1775), encouraged him to undertake a period of study. In Florence he fell in love with the Countess of Albany, wife of *Charles Edward Stuart (Bonnie Prince Charlie), and lived with her after the prince's death (1788) for the rest of his life. He wrote over 20 plays by which he hoped to arouse Italy's nationalist spirit and a hatred of tyranny.

Alfonsín, Raúl Ricardo (1926–2009). Argentinian politician. A lawyer, he served as councillor and congressman, opposed both Peronism and military rule and became leader of the Radical Civil Union in 1982. Elected President of Argentina (in the first free election for a decade) in 1983, he began to curb the military, normalised foreign relations, reformed trade unions and restored civil liberties. By the end of his term in 1989, the economy had deteriorated and Carlos *Menem was elected President.

Alfonso (or Alphonso). Name of two kings of Spain and of many kings of the constituent kingdoms of Aragon, León and Castile. For the kings of Portugal the form Afonso is used.

Alfonso X (known as 'the Wise') (1221–1284). King of Castile and León 1252–84. He engaged Arab and Jewish astronomers to prepare the 'Alfonsine Tables' of planetary movements and he codified the law by his *fueroreal* (c.1254). A notable poet himself, he made his court a great cultural centre, and by sponsoring works of learning (among them a general history and a history of Spain) written in Castilian (rather than Latin) he ensured that it became the literary language of Spain. Both his day-to-day administration and his foreign policy, however, suffered from a diffusion of energy. He had some success in bringing much of Moorish Spain under Castilian rule but had not the strength to pursue claims in Gascony, Portugal and Navarre to a successful conclusion. A vain attempt to obtain the imperial throne was most wasteful in money and energy as well as unwise. The raising of money for all these ventures absorbed much of the economic strength created by other reforms.

Proctor, E. S., *Alfonso X of Castile*. 1951.

Alfonso XII (Alfonso Francisco de Asís Fernando Pío Juan María de la Concepción Gregorio Pelayo de Borbón y Borbón) (1857–1885). King of Spain 1874–85. Son of Queen *Isabel II and possibly her husband, he studied in France and Vienna and married the Austrian archduchess Maria. Known as 'the peacemaker', his reign marked an end to the long period of civil war. He was the last Spanish king to die while still ruling.

Alfonso XIII (Alfonso León Fernando María Jaime Isidro Pascual Antonio de Borbón y Habsburgo-Lorena) (1886–1941). King of Spain 1886–1930. As a posthumous child of *Alfonso XII, he may be said to have been king before he was born. From the time that he took over the reins of government in 1902 his rule was threatened by revolutionary movements. In 1906 Alfonso married Victoria Eugénie, niece of King *Edward VII. The fall of *Primo de Rivera's

dictatorship in 1930, with which the king was inextricably linked, led to his immediate abdication and exile. He died in Rome.

Alfred (Ælfræd) **the Great** (849–900). King of Wessex 871–900. Born at Wantage, son of King Æthelwulf, he twice visited Rome before succeeding his brother *Æthelred I. His reign began disastrously with invasions of armies from the Midlands which Alfred was forced to cut off. This won him only brief respite and early in 878 he was driven back into the Somerset marshes. (It is to this period that the legend of his letting the cakes burn belongs.) However, he won a decisive battle (almost certainly at Eddington in Wiltshire) in May of that year and was able to impose the treaty of Wedmore by which Guthrum, the Danish king, accepted baptism and a division of the country between himself and the Wessex king. He acknowledged Alfred's supremacy in East Anglia, much of Mercia and all England south of the Thames. London, too, was gained in 886. Having made his kingdom secure, partly by a network of forts (*burhs*), partly by building war vessels, Alfred turned to the tasks of peace. New codes of law and a fair, efficient administration restored stability after the wars, but his great love was education. He drew scholars to his court from other parts of England and from the Continent but, even more importantly, initiated a program of education far ahead of its time. To ensure the spread of the vernacular as a literary language he set his scholars to translating many religious, philosophical and historical works from Latin. He translated *Boethius, *Augustine and *Gregory I and excelled as warrior, administrator and educator. Buried in Winchester, his remains have been lost.

Alger, Horatio (1834–1899). American author. His first story was *Ragged Dick* (1867). He wrote over 100 boys' books, all on the theme that, by hard work and honesty, adversities can be overcome and honour and riches won. His books had an astonishing popularity and influenced a generation of American youth.

Algorithmi *see* **Al-Khwārizmī, Muḥammad ibn Mūsā**

Alhazen (abu-Ali al-Hasan ibn al-Haytham) (c.965–c.1038). Arab scientist, born in Basra. He spent most of his life in Egypt. His work on optics was remarkably percipient, including discussions of the propagation, reflection and refraction of light and the phenomenon of colour. This treatise was translated into Latin in the 13th century and published (1572) as *Opticae Thesaurus Alhazeni.* Alhazen opposed the theory of *Euclid that the eye sends out visual rays and was the first to suggest that rays of light pass from an object to the eye.

Ali (Alī ibn Abī Tālib) (c.600–661). Fourth caliph of Islam 656–61. Born in Mecca, son of *Muhammad's uncle Abu Tālib, he grew up in the prophet's household, and married his daughter *Fatimah. According to Shi'ite tradition, he was the principal scribe to whom Muhammad dictated the Qu'ran. On Muhammad's death he contested the succession with *Abu-Bakr, father of the prophet's favourite widow A'ishah, who became the first caliph. However, on the death of *Uthman, Ali was recognised as the fourth caliph. Murdered and buried in Kufa (modern Iraq), his son **Hasan ibn Ali** (625–670) succeeded briefly, but resigned and died in Medina, possibly by poison. The caliphate was taken by *Mu'āwiyah, first of the *Umayyad dynasty. Supporters of Ali's descendants became known as Shi'ites, rivals of the Sunnis: comprising 90 per cent in Iran, 60 per cent in Iraq, a majority in Azerbaijan and Bahrain, but a minority elsewhere. In the Shi'ite tradition, pilgrimages are made to the tombs of Ali and his 11 successors as Imam, all descendants of Muhammad.

Ali, Muhammad (Cassius Marcellus Clay, Jr) (1942–2016). American heavyweight boxer, born in Louisville, Kentucky. After winning the light heavyweight gold medal at the Rome Olympics (1960) he turned professional, and in 1964 took the world heavyweight title from Sonny Liston. Following success he changed his name to Muhammad Ali and became a Black Muslim. In 1967 he refused to join the US army pleading conscientious objection and was convicted and deprived of his title. This decision was reversed on appeal (1971) and in 1974 he regained his pre-eminence, taking the title for the second time, on this occasion from George Foreman. Finally, having lost his title to Leon Spinks (February 1978) he made history when he became world heavyweight champion for the third time in September 1978, until his defeat in 1980. He was identified with radical politics, but surprisingly endorsed *Reagan in 1984. Diagnosed with Parkinson's disease in 1984, he campaigned to raise levels of public awareness about it and received the Presidential Medal of Freedom (2005).

Remnick, D., *King of the World: Muhammad Ali and the Rise of an American Hero*. 1998.

Ali Pasha (known as 'the Lion') (1741–1822). Albanian ruler. Although nominally in the service of Türkiye he came to exert despotic rule over most of Albania and Epirus and by 1820 was clearly intending to create an independent state. The sultan then ordered that he should be deposed and executed. His court at Yanina was visited by *Byron, who described it in *Childe Harold*.

Alinsky, Saul (1909–1972). American social activist, born in Chicago. A brilliant tactician, he organised many successful campaigns on social issues, such as poverty and minority rights.

Alkan, Charles Henri Valentin (originally Morhange) (1813–1888). French pianist and composer. A friend of *Chopin, he was an eccentric recluse who wrote extraordinarily demanding works for piano which, despite the admiration of *Liszt and *Busoni, were virtually ignored until the 20th century.

Al-Khwārīzmī (Abū Abdallāh) **Muḥammad ibn Mūsā** (c.780–c.850). Persian mathematician, astronomer and geographer, born in Uzbekistan or Azerbaijan. Influenced by Greek, Babylonian and Indian mathematicians, including *Brahmagupta, he worked at 'The House of Wisdom' in Baghdad. He wrote *On the Calculation with Hindu Numerals* (c.825), which promoted use of Indian digits (1, 2, 3, etc.) and the zero (0), adopted in Europe from the 12th century CE. The word 'algorithm' is derived from the Latin version (Algoritmi) of his name. He seems to have coined the word 'algebra' (from 'al-jabr', or 'completion') in his *Compendious Book on Calculation by Completion and Balancing* (c.830), published in Latin in 1145. He edited and corrected the work of *Ptolemy in *The Image of the Earth* (c.833).

Allais, Maurice (1911–2010). French economist and engineer, born in Paris. He worked as an engineer in the Mines Department and the railways, taught at the University of Paris and directed research at CNRS. He was awarded the Nobel Prize for Economics in 1988 for his work on capital formation, resource allocation, operation of monopolies and factors influencing consumer choice.

Allbutt, Sir Thomas Clifford (1836–1925). English physician and medical historian, born at Dewsbury. He was educated at Cambridge and St George's Hospital, London. While a consultant in Leeds (1861–89) he introduced (1867) the clinical thermometer. He became Regius professor of medicine at Cambridge 1892–1925. His work on the use of the ophthalmoscope for nerve diseases and his *Diseases of the Arteries* (1915) are of lasting importance. He was knighted in 1907 and made a PC.

Allen, Ethan (1738–1789). American revolutionary patriot. A flamboyant personality, he raised a private army, 'The Green Mountain Boys', and captured Ticonderoga from the British. He was later taken prisoner on a rash expedition against Montréal. Vermont at this stage declared its independence. Allen engaged in devious negotiations with the British regarding its status, which was still unsettled when he died in 1789.

Allen, William (1532–1594). English Roman Catholic prelate. Principal of St Mary's Hall, Oxford, 1556–60, in 1568 he founded an English seminary at Douai, moved it to Reims in 1578, remaining director until 1585. The Douai-Reims English translation of the Bible was prepared by Gregory Martin under Allen's supervision. He called on *Phillip II of Spain to assume the English throne and supported the Armada. Created cardinal in 1587, he died in Rome.

Allen, Woody (Allen Stewart Konigsberg) (1935–). American writer, actor and director, born in Brooklyn. At high school he began writing jokes and scripts for television. He directed and wrote the films *Bananas* (1971), *Everything You Always Wanted to Know About Sex But Were Afraid To Ask* (1972), *Sleeper* (1973), *Love and Death* (1975), *Annie Hall* (Academy Award for Best Film, 1977), *Interiors* (1978), *Manhattann* (1980), *Zelig* (1983), *Broadway Danny Rose* (1984), *The Purple Rose of Cairo* (1985), *Hannah and Her Sisters* (1985), *Radio Days* (1986), *Alice* (1990), *Husbands and Wives* (1992), *Manhattan Murder Mystery* (1993), *Scoop* (2006), *Vicky Cristina Barcelona* (2007), *Midnight in Paris* (2011), *To Rome with Love* (2012) and *Blue Jasmine* (2013). In 1993 his former partner Mia Farrow raised allegations of child molestation against him, but criminal charges were not proceeded with.

Allenby, Edmund Henry Hynman Allenby, 1st Viscount (1861–1936). British field marshal. He commanded the 3rd Army in France 1915–17 and was then given command of the expeditionary force based on Egypt to fight the Turks. In the last great cavalry campaign in modern warfare he captured Jerusalem (December 1917) and Damascus (October 1918), freeing Palestine and Syria from Ottoman rule. A student of the Greek classics, he was notably sparing of lives in battle and worked closely with T. E. *Lawrence. Created a viscount (1919), he served as British High Commissioner in Egypt 1919–25, negotiating the transition to limited self-government (*Zaghlul).

Allende (Gossens), **Salvador** (1908–1973). Chilean socialist politician and physician. President of Chile 1970–73, he was the first Marxist elected in a free election in the western hemisphere, but lacked majority support in the electorate and in the Congress. On taking office he attempted to restructure Chile on socialist lines. Following considerable unrest mostly fomented from outside, the military demanded his resignation. In 1973 an attack was made on the presidential palace and his private residence and he was killed by machine-gun fire. The military dictatorship of General *Pinochet succeeded. His niece **Isabel Allende** (1942–) was a successful novelist.

Alleyn, Edward (1566–1626). English actor and entrepreneur. He and Richard *Burbage were considered to be the finest actors in the Elizabethan-Jacobean theatre. He performed with The Admiral's Men, created the roles of Tamburlaine, Faustus and Barabbas in plays by *Marlowe, and *Shakespeare's *Henry VI*, and was actively involved in lion and bear-baiting, and theatre management. He married twice and his fathers-in-law were Philip *Henslowe and John *Donne. He was the founder of Dulwich College (1619) and died rich.

Almagro, Diego de (1464 or 1475–1538). Spanish *conquistador* in South America. He served with *Pizarro in Peru and obtained a large share of the plunder. In 1535 he organised the expedition that invaded Chile but was disappointed by failure to find any precious metals. Back in Peru he attempted

to seize the country, but was defeated, captured and strangled by Pizarro. He was avenged by the second Diego (his son born of an Indian mother), whose followers stormed Pizarro's palace and murdered him.

Alma-Tadema, Sir Lawrence (Lourens Tadema) (1836–1912). Anglo-Dutch painter, born in Dronrijp (Frisia). He lived in England from 1869, became the last person classified as a 'denizen' 1873, and was elected RA in 1879. His pictures interpret classical subject matter in a highly finished academic manner evocative of the Victorian epoch. He received the OM in 1905 but his reputation declined posthumously. Interest in his work revived in the 1970s. *The Finding of Moses* (1904) sold for £252 in 1960, and was auctioned in New York for $35.9 million in 2010.

Almeida Garrett, Joáo Baptista da Silva Leitào de (1799–1854). Portuguese novelist, poet and politician, born in Porto. He became famous with *Camões* (1825), a long poetic tribute to Luis de *Camoes as a prototype Romantic. A strong liberal, he was an exile in England 1823–25; 1828–32. He returned with the army supporting King *Pedro in 1832 and, having been ennobled, served as Minister of Foreign Affairs 1852.

Almodóvar Caballero, Pedro (1949–). Spanish film director. Since making his first commercial film in the 1980s, he has written, directed, acted in and/or produced nearly 30 films. His films are characterised by elements of melodrama and high camp and he won Academy Awards for *All about my Mother* (1999) and *Talk to Her* (2002).

Al-Razi *see* **Razi, Al-**

Altdorfer, Albrecht (c.1480–1538). German painter, architect and engraver, born at Regensburg. Leader of the 'Danube school', a meticulous draughtsman and engraver, he was the first great landscape painter, in the sense that in his later works the landscape ceases to be merely a background to human figures and is granted an importance never before given to it. Major works include the *St Florian Altar* (Linz) and *Alexander's Victory* (Munich).

Altgeld, John Peter (1847–1902). American Democratic politician, born in Germany. He migrated, as a child, to Ohio with his very poor immigrant family. He became a lawyer and served as Governor of Illinois 1893–97. A champion of the poor and trade unionism he pardoned the anarchists who had been, on scanty evidence, convicted of taking part in the Chicago Haymarket riots (1886). He also opposed the use of federal troops in the Pullman strike (1894).

Althusser, Louis (1918–1990). French philosopher, born in Algiers. A leading theoretician of the French Communist Party, he argued that utopian and humanist elements in Marx should be disregarded and that the main stream of his teaching was a revolutionary science of history (i.e. class struggle), expressed through changes in production rather than by political operations *per se* (e.g. Leninism or Maoism). In 1980 Althusser murdered his wife and was certified insane.

Altman, Robert Bernard (1925–2006). American film director. Trained as an engineer, he was a pilot, documentary and feature producer and writer for television, then secured critical success with some major films, e.g. *M*A*S*H* (1970), *Nashville* (1975), *A Wedding* (1978), *Health* (1979), *Popeye* (1982), *Fool for Love* (1985), *The Player* (1991) and *Pret-a-Porter* (1994).

Alvarado, Pedro de (1485–1541). Spanish conquistador in Mexico. Left in command during the absence of *Cortés, by treacherously attacking the Mexicans he provoked an uprising which forced the Spaniards to retire from the city with disastrous losses. He became (1527) the first governor of Guatemala, and was killed fighting in Mexico.

Alvarez, Luis Walter (1911–1988). American physicist, born in San Francisco. Professor of physics at the University of California at Berkeley, he worked on the atomic bomb and won the 1968 Nobel Prize for Physics for his work in detecting short-lived 'resonance particles'. In 1979 with his son **Walter Alvarez** (1940–) he proposed a theory (now generally accepted) that 'the Cretaceous-Teriary extinction' of dinosaurs and other species about 65,000,000 years ago was caused by the impact of a comet or asteroid.

Alvarez Quintero, Serafin (1871–1938) and **Joaquin** (1873–1944). Spanish dramatists. For 40 years they achieved success after success with light comedies mostly concerned with Andalusian life. Some, e.g. *Pueblo de las mujeres* (*The Women have their Way*) and *El centenario* (*A Hundred Years Old*), were translated into English by Harley and Helen Granville-Barker.

Alzheimer, Alois (1864–1915). German neurologist. In 1906 he described the symptoms of a form of cerebral atrophy, affecting all aspects of brain function, the most common cause of senile dementia, now called Alzheimer's disease (AD). It is irreversible, shortens life expectancy and, in 2020, sufferers were estimated to number 50 million.

Amadeo (1845–1890). King of Spain 1870–73. Second son of King *Vittorio Emanuele I of Italy, he accepted election as king by the Spanish Cortes after the 1868 revolution had forced Queen *Isabella II into exile. A liberal constitution had been drawn up but after further revolts he abdicated.

Amado, Jorge (1912–2001). Brazilian novelist. Son of a plantation owner, he studied law, became a reporter, identified himself with the Left and lived

abroad for many years. His novels include *Gabriela, Clove and Cinnamon* (1958) and *Dona Fler and her two Husbands* (1966).

Amalrik, Andrei Alekseivich (1938–1980). Russian historian and playwright. He was expelled from Moscow University in 1963 for political reasons and in 1965 was sentenced to 21 years' exile for 'parasitism'. His experiences there formed the subject of his book *Involuntary Journey to Siberia* (1970). He also wrote *Will the Soviet Union Survive until 1984*? (1970). Expelled from the USSR in 1976, he was killed in a car accident.

Amanullah(Khan) (1892–1960). King of Afghanistan 1919–29. Immediately on his succession after the assassination of his father, Habibullah, Amanullah provoked a war with British India and sustained defeat. From later negotiations, however, Afghanistan emerged as a sovereign state with Amanullah as king. He lost his throne because he tried to modernise his backward state too quickly, his attempt to emancipate women being one of the most decisive causes of the revolution which overthrew him. He lived in exile after his dethronement and died in Zürich.

Amati. Italian family of violin-makers in Cremona. The most outstanding was **Nicolo Amati** (1596–1684), master of *Stradivari and *Guarneri. Others were **Andrea Amati** (c.1511–c.1580) and his sons **Antonio** (c.1540– 1638) and **Girolamo**, Nicolo's father (1561–1635). Another **Girolamo** (1649–1740) was Nicolo's son.

Ambrose, St (Ambrosius in Latin, Ambrogio in Italian) (c.339–397). Italian prelate and administrator, born in Trier. Trained as a lawyer, he was Governor of Liguria and Aemilia. When the Bishop of Milan died (371), rival factions being unable to agree on a successor, Ambrose was elected although not yet baptised. As bishop he proved to be a brilliant administrator and a courageous opponent of Arianism which the Emperor *Theodosius supported. He probably wrote the Athanasian Creed. He insisted that the Church alone was guardian of moral and religious truth and even excommunicated Theodosius for his massacre of the Thessalonians. He had an important influence on *Augustine and helped to convert him. Augustine noted that he was a silent reader, a rare phenomenon at the time. He wrote many hymns and introduced the 'Ambrosian chant' and much ritual into church services. The aphorism 'When in Rome, do as the Romans do' is attributed to him. Ambrose, with Augustine, *Gregory and *Jerome, is regarded as one of the Four Doctors of the Latin Church. The Ambrosian library at Milan is named after him.

Amenhotep. Four Egyptian pharaohs of the XVIIIth dynasty, Amenhotep III built the avenue of ram-headed sphinxes at Thebes (Karnak). For **Amenhotep** IV *see* ***Akhenaten**.

Amerigo Vespucci *see* **Vespucci, Amerigo**

Amery, Leo(pold) Charles Maurice Stennett (1873–1955). English Conservative politician, born in India. Educated at Harrow and Balliol College, Oxford, he became a journalist on *The Times,* worked in *Milner's 'Kindergarten' in South Africa and wrote a history of the Boer War. A Conservative MP 1911–45, ardent imperialist and advocate of Imperial Preference, he served as Secretary 1924–29 and Secretary of State for India and Burma 1940–45. His son **John Amery** (1912–1945) became a fascist, went to Germany in 1942, proposing a British Free Corps and made propaganda broadcasts for the Nazis. He pleaded guilty to treason and was hanged.

Amherst, Jeffrey Amherst, 1st Baron (1717–1797). British field marshal. He was chosen (1758) by *Pitt to command the force sent against the French in Canada. The spectacular capture of Québec by *Wolfe has somewhat obscured Amherst's achievement in securing all Canada for Britain in the space of two years. His nephew and successor **William Pitt Amherst, 1st Earl Amherst** (1773–1857), a diplomat, gained notoriety by his refusal to 'kowtow' to the emperor **Jiaqing** while on an embassy to China (1816). He became Governor-General of Bengal 1823–28, won success in the first Burma War and was promoted to an earldom (1826).

Amin Dada, Idi (1925–2003). Ugandan soldier and politician. He joined the British army in 1946, served in Kenya against the Mau Mau, and became commander of the Ugandan army in 1964. In 1971 the army overthrew President Milton Obote and Idi Amin became President. An economic nationalist, he expelled Uganda's Asian minority, violently suppressed his opponents and identified himself with the Arab cause. In 1979 he fled the country following the invasion of Uganda by Ugandan exiles backed by Tanzania.

Amis, Sir Kingsley William (1922–1995). English novelist, born in London. After army service he graduated from Oxford, lectured in Wales and the US and was a Fellow of Peterhouse, Cambridge 1961–63. His first novel, *Lucky Jim* (1954), established his reputation as a comic-ironic observer of contemporary provincial life. He was also a poet and a staunch advocate of science fiction. Later novels include *That Uncertain Feeling* (1955), *I Like It Here* (1958), *Jake's Thing* (1978), *Stanley and the Women* (1984) and *The Old Devils* (1986, winner of the Booker Prize). He also edited *The New Oxford Book of Light Verse* (1978). His second wife was the novelist **Elizabeth Jane Howard**. After their divorce Amis boarded with her and her husband. With age he became notoriously reactionary and choleric. His son, **Martin Amis** (1949–2023) was a novelist and essayist. His novels include *Money* (1984), *Yellow Dog* (2003), *The Pregnant Widow* (2010) and *Lionel Asbo: State of England* (2012).

Amos (fl. 780 BCE). Israelite prophet. Originally a shepherd or sheep-farmer, his denunciations of the Israelites for immorality and greed and oppression of the poor contain the implication that Jahweh (Jehovah) was not the God of Israel alone but of the whole world. The last part of the book of Amos, with its optimistic promises, is probably by another hand.

Ampère, André Marie (1775–1836). French mathematical physicist. A prodigy, largely tutored at home, he suffered profound depression after his father was guillotined in Lyon as a counter-revolutionary (1793). He later received *Napoléon's patronage and was a professor of physics at Bourg 1801–04, Lyon 1804–09, the Paris Polytechnique 1809–24 and the Collège de France 1824–36. Following *Oersted's discovery (1820) of the relationship between electricity and magnetism he became the virtual founder of electrodynamics, invented the solenoid and proposed Ampère's law. His work was taken even further by *Faraday. In 1883 *Kelvin named the unit of electric current (ampere, amp, A) for him.

Amundsen, Roald (1872–1928). Norwegian polar explorer. The first to reach the South Pole, he commanded (1903–06) the *Gjoa*, which was the first ship to navigate the Northwest Passage. In 1910, in rivalry with the British expedition, which he informed of his intention, he set out for the Antarctic and in December 1911 he reached the Pole—one month before Captain *Scott. In 1926 he flew over the North Pole in a dirigible with the Italian explorer *Nobile. He lost his life in an air search for Nobile, two years later.

Partridge, B., *Amundsen*. 1953; Huntford, R., *Scott and Amundsen*. 1979.

Anacreon (d.c.485 BCE). Greek lyric poet. His work reflects the voluptuous refinement of Ionian life. Few poems survive and he is best remembered by the Anacreontic metre to which his name is attached and in which many imitations of his style, known as *Anacreontea*, were written from the 2nd century CE.

Anastasia (1901–1918). Russian grand duchess. Daughter of Tsar *Nikolai II, it was assumed that she had been murdered with the rest of the Russian royal family at Ekaterinburg until in 1929 a German citizen named **Anna Anderson** (d 1983) claimed to be Anastasia. Her claim provoked long-lasting controversy until DNA testing indicated that she was probably a Pole, Franziska Schanzkowska. However, the remains of the royal family found in 1993 are incomplete—either Anastasia or Maria is missing.

Anaxagoras (c.500–428 BCE). Greek philosopher, born in Clazamenae, Asia Minor (now Türkiye). He lived in Athens and originated the idea that all things are composed of small particles, 'seeds' or atoms, the rearrangement of which was the cause of change, and he discovered the true cause of eclipses. He also believed that the world was flat and that the sun was a hot and glowing stone. He was prosecuted for the latter affront to the belief in the divinity of the heavenly bodies. The universe of 'seeds', he claimed, was organised into its apparent form by an all pervading mind, *nous.* He taught *Pericles, *Euripides and other illustrious Greeks.

Anaximander (610–540? BCE). Greek philosopher, born in Melitus, Asia Minor (now Türkiye). Known for his elaborate system of cosmology, he conceived the universe as a boundless mass separated into hot and cold masses from which land, sea and air were ultimately formed. Apertures in misty substances enveloping parts of the hot mass appear as sun, moon and stars. From a misunderstanding of his belief that the first human beings were born from huge fishes he has been credited with anticipating the theory of evolution.

Anaximenes of Miletus (fl. c.546 BCE). Greek philosopher, born in Miletus, Asia Minor (now Türkiye). A follower of *Anaximander, he addressed himself to the question of the original nature of all things. He believed that origin to be air, for by processes of condensation and rarefaction air could be transformed into all other things. Condensation of air produces water, and eventually earth, rarefaction of air produces fire. *Plutarch tells us that Anaximenes demonstrated this truth by experiment. If we expel air from our mouths, it becomes cold if we exhale under pressure, whereas if we open our mouths wide, it is hot. Anaximenes probably thought of air as made up of small, separate particles. He believed in the infinity of worlds, and thought that each was formed by processes of condensation and rarefaction. He thought the earth was at the centre of things, and that both the sun and moon had been formed out of fire.

Anders, Wladislaw (1892–1970). Polish general. Captured by the Russians in their invasion of Poland in 1939, he later formed an army from the Polish prisoners in Russia to fight the common enemy. In 1943 he took command of the Polish troops in Italy. In 1946 he was deprived of his nationality by the Polish Communist Government and remained in Britain as a leader of the Free Polish community.

Andersen, Hans Christian (1805–1875). Danish author, born in Odense. Son of a poor shoemaker (although King Frederick VI could have been his father), as a boy he went to Copenhagen to seek his fortune but failed as an actor and, through lack of education, was equally unsuccessful as a playwright. At this time he came under the influence and patronage of Jonas Collin, a theatre director who sent him to school and later to the University of Copenhagen. His first important literary work was published in 1828–29. From 1835 to 1857 came that flow of stories whose titles have become household words all over the world—*The Ugly Duckling, The Emperor's New Clothes*, *The Tinder Box, Thumbelina, The Red Shoes*—about 160 in all. After 1840 he

travelled in Europe and became a friend of Charles *Dickens (who found him a tedious house guest). Actively bisexual, he never married, and failed to win the love of the great singer Jenny *Lind.

Böök, F., *Hans Christian Andersen, A Biography*. 1962. Bredsdorff, E. *Hans Christian Andersen*. 1975.

Anderson, Carl David (1905–1991). American physicist. A student of R. A. *Millikan at Caltech, he specialised in the study of the cosmic rays first observed (1911–12) by V. F. *Hess. In 1932 Anderson discovered the positron (a positively charged particle of the same mass as the negatively charged electron), the existence of which had been predicted by P. A. M. *Dirac. In 1937 he established the existence of mesons (particles of mass between those of the electron and the proton), predicted in 1935 by *Yukawa Hideki. Anderson shared the 1936 Nobel Prize for Physics with Hess. He was professor of physics at Caltech 1939–76.

Anderson, Elizabeth (née Garrett) (1836–1917). English physician, born in Aldeburgh, Suffolk. A sister of Millicent *Fawcett, she studied medicine privately, having being refused university admission, and was licensed to practise in 1865 by the Society of Apothecaries. She graduated MD from the University of Paris in 1870. She worked in London at the New Hospital for Women, renamed the Elizabeth Garrett Anderson Hospital in 1918. In 1908 she became England's first woman mayor, of Aldeburgh.

Manton, J., *Elizabeth Garrett Anderson*. 1965.

Anderson, John, 1st Viscount Waverley (1882–1958). British administrator. He joined the civil service and as Undersecretary for Ireland 1919–22 was reputed to have created the 'Black and Tans'. He served as Undersecretary for Home Affairs 1922–32, Governor of Bengal 1932–37, then became a Conservative MP 1938–50. Home Secretary 1939–40, under *Churchill he was Lord President of the Council (with responsibility for research on atomic weapons) 1940–43 and Chancellor of the Exchequer 1943–45. He received the OM in 1958.

Anderson, Marian (1897–1993). American contralto, born in Philadelphia. A notable interpreter of *Brahms and *Sibelius and of African-American spirituals, it was not until 1955 that she was invited to sing at the Metropolitan Opera, New York. A delegate to the UN in 1958, she received the Congressional Medal of Honor and the Presidential Medal of Freedom.

Anderson, M., *My Lord, What a Morning*. 1957.

Anderson, Maxwell (1888–1959). American dramatist, born in Pennsylvania. Son of a Baptist minister, brought up in the Midwest, his first successful play, *What Price Glory?* (with Laurence Stallings, 1924), was concerned with front-line life in World War I. Other plays, many of which are in blank verse, include *Saturday's Children* (1927), *Both Your Houses* (Pulitzer Prize winner, 1932), *Winterset* (1935) and *High Tor* (1937).

Anderson, Sherwood (1876–1941). American writer. He held executive positions in advertising and in the paint industry, which he abandoned abruptly to devote himself to literature. His works reveal his disenchantment with the complexities of modern industrialised society. They include the short-story collection *Winesburg, Ohio* (1919) and the novels *Poor White* (1920) and *Beyond Desire* (1926).

Ando Tadao (1941–). Japanese architect, born in Osaka. Essentially self-taught, from 1973 he designed houses, museums and churches that combined beauty of line, imagination and sensitivity to landscape. He won many international awards, including the Alvo *Aalto Medal (1985) and the Pritzker Prize (1995). Most of his buildings were in Japan, but also in Paris, New York, Chicago, Fort Worth, Milan, Venice and Manchester.

Andrássy (de Csíkszentkirály et Krasznahorka)**, Gyula, Count** (1823–1890). Hungarian nobleman. He gained great influence with the emperor *Franz Joseph and was Prime Minister of Hungary 1867–71 and Foreign Minister of Austria-Hungary during the critical years 1871–79. These included the Congress of Berlin (1878), one clause of which gave Austria the administration of Bosnia and Herzegovina, thus adding to the number of Slavs within the empire. It was the fear that Russia might at some time intervene to liberate these Slavs that guided Andrássy's entire policy. He put aside all thoughts of avenging the humiliating defeat of 1866 and did everything possible to build up and strengthen the German alliance. He did much therefore to create the political pattern that led to World War I. His son, also **Gyula, Count Andrássy** (1860–1929), was Foreign Minister (1918). He tried to negotiate a separate peace for Austria-Hungary, and after 1921 attempted to restore the Habsburgs.

André of Montréal, St (Alfred Bessette) (1845–1937). Canadian Catholic Brother, born in Québec. A barber and school porter in Montréal, known as Frère André, he claimed to have had a vision of St Joseph, established a reputation as a healer and campaigned tirelessly to build the huge Oratory of St Joseph. More than 1,000,000 people attended his funeral. He was canonised in October 2010.

André, John (1751–1780). British officer. In America during the War of Independence, he was caught while negotiating with Benedict *Arnold for the betrayal of West Point, and was hanged as a spy. In 1821 his grave was opened and his remains were later reinterred in Westminster Abbey.

Andrea del Sarto (Andrea d'Agnolo di Francesco) (1486–1531). Italian painter, born in Florence. Son of a tailor, as the name suggests, he was a master of

the High Renaissance period. Some of his best work is to be found in the frescoes in the churches of the Annunciation and St Salvi in Florence. A fine example of his portraiture, *A Sculptor,* is in the National Gallery, London. Influenced by *Michelangelo, Fra *Bartolommeo and others, he had his own colour values and achieved striking effects by diffusion of light. The accuracy of his crayon drawings earned him the name of 'the faultless painter'. In 1518 he accepted an invitation to visit *François I in Paris and was commissioned to buy pictures in Italy. However, having squandered the money, he dared not return. He died of the plague. Robert *Browning's poem 'Andrea del Sarto' tells of his unhappy marriage with Lucrezia del Fede.

Andrée, Salomon Auguste (1854–1897). Swedish engineer and Polar explorer. In 1897 his second attempt (the first had been abandoned) to reach the North Pole by balloon failed. The finding of his body and those of his two companions in 1930, with diaries, revealed that the balloon had come down on the ice and that the men had reached White Island on foot.

Andreotti, Giulio (1919–2013). Italian Christian Democratic politician. A journalist, he served as a Deputy 1947–94, as a minister in innumerable governments and as Prime Minister 1972–73, 1976–79, 1989–91 and Foreign Minister 1983–89. He was attacked as symbolising the malaise of post-war Italian politics, a frequent recycling of ministers with little willingness to tackle difficult issues.

Andrew, Duke of York (Andrew Albert Christian Edward Mountbatten-Windsor) (1960–) British prince. Second son of *Elizabeth II, he served in the Royal Navy as a helicopter pilot and captain. His marriage failed and he divorced in 1996. He later came under attack for his alleged sexual offences, and withdrew from his role as a functioning member of the royal family.

Andrew, St (Andreas in Greek and Latin: the name means 'manly') (d.c.60–70). Christian apostle. With his brother *Peter he was working as a fisherman on the Sea of Galilee when he received his call. According to tradition, after *Jesus' crucifixion he preached in Scythia and was crucified on an X-shaped cross, in Patra, Greece. Patron saint of Scotland and Russia, his feast day is 30 November.

Andrewes, Lancelot (1555–1626). English prelate, born in London. Educated at Cambridge, and a gifted linguist, he became dean of Westminster in 1601. A favourite preacher of King *James I, he was one of the translators of the Authorised Version of the Bible. After being appointed bishop of Chichester (1605) and Ely (1609) he held the see of Winchester from 1618. He was the leading theologian of the High Church Party, and his *Preces privatae* (Private Prayers) witnesses his personal holiness. T. S. *Eliot drew attention to the remarkable originality and fine prose of his sermons.

Welsby, P. A., *Lancelot Andrewes*. 1958.

Andrews, Thomas (1813–1885). Irish physical chemist. He studied in Glasgow and Paris, graduated in medicine at Edinburgh but spent most of his life at his birthplace, Belfast, where he was professor of chemistry at Queen's University, from 1849 to 1879. His most important discovery was that every gas has a 'critical' temperature below which it must be cooled if it is to be liquefied by applying pressure. This discovery opened the way to the liquefaction of gases such as oxygen, nitrogen and hydrogen.

Andreyev, Leonid Nikolaivich (1871–1919). Russian short-story writer and dramatist. Originally a lawyer, he became a journalist, and was befriended by Maksim *Gorki, who influenced his style. Most of his works reveal his obsession with death, madness and sex, although he was capable of an almost surrealistic humour. His best known works are *Anathema*, *The Red Laugh*, *Seven Who Were Hanged* and *He Who Gets Slapped*. He fled to Finland after the Russian revolution (1917) and died in poverty.

Woodward, J. B., *Leonid Andreyev*. 1969; Newcombe, J., *Leonid Andreyev*. 1972.

Andric, Ivo (1892–1975). Bosnian (Yugoslav) author and diplomat. Son of an artisan family, educated in Zagreb, Krakow, Vienna and Graz, he was imprisoned by the Austrians as a nationalist and wrote his first novel, *Ex Ponto* (1918), in jail. He became a diplomat, serving in Rome and Berlin. During World War II, under German occupation, he wrote the trilogy *The Bridge on the Drina*, *Bosnian Story* and *Young Miss*, all published in 1945 but not translated into English until 1959. He was awarded the 1961 Nobel Prize for Literature for his 'epic power'.

Andropov, Yuri Vladimirovich (1914–1984). Russian Communist politician, born in Stavropol. The son of a railway worker, he was a Volga boatman briefly, rose through the Komsomol and joined the CPSU in 1939 to become a party functionary in Karelia and Moscow. He was Ambassador to Hungary 1953–57 (helping to suppress the 1956 revolt), Chairman of the KGB 1967–82, and a member of the Politburo 1973–84. On *Brezhnev's death (November 1982) he succeeded him as First Secretary of the CPSU and President of the USSR. Determined to reform the Soviet system, he was terminally ill and unable to effect major change before his death in January 1984. The succession went initially to a Brezhnev supporter, *Chernenko, instead of Andropov's protégé *Gorbachev.

Angelico, Fra ('Angelic brother', né Guido di Petri) (c.1395–1455). Italian painter, born near Fiesole, Tuscany. A Dominican mendicant friar from 1417, known as Giovanni di Fiesole, his paintings, mostly frescoes, about 40 of which survive, all in a simple direct style, are of religious subjects. In 1443 he was summoned by the pope to work in the Vatican. The name by which he is now known comes from the

unearthly beauty of his angelic figures. The largest collection is in the Museo di San Marco, Florence (his own convent). He was beatified in 1982 by Pope *John Paul II.

Pope-Hennessy, J., *Fra Angelico*. 2nd ed. 1974.

Angell, Sir (Ralph) **Norman** (originally Lane) (1872–1967). English journalist and politician. His book *The Great Illusion* (1910), which showed that war was as disastrous for the victor as for the conquered, had an enormous influence, and won him the Nobel Prize for Peace (1933). He was a founder of the Union of Democratic Control (1914) and a Labour MP 1929–31.

Angell, N., *After All*. 1951.

Angerstein, John Julius (1735–1823). British merchant and philanthropist, born in Russia. A Lloyd's underwriter, his 38 paintings (including works by *Raphael, *Rembrandt, *Rubens, *Claude, *Hogarth) became, with the encouragement of *George IV, the nucleus of the National Gallery collection.

Anglesey, 1st Marquess of, Henry William Paget (1768–1854). British field marshal, born in London. Son of the Earl of Uxbridge, he was an MP 1790–96, 1796–1804, 1806–10, served in the Peninsula War under *Wellington, commanded the Anglo-Belgian cavalry at Waterloo 1815 where he lost a leg, and became Master General of the Ordnance 1827–28, 1846–52. Twice Lord Lieutenant of Ireland 1828–29, 1830–33, he was a moderate reformer, sympathetic to Catholic emancipation.

Ångström, Anders Jonas (1814–1874). Swedish physicist. He studied, lectured and in 1858 became professor of physics at Uppsala University. He made extensive studies of the spectra of the sun's light and of the Aurora Borealis. In this work he expressed wavelengths of light in a unit equal to one hundred millionth of a centimetre. This unit, now called the 'angstrom', has been generally adopted for spectroscopic measurements.

Anna Ivanovna (1693–1740). Empress of Russia 1730–40. A niece of *Peter the Great, she became Empress on the death of *Peter II. Having been a neglected and unloved child, she grew up to be a coarse and ignorant woman. On ascending the throne she gave herself up entirely to pleasure, leaving affairs of state to her lover, Ernst Johann von *Biron, who was detested by her subjects.

Longworth, P., *Three Empresses*. 1972.

Annan, Kofi Atta (1938–2018). Ghanaian administrator. Son of a chief, educated in the US and Switzerland, he joined the UN in 1962 and became Undersecretary for Peacekeeping Operations 1994–97. He married a niece of Raoul *Wallenberg and succeeded Boutros *Boutros-Ghali as Secretary-General 1997–2006. In February 1998 he averted a second Gulf War by persuading *Saddam Hussein to accept closer UN inspection of weapon storage in Iraq. He shared the 2001 Nobel Peace Prize with the UN but failed to prevent the US invasion of Iraq in 2003. Appointed as UN mediator in Syria, he resigned in frustration in 2012.

Anne (née Stuart, by marriage Oldenburg) (1665–1714). Queen of England, Scotland and Ireland 1702–14, from 1707 of Great Britain and Ireland. She was the first to rule over the United Kingdom of Great Britain, created by the Act of Union (with Scotland) in 1707. The second daughter of the future *James II by his first wife Anne Hyde, she was born in Westminster and raised, with her sister *Mary, as an Anglican on instructions from her uncle *Charles II. In 1683 she married **Prince George** (Jørgen) **of Denmark** (1653–1708) by whom she had 17 pregnancies: of five live births, only one child survived infancy, **Prince William, Duke of Gloucester** (1689–1700), who was hydrocephalic.

In 1701 the Act of Settlement provided that if Anne, the heir-presumptive to her brother-in-law *William III, died without heirs, the succession must pass to a non-Catholic; this excluded Anne's half brother James Edward *Stuart in favour of *Sophia, Electress of Hanover and her (Lutheran) descendants.

The earlier years of her reign, under Whig rule, were influenced by her favourite, Sarah Churchill, Duchess of Marlborough, enhanced by *Marlborough's victories in the War of the Spanish Succession. This period ended when Anne, whose natural affinity was with the Tories, having quarrelled with the Marlboroughs, appointed Robert *Harley to head her government in 1710. Anne was the last sovereign to veto an act of Parliament (the Scottish Militia Bill, 1708), but she acted on ministerial advice. Her new favourite, Mrs **Abigail Masham** (née Hill) (c.1670–1730), was a cousin of both Sarah Churchill and Harley. An active promoter of the arts, Anne had been a patron of *Purcell and, later, *Händel, encouraged public gardens, and her reign was marked by distinguished architecture (*Vanburgh) and literature (*Pope, *Addison, *Swift, *Defoe). Anne suffered agonies from gout, found it difficult to walk, became morbidly obese, drank heavily, and may also have had lupus and diabetes. She died of a stroke and was buried in a square coffin. She was succeeded by her second cousin *George I, Elector of Hanover, son of Sophia.

Gregg, E., *Queen Anne*. 1984; Somerset, A., *Queen Anne: The Politics of Passion*. 2012; Winn, J. A., *Queen Anne. Patroness of Arts*. 2014.

Anne (Anne Elizabeth Alice Louise Mountbatten-Windsor) (1950–). British Princess Royal. Second child of Queen *Elizabeth II, she married Captain Mark Phillips in 1973 and, after a divorce, married Commander Timothy Laurence in 1992. One of the most active royals, she was an accomplished horse

rider, member of the British Olympic team in 1976 and toured constantly in support of the Save the Children Fund. She was an Admiral, General and Air Chief Marshal.

Anne (Boleyn) (1501/7–1536). English queen consort 1533–36. Her father, **Sir Thomas Boleyn**, later **1st Earl of Wiltshire** (c.1477–1539), was a diplomat, her mother daughter of the 2nd Duke of Norfolk. There is continuing controversy about her birth year. Educated in the Netherlands and France, her sister **Mary Boleyn** (c.1499/1500–1543), had been mistress both to *François I and to *Henry VIII. Following the failure of *Katherine of Aragon to produce a male heir, Henry began the process of having his marriage annulled and determined on Anne as his second wife. She married Henry in January 1533, was crowned Queen in June, and in September was created Marquess (sic) of Pembroke in her own right and gave birth to the future *Elizabeth I. She strongly supported Thomas *Cranmer and evangelical reform in the church. Once Henry had determined to marry *Jane Seymour, Henry had her beheaded for adultery, incest (with her brother) and high treason. Five men, including her brother **George Boleyn, 2nd Viscount Rochford** (1504–1536), were also executed for adultery and treason. The trial and execution of all six was a travesty, driven by Henry's paranoia about gossip, and when her daughter Elizabeth became queen in 1558, Anne was regarded as a martyr.

Chapman, H., *Anne Boleyn*. 1974.

Anne of Austria (née Ana Maria Mauricia de Austria y Austria) (1601–1666). French queen consort 1615–43 and regent 1643–51. Daughter of *Felipe III of Spain, she was married to *Louis XIII of France. After her husband's death she became regent for her son *Louis XIV but allowed all power to rest with her lover (or even husband?) Cardinal *Mazarin. *Dumas in his *The Three Musketeers* tells the story of the alleged romance between her and George Villiers, Duke of *Buckingham.

Anne of Brittany (Anne de Bretagne) (1477–1514). Duchess of Brittany 1488–1514 and French queen consort 1491–98, 1499–1514. She broke her betrothal to the future emperor *Maximilian and married two successive French kings—*Charles VIII (1491) and *Louis XII (1499). Her daughter Claude married the future *François I. She was a patron of artists and poets.

Anne of Cleves (Anna von Kleve) (1515–1557). English queen consort 1540. Born in Düsseldorf, her father, Johann, Duke of Cleves, was a Protestant follower of *Erasmus. Anne became the fourth wife of *Henry VIII of England in 1540. Henry had been guided by political reasons and encouraged by a flattering portrait, but they lacked a common language, he found her unattractive and the unconsummated marriage was annulled six months later. Henry blamed Thomas *Cromwell, who had recommended the match. He was arrested and speedily executed. However, Anne was allowed to live in England in comfortable seclusion.

Annigoni, Pietro (1910–1988). Italian artist. His delicately flattering portraits of Queen *Elizabeth and others won him an important niche in British social life. This partly obscures work in other styles which can be seen, e.g. in the Modern Art Gallery in Milan. In his work he revived Renaissance techniques.

Anning, Mary (1799–1847). English fossil collector, born in Lyme Regis, Dorset. She collected, identified and sold fossils, from the Jurassic era, found near her birthplace, including the first ichthyosaur and plesiosaur, some marine reptiles and fossil fish. She identified the significance of coprolites. She was a lifelong friend of Henry *De La Beche, and William *Buckland organised a civil list pension. Women were excluded from the Geological Society until 1904. In 2010 the Royal Society recognised her as one of the 10 most significant women in British science.

Annunzio, Gabriele d' *see* **D'Annunzio, Gabriele**

Anouilh, Jean (1910–1987). French dramatist, born in Bordeaux. His plays vary from historical reconstruction e.g. *L'Alouette* (1953, *The Lark*), his version of the *Joan of Arc theme, and *Becket* (1959) to comedy or farce, e.g. *L'Invitation au Chateau* (1947, translated by Christopher Fry as *Ring Round the Moon*) and *The Waltz of the Toreadors* (1952). In 1949 his film *M. Vincent* was awarded the Grand Prix du Cinema Français. Anouilh, whose witty, sophisticated and elegant manner conceals a deep underlying pessimism, handles ingenious plots with a superb sense of stagecraft.

Marsh, E. G., *Jean Anouilh*, 1953; Pronco, L. C., *The World of Jean Anouilh*. 1961.

Anselm, St (c.1033–1109). Italian theologian and prelate, born at Aosta, northern Italy. As his father objected to his becoming a monk it was not until c.1059 that he reached Lanfranc's abbey at Bec, in Normandy, of which in 1078 he eventually became abbot. *Lanfranc, who had become Archbishop of Canterbury, died in 1089, and the see was left vacant until Anselm was appointed in 1093. His opposition to *William Rufus' depredations of the church led to his exile in 1097. He returned at the request of *Henry I in 1100 but while on the Continent he had become a convinced opponent of lay investiture and refused to do homage to Henry for his bishopric. This led to a further period of exile, but eventually in 1107 a compromise was reached. Anselm, the leading theologian of his age, put forward the theory that faith and reason are not incompatible, he also advanced the 'ontological argument' that the very fact that man

can conceive the existence of a supreme omnipotent Being must mean that such a Being exists. He was canonised in 1494.

Ansermet, Ernest (1883–1969). Swiss musician. He taught mathematics at the University of Lausanne, became a conductor with *Diaghilev's Ballets Russes 1915–23 and founded the Orchestre de la Suisse Romande (OSR) in Geneva (1918), remaining its chief conductor until 1967. He excelled in *Debussy, *Ravel, *Stravinsky, *Bartók and *Honegger and made many recordings. Suspected of anti-Semitism, he refused to perform *Schoenberg.

Anson, George Anson, 1st Baron (1697–1762). English sailor. On the outbreak of war with Spain (1740) he was sent in command of six ships, with orders to inflict as much damage on Spanish trade and colonies as possible. Nearly four years later he returned with only one ship but £500,000 of treasure, having sailed round the world. He received his peerage during the war of Austrian succession for a great victory (1747) over the French off Cape Finisterre. Coin worth £300,000 was found aboard the six prizes taken.

Anthony, (John) **Doug**(las) (1929–2020). Australian National Party politician, born in Murwillumbah. Three generations of the Anthony family were elected to the House of Representatives. He succeeded his father as MHR for Richmond 1957–84, became a minister in 1964, serving as Leader of the National Party 1971–84 and Deputy Prime Minister 1971–72 and 1975–83. He received a CH in 1981.

Anthony, Susan B(rownell) (1820–1906). American campaigner, born in Adams, Mass. From a Quaker abolitionist family, she became a teacher, working for temperance and against slavery. She devoted herself to the cause of female voting and founded the National American Women Suffrage Association in 1892.

Antigonus I ('Monophthalmos' or 'Cyclops' i.e. one-eyed) (c.382–301 BCE). King of Macedonia 306–301 BCE. One of *Alexander the Great's generals and successors (*diadochi*), he ruled first in Phrygia, then gained Lydia, Pamphilia and Asia Minor. He tried to unite Alexander's empire but was fought by a coalition of the other *diadochi* until his defeat and death at the battle of Ipsus.

Antiochus. Greek kings of the Seleucid (*Seleucus) dynasty which ruled Syria 312–64 BCE. **Antiochus III** ('the Great') (242–187 BCE), ruled 223–187, came into conflict with Rome, sheltered *Hannibal but was eventually forced to accept onerous terms. His son **Antiochus IV** ('Epiphanes' i.e. God Manifest) (c.215–164 BCE), ruled 175–164. By attempting to substitute the Greek gods for Judaism, he kindled the patriotic rising of the Maccabees (Maccabaeus). By defeating **Antiochus XIII** ('Asiaticus') (d.64 BCE), the last of the Seleucids, *Pompey was enabled to make Syria a Roman province.

Antipater (c.397–c.319 BCE). Macedonian general. Friend and advisor of *Alexander the Great, he was made regent of Macedonia (334) during Alexander's absence in Asia and after his death ruled all Greece, without claiming a kingdom for himself.

Antonello da Messina (c.1430–1479). Sicilian painter, born in Messina. He was greatly influenced by the techniques of the Flemish painters, especially the van *Eycks. His surviving paintings are mostly portraits distinguished by a virtuoso style. His works influenced the Venetians, notably Giovanni *Bellini.

Antonescu, Ion (1882–1946). Romanian general and politician. After King *Carol II had been forced to abdicate (1940), he assumed dictatorial powers. Under his rule Romania fought as Germany's ally against Russia in World War II with the result that after the Russian victory he was overthrown and two years later executed.

Antoninus Pius (Titus Fulvius Aelius Hadrianus Antoninus Augustus Pius) (86–161). Roman Emperor 138–61. One of the 'Five Good Emperors' in the *Nerva-Antonine dynasty, he succeeded *Hadrian, who had adopted him as his heir. He governed with ability and his reign was remarkably happy and peaceful. During his reign Roman control in Britain was extended northwards from Hadrian's Wall, and the Antonine Wall was constructed, from 142, between the Forth to the Clyde. His daughter, Faustina, married *Marcus Aurelius.

Antonioni, Michelangelo (1912–2007). Italian film director, born in Ferrara. He studied economics in Bologna, became a journalist, film critic, script writer and documentary film maker. His feature films include *L'Avventura* (1960), *Blow-up* (1967), *Zabriskie Point* (1969) and *The Passenger* (1974).

Cameron, I. and Word, R., *Antonioni*. 1970.

Antony (Abbot) ('the Great'), **St** (c.250–355). Egyptian hermit, born in Koman, Upper Egypt. His family was Christian and for 20 years he lived an ascetic life in the desert and is said to have been tormented by temptation, as depicted by Hieronymus *Bosch, Matthias *Grunewald and others. Many anchorites followed his example and in this sense he may be said to have initiated the monastic system. In the great theological controversy of the time he opposed Arianism.

Antony, Mark (Marcus Antonius) (c.82–30 BCE). Roman soldier and politician. An early supporter of *Caesar, he fought under him with distinction in Gaul and against *Pompey, but it was after Caesar's death that, by exploiting the popular indignation, he was able to rise to greatness. With Caesar's heir Octavian

and *Lepidus, a figure of comparatively minor importance, he formed a ruling triumvirate and it was mainly due to Antony's skill that the assassins, *Brutus and *Cassius, and their supporters, who had been forced to leave Italy, were decisively defeated at Philippi in Macedonia (42). After some dissension Octavian and Antony, Lepidus being tacitly ignored, agreed to separate their spheres of power, Octavian to rule Italy and the west, Antony over Asia and Africa, which included Egypt, where *Cleopatra ruled in alliance with Rome. To cement the agreement Antony left Cleopatra to marry Octavian's sister Octavia. Unfortunately this marriage did not last. Egypt's resources were necessary for a war against Parthia and so, with self-interest and affection in convenient accord, Antony became openly the lover of Cleopatra and after the failure of the Parthian war lived with her in the state and style of an independent oriental monarch. His divorce of Octavia (32) immediately brought on the clash with Octavian which was in any case inevitable. A year of shapeless and indecisive struggle ended with the complete destruction of the fleets of Antony and Cleopatra at Actium (3l). In the following year Octavian invaded Egypt. Defeated outside Alexandria, Antony committed suicide and Cleopatra, after the failure of negotiations, followed his example. The triumphant Octavian was to become the emperor *Augustus.

Tarn, W. and Charlesworth, M., *Octavian, Antony and Cleopatra*. 1965.

Antony of Padua, St (1195–1231). Portuguese religious, born in Lisbon. One of the most famous preachers of the Middle Ages, he was a Franciscan friar who spent most of his working life in Italy. It was said that he preached to the fishes when man refused to listen. Miracles at his tomb at Padua caused immediate canonisation. In art he often appears with a lily and the Christ Child in his arms.

Anwar (bin) **Ibrahim** (1947–). Malaysian politician, born in Penang. He served in governments led by *Mahathir bin Mohamed, and was Education Minister 1986–91, Finance Minister 1991–98, Deputy Prime Minister 1993–98 and an absentee President of the UNESCO General Assembly 1989–91. Widely read and scholarly, he broke with Mahathir but was arrested and subjected to police brutality (1998), convicted of sedition and sodomy, after trials that attracted international condemnation, and jailed 1999–2004. He founded the Peoples' Justice Party and became Leader of the Opposition 2008–15, but was convicted of sodomy again and imprisoned. His party formed an unlikely alliance with Mahathir and their combined forces succeeded in defeating *Najib Razak, accusing him of corruption. Anwar was freed and pardoned (May 2018) on the understanding that he would succeed Mahathir as Prime Minister. Although this deal collapsed, Anwar ran for office in the next general election and became Prime Minister 2022– .

Apollinaire, Guillaume (Wilhelm Apollinaris de Kostrowitzky) (1880–1918). French poet, born in Rome. Of Polish descent, as a leader of the avant-garde, he helped to define Cubism, joined the Dadaists, and is said to have invented the term Surrealism. His volumes of poems *Alcools* (1913) and *Calligrammes* (1918), his play *Les Mamelles de Tirésias* (1918, later an opera by *Poulenc) and his novel *Le Poète assassiné* (1916) are among his best known works. He died of wounds in World War I.

Bates, S., *Guillaume Apollinaire*. 1967; Adema, M., *Guillaume Apollinaire*. 2nd ed. 1968.

Apollodorus of Damascus (d.c.149). Greek architect. Chief architect and engineer of the Roman emperor, Trajan, he built the Odeum, Gymnasium and Forum in Rome. *Trajan's Column, with its banded relief sculptures, was an architectural novelty planned by him. His bluntness of speech in professional matters is said to have led to his banishment and execution by Trajan's successor, *Hadrian.

Apollonius of Perga (c.262–190 BCE). Greek mathematician, born probably in Perga, Asia Minor. The greatest student of 'conic sections' in antiquity, almost nothing is known of his life, but several of his works survive. One of his main concerns was with generating curves. He pioneered new modes of generating curves which had the advantage of rendering it easier to solve traditional conic problems (e.g. calculating areas) by geometrical means. His work in this field became canonical. Apollonius also wrote a tract on applied optics and was apparently famous for his astronomical studies, where he used his rigorous geometrical approach to solve the problem of the motions of the planets. He may have produced solar and lunar tables, and seems to have calculated that the moon lies about 600,000 miles distant from the earth.

Apollonius of Rhodes (b.c.295 BCE). Greek poet and librarian. He composed the 6,000-line epic *Argonautica*, the story of Jason's voyage from Greece to Georgia in the *Argo* to retrieve the Golden Fleece. The story predates the Trojan War (about 1300 BCE). Apollonius was head of the library in Alexandria, then retired to Rhodes.

Appel, Karel Christian (1921–2006). Dutch painter. A co-founder (1948) of the CoBrA (Copenhagen, Brussels, Amsterdam) group of abstract expressionists, his powerful works were marked by vivid colour, and thick, almost sculptured, impasto. He won prizes at the Biennales in Venice 1953 and São Paulo 1959.

Appia, Adolphe (1862–1928). Swiss musician and theorist of scenic design. While studying music at Bayreuth he was struck by the disparity between the music and the stage settings. In his book *Music and Staging* (1899) he attacked the conventional painted scenery and suggested three-dimensional sets based on linear constructions, e.g. staircase, ramp. His theories and productions based on

them (e.g. *Tristan und Isolde* at La Scala, Milan, in 1923) have, with those of Gordon *Craig, had a revolutionary effect on theatrical design.

Appleton, Sir Edward Victor (1892–1965). English physicist, born in Bradford. He studied at the Cavendish Laboratory, Cambridge under *Thomson and *Rutherford and specialised in the study of long distance radio waves and their reflections in the upper atmosphere. An ionised region which could cause this reflection had been predicted by *Heaviside, and in 1924 Appleton demonstrated the existence of such a region (the Heaviside Layer) at a height of about 60 miles. A higher reflecting region discovered later is called the Appleton Layer. Secretary of the Department of Scientific and Industrial Research (DSIR) 1939–49, he received the Nobel Prize for Physics in 1947 and was Vice Chancellor of Edinburgh University 1949–65.

Apuleius, Lucius (fl. c.160). Latin author, born in Africa. Educated at Carthage and Athens, he travelled widely in his youth and was able to put his experiences to good account in the most famous of his works, the scandalous and amusing novel *The Golden Ass*. The main theme concerns a young man turned into an ass for witchcraft, and among the episodes are the legend of Cupid and Psyche. The youth is restored to human shape by the Egyptian goddess, Isis, whose initiate Apuleius had probably become. In the light of his novel it is interesting that Apuleius himself was accused by the family of his wealthy wife, **Pudentilla**, of influencing her by magic. His successful defence (*De magia*) survives.

Aquaviva, Claudio (1543–1615). Italian cleric. As fifth general of the Society of Jesus (from 1581) he composed the *Ratio studiorum*, the basis of Jesuit education. He showed great diplomatic finesse especially in relation to the French Huguenots.

Aquinas, St Thomas (c.1225–1274). German-Sicilian theologian and philosopher, born near Aquino, Italy. He became a Dominican and, despite family opposition, left Italy to study theology in Paris and later under *Albertus Magnus at Cologne. Although nicknamed by fellow students 'The Dumb Ox', he is now considered to have been the greatest systematic theologian of the Catholic Church. Except for study in Italy (1259–68) he worked and taught in Paris (1252–72). Influenced by the philosophy of *Aristotle, he based his vast and clearly argued theology, now known as Thomism, upon it. He defended human reason as a source of knowledge of the natural world and also attempted to reconcile reason and faith. He opposed the claim that a belief could be philosophically false but theologically true, and set out five proofs of the existence of God. After his death his work was decried by the Franciscans for its debt to pagan Aristotle, but it remains today an enthusiastically studied theology. Aquinas died on his way to the Council of Lyon and was proclaimed a saint in 1323 and a doctor of the Church in 1567. His remains are in Toulouse. Of his many writings, *Summa theologica* is the most comprehensive exposition of his system.

Foster, K. (ed.), *The Life of St Thomas Aquinas*. 1959; Turner, D., *Thomas Aquinas: A Portrait*. 2013.

Aquino, (Maria) **Corazon** (Sumulong, née Cojuangco) (1933–2009). Filipina politician. Born to a wealthy and powerful family, she married **Benigno Aquino** (1932–1983) in 1964. A potential presidential candidate against Ferdinand *Marcos, he was arrested in 1972, sentenced to death and kept in prison for eight years. After his return from the US in August 1983 he was murdered at Manila airport. Officers accused of complicity in the assassination were later acquitted. In 1986 Corazon Aquino contested the presidential election against Marcos who was declared the winner after a fraudulent poll. The withdrawal of US, Church and military support from Marcos led to a virtually bloodless coup and Mrs Aquino took office (February 1986). In 1992 she was succeeded by Fidel *Ramos. Her son, **Benigno Simeon Cojuangco Aquino III** (1960–2021), known as Noynoy, was President 2010–16.

Arafat, Yasser (1929–2004). Palestinian politician, born in Jerusalem. Educated as an engineer at Cairo University, he became Chairman of the Palestine Student Federation, and in Kuwait trained Palestinian commandos. He rose to the leadership of the Al Fatah commando group and in 1968 was elected chairman of the Palestine Liberation Organisation, claiming credit for later acts of terrorism against Israel. Arafat's moderate wing of the PLO agreed to a peace settlement with Israel in the Gaza strip and the West Bank (September 1993). He shared the 1994 Nobel Peace Prize with Yitzhak *Rabin and Shimon *Peres. However, continuing acts of terrorism and *interfada* resistance to Jewish settlements on the West Bank led to a virtual war, and under Ariel *Sharon, Israeli troops occupied Palestinian cities (April 2002) and held Arafat in effective detention. He died in France and was buried in Egypt.

Arago, Dominique François Jean (1786–1853). French physicist and politician, born at Perpignan. He was educated at Toulouse and Paris, where he became (1804) secretary to the Observatory. Sent in 1806 to measure an arc of the meridian between Barcelona and the Balearics, he was arrested as a spy when war broke out between France and Spain. On his release he became a member of, and later secretary of, the Académie des Sciences and (1830–50) was director of the Observatory. He helped to confirm the wave theory of light and discovered several important electromagnetic effects. In politics he was a man of the left and took part in the revolution that deposed *Charles X in 1830. He was a deputy 1830–51 and Minister of War in the government that in 1848

abolished slavery in the French empire. In 1852 he refused to take the oath of allegiance to *Napoléon III.

Aragon, Louis (1897–1982). French poet, novelist and essayist. An early Dadaist and later a Surrealist he turned to political activities and joined the Communist Party (1930). He was decorated for war service (1940). Among the best known of his works are *Les Beaux Quartiers* (1936), for which he was awarded the Prix Renaudet, and *Les Voyageurs de l'Imperiale* (1943), published in English as *Passengers of Destiny*. He also wrote some notable war poems.

Roy, C., *Aragon***.** 1945; Juin, H., *Aragon*. 1960.

Aram, Eugene (1704–1759). English philologist, teacher and murderer, born in Yorkshire. Largely self-educated, he ran his own school and pursued philological studies, arguing that Celtic was an Indo-European language. He was convicted of murdering a friend, Daniel Clark, and hanged at York. This murder and its discovery were the subject of Thomas Hood's poem *The Dream of Eugene Aram* and Bulwer *Lytton's novel *Eugene Aram.*

Arbatov, Georgiy Arkadyevich (1923–2010). Russian academician and administrator. He worked in publishing, the CPSU secretariat and the Academy of Sciences, and as Director of the Institute of US and Canadian Studies (ISKAN) 1967–95, played an important role in opening up Soviet political life and was an architect of *perestroika*. He advised Mikhail *Gorbachev and Boris *Yeltsin.

Arbuthnot, John (1667–1735). Scottish physician and author. After an Oxford education he became an MD at St Andrews (1696). Settling in London he was elected FRS in 1704. An urgent summons to attend the prince consort, George of Denmark, resulted in his becoming physician to Queen *Anne. With literary as well as scientific tastes he became a close friend of *Pope and *Swift, was the chief author of the *Memoirs of Martinus Scriblerus* and wrote the *History of John Bull* (1712).

Arcadius (377–408). Eastern Roman Emperor 383–408. Son of *Theodosius I, he inherited the eastern portion of the empire, while the western part was assigned to his younger brother Honorius. His reign at Constantinople marks the permanent separation of the two parts of the Roman world and so the beginning of what came to be known as the Byzantine Empire.

Archer, Jeffrey, **Baron Archer of Weston-super-Mare** (1940–). English novelist and politician. Educated at Oxford and a Conservative MP 1969–74, he wrote a series of successful novels to stave off bankruptcy, became a life peer in 1992 and was imprisoned for perjury 2001–03.

Archer, William (1856–1924). British journalist, critic and dramatist, born in Perth, Scotland. Educated at Edinburgh University, he worked in London, translated *Ibsen's plays and promoted Bernard *Shaw. His melodrama *The Green Goddess* (1921) was a great commercial success.

Archimedes of Syracuse (287–212 BCE). Greek mathematician and physicist, born in Syracuse, Sicily. He studied in Alexandria and made many discoveries, notably in mechanics and hydrostatics. He deduced the laws of levers, devised the compound pulley, and invented the Archimedian Screw still widely used in preindustrial societies for raising water. He is best known, however, for his statement of the principle (Archimedes' Principle) that a body immersed in a fluid appears to lose weight equal to the weight of the liquid it displaces. He thus discovered the property known as specific gravity. In mathematics he calculated the value of π (pi) to a close approximation and discovered the correct formula for the area of a parabola. His ingenious war machines enabled Syracuse to hold out for three years against the Roman besiegers but on its fall (212) Archimedes was slain, in spite of orders by the Roman general that he should be spared. A moon crater and mountain range are named for him.

Dijksterhuis, E. J., *Archimedes*. 1956; Simms, D. L., *Archimedes the Engineer*. 1995; Gow, M., *Archimedes. The Father of Mathematics*. 2005.

Archipenko, Aleksandr Porfirievich (1887–1964). Russian sculptor. His technique followed the same trends as those set by the Cubist painters. A gradual simplification of human contours brought him to the point of expressing the nude figure entirely in geometrical shapes.

Archipenko, A., *Archipenko: Fifty Creative Years, 1908–1958*. 1960; Karshan, D. H. (ed.), *Archipenko: International Visionary*. 1970.

Arcimboldo, Giuseppe (1527–1593). Italian painter, born in Milan. He designed stained glass for Milan Cathedral, then became court painter to *Maximilian I and *Rudolf II in Prague. A Mannerist, his grotesque assemblages of faces and bodies made up of fruits, animals or objects influenced Surrealists in the 20th century.

Ardashir *see* **Artaxerxes**

Ardern, Dame Jacinda Kate Laurell (1980–). New Zealand Labour politician, born in Hamilton. Raised as a Mormon, educated at the University of Waikato, she was a protégé of, and staffer for, Helen *Clark. She was elected MP 2008– , Deputy Leader 2017 and, after six months, Leader of the Labour Party 2017–23. With the support of the Greens and Winston *Peters' New Zealand First Party, she became Prime Minister 2017–23. She gave birth in 2018, an exceptional event for a government leader.

Her empathic and measured response to the massacre of 50 people at two mosques in Christchurch in March 2019 gained her international praise, as did her early response to Covid.

Duff, M., *Jacinda Ardern*. 2019.

Arendt, Hannah (1906–1975). American political philosopher, born in Germany. A student of Karl *Jaspers and lover of Martin *Heidegger (1924–28), she left Germany in 1933, working first in France, then the US from 1941. Her books included *The Origins of Totalitarianism* (1951), *The Human Condition* (1958), *Eichmann in Jerusalem: A Report on the Banality of Evil* (1963) and *On Violence* (1970).

Arensky, Anton Stepanovich (1861–1906). Russian composer and pianist. He is now mainly remembered for his Piano Trio in D minor (1894) and String Quartet No. 2, incorporating *Variations on a Theme of Tchaikovsky*, for violin, viola and two cellos (1894). He taught *Scriabin and *Rachmaninoff and drank himself to death in Finland. An Antarctic glacier is named for him.

Aretino, Pietro (1492–1556). Italian writer and wit, born at Arezzo. Living in Rome and Venice, he became known as 'the scourge of princes', and by a mixture of flattery and literary blackmail won patronage from such formidable characters as *François I of France and the emperor *Charles V. His vivacious and satiric dialogues, plays and verses are of great value to the social historian.

Argerich, Martha (1941–). Argentinian pianist, of Catalan-Jewish descent, born in Buenos Aires. A pupil of *Michelangeli, she developed an extraordinarily powerful technique, toured extensively and made many recordings. Her extensive repertoire excluded the sonatas of *Beethoven and *Schubert. She preferred *Ravel to *Debussy and collaborative performances to solo recitals.

Argyll, 1st Marquess and 8th Earl of, Archibald Campbell (1607–1661). Scottish nobleman. The Campbells of Lochow were strong supporters of the Reformation and the Covenant. During the Civil War he raised an army against *Charles I but after early defeats by the Royalist forces under *Montrose, became ruler of Scotland after 1645. He collaborated with *Cromwell, although opposing Charles' execution, then invited the future *Charles II to Scotland and crowned him at Scone (1651). Never trusted, he was beheaded after the Restoration. His son **Archibald Campbell, 9th Earl** (1629–1685), was also sentenced to death in 1661 but worked with Charles II after his reprieve. He opposed *James II, sympathised with *Monmouth and the Rye House conspirators and was executed without trial. His son **Archibald Campbell, 10th Earl and 1st Duke of Argyll** (1658–1703), joined *William of Orange in Holland and was active in the Glorious Revolution in 1688. His son, **John Campbell, 2nd Duke of Argyll and 1st Duke of Greenwich** (1680–1743) helped to secure the union of 1707, fought under *Marlborough, supported the Hanoverian succession and was created field marshal (1736).

Arias Sanchez, Oscar (1941–). Costa Rican politician. Educated in England, he was President of Costa Rica 1986–90, 2006–10 and won the 1987 Nobel Peace Prize for his work in settling differences with El Salvador, Guatemala, Honduras and Nicaragua.

Ariès, Philippe (1914–1984). French historian. A public servant, he was essentially an amateur, who made original contributions to the study of attitudes to death and also to the study of childhood, a concept which, he argued, developed as late as the 17th century.

Arinze, Francis (1932–). Nigerian cardinal. Baptised in 1941, he was ordained priest 1958, became a bishop in 1965 at the very early age of 32, Archbishop of Onitsha 1967–85 and became a cardinal in 1985. He was Prefect of the Congregation for Divine Worship and the Discipline of the Sacraments, in Rome, 2002–08.

Ariosto, Ludovico (1474–1533). Italian epic poet, born in Reggio Emilia. He came of a good family of Ferrara and was intended for the law, but gained little from five years at the city's university. His father now secured employment for him with the d'Este family then ruling Ferrara. He served Cardinal Ippolito 1503–17 and his brother Duke Alfonso 1518–22. Here he found the literary background which helped inspire his great epic *Orlando Furioso*. Orlando is the Roland of the Charlemagne legends and in form the work is the continuation of (but far superior to) Boiardo's *Orlando Innamorato*. Ariosto's poem continues the story of Angelica, the beautiful princess of Cathay who has been carried off to the court of Charlemagne, then engaged in a war with the Saracens. In the new poem Angelica escapes, Orlando, who is in love with her, forgets his duties and pursues, but discovers her married to a Moorish youth, with whom she is idyllically in love. He becomes a raving madman (*furioso*) but eventually returns to sanity and duty and overcomes and kills the Saracen king. Nothing else of Ariosto's work compares with this great epic. Late in life he loved and married Alessandra Benucci and his last years were spent happily with her and in revising his poems.

Aristarchus of Samos (c.310–230 BCE). Greek astronomer. He taught at Alexandria and held the then unacceptable view that the earth and other planets revolve around the sun. Aristarchus was the first astronomer on record to estimate (crudely) the relative sizes of the sun and moon and their distance from earth.

Aristide, Jean-Bertrand (1953–). Haitian politician and priest. Elected President of Haiti in a free election in October 1991, he was deposed by the army and

restored only after a UN backed invasion by US forces (September 1994). In February 1996 he handed power over to his elected successor, **René Préval**.

Aristides (known as 'the Just') (c.530–468 BCE). Athenian leader. He distinguished himself against the Persians at the battle of Marathon (490) but was exiled by his fellow citizens (one of whom was alleged to have said that he was tired of hearing him called 'the Just'), probably for opposing the bold naval policy of *Themistocles. He was allowed to return, held a command at Salamis (480), and led the Athenians to victory against the Persians at Phataea (479). He played a major part in the formation of the Delian league for united action against the Persians.

Aristophanes (c.448–c.388 BCE). Athenian dramatist. One of the greatest writers of comedy, his plays have remained popular and are still frequently revived. Little is known of his life and of his character only that which can be deduced from the plays. He was clearly a conservative, which then meant that he favoured the interests of the agricultural rather than the commercial classes, and, since it was the countryside that suffered from the annual incursions of the Spartans, he wanted peace in the apparently never ending Peloponnesian War. The earliest of his 11 plays to survive is *The Acharnians* (425), which tells of the efforts of the villagers of Acharnae to make a separate peace, and enables Aristophanes to ridicule the war party. In *The Knights* (424) a satiric presentation of the demagogic fire-eater Cleon provides a principal theme. *The Clouds* (423) is a satire on *Socrates. In *The Wasps* (422) the law is the target, and when a juryman is persuaded to try cases in his own home great fun is provided by the trial of a dog. *The Birds* (414) tells of how the birds in contest with the gods build Cloud-Cuckoo Land between earth and heaven, and starve the enemy into submission by preventing the smoke of sacrifice from reaching them. *The Frogs* (405), where the god Dionysus is asked to decide the rival merits of *Aeschylus and *Euripides, provides abundant opportunity for parody. Perhaps the most amusing to a modern audience is *Lysistrata* (411), where the women refuse intercourse with their husbands until peace is declared. The plays are written in verse, and in style are comparable with the greatest of the Greek tragedies.

Murray, G., *Aristophanes.* New ed. 1966.

Aristotle (Aristotélēs in Greek) (384–322 BCE). Greek philosopher, born in Stagira, Northern Greece. Son of Nicomachus, a physician in the Macedonian court, he learned biology from his father and studied at the academy of *Plato from the age of 17 until Plato died, 20 years later. He then became tutor of Alexander, later *Alexander the Great. He came back to Athens and in 335 established his own school, the Lyceum (Lykeion in Greek), essentially a research institution, covering many disciplines. His followers became known as peripatetics after the *peripatos* (covered walk), where—perhaps pacing up and down—he taught. In 323, after the death of Alexander deprived him of the protection of his former pupil, Aristotle left Athens and took refuge on the island of Euboea, where he died. His work, known as Aristotelianism, covers many subjects, including philosophy, several sciences, poetry and drama. His influence on western civilisation has been immense, especially in establishing scientific method. In the Middle Ages his doctrines were combined with Christian theology, notably by St Thomas *Aquinas. In his philosophy, he set out a system of categories or basic classifications into which all things fall. Some things, for example, are classed as substances: those entities, if they are such, are the foundations or possessors of each ordinary thing's various properties but not properties themselves. In his *Metaphysics* (merely meaning that which comes after *physics),* he also elaborated doctrines on the distinction between form and matter, on the development of potentialities into actualities, and on various kinds of cause. At the bottom of an ascending scale was 'prime matter', with potentiality but no 'form' or function other than existence and therefore incomprehensible. At the top, and equally incomprehensible, was the equivalent of God, with potentiality fully realised and therefore no potency, but to be regarded as 'pure act' (in these terms the soul' is regarded as the 'act' of the body). In between, the terms 'form' and 'matter' may be sometimes interchangeable. A familiar example is that brick is 'form' when related to the clay of which it is made but 'matter' in relation to the building of which it forms a part. In logic Aristotle claimed to be the first to work out the theory of reasoning by syllogisms, arguments of a particular form whose conclusions follow necessarily or certainly from their premises. Aristotle's *Ethics* contains the doctrine that virtue consists in a mean between excess and deficiency, and in his *Politics* he argues for a form of government which is an oligarchy of merit, preferably with the consent of the governed. Of Aristotle's science, his biology was uneven. His system of classification was impressive, but his teaching that the brain was essentially a cooling mechanism for the blood, and not the centre of reason (which he located in the heart), although contrary to *Hippocrates and rejected by *Galen, was dominant for nearly 2,000 years. In *The Generation of Animals* he taught that females were 'deformed males', a concept adopted by Galen and Aquinas. However, he seemed to have grasped the central feature of genetics, that encoded 'information' can be transmitted (and transformed). He dissected more than 50 species of animals and first identified the placenta. His view that the sun rotates round the earth, which is fixed in space, was one of a number of doctrines that were taken as unquestionable in the Middle Ages and had the effect of delaying scientific advance. His views on drama, contained in his *Poetics*, led to the 'rules' of the Renaissance, including those of the unities of time and place.

Green, M., *A Portrait of Aristotle*. 1963; Ross, W. D., *Aristotle*. 1964; Downey, G., *Aristotle*. 1965.

Arius (256–335). Greek theologian, born in Cyrenaica (now Tolmeita, Libya). Of Berber descent, he studied in Antioch, but worked and taught in Alexandria. He did not originate the great controversy known as 'Arianism' which rent Christianity during the 4th century but was essentially the spokesman for a doctrine widely held in Egypt. The issue was over the nature of the Trinity: was God the Father co-equal with God the Son or, as Arians argued, his superior? At the Council of Nicaea (325) the dispute was dramatised as the battle of the iota (i), whether the Father and Son were of the same substance (*homoousioi*) or of like substance (*homoiousioi*). The decision (formulated in the Nicene Creed) was against Arius, whose doctrines became heretical. Alexander, the bishop there, was a principal opponent. After Nicaea Arius was exiled to the Danube and excommunicated, but the Arian controversy lived on. (*Constantine and Constantius II had some sympathy for Arianism.) He died, suddenly, in Constantinople, and may have been poisoned. In 381, at the Council in Constantine, Arianisn was anathemised.

MacCulloch, D., *A History of Christianity. The First Three Thousand Years.* 2009.

Arkwright, Sir Richard (1732–1792). English inventor and entrepreneur, born in Preston. Originally a barber and wigmaker, in the 1760s he devoted himself to improving cotton spinning. Assisted by John Kay, a clockmaker, he set up a sophisticated water driven 'spinning frame' in Preston in 1768, producing warp thread in large volume. With Jedediah Strutt, he built the first water powered factory in Cromford, Derbyshire in 1771, later much expanded, and employed semi-skilled and child labour. The Cromford Mill site is part of a World Heritage listing. In 1775 he patented an improved 'carding engine', with rollers, which converted raw cotton to a continuous skein ready for weaving. He used steam power from 1777. In 1779 his large mill at Birkacre, Lancashire was destroyed in an anti-machinery riot. He attempted to take out a 'Grand Patent' to cover all his inventions, but in 1785 the Courts rejected this as a monopoly. Knighted in 1786, he left an estate of £500,000 (current equivalent £93,232,000.) One of the major figures in the Industrial Revolution, he ran everything by the clock but also provided frugal housing developments to attract and retain workers.

Arlen, Michael (né Dikran Kouyoumdjian) (1895–1956). British novelist and short story writer of Armenian extraction. He became a British citizen in 1922, but spent most of his later life in New York, where he died. In an elegant but artificial style he portrayed in such novels as *The Green Hat* and *These Charming People* the sophisticated, amoral but highly decorative young people of the English upper classes in the years following World War I.

Arlington, Henry Bennet, 1st Earl of (1618–1685). English politician. He gave great service to *Charles II in procuring and managing his mistresses, and became one of the 'Cabal' (the clique that advised the king in the early years of his reign: see *Clifford of Chudleigh). He was impeached (1674) by the House of Commons for his concealed advice in support of a return to Roman Catholicism, corruption and breach of trust, but was acquitted. Notorious for duplicity, superficiality and opportunism, he was a faithful husband (unusual in his cohort) and became a Catholic on his deathbed.

Arminius (né Hermann der Cherusker?) (c.18 BCE–19 CE). German chief. Educated in Rome, he served under *Tiberius in Germany and received Roman citizenship. Under his leadership his tribe, the Cherusci, annihilated three Roman legions under Varus in 9 CE, a defeat which led *Augustus to abandon the conquest of Germany north of the Elbe. He was killed in a feud with his own kinsmen.

Arminius, Jacobus (Jakob Hermandzoon), (1560–1609). Dutch theologian. Originally a Calvinist, he turned violently against *Calvin's doctrine of predestination and taught that any person who repents of his sins and accepts Christ as saviour is granted forgiveness by God and eternal life. These doctrines were violently assailed by Calvinists and in 1608 he asked that a synod should be convoked to decide the issue. However, worn out by anxiety and illness, he died before it was held. The controversy continued after his death but with decreasing bitterness as his views, with some modification, gained wider and wider acceptance notably by *Wesley and his Methodists.

Armitage, Simon Robert (1963–). English poet, playwright and novelist, born in Yorkshire. Versatile and prolific, and a skilled photographer, he translated and dramatised *Homer's *Odyssey*; was lead singer with a band, LYR; Professor of Poetry at Oxford 2015–19; and Poet Laureate of the UK 2019– . He also wrote travelogues for the BBC.

Armstrong, Edwin Howard (1890–1954). American electrical engineer. Educated at Columbia University, he used Lee *De Forest's triode vacuum tube to develop a regenerative or 'feedback' circuit which enabled (1912) radio signals to be amplified by 1,000 or more. (This led to unsuccessful litigation with De Forest.) In 1916 he invented the 'superheterodyne' circuit, still the basis of television and radio equipment. In 1933 he patented 'frequency modulation' (FM) as a means of overcoming natural static and set up the first FM transmitter in 1939. He committed suicide.

Armstrong (né Gunderson), **Lance Edward** (1971–). American cyclist, born in Texas. After recovering from testicular cancer (1997), he returned to professional cycling with unparalleled zeal, assisted by performance enhancing drugs, and his seven consecutive wins in

the Tour de France (1999–2005) established him in the international sporting pantheon. Revelations about drug use in cycling, and Armstrong's successful attempts to avoid detection, led to a major report in 2012 by the US Anti-Doping Agency, and all his victories since 1998 were annulled. Initially, Armstrong strongly denied the allegations, then conceded their accuracy, but without signs of repentance, in a television interview with Oprah *Winfrey.

Armstrong, Louis (1900–1971). American jazz trumpeter and singer, born in New Orleans. Known as 'Satchmo' (i.e. 'satchel mouth') he moved to Chicago to join King Oliver in 1922 and later formed the 'Hot Five' and the 'Hot Seven'. Apart from a period in the 1930s when he deserted ensemble playing to pursue a career as a virtuoso soloist, he and the groups he led remained in the forefront of the New Orleans style.

Jones, M. and Chilton, J., *Louis*. 1971.

Armstrong, Neil Alden (1930–2012). American astronaut and aeronautical engineer, born in Ohio. The first human to set foot on the moon, he was a licensed pilot from the age of 16 and studied aeronautics at Purdue University. He served in the Korean war and in 1962 joined the US National Aerospace Program, and was commander of *Gemini 8* in which he completed the first manual space docking manoeuvre. In July 1969 he lifted off from Cape Kennedy US with Edwin Aldrin and Michael Collins in *Apollo 11* and four days later, on 21 July, it landed on the moon. As he stepped on the moon's surface he said 'That's one small step for man, one giant leap for mankind'. He worked as a NASA executive and was professor of engineering at Cincinnati University 1971–79. He died in Cincinnati after failed heart surgery. He was awarded the Presidential Medal of Freedom and many other honours; a lunar crater and Asteroid 6469 Armstrong were named for him.

Armstrong, N. A., *Change in the Space Age*. 1973.

Armstrong, William George Armstrong, 1st Baron (1810–1900). English engineer and inventor, born at Newcastle upon Tyne. He turned from the law to engineering and devised a steam jet electric engine followed by a hydraulic crane and a hydraulic accumulator (1845–50). The Elswick works were built to make civil engineering machinery, but soon became better known for military guns, particularly heavy artillery. His first rifled gun was manufactured in 1854. The wire wound barrel was another of Armstrong's improvements. An early advocate of renewable energy, particularly hydroelectricity and solar, he predicted an end to the use of coal. He received a peerage in 1887. His firm became Armstrong-Whitworth, later Vickers-Armstrong, and built battleships for the Japanese, which proved decisive in the defeat of the Russian fleet at Tsushima (1905).

Arnau of Villanova (1240–1311). Catalan physician and astronomer. In the 1280s he was physician to Peter III of Aragon, and from 1291 taught medicine at Montpellier University. He seems to have been a successful medical practitioner curing Pope *Boniface VIII of a stone—but was chiefly important for his attempt to integrate empirical medicine with the medical philosophy of the Greeks and Arabs. Being familiar with Arabic, he translated works of *Galen and *Avicenna into Latin. Much of his medical teaching consisted of exposition of the works of *Hippocrates and Galen, and this pioneering approach was taken up and became the basis of 14th-century medical education. Arnau's chief theoretical medical interest was the attempt to conceptualise the body as being in a state of equilibrium between opposed forces (primarily those of hot and cold), which determines the resultant condition of health. Towards the end of his life, his interests took a more philosophical, mystical and theological turn. He investigated the occult world, wrote on astrology, and made a prophecy that the world would end in 1378. His theological heterodoxy involved him in difficulties with the Paris theologians.

Arne, Thomas Augustine (1710–1778). English composer. Educated at Eton, he worked in a lawyer's office before turning to music. He wrote *Rule, Britannia* (from his masque *Alfred, Constant* *Lambert called it 'the best written of all national songs'), incidental music for plays (e.g. including *Shakespeare's song *Where the Bee Sucks … *) and many other songs in addition to oratorios, light operas and the serious opera *Comus* based on the poem by John *Milton.

Arnim, Elizabeth von (née Mary Annette Beauchamp, later Countess von Arnim, then Countess Russell) (1866–1941). English-Australian novelist, born in Sydney. Writing under the pen name 'Elizabeth', which she later adopted as her own, and a cousin of Katherine *Mansfield, she was brought up in England. In 1891, she married Count Henning von Arnim-Schlagenthin (d.1910). While on his country estate, she wrote *Elizabeth and her German Garden* (1898)—ironic and charming, both a critical success and a bestseller. She returned to England in 1910, became a lover of H. G. *Wells and, in 1916, married **Frank, 2nd Earl Russell**, a disastrous union. (They separated in 1919 but never divorced.) Her later books include *Vera* (1921), *The Enchanted April* (1922, later a film and stage play) and *Mr Skeffington* (1940, later a film). She died of influenza, in the US.

Arno, Peter (Curtis Arnoux Peters) (1904–1968). American cartoonist. One of the earliest recruits to the *New Yorker* magazine, on whose staff he continued to work, his clever linear characterisation combined with metropolitan humour helped to establish the magazine's reputation.

Arnold, Benedict (1741–1801). American soldier. Eventually a traitor during the American War of Independence, he fought with gallantry first with Ethan *Allen's 'Green Mountain Boys', in Canada, and under *Washington, and was an excellent officer. The Senate, ignoring Washington's recommendations, promoted several other officers ahead of him but he was soon breveted Major General and fought with distinction at Saratoga, where he received wounds which limited him to less active commands. In 1780, as Commander of West Point, he seemed embittered by lack of recognition and conspired with the British Major *André to surrender the post. The plot was discovered but Arnold escaped to the British, by whom he was given command of British troops. He lived in England after the war.

Arnold, Henry Harley (1886–1950). American airman, born in Pennsylvania. A pilot from 1911, 'Hap' Arnold was Commanding General of the US Army Air Force 1942–46 and promoted five-star General of the Army in 1944.

Arnold, Sir Malcolm (1921–2006). English composer. A trumpet player in the London Philharmonic and BBC Symphony orchestras, he wrote many orchestral compositions, including the ballet *Homage to the Queen, English Dances* (1953), nine symphonies and 18 concertos. He received an Oscar for music for the film *Bridge on the River Kwai* (1957).

Arnold, Matthew (1822–1888). English critic, educationist and poet, born at Laleham on Thames. Educated at Rugby under his father Thomas *Arnold, and at Balliol College, Oxford, he became a disciple of *Wordsworth. As an inspector of schools 1851–86, he was an important liberal influence in enriching the curriculum and pointing to the need for educating the working class. He became professor of poetry at Oxford 1857–67 and set high standards in his lectures on *Homer and his collected *Essays in Criticism* (1865) which emphasised the social function of the critic. His own poetry was criticised for its harshness, gloom and difficulty but his *Dover Beach* (1851—published 1867), is one of the greatest 19th-century poems, set to music in 1931 by Samuel *Barber. Arnold attacked middle class cultural values as 'philistine' (his own coinage) in *Culture and Anarchy* (1869). In his later years he was deeply troubled by his own spiritual restlessness and a fear of anarchy.

Rowse, A. L., *Matthew Arnold*. 1976; Honan, P. *Matthew Arnold, a life*. 1981; Collini, S., *Arnold*. 1988; Murray, N., *A Life of Matthew Arnold*. 1996.

Arnold, Thomas (1795–1842). English educator. Headmaster of Rugby School 1828–41, he created the educational pattern, followed by other British public schools, which encouraged the emergence of a class of capable and devoted administrators to meet the needs of the growing empire. To give older boys responsibility and self-discipline he introduced a prefectorial system while his own sermons and strict religious instruction supplied a moral background. The educational structure, based upon the classical form-master, had obvious limitations. A glowing picture of Rugby under Arnold is presented by Thomas *Hughes in *Tom Brown's Schooldays.*

Bamford, T. W., *Thomas Arnold in Education*. 1970.

Arnold of Brescia (c.1100–1155). Italian religious revolutionary. After studying under *Abelard in France he returned to his birthplace, Brescia, where he entered an Augustinian monastery and eventually became Abbot. An embroilment with his bishop led to a period of exile, during which, after a quarrel with St *Bernard, he was banished from France. Meanwhile a revolution in Rome had suppressed the power of the pope and created a republic on the lines of that of ancient Rome. Returned from exile, Arnold threw himself into the fray (c.1147) as a violent supporter of the new regime and denouncer of the pope's temporal power. He accordingly had to flee when the new pope, *Adrian IV, brought about the republic's collapse. Arnold fell into the hands of the emperor *Friedrich I (Barbarossa), was delivered over to the papal prefect and hanged.

Arnolfo di Cambio (Arnolfo di Lapo) (c.1232–1302). Italian architect and sculptor. A pupil of Pisano, he designed Florence Cathedral (from 1296) and, also at Florence, built the Franciscan Church of S. Croce (1294 ff.) and the Palazzo Vecchio (also called the Palazzo della Signoria, 1298 ff.)

Aron, Raymond (Claude Ferdinand) (1905–1983). French political philosopher, teacher and journalist. He taught at Toulouse and Paris, worked in London for *de Gaulle (1940–44), broke with his friend *Sartre, and became the most prominent exponent of rationalist humanism. He was deeply opposed to all authoritarian regimes and supported Israel and Algerian independence.

Arp, Jean (Hans) (1886–1966). German-French sculptor, painter, poet, collage and woodcut artist, born in Strasbourg. He moved to Paris in 1904, studied in Weimar, then returned to Paris. In Zürich in 1916, with Tristan *Tzara, he was a founder of the Dada movement which later morphed into Surrealism. His versatility was immense, but he was known primarily as a sculptor, whose forms, though deriving largely from Surrealism, had an abstract purity of surface and contour. He also produced collages and wood-reliefs as well as works in more traditional media, and he wrote poetry.

Arp, J., *Arp on Arp. Problems, Essays, Memories*. 1972; Robertson, E., *Arp: Painter, Poet, Sculptor*. 2006.

Árpád (c.845–c.907). Hungarian prince. A leader of the Magyar tribes, he was invited by the Byzantine Emperor Leo VI 'the Wise' to drive out the Bulgarians

and occupy the Carpathian basin. His dynasty reigned in Hungary from c.895 to 1301. The Hungarians, originally Tengriians, were Christianised in the 10th century.

Arrau (Léon), **Claudio** (1903–1991). Chilean pianist. After his Santiago debut (1908), he studied in Berlin, and emerged in the front rank of pianists during the 1940s. His performances and recordings of *Beethoven, *Chopin and *Brahms were greatly admired.

Arrhenius, Svante August (1859–1927). Swedish physical chemist. He evolved a satisfactory explanation, published in 1887, of electrolytic dissociation from the many electrochemical observations of the 19th century. He put forward the idea, which is the basis of present-day 'Ionic Theory', that when salts are dissolved in water they split up almost completely into particles, which *Faraday had previously named 'ions'. In 1896 he made the first quantitative prediction of global warming due to increases of carbon dioxide in the atmosphere, calling it the 'hot-house' effect, renamed by his colleague Nils Gustaf Ekholm as the 'Greenhouse effect' in 1901. Much of his early work was done in Germany but he returned to Sweden in 1891 and served as director of the Nobel Institute at Stockholm 1905–27. He received the Nobel Prize for Chemistry in 1903 for his research on 'the electrolytic theory of dissociation'. He pioneered (1903) research on the concept of panspermia, first proposed by the ancient Greeks, the hypothesis that life forms arrived on earth in space debris.

Arrow, Kenneth Joseph (1921–2017). American economist, born in New York. Of Romanian-Jewish ancestry, he studied at Columbia University, worked in Chicago and was Professor of Economics at Harvard 1968–79 and Stanford 1979–91. He shared the Nobel Prize for Economics in 1972 with Sir John *Hicks 'for their pioneering contributions to general economic equilibrium theory and welfare theory'. Elected FRS in 2006, he taught five Nobel Laureates.

Arroyo, (Maria) **Gloria Macapagal-** (1947–). Filipina politician. Daughter of **Diosdado Macapagal** (1910–1997) who was President 1961–65, she served as president herself 2001–10 and was arrested for electoral fraud in 2011.

Artaud, Antonin Marie Joseph (1896–1948). French actor, producer and theorist, born in Marseille. He advocated the 'theatre of cruelty', in which performances were ritualistic and cathartic for audiences and not mere expositions of a text. He gave an electrifying performance as Marat in Abel *Gance's film *Napoléon* (1927). He was confined to mental hospitals from 1936.

Artaxerxes. Name of several Persian kings, **Artaxerxes I** (reigned 464–424 BCE) brought the war with Greece to an end with the loss of Thrace and parts of Asia Minor. **Artaxerxes II** (d.358 BCE) defeated his rebellious brother *Cyrus and gained the Greek cities of Asia Minor. A much later **Artaxerxes or Ardashir** (d.242 CE) overthrew the last of the Parthian kings (226 CE), conquered Media and, as founder of the Sassanian dynasty, restored the Persian monarchy.

Artemesia (fl. c.480 BCE). Queen of Halicarnassus. She fought with the Persians against the Greeks in the naval Battle of Salamis (480 BCE).

Artemisia (Queen of Caria) *see* **Mausolus**

Arthur (6th century). British legendary hero. He may represent the folk memory of one or more Romanised British chieftains who, after the departure of the legions, put up a heroic resistance to the invading Anglo-Saxons, in their westward advance. This would explain the number of places, from Astolat (Guildford) to the extreme Cornish west, associated with his name. The hero of romantic legend is first mentioned by the 9th-century *Nennius, but the first long account was given (c.1135) by *Geoffrey of Monmouth. The legends were embellished by such medieval writers as Chretien de *Troyes, and a great number of the stories were woven together by Sir Thomas *Malory in his vast *Morte D'Arthur*, printed by Caxton in 1485. Tennyson (*Idylls of the King* etc.) and others took up the tale and even in our own day the musical play *Camelot* is a reminder that the legends are still alive. Costume, armour and codes of conduct in the Arthurian stories are mainly those of the 12th–14th centuries.

White, T. H., *The Once and Future King*. 1958; Barber, R., *King Arthur in Legend and History*. 1973.

Arthur, Chester Alan (1830–1886). 21st President of the US 1881–85. Son of a Vermont clergyman, and a lawyer by profession, he held the lucrative post of collector of customs at the Port of New York 1871–78. During this period he became involved in the controversy within the Republican party over the use of patronage (i.e. the allocation of offices etc. to gain political support) and in opposition to President Rutherford *Hayes, a purist in such matters, who dismissed him for abuse of his official position. However, at the 1880 convention the choice of James A. *Garfield for the presidential nomination was offset by that of Arthur, as a prominent supporter of patronage, for vice presidency. The Republicans won the 1880 election, and after Garfield's assassination, Arthur became President, but to the dismay of his former associates proved himself a determined enemy of corruption and patronage.

Reeves, T. C., *Gentleman Boss, Chester Alan Arthur*. 1975.

Arthur, Sir George, 1st Baronet (1784–1854). English soldier and administrator. As Lieutenant Governor 1823–25 and Governor 1825–36 of Van Diemen's Land (Tasmania), he organised the 'Black Drive' and

established Port Arthur, a large convict settlement (1830). He served as Lieutenant Governor of Upper Canada 1837–42 and Governor of Bombay 1842–46.

Arthur of Brittany (1187–1203). Duke of Brittany. A grandson of *Henry II of England as his dead father, Geoffrey, was *John's elder brother, so, on *Richard I's death, Arthur had a claim to the throne which was supported by *Philippe II of France. The story of his imprisonment by his uncle and of his death is told with much poignancy (but considerable historical distortion) in *Shakespeare's *King John*.

Asbury, Francis (1745–1816). American prelate. The first Methodist bishop consecrated (1784) in America, John *Wesley sent him from England and in the course of his missionary journeys he is said to have travelled 270,000 miles.

Asch, Sholem (1880–1957). Polish-Jewish Yiddish writer, born in Poland. His first novel, an admitted masterpiece, *Dos Shtetl* (*The Township)* was published in 1904, but it was Max *Reinhardt's Berlin production (1907) of his play *The God of Vengeance* which brought him fame. He lived in the US (1914–56), moved to Israel and died in London. Among his books are *The Mother, Mottke the Thief* and *East River*.

Rosenberg, S., S*holem Asch at Close Quarters*. 1959.

Ascham, Roger (1515–1568). English scholar, born near Thirsk, in Yorkshire. He received his early education in the family of Sir Anthony Wingfield, who sent him to Cambridge University, where he became reader in Greek at St John's College (c.1538). His *Toxophilus* (1545), an agreeable dialogue on archery, dedicated to *Henry VIII, as well as his growing reputation as a teacher, brought him wider recognition and in 1548 he became tutor to Princess *Elizabeth. After returning from a diplomatic mission (1550–53) he became Latin secretary to *Edward VI, an office which, though a Protestant, he was prudent enough to retain under *Mary. He was still in office under Elizabeth when he died. *The Scholemaster*, published posthumously, is a humanist and humane treatise on education.

Ryan, L. V., *Roger Ascham*. 1963.

Ashbery, John Lawrence (1927–2017). American poet and art critic. Educated at Harvard, Columbia and New York 1974–90. He worked in publishing, lived in France 1955–65, became an art critic and was professor of creative writing at the City University of New York 1974–90. He won the 1975 Pulitzer Prize with *Self-Portrait in a Convex Mirror*. His *Selected Poems* (138 poems chosen from earlier volumes) appeared in 1985. Regarded as the greatest American poet since Robert *Lowell, Ashbery was relatively prolific.

Ashcroft, Dame Peggy (Edith Margaret Emily) (1907–1991). English actor. She made her London debut in 1926 and played with outstanding success in *Ibsen, *Shakespeare and *Chekhov. Her films include *The Nun's Story* (1959), *Hullabaloo about George and Bonnie's Pictures* (1976) and *A Passage to India* (1984), which won her an Academy Award. She was made a DBE in 1956. Her lovers included W. R. *Sickert, J. B. *Priestley and Paul *Robeson.

Ashdown, Paddy (Jeremy John Durham), **Baron Ashdown** (1941–). English Liberal Democrat politician. After service as a Marine commando, diplomat and manager, he was MP 1983–2001, Leader of the Liberal Democrats 1988–99 and the international High Representative for Bosnia and Herzegovina 2002–06.

Ashford, Daisy (pen name of Margaret Mary Devlin) (1881–1972). English writer. She gained sudden and perhaps immortal fame by the publication in 1919, under Sir James *Barrie's sponsorship, of her book *The Young Visiters,* a remarkable and hilarious example of literary precocity, said to have been written when she was nine.

Ashkenazy, Vladimir Davidovich (1937–). Russian-Icelandic pianist and conductor. He left the USSR in 1963, living first in Britain, then in Iceland, finally in Switzerland. He established an international reputation as an interpreter of *Mozart, *Beethoven, *Chopin and the Romantics. He was conductor of the Sydney Symphony Orchestra 2009–13.

Ashmole, Elias (1617–1692). English antiquarian, born in Lichfield. He started work as a solicitor, joined the excise, but soon retired to studies extending from botany to alchemy. His book on the Order of the Garter revealed his antiquarian interest. The nucleus of the Ashmolean collection was formed by ethnological objects from America, Africa and the South Seas bequeathed to him by his friend, John Tradescant. His name is perpetuated by the Ashmolean Museum at Oxford.

Josten, C. H. (ed.), *Elias Ashmole*, 1617–92. 5 vols, 1967.

Ashton, Sir Frederick William Mallandine (1904–1988). English choreographer and dancer, born in Ecuador. After gaining prominence in creating ballets for and dancing with the Carmargo Society and the Rambert company he became in 1935 choreographer, and later associate director, of the Sadler's Wells Ballet (known as the Royal Ballet from 1956). He succeeded Ninette *de Valois as director 1963–70. His best known ballets were *Cinderella* (in which he took the role of one of the ugly sisters), *Ondine, Daphnis and Chloe, La Fille mal gardee, Facade* and *Symphonic Variations*. Ashton was knighted in 1962 and received both CH (1970) and OM (1977).

Ashur-bani-pal (or Assurbanipal) (d.626 BCE?). King of Assyria 668–627 BCE. The great-grandson of *Sargon II, his half-brother Shamash-shum-ukin was an essentially subordinate king in Babylon

who attempted to gain full independence, failed and suicided (648). Ashur-bani-pal was a scholar, athlete, soldier and administrator who created a great library of 22,000 cuneiform tablets in his capital at Nineveh, texts being collected from throughout the Near East and copies made. Deeply devout and a patron of the arts, his palaces and temples were notable for magnificent sculptured panels (many of which are in the British Museum and the Metropolitan Museum, New York). He lost Egypt (654) but conquered Phoenicia and Elam: however, the lavishness and expense of his rule created enmity in the provinces and his empire barely survived him. He was sometimes identified with the legendary ruler Sardanapalos.

Asimov, Isaac (1920–1992). American science fiction writer, biochemist and encyclopaedist, born in Russia. His family migrated to the US in 1923. Educated at Columbia University, he taught biochemistry at Boston University intermittently from 1949. *The Foundation Trilogy* (1951–53) and *The Robot* series (1954–85) established him as a pre-eminent science fiction writer. There are more than 500 books in his bibliography, including a biographical dictionary of scientists, histories of the US, Romans and Egyptians, the Bible, *Shakespeare, *Milton, astronomy and crime stories. He was a serial groper, a claustrophile with a phobia about flying. He coined the word 'robotics' and his 'Three Laws of Robotics' remain influential. Asteroid 5020 Asimov and a crater on Mars were named for him.

Aske, Robert (d.1537). English rebel. A lawyer who led the rising in the north of England known as the 'Pilgrimage of Grace' (1536) in protest against the dissolution of the monasteries by *Henry VIII. Having received assurances, including a promise of his personal safety, he persuaded the rebels to disperse, but was immediately arrested, convicted of treason and hanged.

Prescott, H. F. M., *The Man on the Donkey*. 1952.

Asoka (c.300–232 BCE). Indian Emperor c.270–232 BCE. Grandson of the conquering Chandragupta Maurya, he became ruler of all India except the extreme South. Repentance for the bloodshed effected a conversion to Buddhism so violent and complete that (from c.257) the whole machinery of government was used as a propaganda machine for spreading the Buddhist faith, by such means as texts carved on walls (many of which survive) and officers sent out to ensure that the rules of piety were observed. His ambassadors became missionaries and so compelling was the impetus set in motion that within 20 years of his death the faith had reached China, whence it spread to Japan and Korea and elsewhere. Asoka sent his own son to Ceylon, which has been a stronghold of Buddhism ever since. The unfortunate result of these pious and peaceful exercises was that the country, having abandoned its means of self-defence, was quickly overrun after Asoka's death.

Moorkerji, R. K., *Asoka*. 3rd ed. 1962.

Aspasia *see* **Pericles**

Asperger, Hans (Johann Karl Friedrich) (1906–1980). Austrian pediatrician, born in Vienna. An enthusiastic supporter of the Nazi regime, he diagnosed autism spectrum disorder in children (1944), but his initial research paper was largely ignored until the 1980s when the condition, called 'Asperger's syndrome' (AS), became fashionable, and applied as a retrospective diagnosis (*Newton, *Darwin, *Einstein, Bill *Gates). Since 2015 the name AS has been incorporated in broader definitions of autism.

Sheffer, E., *Asperger's Children*. 2018.

Asquith, Herbert Henry, 1st Earl of Oxford and Asquith (1858–1928). British Liberal politician, born at Morley, Yorkshire. Educated at the City of London School and Balliol College, Oxford, his impressive academic successes included the Craven Scholarship. He became a successful barrister (QC 1890) and first entered parliament in 1886 as Liberal Member for East Fife, serving 1892–95 as Home Secretary under *Gladstone and Lord *Rosebery. During the long spell of Conservative rule that followed, Asquith's standing so greatly increased that when at last the Liberals returned triumphantly in 1905 he became Chancellor of the Exchequer in *Campbell Bannerman's Government and, in April 1908, succeeded him as Prime Minister. His ministry, which contained *Lloyd George, Winston *Churchill and Sir Edward *Grey, put through a major program of reform including old age pensions, Welsh Church disestablishment and National Insurance, but the greatest parliamentary battles (in the course of which Asquith was confirmed in power by the two elections of 1910) were over a bill depriving the House of Lords of a final veto and over Irish Home Rule. Declaration of war in August 1914 seems to have come as a surprise to him, but the country was supportive, expecting rapid victory. However, early defeats and disappointments shook the faith of many in Asquith as a director of the war effort, brilliant though his peacetime administration had been. The formation of a coalition government in 1915 was temporarily reassuring, but in December 1916 popular unease and political intrigue brought about his displacement by Lloyd George. From this rift neither Asquith nor the Liberal Party (of which he remained the official leader) ever recovered. He lost his seat at East Fife in 1918 and, though re-elected at Paisley (1920), he was never able to bring his party back to a position of strength. He accepted a peerage in 1925. Asquith enjoyed great happiness in both his marriages. His children by the first, all of whom gained distinction

in different fields, included **Lady Violet Bonham Carter** (1887–1969), later Baroness Asquith, who inherited much of her father's political talent. His second wife was the brilliant, witty **Margot Tennant** (1862–1945), whose son **Anthony Asquith** (1902–1968) became a distinguished film director.

Jenkins, R., *Asquith*, 1964; Coss, S., *Asquith,* 1976.

Assad, Hafez al- (1930–2000). Syrian politician and soldier. An Alawite, a minority Muslim sect, he joined the Arab Socialist Renaissance (Ba'ath) Party in 1946, served in the air force and became its commander. He was Minister for Defence 1966–70, and after a coup, Prime Minister 1970–71 and President of Syria 1971–2000. One of Israel's strongest opponents, he had an uneasy relationship with his fellow Ba'athist in Iraq *Saddam Hussein. Hafez planned that his brother **Rifaat Ali al-Assad** (1937–) would succeed, but after a serious dynastic feud settled on his own son **Bassel al-Assad** (1962–1994), army officer, athlete and potential reformer. Bassel died in a car crash, and Hafez's second son, **Bashar al-Assad** (1965–), an ophthalmologist, trained in London, succeeded as President 2000–24. After promised political reforms failed to eventuate, and after the Arab Spring movement which toppled regimes in Egypt, Tunisia, Yemen and Libya, civil war broke out in Syria in 2011, with savage fighting and atrocities on both sides.

Assange (né Shipton)**, Julian Paul** (1971–). Australian publisher, editor and activist, born in Townsville. He was an early internet hacker, became a computer programmer and studied at Melbourne and Canberra universities. In 2006 he founded WikiLeaks which published material designated 'secret' to demonstrate discrepancies between what governments claimed and what they were actually doing. Assange, understandably apprehensive about being tried in the US for espionage, sought and received diplomatic asylum at the Embassy of Ecuador in London (2012). Expelled from the embassy in April 2019, he was imprisoned for having breached UK bail conditions. Extradition proceedings were initiated by the US (Sweden having withdrawn a similar application). In 2022, UK courts and the Home Secretary approved his extradition. After five years in a London maximum security prison, a plea deal was concluded. In June 2024, in a US court in the Marianas, he pleaded guilty to one charge, was sentenced to actual time served, and immediately returned to Australia.

Astaire, Fred (né Frederick Austerlitz) (1899–1987). American dancer. He performed in a number of musical comedies in London and New York with his sister **Adele** (1898–1981) (who later married Lord Charles Cavendish), and made 37 films: he was partnered by **Ginger Rogers** (1911–1995) in 10 of them.

Aston, Francis William (1877–1945). English physicist. He extended the work of J. J. *Thomson on isotopes and developed the instrument known as the mass spectrograph to study them. Aston showed that almost all the natural elements consist of mixtures of isotopes. For this work he received the Nobel Prize for Chemistry in 1922.

Astor. German-American-British family, with important social and business connections in Britain and America. **John Jacob Astor** (1763–1848), son of a German butcher from Waldorf, near Heidelberg, arrived in America in 1784 and made a vast fortune in the fur trade and in property speculation in New York. A great-grandson, **William Waldorf Astor** (1848–1919), was active in American politics and diplomacy before settling in England. In 1917 he was created **Viscount Astor.** The wife of the 2nd Viscount, **Nancy Witcher Astor**, née Langhorne (1879–1964), born in Virginia, was a Conservative MP 1919–45 and the first woman to actually sit in the Commons. She received the CH in 1937. Her brother-in-law, **John Jacob Astor** (1886–1971), was created **Baron Astor of Hever** in 1956. Among family interests were (elder branch) the *Observer* and (younger branch) *The Times* newspapers. Cliveden, with strong social and political associations, was the family seat.

Sykes, C., Nancy. *Life of Lady Astor*. 1972; Fort, A., *Nancy: The Story of Lady Astor*. 2012.

Asturias Rosales, Miguel Ángel (1899–1974). Guatemalan novelist, poet, playwright and diplomat. He anticipated 'magic realism' before Gabriel *Garcia Márquez and won the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1967.

Atahualpa (c.1502–1533). Last independent Sapa Inca 1532–33. On the death of his father **Huana Capac** (d.1527) from smallpox, he became King of Quito while his older half-brother **Huáscar** (d.1532) received most of the Inca Empire, centred on Cuzco. In May 1532, during a five-year period of brutal civil war, the Spaniards invaded under Francisco *Pizarro. Atahualpa's troops defeated and seized Huáscar and he became Sapa (or supreme) Inca. When Atahualpa was ambushed and taken prisoner by Pizarro's men at Cajamarca in November 1532, he proffered a roomful of gold and silver objects (24 tonnes in total) as ransom. Having melted down the treasure, the Spaniards garrotted him to demonstrate their power and to crush possible rescue attempts.

Atatürk, (Mustafa) **Kemal** (1881–1938). Turkish soldier and politician, born in Thessalonika. Son of a customs official, he joined the Young Turk reform movement in 1908. He gained an army commission and won rapid promotion; he fought against the Italians in Tripoli (1911) and in World War I saved the situation at a critical moment (1915) in the Gallipoli campaign—a result that made him famous. He later served in the Caucasus and Syria. After the collapse of the Ottoman Empire, with Constantinople (Istanbul) under Allied occupation and sultan *Mehmed VI supine and powerless, he was in Anatolia and led the great movement of

national resistance stirred by an invasion by Greece. He threw off allegiance to the sultan, and established a provisional government at Ankara (April 1920). He led the Turks to victory in the War of Independence which resulted, with eventual Allied acquiescence, in the expulsion of the Greeks, the deposition (1922) of the sultan, and the establishment (1923) of a republic with Kemal as first president 1923–38. He made no attempt to regain the Arab lands lost in the war and concentrated his activities on creating a strong modern state in the Turkish homelands of Anatolia and what remained of Türkiye in Europe. Ankara became the new capital. His basic policies were 1. maintaining territorial integrity, 2. secularism and 3. democracy. The outward signs of his modernisation, e.g. the unveiling and emancipation of women, the replacing of the fez by western headgear, the adoption of surnames, the introduction of the Gregorian calendar and of Latin script, signalled a reawakening of a people dormant for centuries under corrupt and often oppressive rule. That these changes had taken place so quickly and with so little disturbance was due to the patriotic fervour, the military skill, the driving energy, the shrewd judgment and occasional restlessness of Mustafa Kemal, who auspiciously took the surname 'Father Turk' (Atatürk). He died of cirrhosis of the liver.

Kinross, J. P. D., *Atatürk: The Rebirth of a Nation*. 1964; Mango, A., *Atatürk.* 1999.

Athanasius of Alexandria, St (c.296–373). Egyptian (or Greek?) Christian theologian, born in Alexandria. His ethnicity remains controversial. One of the strongest opponents of the doctrines of *Arius at the council of Nicaea (the Athanasian Creed, though it expresses his orthodox views, was probably written by St *Ambrose), Athanasius succeeded to the see of Alexandria in 328 but was beset by controversy. Despite the presence of the emperor Constantine at Nicaea, the Arian cause gained increasing imperial support. Athanasius was forced five times into exile and in 356 a price was set on his head. In the last years of his life, however, he remained in peaceful occupation of his see. His early book *On the Incarnation* is the best known of his many works.

Athelstan *see* **Æthelstan**

Athlone, 1st Earl of, Alexander Augustus Frederick William Alfred George Cambridge (né von Hohenstein) (1874–1957). British soldier and courtier, born in London. Originally Prince Alexander of Teck, he was the younger brother of Queen *Mary, consort of *George V. Governor-General of South Africa 1923–31, he had been appointed Governor-General of Canada in 1914, he declined to serve during World War I but held the office 1940–45.

Atiyah, Sir Michael Francis (1929–2019). Scottish-Lebanese mathematician, born in London. He began school in Sudan and Egypt. Educated at Trinity College, Cambridge, he became professor of geometry at Oxford 1963–69, of mathematics at the Princeton Institute for Advanced Study 1969–72, Royal Society research professor at Oxford 1973–90, Master of Trinity College, Cambridge 1990–97 and President of the Royal Society 1990–95. He received the Copley Medal in 1988 for 'his fundamental contributions to geometry, topology, analysis and theoretical physics' and the OM in 1992.

Atkinson, Sir Harry Albert (1831–1892). New Zealand politician, born in England. He migrated to New Zealand in 1853, held several ministries and was Prime Minister 1876–77, 1883–84 and 1887–91. He took a leading role in abolishing the provincial governments. A convinced social reformer, he was forced to make financial stability his first concern.

Attenborough, Sir David Frederick (1926–). English natural history broadcaster, television presenter and writer, born in Middlesex. Educated at Cambridge, he joined the BBC in 1952 and produced many acclaimed series of natural history programs for television, including *Life on Earth* (1979), *The Living Planet* (1984), *The Life of Birds* (1998), *The Life of Mammals* (2002), *Madagascar* (2011), *Kingdom of Plants* (2012) and *Africa* (2013), which emphasised the beauty and wonder of natural processes, and their vulnerability, from a deep perspective. Elected FRS in 1983, he was awarded a CH in 1996, the OM in 2005 and a GCMG in 2020. More than 50 species and genera have been named for him. His brother **Richard Samuel Attenborough, Baron Attenborough** (1923–2014) was an actor, producer and director. He turned to directing in 1969 and his greatest success was *Gandhi* (1982), which won eight Oscars in 1983.

Atterbury, Francis (1663–1732). English churchman. He rose to become Bishop of Rochester (1713). On the death of Queen *Anne he became involved in various Jacobite plots, was deprived of his offices and banished (1722). He died in Paris. *Pope, *Swift and *Bolingbroke were among his friends.

Bennett, G. V., *Tory Crisis in Church and State, 1688–1730: The Career of Francis Atterbury, Bishop of Rochester*. 1976.

Attila (c.406–453). King of the Huns 433–453. Known as 'the Scourge of God', he became king, at first jointly with his brother **Bleda**, whom he murdered (445), of vast hordes living in lands from the Caspian to the Danube. He several times invaded the eastern empire and in 447 he devastated the Balkans as far as Constantinople and Thermopylae, forcing the emperor Theodosius to yield and pay tribute. In 451 he invaded Gaul and reached Orléans but was forced to return by Aetius, the Roman commander, who had opportunely won over Theodoric, King of

the Visigoths. Attila's enormous army was decisively defeated near Chalons-sur-Marne but, though forced to retire into Hungary in 452, he invaded Italy and sacked Aquileia, Milan and Pavia. An advance to Rome was stayed only after a personal interview between the conqueror and Pope *Leo I, although shortage of provisions in his army and plague in northern Italy may have suggested the same course. He was preparing a further invasion of the Balkans when he died of a heart attack on the night of his marriage to the lovely Ildico. His empire collapsed with his death. Attila is the Etzel of German legend, where, as in the *Nibelungenlied*, he appears as a just ruler and not a ruthless conqueror.

Thompson, E. A., *A History of Attila and the Huns*. 1948.

Attlee, Clement Richard, 1st Earl Attlee (1883–1967). English Labour politician, born in Putney. Son of a London solicitor, educated at Haileybury and Oxford, he was converted to socialism by his work as secretary of Toynbee Hall in the East End 1901–13 and lectured at the London School of Economics. In World War I he served in Gallipoli, Mesopotamia and France, rising to the rank of major. Mayor of Stepney 1919–20, he was elected MP for Limehouse in 1922–50, being the first Oxford graduate to represent Labour in the House of Commons. In Ramsay *MacDonald's governments he became Undersecretary for War 1924, Chancellor of the Duchy of Lancaster 1930–31 and Postmaster General 1931. When MacDonald formed a National Government with *Baldwin during the financial crisis of 1931, Attlee stayed with Labour and was Deputy Leader of the Opposition 1931–35 under George *Lansbury and Leader of the Labour Party for a record period, 1935–55. Until Munich he generally agreed with *Baldwin and *Chamberlain on foreign policy, then supported stronger resistance to *Hitler. He joined *Churchill's coalition government as Lord Privy Seal 1940–42 and Deputy Prime Minister 1942–45, taking increasing responsibility for domestic administration. The July 1945 election, the first for 10 years, swept the Conservatives out and Attlee became Prime Minister 1945–51 with an initial majority of 171, reduced to six in the February 1950 election. His government introduced the National Health Act and the National Insurance Act, reduced the power of the House of Lords, nationalised railways, coal, gas and electricity, and promoted law reform and urban planning. Independence was granted to India and Pakistan (1947), Burma (1947) and Ceylon (1948). Attlee, with his Foreign Secretary Ernest *Bevin, generally supported *Truman in the Cold War (including Korea) and joined NATO; however he recognised *Mao in China. Although Labour led in the primary vote in the October 1951 election, Churchill won narrowly. Attlee was again Leader of the Opposition 1951–55 until he retired, ensuring that Hugh *Gaitskell succeeded. Astonishingly laconic for a politician, he was a tough, shrewd administrator. As he wrote in a typically terse limerick:

> Few thought he was even a starter:
> There were many who thought
> themselves smarter
> But he ended PM,
> CH and OM,
> An earl and a knight of the garter.

Harris, K. *Attlee*, 1982; Beckett, C., *Clem Attlee*, 1997; Jago, M., *Clement Attlee: the Inevitable Prime Minister*, 2015; Bew, J., *Citizen Clem*. 2016; McKinstry, L., *Attlee and Churchill*. 2019.

Atwood, Margaret Eleanor (1939–). Canadian novelist, poet, critic, environmentalist, born in Ottawa. Educated at Toronto and Harvard universities, she taught in Canada, Britain, the US and Australia and won awards for her poetry, novels and short stories. Her novels include *Edible Woman* (1969), *The Handmaid's Tale* (1986) and *Catseye* (1988). *The Blind Assassin* (2000) won the Booker Prize. She received many awards, including a CH in 2019. *The Testaments* (2019) was a long-awaited sequel to *The Handmaid's Tale*.

Auber, Daniel François Esprit (1782–1871). French composer, born at Caen. He wrote several vigorous 'comic operas', including *Fra Diavolo* (1830) and *Les Diamants de la Couronne* (1841). *La Muette de Portici* (1828) is a grand opera. He directed the Paris Conservatoire from 1842 to 1857.

Aubrey, John (1626–1697). English antiquary. Having lost through litigation his inherited estates in Wiltshire, Herefordshire and Wales, he had to depend upon the patronage of friends such as *Hobbes and *Ashmole. He published a quaint collection of ghost stories and folk lore in *Miscellanies* (1696), but is best known for his incisive but somewhat malicious profiles of his contemporaries, collected after his death and edited as *Brief Lives* by Andrew Clark in 1898. The 'Aubrey holes' at Stonehenge were discovered by, and are named after him and he revived interest in megaliths in Avebury. His importance in preserving heritage sites has been lately recognised.

Powell, A., *John Aubrey and his Friends*. Rev. ed. 1963; Scurr, R., *John Aubrey, My Own Life*. 2015.

Auchinleck, Sir Claude John Eyre (1884–1981). British field marshal, born at Aldershot. Son of an officer, he served in the east, mostly India, until 1940, returning to command the pointless but dramatic allied occupation of, and withdrawal from, Norway (May–June 1940). He was appointed GOC, Southern Command (July–November 1940), Commander in Chief, India (November 1940–June 1941), then replaced *Wavell as Commander in Charge, Middle East Command (June 1941–August 1942). He defeated the Germans in Libya and was then pushed

back by *Rommel, dismissed by *Churchill and replaced by *Alexander. Again Commander in Chief, India (1943–47), he worked well with the Americans, providing the support for *Slim's success in Burma. He supervised partition in India 1947–48, refused a peerage and retired to Marrakech.

Connell, J., *Auchinleck*. 1959.

Auckland, 1st Earl of, George Eden (1784–1849). English politician and administrator. Educated at Oxford, he became a lawyer and a Whig MP, and was President of the Board of Trade 1830–35. His friend Lord *Melbourne appointed him Governor-General of India and he served 1836–42, being recalled after failure of the British campaign in Afghanistan. The New Zealand city was named for him.

Auden, W(ystan) **H**(ugh) (1907–1973). Anglo-American poet, born in York. Brought up in Birmingham, he attended schools in Surrey and Norfolk, and while still at Christ Church, Oxford, he edited *Oxford Poetry*, and his own *Poems* appeared in 1930. He became a teacher and tutor, and spent time in Berlin. Auden was the most influential poet of his generation and one of the most prolific (about 400 poems), with strong left-wing sympathies. He was actively gay; his partners included the novelist Christopher *Isherwood and the American poet Chester Kallman. In 1935 he married Erika Mann, daughter of Thomas *Mann, to provide her with a British passport; the union was unconsummated. In 1937 he observed the Spanish Civil War and wrote effective propaganda. In 1939, with Isherwood, he migrated to the United States and taught in universities, becoming a citizen in 1946 (a mirror image of T. S. *Eliot's experience.) He also rejoined the Anglican communion in 1940.

His works include *The Orators* (1932), *The Dance of Death* (1933), *Look, Stranger* (1935) and *Another Time* (1940). *The Dog Beneath the Skin* (1935) and *The Ascent of F.6* (1936, with Isherwood) are verse plays, *The Rake's Progress* a libretto for a *Stravinsky opera (1951). He edited *The Oxford Book of Light Verse* (1938). Auden was professor of poetry at Oxford 1956–61. He was nominated for the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1961, 1963, 1964 and 1965. He died in Vienna and was buried in Kirchstettin.

His status as a poet was controversial, but Frank *Kermode regarded him as the greatest of his time. His most familiar poems include 'Funeral Blues', elegies to *Yeats and *Freud, 'Lullaby', 'Spain 1937', 'September 1, 1939', 'If I Could Tell You' and 'A Summer Night'. His wrinkled face has been described as 'a wedding cake left out in the rain'.

Spender, S. (ed.), *W. H. Auden: A Tribute*. 1975; Osborne, C., *W. H. Auden*. 1980; McCall Smith, A., *What W. H. Auden Can Do for You*. 2014.

Audubon, John James (né Jean-Jacques Rabin) (1785?–1851). American ornithologist and artist, born in Haiti. Of French descent, and educated in France where he studied painting under *David, he spent most of his later life in Kentucky and on the Hudson devoting his time to the observation of birds. Between 1827 and 1838 he published *Birds of America*, with 435 remarkable coloured engravings. The *Quadrupeds of North America* was completed by his sons in 1854. He was elected FRS in 1830.

Herrick, F. H., *Audubon the Naturalist*. 1968.

Auerbach, Frank Helmut (1931–2024). British painter, born in Berlin. Evacuated to England in 1939, his parents died in a concentration camp in 1942. He was an actor, then a teacher and first exhibited in 1956 and won prizes at the Biennales in Venice 1982 and 1986 for his powerful depictions of urban life.

Hughes, R., *The Art of Frank Auerbach*. 1990; Lampert, C., *Frank Auerbach. Speaking and Painting*. 2015.

August II 'the Strong' (Friedrich August von Wettin) (1670–1733). King of Poland 1697–1704, 1709–33, Grand Duke of Lithuania 1697–1704 and Elector of Saxony 1694–1733. On the death of Jan *Sobieski, he was elected from 18 candidates for the Polish throne, having pledged to become a Catholic. After being defeated by *Charles XII of Sweden, the Diet deposed him (1704) in favour of Stanisław *Leszczyński, until his restoration after the Russian victory at Poltava. August, whose political schemes exceeded his power to achieve them, was far more successful in the artistic field and, under his inspiration, his two capitals, Dresden and Warsaw, achieved a spectacular baroque magnificence. August's nickname 'the Strong' referred to sexual rather than military prowess. He was notorious for the number of his mistresses and about 350 illegitimate children, of whom the best known was the French marshal, Maurice de *Saxe.

Augustine (or **Austin**) **of Canterbury, St** (d.604/5). Roman missionary bishop in England. Born to the Roman nobility, he was prior of a monastery at Rome until in 596 Pope *Gregory entrusted him with the mission to convert the English. With 40 priests he landed in Kent, and was received favourably by King *Æthelberth, whose wife Bertha, a Frankish princess, was already a Christian. Augustine was given land on which to build a church at Canterbury, and had soon converted and baptised the king. Before the end of 597 he was raised to episcopal rank. Early successes among the East Saxons were not maintained and Essex reverted to paganism. In 601 Augustine was given authority over the British by Pope Gregory, but they refused to recognise him as Archbishop. This may have been due to his own haughty temperament as well as to resentment at foreign interference. Augustine's mission was therefore only

a partial success, but he must be recognised as a great missionary pioneer whose successors ensured the primacy of the Canterbury see.

Deansley, M., *Augustine of Canterbury*. 1964.

Augustine of Hippo, St (Aurelius Augustinus) (354–430). Latin Father of the Church and theologian, born at Tagaste (Souk Arhas), Numidia (now Algeria). Son of a Roman officer, Patricius, a pagan, and a Christian mother, [St] Monica, he practised no religion as a youth but was attracted to Manichaen dualism (*Mani). He studied rhetoric and law in Carthage, lived with a mistress for 15 years and fathered Adeodatus. Professor of rhetoric at Milan 383–86, he experienced a sudden conversion in 386 and was baptised by [St] *Ambrose in 387. He returned to Tagaste, living a monastic life until chosen as priest of the Christians at Hippo (Annaba, Algeria) in 391. Bishop of Hippo 395–430, he died there during a siege by the Vandals. His influence on Christian theology was enormous. The texts of 252 letters and more than 400 sermons survive, in addition to his books. In his *Confessions* (c.397), a literary masterpiece, strikingly modern in its psychological insights, he wrote frankly about his early life and feelings, leading to his conversion. *De civitate Dei* (*The City of God*), written after 412 is his view of society, and especially, at a time when the fall of the Roman Empire was attributed to its abandonment of its pagan gods, of the relationship between Church and State. *On the Trinity* is purely dogmatic, and a systematisation of the Christian doctrine on the subject. He also wrote energetically against the Donatist and Pelagian heresies and in doing so clarified and expounded his own convictions: that God's grace is offered independently of merit to those predestined for salvation and that it cannot be refused when offered, that man suffers from the burden of Adam's original sin unless through baptism he gains the redemption secured by Christ's passion, that only by the liberation of his will by God's grace from the enslavement of evil desires can man enjoy the vision and love of God. From his writings, which the above sentences summarise in barest outline, not only medieval Catholics but Calvin and Jansen derived their teaching on predestination. Indeed Augustine's thoughts as they developed over the years, contained inconsistencies, some of which were corrected in *Retractationes* (428). His feast is on 28 August. Diarmaid *MacCulloch argued that Augustine's impact on Western Christian thought 'can hardly be overstated, and Westerners have generally seen Paul through Augustine's eyes'. Outside the Catholic tradition, Augustine influenced *Schopenhauer, *Kierkegaard and *Nietzsche.

Brown, P., *Augustine of Hippo*. 1967; Matthews, G. B., *Augustine*. 2005; Pollman, K., *Saint Augustine the Algerian*. 2007; Ayres, L., *Augustine and the Trinity*. 2010; Lane Fox, R., *Augustine*. 2016; O'Collins, G., *Augustine*. 2017.

Augustulus, Romulus *see* **Romulus Augustulus**

Augustus (Gaius Octavius) (63 BCE–14 CE). First Roman Emperor 27 BCE–14 CE. Born near Rome, his father, Gaius Octavius, was rich but not patrician; his mother, Atia Balba Caesonia, was the daughter of Julia, sister of Julius *Caesar. He became close to Caesar, travelled with him, and was named as heir in his will. On Caesar's assassination in 44 BCE, he took the name Gaius Julius Caesar Octavianus. He formed the Second Triumvirate (sometimes called 'The Gang of Three') with Mark *Antony and *Lepidus, tracked down Caesar's assassins, their families and associates, and destroyed them brutally, then divided control of Roman territories (Octavian in the West, Antony in the East, Lepidus in North Africa). From 38 BCE, Octavian was known as Imperātor Caesar Dīvī Filius: as Commander-in-Chief he held the title of 'imperator', which evolved to mean 'emperor' or supreme ruler, and the other names pay tribute to his deified adoptive father. In 36 BCE, he destroyed the power of Lepidus, after a trial of strength in Sicily, spared his life, and sent him into contemptuous exile. By 32 BCE, with Antony obsessed with Egypt and *Cleopatra, Octavian decided to attack.

After Antony's defeat at Actium in 27 BCE the Senate conferred the additional name of 'Augustus', meaning 'great' or 'venerable'. The 'Empire' dates from that year, and he ceased using his birth name.

Augustus was the first ruler of what became known as the Julio-Claudian dynasty, which held power until 68 CE. He retained republican forms as a façade, lived comparatively austerely and called himself *Princeps Civitatis*, or 'first citizen of the state'. In theory his power rested on his possession of old republican offices, e.g. consul (an office he held 13 times), tribune, *pontifex maximus*. He retained the loyalty of a large, but physically dispersed, army with a generous retirement scheme. He claimed to have found Rome a city of brick and left it a city of marble. He directed the social, economic, political and military reforms which together created the imperial system of the next 400 years. In Italy and the older provinces he ruled through the Senate to which he left much of its dignity and at least some of its power. The outlying provinces were kept under his direct control through an agent (procurator), and the bulk of the army was kept there, with veterans settled in colonies near the frontiers to act as a first line of defence. His military policy was cautious: he did little to extend the limits of the empire except by advancing the frontier in the Danube area, which he held from Bavaria to the Black Sea. The loss of three legions which advanced in 9 CE fortified his cautious policy. It was a source of great pride to him that during his reign the doors of the temple of Janus were closed, indicating that the empire was everywhere at peace.

Economic progress followed: the construction of roads, aqueducts and fine buildings all witnessed to a steadily advancing prosperity. He also patronised

the arts and in the 'Augustan Age' *Virgil, *Livy and *Horace all flourished (*Ovid was in exile).

He married three times: (1) Claudia, who had no children by him, (2) Scribonia, mother of his dissolute daughter *Julia, and (3) *Livia Drusilla, who had two sons by a former marriage, *Tiberius and Drusus. Augustus had no sons, adopted Tiberius as his heir and married him to Julia. The month of Sextilis was renamed Augustus (August) for him in 8 CE.

He died, suddenly but peacefully, in Nola. He left a huge fortune: two-thirds to Tiberius, his heir, one-third to Livia.

In Rome he is commemorated by the Ara Pacis (dedicated in 9 BCE), now restored and reassembled on a different site, and his Mausoleum, which was sacked in 410. More statues and images of Augustus survive than all other Roman emperors combined, and he was very careful to promote his stereotypical image. After his brutal beginning, Augustus became a cool, enigmatic character who, for a time, adopted the sphinx as his emblem.

Hamond, M., *The Augustan Principate*. 1968; Grant, M., *Augustus to Constantine*. 1971; Goldsworthy, A., *Augustus: From Revolutionary to Emperor*, 2014.

Aung San (1914?–1947). Burmese nationalist politician. A prominent student leader, he worked with the Japanese during World War II, formed the Burma Independence Army and the Anti-Fascist People's Freedom League, then worked with the British to defeat the Japanese. He secured appointment to the provisional government, won the elections for a constituent assembly and became de facto Prime Minister. He was murdered together with seven other members of the Executive Council.

Aung San Suu Kyi (often referred to as **Suu Kyi** or **ASSK**) (1945–). Burmese (Myanmar) politician and activist, born in Yangon. Daughter of the nationalist leader *Aung San, she was educated in Delhi, Oxford and London, married the English historian **Michael Aris** (1946–1999), worked for the UN in New York and was exiled by the military government of *Ne Win. She returned to Burma (Myanmar) in 1988 and became leader of the National League for Democracy (NLD). Although she was placed under house arrest in 1989 her party won the May 1990 election, gaining 81 per cent of the seats. The army refused to cede power and she remained under house arrest until July 1995, attracting international support for her cause. Awarded the 1991 Nobel Peace Prize, she was under house arrest again 2000–02, 2003–10, then given some freedom of movement as part of a moderate reform process, continued by the new President of Myanmar, Thein Sein. In 2011 Suu Kyi visited Europe and the US, receiving her Nobel Prize in Oslo and the US Presidential Medal of Freedom from Barack *Obama. She delivered the 2011 BBC Reith Lectures on 'Securing Freedom'. In April 2012 she was elected to the House of Representatives, receiving 71 per cent of the vote, and became Opposition Leader. In November 2015, in a comparatively free election, the NLD won large majorities in both Houses of Parliament but the Constitution had been amended to prohibit any person who had married a foreign national from becoming President. Her nominee *Htin Kyaw became President March 2016–18, with Suu Kyi as State Counsellor (in effect, Prime Minister) of Myanmar and Foreign Minister 2016–21. In 2016 she was criticised by other Nobel Laureates for her failure to prevent the 'ethnic cleansing' of the (Muslim) Rohingya population in Rakhine province. Despite attempting to accommodate pressure from the armed forces, her government was deposed by military coup in February 2021. In four separate secret trials she was sentenced to a total of 23 years in prison and four of her close associates were executed.

Aurangzeb (regnal name **Alamgir**; Muhi-ud-Din Muhammad) (1618–1707). Emperor of India 1658–1707. Sixth of the Mughals, he gained the throne by imprisoning his father *Shah Jahan and overcoming the rivalry of his brothers by defeating them one by one and having them put to death. His puritanical Islamic rule alienated the Hindu majority, Sikhs and Rajputs, leading to revolts and building up of the hostile Maratha confederacy was hastened. Hopes of a strong united empire based on tolerance and justice were thus shattered and the way was opened for foreign intervention.

Sarkar, J., *A Short History of Aurangzeb, 1618–1707*. 1962.

Aurelian (Lucius Domitius Aurelianus) (212–275). Roman Emperor 270–75. Originally a common soldier, he was elected Emperor by the Danube army and consolidated the provinces in that area by evacuating Dacia. In Syria he overcame (271–72) the famous queen *Zenobia. In the west he brought Gaul back to its allegiance by inducing the 'independent' ruler Tetricus to renounce his claims, by this and other successes fully deserving the title 'restorer of the Roman Empire'.

Aurelius, Marcus *see* **Marcus Aurelius**

Auric, Georges (1899–1983). French composer. One of the modernist group known as 'Les Six', much influenced by *Satie and *Stravinsky, he is best known for his colourful dramatic music for ballet (e.g. *Les Matelots*) and films (e.g. René *Clair's *A Nous la liberté* and *Shaw's *Caesar and Cleopatra*).

Auriol, Vincent (1884–1966). French Socialist politician. A lawyer, he was a Deputy 1914–42, secretary of the French Socialist Party 1918–22, and served under *Blum as Minister of Finance 1936–37 and Justice 1937–38. In 1940 he voted against giving full power to *Pétain and was imprisoned 1940–43, escaped to England and worked with the Free French.

President of the Constituent Assembly 1946–47, he became the first President of the Fourth French Republic 1947–54.

Aurobindo, Sri (Sri Aurobindo Ghose) (1872–1950). Indian mystic and poet. Educated at Cambridge, he took an active part in the revival of political nationalism but after a term of imprisonment, withdrew to Pondicherry in 1910. Here he set up an ashram devoted to his concept of a divine evolutionary force which would expand human capacity and lead to utopia. He was an active promoter of 'Integral Yoga' and a prolific writer.

Austen, Jane (1775–1817). English novelist, born at Steventon, Hampshire. Daughter of a clergyman, **George Austen** (1731–1805) who held a family living, and **Cassandra Austen**, née Leigh (1739–1827), she had one sister, **Cassandra** (1773–1845), who like herself remained unmarried, and six brothers (two became clergymen, two became admirals). The quiet happy family life was varied by dancing, visiting and play-acting in the barn. In composing material for plays Jane found early opportunities for exercising her talents. She declined two proposals of marriage. Retiring in 1801 George Austen took his family to Bath where they lived until his death in 1805. Four uncomfortable years at Southampton followed, before the sisters found themselves installed at Chawton Cottage near Alton, Hampshire, now a house museum. Here, with routine enlivened by visits from a growing number of nephews and nieces, she lived for all but the last few months of her life. She died, probably of Addison's disease (but possibly of typhus or bovine tuberculosis) in Winchester and is buried in the cathedral.

The order of publication of her novels is not always that of composition. *First Impressions*, refused by a publisher in 1797, was rewritten as *Pride and Prejudice* and published in 1813, after *Sense and Sensibility* (1811). *Northanger Abbey*, which began as a satire on the Gothic novel, was completed in 1803 but not published until 1818. She then wrote *Mansfield Park* (1814), *Emma* (1816) and *Persuasion* (1818). *Lady Susan*, *The Watsons* and *Sanditon* were unfinished when she died.

Her novels, published anonymously, were out of print 1820–32. After Richard Bentley republished them they gradually gained recognition with the assistance of Thomas Babington *Macaulay and George Henry *Lewes (although Emily *Brontë was a dissenter). They are remarkable for the beautifully poised satire with which she presents the tensions between individual ambition and social necessity among the 'middling classes' in English country towns in the late 18th and early 19th centuries. Her dialogue is very witty, her characterisation shrewd and there is a deep vein of irony.

After reading *Pride and Prejudice* three times, Sir Walter *Scott wrote in his journal (March 1826): 'That young lady has a talent for describing the involvements and feelings and characters of ordinary life which is to me the most wonderful I ever met with.' (By then she had been dead for almost nine years.)

It is often asserted that events, such as the Napoléonic Wars then raging round her, had little or no influence in her absorbing but limited themes, but the Austen family were only one or two degrees of separation from conflicts in Europe and Asia. There was a family connection with Warren *Hastings in India, even some income from the opium trade, a cousin was married to a French aristocrat guillotined in 1794, an aunt was charged with stealing, and Jane's surviving letters indicate a keen observation of the world around her and a dark humour, sometimes using *double entendre*. James Edward Austen-Leigh's *A Memoir of Jane Austen* (1869) led to a sharp increase in interest and her novels were all republished. She has fallen in and out of fashion but is now recognised as one of the greatest writers in the language and (like Emily *Dickinson) her self-imposed limitation in subject matter is seen as evidence of artistic mastery. Her fame has risen steadily since the 1940s and her novels have been made into much admired films, television series and stage adaptations.

W. H. *Auden wrote:

> You could not shock her more
> than she shocks me,
> Beside her Joyce seems innocent as grass.
> It makes me most uncomfortable to see
> An English spinster of the middle class
> Describe the amorous effects of 'brass',
> Reveal so frankly and with such sobriety
> The economic basis of society.

Cecil, D., *Portrait of Jane Austen*. 1978; Nokes, D., *Jane Austen. A Life.* 1997; Tomalin, C., *Jane Austen. A Life.* 1997; Byrne, P., *The Real Jane Austen. A Life in Small Things.* 2013.

Austin, Herbert, 1st Baron Austin of Longbridge (1866–1941). English motor car pioneer, born in Buckinghamshire. He migrated to Australia in 1884 and worked for the Wolseley Company in Melbourne. Back in England by 1890, he designed the first Wolseley car (a three-wheeler) in 1895, and a four-wheeler in 1900. He founded his own Austin Motor Company in 1905, and his highly successful 7 h.p. 'baby' Austin was the first of a line of small cars which revolutionised the pattern of car manufacture and ownership throughout Europe. A Conservative MP 1918–24, he received a peerage in 1936.

Austin, John (1790–1859). English legal philosopher, born in Suffolk. Known as 'the founder of the analytical school of jurisprudence in England', he became a barrister and was first professor of jurisprudence 1826–32 at the new University College, London. Much of his middle life he spent in Germany, often in bad health, and his last years (from 1848), at Weybridge, Surrey. Sound and subtle reasoning, which discerned

errors in the traditional phraseology of legal writers, is a main characteristic of his work, much of which is summarised in his *Province of Jurisprudence Determined* (1832) and the posthumously published *Lectures on Jurisprudence* (1861–63).

Austin, John Langshaw (1911–1960). English philosopher. Educated at Shrewsbury and Balliol College, Oxford, he was a Fellow of All Souls College 1933–35 and taught at Magdalen from 1935. After service in army intelligence, he became White's professor of moral philosophy at Oxford 1952–60. Influenced by *Wittgenstein, he was, with *Ryle, leader of the 'Oxford school' of philosophy, published little, but had a powerful influence on the analysis of language, especially the need to formulate precise questions before satisfactory answers can be attempted.

Austin, Stephen Fuller (1793–1836). American pioneer. In 1823 he received permission to settle 200 American families in Texas (then in Mexican possession). The colony prospered, but friction developed with the Mexican Government and for a time Austin was imprisoned. After the revolution of 1835 caused by Mexico's abrogation of all states' rights, Austin served until his death as Secretary of State in the provisional government of an independent Texas.

Austral, Florence (Florence Mary Wilson, later Fawaz) (1892–1968). Australian soprano, born in Richmond. A protégé of *Melba, much recorded, she appeared as a dramatic soprano, especially in Wagnerian roles in London and Berlin. She retired to Australia in 1946 and died virtually forgotten.

Avebury, 1st Baron. John Lubbock (1834–1913). English banker, social reformer, and amateur scientist, born in London. Educated at Eton and at home, he was a neighbour and young friend of Charles *Darwin at Downe, wrote many successful books on science, including anthropology, geology, botany, zoology, especially hymenoptera (ants, bees and wasps), and archaeology. In *Pre-Historic Times* (1865) he coined the terms Palaeolithic and Neolithic to describe distinct periods in the Stone Age. In 1871 he bought Avebury, Silbury Hill and the West Kennet long barrow to ensure their preservation. He was a Liberal MP 1870–1900, Vice-Chancellor of London University 1872–80, Chairman of the London County Council 1890–92 and held office in many professional bodies. After a long campaign, he secured passage of the Ancient Monuments Act (1882). Created a baron in 1900, he took his title from the stone circles in Wiltshire.

Averroës (Abu-al-Walid Muhammad ibn Ahmed ibn Rushd) (1126–1198). Arabic philosopher, jurist and medical writer, born in Córdoba, in Andalusia. He became 'cadi' (judge) in Córdoba, then in Seville, and wrote commentaries on the works of *Aristotle, which were widely influential in the Middle Ages. He attempted to reconcile the Muslim religion and Aristotelianism, and wrote an encyclopaedia of medicine which was widely diffused in Latin translations.

Avery, Oswald Theodore (1877–1955). American-Canadian molecular biologist, born in Nova Scotia. He worked at the Rockefeller Institute, New York, on influenza research. In 1944 his identification of deoxyribonucleic acid (DNA) as the genetic material of chromosomes—the building blocks of plant and animal life—was the foundation of molecular biology. He received the Copley Medal (1945), the Lasker Award (1947) and was nominated 38 times for a Nobel Prize, without success.

Dubos, R., *The Professor, the Institute and DNA*. 1976.

Avicenna (Latinised version of **Ibn Sīnā**: full name Abū 'Alī al-Husayn ibn 'Abd Allāh ibn al-Hasan ibn 'Alī ibn Sīnā) (980–1037). Persian polymath, philosopher, theologian and physician, born near Bukhara. His great *Qanun* (Canon), which codified medical knowledge, rivalled in importance the works of *Galen. He translated *Euclid and also wrote on mathematics, alchemy, music and science. In his philosophical writings, which influenced St Thomas *Aquinas, he attempted a synthesis of Islamic religious teaching and the work of *Plato and *Aristotle. He accepted the view that matter has always existed and opposed the more orthodox belief that the universe was created from nothing.

Afnan, S. M., *Avicenna, His Life and Works*. 1958.

Avogadro, Amedeo (1776–1856). Italian physicist. A doctor of law, he taught physics in Turin from 1806, eventually becoming professor of mathematical physics there. He is best known for the statement (Avogadro's hypothesis or law) that, under the same conditions, equal volumes of all gases contain an equal number of molecules (a word he coined). Although put forward in 1811, the importance of this hypothesis was not realised until 1858 when *Cannizzaro pointed out that it could be used to determine atomic weight. Thereafter it played a part in bringing order to chemical classification.

Avon, 1st Earl of *see* **Eden, Anthony**

Ay II (Kheperkheperure) (d.c.1319 BCE). Egyptian pharaoh of the XVIIIth dynasty 1323–19 BCE. High priest and possibly vizier during the reign of his grand-nephew *Tutankhamun, he overturned the monotheism of *Akhenaten.

Ayckbourn, Sir Alan (1939–). English playwright and theatre director. He went straight from school to work in repertory companies and directed the Scarborough Theatre 1971–2009. From 1959 he wrote 76 plays, generally critical and popular successes, many of them adapted for television, including *The Norman Conquests* (1975), *A Small Family Business* (1987) and *Henceforward …* (1989).

Ayer, Sir A(lfred) **J**(ules) (1910–1989). British philosopher. Educated at Eton and Oxford, he was originally known as an expounder of logical positivism. He was Grote professor of the philosophy of mind and logic at London University 1946–59 and Wykeham professor of logic at Oxford 1959–78. His books include *Language, Truth and Logic* (1936), where he expounded the theory that philosophic argument must be based on linguistic analysis, and *The Problem of Knowledge* (1956), an examination of the nature of philosophical skepticism and such problems as perception and memory. He was knighted in 1970. His frank autobiography revealed him as a serial philanderer.

Aylmer, Sir Felix (né Felix Edward Aylmer Jones) (1889–1979). English actor. He played upper-class type-cast characters, appeared in 137 films, was Polonius in *Olivier's *Hamlet* (1947), President of Actors' Equity 1950–69 and knighted in 1965.

Aylwin (Azócar), **Patricio** (1918–2016). Chilean politician. A lawyer and academic, he was a founder of the Christian Democratic Party (1952), became a senator 1964–73 and under the military rule of General *Pinochet continued cautious advocacy of democratic reform. In December 1989 he was elected President of Chile with 55.2 per cent of the vote and took office in March 1990, with Pinochet retaining command of the armed forces. He was succeeded by Eduardo *Frei in 1994.

Ayub Khan, Muhammad (1908–1974). Pakistani soldier and President. He entered the Indian army from the British military college at Sandhurst, served in Burma in World War II and became Commander-in-Chief of the Pakistani army (1951). He was Defence Minister 1954–55 and succeeded *Mirza as President 1958–69. To mitigate corruption and faction he abolished the 1947 constitution and used authoritarian methods, but prepared for a return to democracy by creating a large number of local councils known as Basic Democracy Units. In 1965 he won the presidential election against Fatima Jinnah, sister of Pakistan's creator, but resigned in 1969 after crop failures and political riots. Ayub's party was obliterated in the 1970 elections.

Azaña y Diaz, Manuel de (1880–1940). Spanish radical politician, born in Alcalá de Henares. A civil servant and writer, he was Prime Minister 1931–33 of the newly formed republic after *Alfonso XIII's fall. He became Prime Minister again (1936) and President 1936–39 during the Spanish Civil War. He fled to France on *Franco's victory.

Azeglio, Marchese d', Massimo Taparelli (1798–1866). Italian author and politician. An aristocrat, he studied painting in Rome, married a daughter of Alessandro *Manzoni, wrote several political novels, became an ardent advocate of Italian unification and an opponent of papal rule in the Romagna. One of the pioneers of *Risorgimento,* he was premier of Sardinia-Piedmont under *Vittorio Emanuele II 1849–52, passed anti-clerical laws but had an uneasy relationship with *Cavour.

Azikiwe, Nnamdi (1904–1996). Nigerian politician. An Ibo, known generally as 'Zik', he lived in the United States 1925–34, lectured at Lincoln University, Pennsylvania, worked as an editor in the Gold Coast (now Ghana) 1934–37, then returned to Nigeria, where he acquired large banking and newspaper interests. Prime Minister of the Eastern region 1954–59, he was Governor-General in 1960–63 and, after Nigeria became a republic, the first president 1963–66, until deposed by an army coup.

Aznar, José Maria (1953–). Spanish politician. Leader of the Partido Popular (PP) 1990–2004, he was Prime Minister of Spain 1996–2004.

B

Baader, Andreas (1943–1977) and **Meinhoff, Ulrike** (1934–1976). German terrorists. They led the Baader-Meinhoff gang of West German left-wing terrorists, politically most active in the 1970s. Meinhoff was murdered in prison and Baader killed himself.

Babbage, Charles (1791–1871). English mathematician and computer pioneer, born in London. Educated at Trinity College and Peterhouse, Cambridge and elected FRS in 1816 (at the age of 25), he became a co-founder of the Analytical Society (1812), the Astronomical Society (1820) and the Statistical Society (1834). He held the Lucasian chair of mathematics at Cambridge 1828–39, but delivered no lectures. In *On the Economy of Machinery and Manufactures* (1832) he extended Adam *Smith's work on the 'division of labour' and proposed theories that F. W. *Taylor later called 'scientific management'. He proposed a machine for tabulating mathematical calculations for up to 20 decimal places and received government support 1823–42 for developing the first analytical computer, the programmed mechanical 'difference engine', but it was left incomplete. He then designed 'Difference Engine No. 2' (1846–49) but it was not built until 1991. (It is now displayed in the London Science Museum.) A small Swedish model, influenced by Babbage, was produced in 1854. From 1837, Babbage planned an 'analytical engine' to be fed by sets of Jacquard punch cards read by mechanical 'feelers', but it was never completed. It incorporated memory storage and anticipated modern computer techniques, such as 'conditional transfer', where intermediate calculations automatically direct the machine to modify its own program. He worked with Ada *Lovelace who published the first algorithm for a computer (1843).

Babbage's interests included theology, economics, dendrochronology and cryptography. He was a parliamentary candidate in 1832 and 1834, and declined a knighthood. He invented the speedometer, the cowcatcher for trains, and an ophthalmoscope.

Hyman, A., *Charles Babbage*. 1984.

Bab ed-Din (1821–1850). Persian religious leader. The name (Arabic: 'gate of faith') given to Mirza Ali Mohammed of Shiraz, who was recognised by one of the Shi'ite sects as a new prophet. The new religion he preached, Babism, was compounded from Sufism, Gnosticism and the Koran. He and his followers were persecuted and after an ineffectual rebellion in Tabriz the Bab was executed. His disciples took refuge in Türkiye and Palestine and from the latter a new leader, Baha Ullah, emerged.

Babel, Isaak Emmanuilovich (1894–1940). Russian writer, born in Odessa. A friend of *Gorki, he served with the Bolsheviks in the Civil War and was both appalled and exhilarated by the carnage. His works included *Tales of Odessa* (1923–24), the short story cycle *Red Cavalry* (1926) and the play *Sunset* (1928). Arrested in 1939, he was tortured and executed on *Stalin's orders and rehabilitated in 1954.

Babeuf, François Noël (1760–1797). French socialist and journalist. He found his original occupation as a collector of feudal dues highly distasteful and on the outbreak of the Revolution he immediately gave it enthusiastic support with popular and inflammatory articles. With the advent of the Directory his influence with the leaders waned. He believed strongly in economic as well as political equality and advocated a form of communism, i.e. the equal distribution of the products of labour. His paper and organisation were proscribed. His plan for an insurrection was betrayed and he and 30 of his followers were executed. His theories (known as Babeufism) inspired several later egalitarian movements.

Thomson, D., The *Babeuf Plot: The Making of a Republican Legend*. 1947.

Babington, Anthony (1561–1586). English conspirator. A wealthy Roman Catholic landowner in Derbyshire, he entered into a conspiracy to murder *Elizabeth I, free *Mary and make her queen. But cipher correspondence was discovered by *Walsingham, Babington fled, and was caught and executed.

Babur (= lion. Zahīr ud-Dīn Muhammad) (1483–1530). Emperor (Padishah) of India 1626–30. First of the Mughals, born in Uzbekistan, great-great-grandson of *Timur the Great (a.k.a. Tamerlane), he became ruler of Turkestan at the age of 12 but, troubled by constant revolts, he aimed at conquests to the south. After exploratory raids resulting in the occupation of much of Afghanistan he crossed the Indus in 1525 and in 1526 gained a decisive victory at Panipat over the Afghan Emperor of Delhi, confirmed by defeating the Rajputs the following year. In his short period of rule in northern India he improved communications and consolidated the administration of his realm.

Talbot, F. G., *Memoirs of Babar*. 1968.

Bacall, Lauren (née Betty Joan Perske) (1924–2014). American actor, born in New York. Originally a model, she achieved immediate recognition in *To Have and Have Not* (1944), with Humphrey *Bogart, whom she married in 1945. They appeared together in *The Big Sleep* (1946), *Dark Passage* (1947), and *Key Largo* (1948). She later married the actor Jason Robards. An active Democrat, she was a cousin of Shimon *Peres. The American Film Institute named her as the greatest 20th Century Hollywood female film star, with her distinctive husky voice, sultry allure and sharp wit.

Bach, Alexander, Freiherr von (1813–1893). Austrian bureaucrat. A lawyer, as Minister for the Interior 1849–59, he was the architect of a system of mildly reformist bureaucratic activism for the Austrian Empire, used to counter-balance nationalist populism.

Bach, Johann Sebastian (1685–1750). German composer, born at Eisenach. Since the early 16th century, more than 50 of his male relatives are listed as church or town musicians in Thuringia and neighbouring provinces. Youngest son of **Johann Ambrosius Bach** (1645–1695), who taught him the violin, both his parents died before he was 10. Sebastian then lived with his eldest brother **Johann Christoph Bach** (1671–1721), from whom he learned organ and clavier playing. He sang in several church choirs, studied intensely and walked long distances to hear notable organists. He composed his first instrumental works about 1703 and played violin in the orchestra of Prince Johann-Ernst of Weimar and was organist at the Lutheran churches in Arnstadt 1703–07 and Mühlhausen 1707–08. In 1705 he walked from Arnstadt to Lübeck, more than 400 kilometres, to meet Dietrich *Buxtehude.

Bach wrote more than 1,100 works which were catalogued (1950) by Wolfgang Schmeider as BWV (Bach-Werke-Verzeichnis), grouped thematically and followed by a number. Some compositions have been lost and some attributions on the list are disputed.

In the years 1703–08 he composed many complex organ works, revealing his absolute mastery of counterpoint: these include the Toccata and fugue in D minor, BWV 565 (although the absence of an early MS has raised questions about its authorship), and the Passacaglia and fugue in C minor, BWV 582.

In 1707 he married his cousin, **Maria Barbara Bach**, who bore him seven children, and died in 1720. Bach won a high reputation as an instrumentalist and was court organist to the Duke of Weimar 1708–17. In 1721 he sent an elegant MS of six virtuosic concertos for orchestra and a various solo instruments, probably composed in Weimar, to the Margrave of Brandenburg, presumably as a job application, but nothing came of it. However, the MS was preserved, found in 1849 and published as *The Brandenburg Concertos* in 1880. As Prince Leopold of Anhalt-Cöthen's music director 1717–23, he composed much vivacious instrumental and orchestral music, including four orchestral suites, six suites for solo cello, three sonatas and three partitas for violin (including in No. 2, BWV 1004, the great 'Chaconne'), concertos for violin and clavier.

In 1722 he married **Anna Magdalena Wilcken** and they had 13 children. Of Bach's 20 children, 10 lived into adult life.

After two other musicians (including *Telemann) had refused the position, Bach became Cantor (musical director) and director of the Choir School at Thomaskirche (St Thomas Church), Leipzig, in 1723 and held the post until his death. He also directed music at the Nikolaikirche. To strengthen his position in the many disputes over administration which broke out within the Church, he sought, and gained, the honorary title of court composer to the Elector of Saxony (1736). At Leipzig, he wrote 295 Church cantatas at great speed, mostly in the years 1723–27, to provide variety for the church choir and congregation. The consistently high quality of his huge output is unparalleled. Of the 224 surviving cantatas attributed to him, a few are probably not authentic. His greatest religious works are the sublime *Magnificat* (1723), *Passion according to St John* (1724), *Passion according to St Matthew* (1727) and *Easter Oratorio* (1735). The *Christmas Oratorio* (1734) is a group of six cantatas written for the Christmas season. The *Mass in B Minor*, was a rarity in the Lutheran tradition: a complete mass, sung in Latin, but with impassioned orchestral parts. Of its 26 sections (one repeated), all but three are recycled from earlier works, the earliest composed in 1714. It took its final form in 1749, but was not performed complete until 1859. Despite the spasmodic nature of its composition, it has great architectural strength and sublime expression. He also wrote about 30 'secular cantatas', cheerful works usually commemorating birthdays, weddings or ceremonies.

The 48 preludes and fugues for keyboard, usually known as *Das Wohltemperierte Klavier* (*The Well-Tempered Clavier*), in two books (I: BWV 846, 1722; II: BWV 893, 1742), demonstrate Bach's enthusiasm for 'equal temperament'—tuning the notes of an octave in keyboard instruments into 12 semitones (the chromatic scale) with equal frequency intervals between each note. Far from being a forbidding set of exercises, the work has an exceptional emotional range, coupled with increasingly complex, but fascinating, challenges to technique.

Bach was the greatest master of polyphonic form but also experimented with rich chordal harmonies in *The Goldberg Variations* (1742) and in many of his organ works. The great prelude and fugue in E Minor ('The Wedge') was written about 1730. *The Musical Offering*, a set of variations based on a theme given to Bach by *Friedrich II ('the Great') (1747) is an encyclopaedia of instrumental counterpoint.

In 1749 he became blind from cataracts. An operation by the English eye surgeon Sir John Taylor was unsuccessful (as he also was with *Händel). Bach died of a stroke in the following year. Originally buried in the old cemetery at Johanniskirche, he was relocated in the church in 1894 (although the identity of the skeleton has been seriously questioned), then reburied in the Thomaskirche in 1950.

Bach enjoyed only a modest fame compared to his contemporaries Telemann and Händel, and his music was seldom performed, although *Mozart, *Beethoven and *Chopin admired him greatly. Bach's successor in Leipzig, Gottlob Harrer, did not perform his music.

In 1829 *Mendelssohn revived the *St Matthew Passion* in Berlin. In 1850 Moritz Hauptmann founded the Bach Gesellschaft, which discovered many works thought to be lost and stimulated a great revival of interest in his life and music. Many critics rank him as the greatest of all composers.

A motif based on the notes B♭A C B (in German notation, B A C H) was used by Bach himself in *Art of the Fugue* and, as a tribute, in about 400 works by composers including *Schumann, *Liszt, *Brahms, *Rimsky-Korsakov, *Busoni, *Reger, *Schoenberg, *Ives, *Webern, *Schnittke and *Pärt.

Albert *Schweitzer argued in his biography that Bach was not a composer of 'absolute' or abstract music, but a poet and mystic whose works were intensely dramatic and pictorial. Paradoxically, he considered that *Wagner's dramatic intensity had stimulated a fresh approach to Bach's emotional depth and power.

Three of Bach's sons were noted musicians (contemporaries ranked them higher than their father). **Wilhelm Friedemann Bach** (1710–1784), the greatest organist of his day, composed sonatas, concertos and fantasias for organ and clavier. **Carl Philipp Emanuel Bach** (1714–1788), a brilliant keyboard virtuoso who became chamber musician to Friedrich II in Potsdam (1740–67), then succeeded *Telemann as director of music at five Hamburg churches. He helped to establish sonata form, pioneered 'harmonic' music (in contrast to 'polyphonic') and wrote some of the earliest symphonies, which influenced *Haydn and *Mozart. He was a forerunner of romanticism and *'Sturm und Drang'*, his music being marked by sudden, unexpected modulations, pauses and emotional tension. He wrote 52 harpsichord concertos, many transcribed for other instruments, e.g. the amazing Flute Concerto in D Minor, H. 426 (1747). The first music by a European composer known to have been performed in Australia was by C. P. E. Bach. His youngest brother, **Johann Christian Bach** (1735–1782), lived and studied in Italy 1750–62, became a Catholic, then moved to London in 1762, taught music to Queen *Charlotte and was known as 'the English Bach.' In the case of *Bach v. Longman* (1777), Lord *Mansfield ruled that copyright applied to musical scores. J. C. Bach wrote several operas, six symphonies, helped to develop sonata and symphonic form and influenced the young Mozart. Minor planet 1814 Bach is named for him.

Schweitzer, A., *J.S. Bach*, 2 vols. 1905, revised 1966; Hofstadter, D.R., *Gödel, Escher, Bach: An Eternal Golden Braid*. 1980; Wolff, C., *Johann Sebastian Bach: The Learned Musician*. 2000; Gardiner, J. E., *Bach: Music in the Castle of Heaven.* 2013; Elie, P., *Reinventing Bach.* 2013.

Bachelard, Gaston (1884–1962). French historian and philosopher of science, born at Bar-sur-Aube. Some of his early work, such as *La Formation de L'Esprit Scientifique* (1938) was concerned with the obstacles which had traditionally hampered scientific thinking: metaphysics, anthropomorphism. He wanted to apply *Freud's work to understand the factors that had repressed scientific intelligence. Thus he saw alchemy as the projection of inner desires, whereas chemistry developed a body of formal experimental practices which took it out of the field of the subjective into the scientific. Bachelard also pioneered a 'structuralist' understanding of scientific thought. He tried to uncover the often hidden affinities which linked certain concepts. He believed that science progressed not by gradual evolution, but by sudden leaps from one framework of reference to another.

Dagognet, F., *Gaston Bachelard*. 1965.

Bachelet Jeria, (Verónica) **Michelle** (1951–). Chilean politician, born in Santiago. Her father, an army administrator, was arrested, tortured and died in custody (1974). With her mother she was briefly a refugee in Australia (1975), then went to East Germany. A surgeon, pediatrician and epidemiologist, she was a Socialist moderate who served as Health Minister 2000–02, Defence Minister 2002–04, and became Chile's first female president 2006–10. She worked for a UN agency in New York, then ran for a second presidential term in 2013, winning 62 per cent of the vote in a second ballot. She became United Nations Commissioner for Human Rights 2018– .

Bacon, Francis, 1st Viscount St Alban, Baron Verulam (1561–1626). English lawyer, scientist, essayist and philosopher, born in London. His father, **Sir Nicholas Bacon** (1509–1579), was Keeper of the Great Seal to Queen *Elizabeth, his mother an aunt of William Cecil, Lord *Burghley. He attended Trinity College, Cambridge between the ages of 12 and 14, then studied at Gray's Inn, London, spent a few years in diplomacy and in 1586 became a bencher of Gray's Inn. He was a Member of Parliament 1584–1617. He became a protégé of the Earl of *Essex but did not scruple to appear for the prosecution when Essex was tried for treason in 1601. Under *James I, Bacon advanced steadily: in 1613 he became Attorney-General and in 1618 Lord Chancellor with the title Baron Verulam. In 1621 he became Viscount St Alban but in the same year was charged with bribery and corruption. He insisted that gifts received had not affected his judgments, but he was imprisoned briefly and banished from court and parliament. Side by side with his public life he followed his literary, scientific and philosophic pursuits. His *Essays* on such subjects as truth, adversity and death were first published in 1597 and issued in final form in 1625. His philosophic and scientific work was intended to summarise the state of knowledge so far attained and outline a method by which this knowledge could be renewed and advanced. The latter purpose is the theme of *Novum Organum,* written in Latin, published in 1620 and intended

to be part of a great all embracing work *The Great Instauration*. His method was a kind of tabular analysis of affinities and deviations by which he supposed scientific definition could be reached. The definition of heat arrived at by his method 'Heat is an expansive motion restrained and striving to exert itself in the smallest particles' is near the truth but the method in general has not proved useful to later scientists. His great significance in the history of science lies in the stress he gave to the value of experiment and to the failure of scholastic methods to arrive at a true understanding of nature. Other literary work includes *The Advancement of Learning* (1605) and *The New Atlantis* (1626), inspired by Sir Thomas *More's *Utopia*.

The theory that Bacon was the real author of the Shakespearian plays was first proposed in print in 1856 (independently) by Delia Bacon and William Henry Smith and has generated a vast, self-deluding, literature. *Pope's description of Bacon 'as the wisest, brightest, meanest of mankind' is probably unfair, but it is certain that a lack of moral fibre prevented him in times of crisis from living up to his best intentions.

Anderson, F. H., *Francis Bacon: His Career and His Thought*. 1962; Mathews, N., *Francis Bacon*. 1996.

Bacon, Francis (1909–1992). British painter, born in Dublin. Of English parentage, traumatised by his father, he had no formal training but spent two years in Berlin and Paris, then worked in London 1928–31 as an interior decorator and furniture designer. He exhibited in the 1930s but destroyed almost all of his early work. In 1945 his *Three Studies for Figures at the Base of a Crucifixion* (1944), now in the Tate Gallery, created violent controversy, showing figures of unrelieved horror, images evoking wartime concentration camps, far removed from serene landscapes or salon painting. Bacon's works were often inspired by other paintings, photographs or films, for example his *Study after Velazquez's Portrait of Pope Innocent X* (1953), sometimes called 'the screaming Pope', images from *Eisenstein's *Battleship Potemkin* and *Muybridge's photographs of 'animal locomotion'. Retrospectives were held at the Tate in 1962 and exhibited at the Tate, and in Paris and Washington in 1985. By then many critics considered him the greatest living painter. His *Triptych May–June 1973* was sold for $US6.27 million in New York in 1989. In 1983 he declined the OM. Robert *Hughes wrote (1985) that 'no other living painter has set forth with such pitiless clarity the tensions and paradoxes that surround all efforts to see, let alone paint, the human figure in an age of photography'. He died of asthma in Madrid. *Three Studies of Lucien Freud* (1969) was sold at auction in New York for $US142.4 million, a record for any art work.

Leiris, M., *Francis Bacon*, 1987; Gowing, L. and Hunter, S., *Francis Bacon* 1989; Farson, D., *The Gilded Gutter Life of Francis Bacon,* 1993; Peppiatt, M., *Francis Bacon: Anatomy of an Enigma*, 1996; Stevens, M. and Swan, A., *Francis Bacon: Revelations*. 2021.

Bacon, Roger (c.1214–1292). English scientific philosopher, born according to one tradition near Ilchester, Somerset, and to another at Bilsey in Gloucestershire. Though probably educated in Oxford the first certain date in his career seems to be 1236 when he was studying in Paris. In or after 1251 he returned for a time to England and it may have been then that he joined the Franciscans. For 10 years from 1256 he seems to have been in France suffering from ill health and writing little. The last years of his life were spent at Oxford. Roger Bacon was a man of great learning and wrote much (e.g. the vast *Opus Maius*, 1267–68), on many subjects, but as a systematiser rather than an originator. In philosophy Aristotle provided the basis of his philosophical studies as he did for those of all medieval philosophers. His probings into more arcane subjects such as alchemy were in line with the thought of his time. Some of his opinions and speculations evidently incurred the disapproval of his superiors but of his actual imprisonment the evidence is insubstantial. His popular image was, however, that of a necromancer. It is in experimental science that he produced real achievement, especially in optics. He remains, however, one of the greatest expounders of medieval knowledge and thought.

Crowley, T., *Roger Bacon*. 1950; Clegg, B., *Roger Bacon: The First Scientist*. 2003.

Baden-Powell, Robert Stephenson Smyth Baden-Powell, 1st Baron (1857–1941). English youth leader and general. Son of an Oxford professor of geometry, he was educated at Charterhouse School and joined the Indian Army in 1876. He campaigned in Afghanistan (1880–81), Zululand (1888), Ashanti (1895–96) and Matabeleland (1896) and became famous as the defender of Mafeking during the Boer War, when he was besieged with 1200 men for 215 days (1899–1900). In 1907 he founded the Boy Scouts movement which became established internationally and which he led as Chief Scout until his death. In 1910 he set up the Girl Guides with his sister Agnes, followed by Sea Scouts, Wolf Cubs and Rover Scouts. He wrote *Aids to Scouting* (1899), *Scouting for Boys* (1908) and 30 other books, all illustrated by himself. He received a peerage in 1929 and the OM in 1937. Although Scouts were banned by the Nazis in Germany in 1934, as late as 1939 Baden-Powell thought *Hitler's *Mein Kampf* was 'a wonderful book'. His sexuality was controversial. He lived in Kenya from 1939, and died there. His wife **Dame Olave St Clair Baden-Powell** (née Soames) (1889–1977) became World Chief Guide in 1918.

Jeal, T., *Baden-Powell.* 1989.

Bader, Sir Douglas Robert Steuart (1910–1982). English aviator. Despite losing both legs in a flying accident in 1931, he rejoined the RAF, led a fighter squadron in the Battle of Britain, and had already

brought down 22 opponents when (August 1941), after a collision with a German aircraft in France, he was captured and held in Colditz as a prisoner of war.

Brickhill, P., *Reach for the Sky*. 1954.

Badoglio, Pietro (1871–1956). Italian marshal. After distinguished service in World War I he was governor of Libya 1928–33 and was in command of the assault on Abyssinia in 1936. At the opening of World War II he was Chief of Staff but resigned in 1940 after Italian defeats in Albania. In 1943 he was made premier of an anti-Fascist government, on *Mussolini's fall, and at once negotiated an armistice with the Allies. He resigned in 1944.

Baedeker, Karl (1801–1859). German publisher, born in Essen. Son of a printer and bookseller, he established his own business in Coblenz and from 1827 he published the famous Baedeker guidebooks. His son transferred the business to Leipzig.

Baekeland, Leo Hendrik (1863–1944). American chemist, born in Belgium. He migrated to the US in 1889, developed Velox photographic paper and sold it (1899) to George *Eastman. A pioneer of the plastics industry, he discovered (1905) the first thermosetting resin of practical importance named Bakelite. He was appointed an honorary professor of Columbia University.

Baer, Karl Ernst von (1792–1876). Russo-German zoologist, embryologist, ethnographer, and geographer, born in Estonia. He studied at the universities of Tartu and Würzburg, and taught at Königsberg 1817–34, where he discovered the mammalian ovum and the notochord and wrote *On the Development of Animals* (2 vols, 1828, 1837) which established the basis of the science of embryology. He worked in the Russian Academy of Sciences in St Petersburg 1834–62, explored plant life in northern Siberia, and made discoveries in anthropology and geography. *Darwin used Baer's work in embryology to advance his evolutionary thesis, but Baer rejected the idea of a common ancestry for animals. He was awarded the Copley Medal in 1867.

Baeyer, (Johann Friedrich William) **Adolf von** (1835–1917). German organic chemist, born in Berlin. From a military family, Baeyer studied chemistry with *Bunsen at Heidelberg, and later with *Kekulé. He took up teaching positions at the Berlin technical institute and military academy 1860–72 and became professor of chemistry at Strasbourg 1872–75 and Munich 1875–1917. A superb experimenter in the field of organic chemistry, Baeyer devoted most of his life to solving problems of structure. After early work on uric acid, he investigated the carboxylic acids of benzene, and hoped to discover the structure of benzene itself. He isolated barbituric acid which led to the development of barbiturates. His main work, begun in 1865, was upon the synthesis of indigo. He successfully prepared indigo from other reagents, and by 1883 had unravelled the formula of its structure. He declined, however, to collaborate with the synthetic dye industry in making commercial use of his analysis. He turned his attention elsewhere, to studying polyacetylenes and other explosive compounds, and experimenting with oxonium compounds. Baeyer was chiefly an empirical chemist, but his work was of some theoretical interest in underlining the strength of ring structures, and investigating the direction of valence bonds. He was awarded the Nobel Prize for Chemistry in 1905.

Baffin, William (1584–1622). English Arctic explorer. A voyage to Greenland (1612) and whaling off Spitsbergen (1613–14) provided the experience for two vain attempts to find the Northwest Passage. In the second (1616) he discovered and named Smith's Sound and Lancaster Sound and explored what is now Baffin Bay and the shores of Baffin Island. In 1617 he abandoned the Arctic for the East and it was while helping the Shah of Persia at the siege of Ormuz that he was killed. He wrote accounts of several of his voyages.

Bagehot, Walter (1826–1877). English political economist, born at Langport, Somerset. After leaving London University he worked in his father's banking firm and, having married a daughter of its founder, James Wilson, was editor of *The Economist* 1860–77. He applied great scientific acumen to his rigorous analysis of 19th-century economics and politics. In *The English Constitution* (1867) he identified two distinct functions in the United Kingdom government, 'the dignified' (ceremonial, consensus, apolitical) and 'the efficient' (executive, decision-making, partisan, elected). Other books include *Lombard Street* (1873), *Physics and Politics* (1875), and *Literary Studies* (1879).

St John-Stevas, N., *Walter Bagehot*. 1959; *Collected Works of Walter Bagehot*. 1966.

Bagration, Piotr Ivanovich, Prince (1765–1812). Russian general. Of Georgian and Armenian descent, he served against the French revolutionary and Napoléonic armies in Italy, Switzerland and Austria and against Türkiye in 1809. He commanded an army against *Napoléon during the advance to Moscow in 1812, and was killed at Borodino.

Bahā' al-Dīn Muḥammad ibn Ḥusayn al-'Āmilī (also known as **Shaykh-i Bahā'ī**) (1547–1621). Persian architect, astronomer, poet and philosopher, born in Lebanon. He was the architect of the Imam Mosque in Esfahan, begun in 1611, an important teacher and advocate of the heliocentric universe.

Bahadur Shah II, Zafar (Mirza Abu Zafar Sirajuddin Muhammad Bahadur Shah Zafar) (1775–1862). Emperor of India 1837–57, the last of the Mughals. Son of Akbar II, he succeeded when the empire was in decline, being completely controlled by the British

East India Company. He was a gifted poet and calligrapher, promoting tolerance for all religions. The Indian Mutiny of 1857, although started by Hindus, was regarded as a treasonable attempt to restore the aged Emperor to power, and there were savage reprisals by British forces. Sentenced to life imprisonment, Zafar died in Rangoon (Yangon) and was secretly buried.

Dalrymple, W., *The Last Mughal*. 2006.

Baha-Ullah *see* under **Bab ed-Din**

Bailey, Sir Donald Coleman (1901–1985). English engineer. His invention of the 'Bailey bridge', which could be carried in sections and quickly erected, greatly assisted military transport in World War II and was later adapted for civilian use.

Bailly, Jean Sylvain (1736–1793). French astronomer and politician. He became President of the National Assembly in the opening stages of the Revolution and was Mayor of Paris 1789–91, but retired into private life when blamed for allowing the National Guard to fire on a mob demonstrating against the king. He was later denounced, condemned and guillotined. His great *Histoire d'astronomie* appeared in five volumes (1775–87).

Bain, Alexander (1818–1903). Scottish philosopher, born in Aberdeen. Educated at Aberdeen, he was professor of logic 1860–81 at the university. His writings, e.g. *The Senses and the Intellect* (1855), *The Emotions and the Will* (1859), *Mind and Body* (1873), cover the borderland territory between physiology, psychology and philosophy. He also wrote textbooks on grammar and logic and a study of James and John Stuart *Mill (1882).

Bainimarama, Frank (né Josaia Voreqe) (1954–). Fijian sailor and politician. He served in the Fijian navy and was commander of the armed forces 1999–2014, and, after a coup, became Prime Minister of Fiji 2007–22, weakening the authority of Fijian chiefs, founded the FijiFirst Party in 2014 and won elections in 2014 and 2018.

Baird, John Logie (1888–1946). Scottish electrical engineer, born in Helensburgh. A pioneer of mechanically scanned television, he was dogged by ill health and his early inventions failed, but from 1922 he devoted himself to studying the transmission of pictures by wireless waves. In 1924, at a house in Soho, he first transmitted a televised image over several feet, using a mechanical scanning device. This apparatus (now in the Science Museum, London) was publicly demonstrated in 1926 and Baird's system was given a prolonged test by the BBC. Electronic scanning (*Shoenberg, *Zworykin) was, however, eventually chosen for television systems. Later researches enabled Baird to produce three dimensional and coloured images (1944). In 1927 he also invented a method of direction-finding in total darkness by means of infra-red rays. He made the first ultrashort wave radio transmissions.

McArthur, C., and Waddell, P., *Secret Life of John Logie Baird*. 1986.

Bajazet *see* **Bayezid**

Baker, Sir Benjamin (1840–1907). English civil engineer. His long association with John *Fowler as consultant showed a record of remarkable achievement. They were responsible for the construction of London's Metropolitan Railway and Victoria Station. Later Baker designed the Central London and other sections of underground railway. Most spectacular was the Forth railway bridge (opened 1890); he was knighted (KCMG). Consultant on the old Aswan Dam (completed 1902), he received a KCB and was elected FRS.

Baker, Sir Herbert (1862–1946). English architect, born in Kent. A pupil of Ernest George, while still a young man he secured the patronage of Cecil *Rhodes and a number of commissions for the design of South African houses, churches and public buildings, including the Anglican Cathedrals in Cape Town and Johannesburg. The Union Building, Pretoria, is the most grandiose example. His appointment as joint architect (with *Lutyens) for the government buildings in New Delhi provided an even wider opportunity for him to display his talent for the magnificent. In London his best known works are the Bank of England and Church House, Westminster. Knighted in 1926, he became an RA in 1932 and wrote *Architecture and Personalities* (1944).

Baker, James Addison III (1930–). American lawyer and administrator. Educated at Princeton and Texas universities, he was a lawyer in Houston from 1957 and a close political ally of George *Bush. He served Ronald *Reagan as White House Chief of Staff 1981–85 and Secretary of the Treasury 1985–88, and Bush as campaign director 1988, 1992 and Secretary of State 1989–92.

Baker, Dame Janet Abbott (1933–). English mezzo soprano, born in Yorkshire. In 1956 she won the *Daily Mail* Kathleen *Ferrier Award, and in the same year made her stage debut at Oxford in *Smetana's *The Secret*. She sang throughout Europe and the US in recital, oratorio and opera, appearing at Covent Garden and Glyndebourne. She was particularly admired for stylish performances of *Monteverdi, *Purcell, *Händel, *Mozart, *Berlioz, *Mahler, *Elgar and *Britten. She was made an honorary fellow of St Anne's College, Oxford in 1975 and received a CH in 1994.

Blyth, A., *Janet Baker*. 1973.

Baker, Josephine (1906–1975). African-American dancer and singer, born in St Louis. At the Folies Bergère, Paris from 1925 she became famous for

her beauty (her lover *Simenon referred to 'the bottom that laughed') and memorable dress/undress, e.g. girdle of bananas. Like Paul *Robeson she was an important advocate of black rights and racial tolerance. She became a French citizen after World War II as a protest against racial discrimination in the US.

Baker, Sir Samuel White (1821–1893). British traveller, writer and hunter. He lived in Ceylon and wrote *Rifle and Hound in Ceylon* (1853), built railways in the Balkans and explored Asia Minor. He investigated tributaries of the Nile in Ethiopia (1861–62) and in 1864 discovered Albert Nyanza, which earned him a knighthood and election as FRS. The Ottoman khedive in Egypt appointed him as Governor-General of the Equatorial Nile basin 1869–73 with the rank of major general and pasha. He worked to suppress the slave trade.

Bakewell, Robert (1725–1795). English agriculturalist, born at Dishley, Leicestershire. A pioneer of systematic breeding at Dishley, he greatly improved the standard of cattle, sheep and draught horses. He was best known for his breeding and improvement of Leicester sheep and Dishley cattle.

Pawson, H. C., *Robert Bakewell: Pioneer Livestock Breeder*. 1957.

Bakst, Léon (né Leyb-Khaim Samoylovich Rosenberg) (1866–1924). Russian-Jewish painter and designer. He studied in Paris from 1893, but, with Sergei *Diaghilev and Alexandre *Benois, was a co-founder of the *World of Art* group in St Petersburg 1899–1904 and taught Marc *Chagall. In Paris from 1906, he designed sumptuous sets and costumes for Diaghilev's Ballets Russes.

Pruzhnan, I., *Léon Bakst*. 1988.

Bakunin, Mikhail Aleksandrovich (1814–1876). Russian anarchist. An aristocrat by birth and for a short time in the army, he left Russia in 1840, and was condemned in his absence. After taking part in a rising at Dresden during the revolutionary year of 1848 he was handed over to the Russian authorities and imprisoned. Later he was exiled to Siberia, but escaped and reached England in 1861. Most of the rest of his life was spent in a struggle with Karl *Marx to decide the form that socialist doctrine should take: Bakunin's anarchism or Marx's communism. Bakunin, defeated, was expelled from the International in 1872. His book *God and the State,* in which he called for militant atheism and the destruction of the State, had a great influence on the nihilist movement, especially in Spain and Italy.

Carr, E. H., *Michael Bakunin*. 1937.

Balakirev, Mili Alekseivich (1836–1910). Russian composer and pianist, born at Nizhny Novgorod. A pupil of *Glinka, he was a successful pianist, and later taught *Mussorgsky and *Cui. He became a leading member of 'The Five' (Cui, Mussorgsky, *Borodin, *Rimsky-Korsakov and Balakirev), a group which revived the nationalist tradition in Russian music. Balakirev, who had to support himself as a civil servant, wrote two symphonies, piano music, many songs and the symphonic poems *Tamara* (1882) and *Russia* (1884).

Garden, E., *Balakirev*. 1967.

Balanchine, George Melitonovich (1904–1983). Georgian-American choreographer, born in St Petersburg. He studied at the Maryinsky Theatre and danced with the Soviet State Dancers before joining *Diaghilev's Ballets Russes in Paris 1924–29 as ballet master. In the US he founded the School of American Ballet (1934) and the New York City Ballet (1948). He created 170 ballets, including *Apollo*, *Firebird*, *Orpheus and Agon* (Stravinsky), *La Valse* and *Valses Nobleset Sentimentales* (Ravel), *Nutcracker* and *Ballet Imperial* (Tchaikovsky). He worked closely with **Lincoln Kirstein** (1907–1996), an art connoisseur, impresario and patron.

Balbo, Italo (1896–1940). Italian airman and politician. A leading Fascist, he was one of the quadrumvirs in *Mussolini's March on Rome (1922), later reputed to have devised the castor oil treatment to humiliate opponents. Minister for Aviation 1929–31 and a marshal 1931, he flew to Chicago and Rio to promote Italian aviation and his popularity rivalled Mussolini's. Sent as Governor of Libya 1933–40, he opposed the German alliance. His plane was shot down over Tobruk by Italian guns in unexplained circumstances.

Balboa, Vasco Nunez de (c.1475–1519). Spanish conquistador. In 1513 he became the first European to sight the Pacific when, having ousted his predecessor and made himself governor of Darien, he made an epic march across the isthmus of Panama. Meanwhile complaints at the Spanish court about his seizure of power had led to his being replaced by Pedro Arias de Avilla, who accused him of conspiracy and eventually had him beheaded.

Anderson, C. L. G., *Life and Letters of Vasco Nunez de Balboa*. 1941.

Baldwin (**Baudouin**). Name of five kings of Jerusalem. **Baldwin I** (1058–1118) accompanied his elder brother *Godfrey de Bouillon on the first crusade and in 1100 succeeded him as 'defender of the holy sepulchre', immediately taking the title of King and so establishing the Latin kingdom of Jerusalem. He gradually asserted his authority over most of the coastal area of Palestine and Syria. His cousin **Baldwin II** (d.1131) was Lord of Edessa when chosen to succeed him in 1118. He spent most of his reign defending the northern parts of the realm. His son-in-law *Fulk of Anjou succeeded him and his grandson, Fulk's heir, became **Baldwin III** (1131–1162) (reigned 1143–62). At the beginning of his

reign the second crusade, launched to retake Edessa, was defeated in Asia Minor, but Baldwin was an able ruler who by expelling the Egyptians from Ascalon secured his kingdom in the south. **Baldwin IV** (1161–1185) (reigned 1173–85), 'the Leper', was incompetent. His nephew and successor **Baldwin V** (1177–1186) died as a child.

Baldwin, James (1924–1987). American writer, born in New York. Educated in Harlem, he began working in Greenwich Village. His novels, e.g. *Go Tell it on the Mountain* (1954) and *Another Country* (1963) are concerned with the position of African-Americans in American society, and his non-fiction works, e.g. *Notes of a Native Son* (1955) and *Nobody Knows my Name* (1961), contain several of the essays that made him famous in America.

Baldwin, Stanley, 1st Earl Baldwin of Bewdley (1867–1947). British Conservative politician, born at Bewdley. Son of a rich steel manufacturer, educated at Harrow and Trinity College, Cambridge, he joined the family firm and it was not until 1908 that he entered parliament. After holding junior offices he was President of the Board of Trade when in 1922 leading members of the Conservative Party forced the resignation of *Lloyd George's coalition. Since most leading Conservatives refused office because of loyalty to Lloyd George, Baldwin gained rapid promotion as Chancellor of the Exchequer 1922–23 under Bonar Law. When fatal illness forced Law to retire, George V chose Baldwin as Prime Minister in preference to *Curzon. He was Prime Minister three times 1923–24; 1924–29; 1935–37 and the all powerful Deputy to Ramsay *MacDonald in the 'National' government 1931–35 when he showed great skill in handling people and situations. The potentially disruptive General Strike of 1926 and *Edward VIII's abdication crisis of 1936 he overcame without bitterness. Although aware of the threat from *Hitler he shirked advocating a rearmament program that would risk electoral defeat. It is true that he knew that the Labour party was even less ready than he to face the military and political problems caused by the resurgence of Germany, but as the man in power he must be held largely responsible for the years of appeasement and their bitter consequences. Baldwin was a cousin of Rudyard *Kipling and his own tastes were contemplative and literary. For many years he was held to be the epitome of the true-blue middle class Englishman.

Middlemas, K. and Barnes, J., *Baldwin.* 1969; Young, K., *Baldwin*. 1976; Jenkins, R., *Baldwin.* 1987.

Balenciaga, Cristobal (1895–1972). Spanish (Basque) couturier. He became a tailor and dress maker, in Paris from 1936, celebrated for his elegance and simplicity in design.

Balfe, Michael William (1808–1870). Irish composer, violinist and baritone, born in Dublin. He moved to London in 1823, attracted the patronage of *Rossini and sang Figaro in *The Barber of Seville* in Paris (1828), performed with *Malibran, and was Papageno in the English premiere of *The Magic Flute* (1838). He composed 29 operas of which only *The Bohemian Girl* (1843) is still performed.

Balfour, Arthur James, 1st Earl of Balfour (1848–1930). British Conservative politician, born at Whittingehame, East Lothian. Member of an ancient Scottish family, educated at Eton and Trinity College, Cambridge, he was an MP 1874–1906 and 1906–22. At the opening of his career he was private secretary at the Berlin Conference of 1878 to his maternal uncle, Robert Cecil, 3rd Marquess of *Salisbury, and subsequently his promotion was rapid (whence the phrase 'Bob's your uncle!'). A ruthless but effective Chief Secretary for Ireland 1887–91, he became First Lord of the Treasury (a position which, until then had always been held by the Prime Minister) and Leader of the House of Commons 1891–92, 1895–1902 while Salisbury, Prime Minister, sat in the House of Lords. When Salisbury retired in 1902 Balfour became Prime Minister, but his graceful balancing act between the factions of his party failed to convince the electorate of his ability to rule. He lost his seat when the government was defeated in the general election of 1905. He resigned the party leadership in 1911 and was succeeded by Bonar *Law. The coalitions of World War I restored him to office. He was First Lord of the Admiralty in *Asquith's coalition, and Foreign Minister 1916–19 under Lloyd George. In 1917 he issued the 'Balfour Declaration', promising British support for a Jewish national home in Palestine. As Lord President of the Council 1919–22 and 1925–29, he created links between research and industry. Balfour's mind was too detached, said his detractors, and his charm too great for a successful politician. He could see both sides of a question too clearly to be decisive in action. This view of his character was reinforced by the title of his first book and a misconception of its contents: *A Defence of Philosophic Doubt* (1879). Later books were *The Foundations of Belief* (1900) and *Theism and Humanism* (1915). Awarded the OM in 1916, he was created Earl of Balfour and a KG in 1922, became Chancellor of Cambridge University 1919–30 and President of the British Academy 1921–30. He was unmarried.

Zebel, S. H., Balfour: *A Political Biography*. 1974; Adams, R. J. Q., *Balfour: the Last Grandee.* 2007.

Ball, John (d.1381). English rebel and priest. He preached social equality and his famous sermon at Blackheath on the theme 'When Adam delved and Eve span, Who was then a gentleman?' helped to provoke the Peasants' Revolt of 1381. He was executed at St Albans.

Balla, Giacomo (1871–1958). Italian painter and sculptor. Associated with the Futurists, his best known work *Dynamism of a Dog on a Leash* (1912) captures movement with wit and vivacity.

Balladur, Édouard (1929–). French politician and administrator, born in Izmir. He was Georges *Pompidou's Chief of Staff 1974, Finance Minister 1986–88 under *Chirac's 'cohabitation' with *Mitterrand and Prime Minister 1993–1995. He broke with Chirac and in the 1995 presidential election ran third on the first ballot.

Ballantyne, James (1772–1833), and **John** (1774–1821). Scottish printers. They were close friends of Sir Walter *Scott and printed his works. From 1805 he was a secret partner in the firm which, expanding into publishing and bookselling, was known from 1808 as James Ballantyne & Co. The firm's bankruptcy (1826) involved Scott in a liability of £130,000 so to pay it off he made a heroic writing effort that hastened his death.

Ballantyne, Robert Michael (1825–1894). Scottish author. As a young man he served in Canada in the Hudson's Bay Company. From 1856 he wrote about 80 adventure books for boys, including *Martin Rattler*, *The Dog Crusoe* and *Coral Island*.

Quayle, E., *Ballantyne the Brave*. 1967.

Balliol, John de (1249–1315). King of Scotland 1292–96. Son of **John de Balliol** (d.1268/9), founder of Balliol College, Oxford, whose ancestors came from Bailleul in Normandy. His claim to the Scottish throne came through his mother, Devorgilla, a descendant of King *David I. In 1292 Balliol was chosen by *Edward I of England from 13 contestants to reign as a vassal king, but in 1296 he threw off his fealty. Edward immediately invaded his kingdom and forced him to surrender. Known as 'Toom Tabard' ('Empty Jacket'), after three years' imprisonment he was permitted to go to Normandy, where he died. His son **Edward de Balliol** (c.1283–1364) was crowned at Scone in 1332 but could only maintain himself with English help and in 1356, after years of intermittent rule, surrendered all his claims to *Edward III.

Balthus (Balthazar Klossowski de Rola) (1912?–2001). Polish-French painter, born in Paris. His paintings, often of adolescents, appear conventional, but are marked by a disturbing sexual tension, depicting loss of innocence.

Baltimore, David (1938–). American biologist, born in New York City. Professor of Microbiology at MIT 1972–95 and President of CalTech 1995–2006, he shared the Nobel Prize for Medicine in 1975 for discovering the 'reverse transcriptase enzyme' which transcribes DNA into RNA.

Baltimore, George Calvert, 1st Baron (1580–1632). English coloniser. He was secretary of state from 1619 until 1625, when he announced himself a Catholic and on resigning received his Irish peerage. In 1627 he visited a colony which he had founded (1621) in Newfoundland, but after two years he decided to seek a warmer climate for his permanent home. He died while in England to obtain a grant for the selected territory. The grant passed to his son, the 2nd Lord Baltimore, who governed the colony, now called Maryland, from England.

Balzac, Honoré de (1799–1850). French novelist, born in Tours. Author of the great novel sequence *La Comedie Humaine*, he was the son of an eccentric civil servant. His unhappy schooldays are described in the autobiographical *Louis Lambert* (1832). An attempt to turn him into a lawyer failed, and from 1820 he was in Paris trying to make a living as a writer. An unfortunate speculation in a printing firm involved him in debt which took years to settle. His industry, both in research and in the writing of his novels, was enormous; his eventual earnings equally so. In total his output amounted to about 100 novels, six plays, many pamphlets and a huge amount of correspondence. His first successful novel, *Les Chouans* (1829) describes, in the Romantic manner of Sir Walter *Scott, a rising in Brittany during the French Revolution. His Rabelaisian *Contes drolatiques* (1832–37) are medieval tales written in a pseudo 16th century idiom. His vast conception of linking under a single title, *La Comedie Humaine*, all the novels he had already written and those he planned to write, dates from 1842, his idea being to present an integrated picture of 19th-century France, with scenes of life in Paris, the country, the army, the family. The novels thus linked contain over 2,000 characters. He said of himself 'I penetrate the soul without neglecting the body', and this claim was vindicated by his genius for delineation of character, made possible by extraordinary powers of observation and imagination. Of the individual novels, the best known include *Eugénie Grandet* (1833), *Le Père Goriot* (1834), *Cesar Birotteau* (1837), *Illusions perdues* (1843) and *La Cousine Bette* (1846). His *Lettres a l'Etrangere*, published after his death, were written to a rich Polish countess, Evelina Hanska, who first wrote to him in 1832 and was soon promising marriage after her husband's death. This occurred in 1841 and thereafter they met regularly, but they were not married until 1850, only five months before Balzac's death, which was hastened by travel in the bitter cold of a Polish winter.

Pritchett, V. S., *Balzac*. 1973.

Ban Ki-moon (1944–). Korean diplomat and administrator. Educated at Seoul and Harvard universities, he served as a diplomat in India and the US and was Minister for Foreign Affairs and Trade 2004–06. Elected as Secretary-General of the United Nations 2007–16, he faced continued violence throughout the Middle East, failure to secure global action on climate change, and concerns about the administration on the UN itself. He was strong on gay rights, ambiguous about the death penalty.

Bancroft, George (1800–1891). American historian and diplomat. He studied history at Göttingen University and on his return started a school where he began writing his monumental *History of the United States* (10 volumes, 1834–74). Services to the Democratic party were rewarded with official posts ending with that of minister to Great Britain 1846–49. A strong supporter of Lincoln and Johnson, he was sent as minister to Berlin 1867–74.

Wolfe Howe, M. de, *Life and Letters of George Bancroft*. 1971.

Banda, Hastings Kamazu (1906–1997). Malawian politician. Educated at a mission school, he emigrated to the US, where, after 15 years' work, his savings allowed him to take degrees in philosophy and medicine. He moved to Britain and became an LRCP at Edinburgh and thereafter practised in England until 1953. From 1958 he led the independence movement in Nyasaland and headed the Malawi Congress party (founded in 1959), being imprisoned for a time by the British. When the country attained self-government in 1963 Banda became Prime Minister, an office which he retained when in July 1964 Malawi became independent. He was 'President for life' 1964–94, after reluctantly accepting international demands for free elections in 1993.

Bandaranaike, Solomon West Ridgeway Dias (1899–1959). Sri Lankan politician. Educated at Oxford University, he became a lawyer and after Ceylon's independence was minister of health 1947–51 in D. S. Senanayake's government. He resigned to form the Sri Lanka Freedom party, the basis of the People's United Front, the victory of which in the election of 1956 resulted in his becoming Prime Minister. He was assassinated by a Buddhist monk in 1959 but his policy of socialism at home (accompanied by expropriation of foreign interests) and neutralism abroad was continued by his widow **Sirimavo Bandaranaike** (1916–2000), who became the first woman Prime Minister. Her period of office was one of mounting financial difficulty, communal troubles and administrative chaos, some of it due to forces outside her control. She resigned after electoral defeat in 1965, but again became Prime Minister 1970–77, returning a third time 1994–2000, after the election of her daughter **Chandrika Kumaratunga** (1945–) as President of Sri Lanka.

Bandello, Matteo (c.1485–1561). Italian author, born in Piedmont. A Dominican friar, a diplomatist and (1550–54) Bishop of Agen in France, he wrote about 250 short stories (*novelle*) some of which were used as the basis of works by *Shakespeare (*Romeo and Juliet*), *Lope de Vega and *Byron.

Petrocchi, G., *Matteo Bandello*. 1949.

Bankhead, Tallulah Brockman (1903–1968). American actor. Famous in the 1920s and 1930s, the hysterical adulation aroused by her husky voice and vibrant personality was even more exuberantly expressed in London than in New York. She continued a successful career in America after World War II and made several films.

Gill, B., *Tallulah Bankhead*. 1973.

Banks, Sir Joseph, 1st Baronet (1743–1820). English botanist and patron of science, born at Isleworth, near London. Educated at Harrow, Eton and Christ Church, Oxford (which he left without a degree), he inherited a fortune from his father and used it to promote research and exploration for the advancement of botany. He collected plants in Newfoundland and Labrador which won him election as FRS (1766). He accompanied Captain James *Cook in his great voyage in the *Endeavour* (1768–71), paid for equipment and hired botanists. He became an important authority on, and promoter of, Australia, was the first to grasp that its mammals were mostly marsupials, more primitive than placental mammals, and campaigned for the establishment of a penal colony in New South Wales. He voyaged to the North Atlantic in 1772 and investigated geysers in Iceland. President of the Royal Society 1778–1820, he was created baronet in 1781, privy counsellor in 1797 and GCB in 1815. He encouraged international scientific exchanges, was a patron of *Humboldt and created a major herbarium, where Robert *Brown was librarian and curator, and which became part of the Natural History Museum. Suffering acutely from gout, he could no longer walk after 1806. Preparation of *Banks' Florilegium*, a sumptuous edition of engravings of botanical drawings of Australian plants by **Sydney Parkinson** (1745–1771) cost him a fortune but was not published until 1983.

Adams, P., *The Flowering of the Pacific*. 1986; O'Brian, P., *Joseph Banks: a Life*. 1987; Musgrave, T., *The Multifarious Mr Banks: From Botany Bay to Kew, the Natural Historian Who Shaped the World*. 2020; Kieza, G., *Banks*. 2020; Goodman, J., *Planting the World: Joseph Banks and His Collectors*. 2020.

Banksy (1974?–). Pseudonym of British graffiti artist, thought to have been born in Bristol. He attracted international attention for his street art, marked by dark humour and political satire, which encouraged less gifted imitators around the world. He was also a documentary filmmaker. His works attracted high prices but it is not clear to whom the proceeds were paid.

Bannister, Sir Roger Gilbert (1929–2018). English athlete and neurologist. The first runner to achieve a four-minute mile (6 May 1954), he became a distinguished researcher in neurology, knighted in 1979 and Master of Pembroke College, Oxford, 1985–93.

Banting, Sir Frederick Grant (1891–1941). Canadian physiologist, born in Alliston, Ontario. He graduated in medicine at Toronto University

and served with the Canadian Army Medical Corps in World War I. On returning to Toronto, he began research into diabetes in the laboratory of J. J. R. MacLeod. With C. H. *Best he first succeeded in preparing the hormone insulin from the pancreas of dogs (1922). In 1923 he was awarded the Nobel Prize for Medicine jointly with MacLeod who had merely provided laboratory space and suggested the name 'insulin'. Banting, furious, divided his share of the prize money with Best. He became foundation director of the Banting and Best Institute for Medical Research, Toronto 1930–41, was knighted (1934) and became an FRS (1935). He was killed while flying to England to conduct research into aviation medicine.

Bantock, Sir Granville (1868–1946). English composer. He started his career as a conductor and was professor of music at Birmingham University 1908–34. His works include a setting for chorus and orchestra of Fitzgerald's *Omar Khayyám*, and *Fifine at the Fair*, an orchestral work based on a poem of Browning. He was knighted in 1930.

Banville, Theodore Faullin de (1832–1891). French poet and critic. He was an ingenious verse technician particularly in his use of medieval verse forms, which he revived. His works, including *Les Cariatides* (1941), *Odes funambulesques* (1857) and *Les Exiles* (1867), won him the admiration of his fellow poets and the title 'roi des rimes'. Baudelaire described him as the 'poet of the happy hours of life'; Swinburne as 'the French Tennyson'.

Bao Dai ('voice of authority': personal name Nguyen Vinh Thuy) (1913–1997). Last Emperor of Annam 1932–45. He was first head of state of Vietnam 1949–55, part of which had composed his former realm. In 1954, after the Geneva Conference which followed the French defeat in Indo-China, North Vietnam split off to form a separate Communist state. Bao Dai was still the nominal ruler in the south but showed little inclination for his task and spent much time on the French Riviera. He was deposed in 1955 in favour of *Ngo Dinh Diem.

Barabbas. (fl. c.30 CE). Jewish robber. All four Gospels record that he was freed in response to the acclamation of the mob by Pontius *Pilate during the trial of *Jesus. Pilate had hoped to save one whom he recognised as innocent by taking advantage of a supposed custom that a criminal, chosen by the people, should be released at the time of the Passover.

Baradei, Mohamed Mostafa el- (1942–). Egyptian administrator and diplomat. Director-General of the International Atomic Energy Agency 1997–2009, he shared the 2005 Nobel Peace Prize with the IAEA.

Barak, Ehud (1942–). Israeli soldier and politician. As Labour leader, he defeated *Netanyahu to become Prime Minister 1999–2001. After peace talks with the Palestinians stalled and communal violence returned, he called an early election (Feb. 2001) and lost heavily to Ariel *Sharon.

Barbarossa *see* **Friedrich I** (Barbarossa)

Barbarossa (= **'Redbeard'**), **Kheir ed-Din** (Barbaros Kheir ed-Din Paşa, né Hızır Reis) (c. 1478–1546). Turkish-Albanian-Greek corsair and Grand Admiral, born in Lesbos. His elder brother, Oruç *Reis, the original 'Redbeard', established the family business of privateering in the Mediterranean on a grand scale, encouraged by the Sultanate. Kheir ed-Din succeeded Oruç as Pasha of Algiers in 1518. His navy raided Sicily and Sardinia, seizing control of Rhodes and the Ionic islands and he was appointed Grand Admiral of the Ottoman fleet in 1533. His forces captured Tunis in 1534 but were defeated next year by *Charles V. Barbarossa attacked Naples in 1536, defeated the navies of Spain, the Habsburg empire and Venice at Preveza in September 1538 and established Ottoman dominance in the Mediterranean. In 1540, Charles V attempted to persuade him to change allegiances by offering him the lordship of North Africa. Barbarossa built a palace in Istanbul and dictated memoirs.

Barbarossa, Uruj (c.1482–1518), and **Khaireddin** (c.1482–1546). Turkish corsairs. Brothers of Greek parentage, their names inspired terror in the Mediterranean area. Uruj, having treacherously murdered the amir, seized Algiers but was soon captured and beheaded. Khaireddin, succeeding him in Algiers, for about 30 years preyed upon Mediterranean shipping and the almost defenceless coasts. He died in Constantinople where he had eventually returned with over 1,000 captives and laden with spoils.

Barber, Samuel (Osmond) (1910–1981). American composer, born at West Chester, Pennsylvania. A baritone, he set Matthew *Arnold's *Dover Beach* (1931) for voice and string quartet. He wrote some of the most popular of modern orchestral works, including Adagio for strings (1936), Essay for orchestra No. 1 (1937), Symphony No. 1 (1936), Cello concerto (1945), Symphony No. 2 (1944) and Piano Concerto (1963). His first full-size opera, *Vanessa*, was performed at Salzburg in 1958. Later works include *Anthony and Cleopatra* (opera, 1960) and *The Lovers* (1971). He lived with Gian Carlo *Menotti from 1930 to 1970.

Barbey d'Aurevilly, Jules Amédée (1808–1889). French novelist. He wrote *La vielle maitresse* (1851), *L'Ensorcelée* (1854) and *Les Diaboliques* (1874), which, despite the author's diatribes against the realists, recall *Flaubert in their psychological realism. Barbey d'Aurevilly was an ultra-romantic and a monarchist, his output of polemics against democracy and materialism was enormous.

Canu, J., *Barbey d'Aurevilly*. 1945.

Barbirolli, Sir John (1899–1970). British orchestral conductor, born in London. Of Italian descent, he was a cellist in major string quartets for many years and conducted the British National Opera Company 1926–29 and the BBC Scottish Orchestra 1933–36. He unexpectedly succeeded *Toscanini as conductor of the New York Philharmonic Symphony Orchestra 1936–43. He returned to England to conduct the Hallé Orchestra, Manchester 1943–70, made many recordings and received a CH in 1969.

Rigby, C., *John Barbirolli: A Biographical Sketch*. 1948.

Barbour, John (c.1320–1395). Scottish poet. He travelled and studied in England and France and held court appointments in Scotland under *Robert II. His only surviving work, *The Brus*, contains about 13,000 lines of eight-syllable couplets and tells the life-story of Scotland's hero-king Robert *Bruce. The oldest major literary work written in Scots, it contains many vivid episodes and appears to be an accurate historical source.

Barbusse, Henri (1874–1935). French journalist and novelist. His novels are strongly reminiscent of *Zola's, but contain elements of existentialist thought. They include *L'Enfer* (1908) and *Le Feu* (1916), a grim study of life in the trenches during World War I, in which he served as a volunteer. Barbusse became a Communist sympathiser and a propagandist of internationalist ideas. He died in Moscow.

Barclay, Alexander (c.1476–1552). Scottish poet. He was chaplain of Ottery St Mary, Devon, and later became a Benedictine monk in Ely. His translation, with Henry Watson, of Sebastian *Brant's *Das Narranschiff* as *The Ship of Fools of the World* (1509) was the first in English.

Bardeen, John (1908–1991). American physicist, born in Wisconsin. Educated at the University of Wisconsin, he carried out research in electrical engineering at Harvard and Princeton, working on magnetic mines during World War II. At the Bell Labs 1945–51, he was co-inventor, with W. H. *Brattain and W. B. *Shockley, of the germanium point-contact transistor (1947) for which they shared the Nobel Prize for Physics in 1956. He broke with the abrasive Shockley and was Professor of Electrical Engineering and Physics at the University of Illinois 1951–75. He investigated super-conductivity in metals at very low temperatures and in 1972 shared a second Nobel Prize for Physics with Leon Cooper and John Schrieffer for explaining the phenomenon. Bardeen was the first person to win two Nobel Prizes in the same discipline. He received the Presidential Medal of Freedom in 1977 and was elected FRS.

Bardot, Brigitte (1934–). French actor, born in Paris. She started her career as a model and appeared as a 'cover girl' for the magazine *Elle*, but it was as a self-revealing star in such films as *Et Dieu crea la femme* and *Babette's en va en guerre* that she became the symbolic 'sex kitten' of the 1950s–60s. She married Roger Vadim, the film director, in 1952 and Jacques Charrier, the actor, in 1959.

Barebone, Praise-God (1596–1679). English clergyman. His odd name was applied in derision to the parliament set up by *Cromwell (1653), of which he was a member. A London leather merchant, he became a noted preacher and a leader of the Fifth Monarchy Sect.

Barenboim, Daniel (1942–). Argentinian-Israeli pianist and conductor, born in Buenos Aires. He toured internationally from 1954, recorded all the *Mozart piano concertos, and became a successful conductor as well. In 1967 he married the cellist **Jacqueline du Pré** (1945–1987), who died of multiple sclerosis. He became chief conductor of the Orchestre de Paris 1975–89, the Chicago Symphony 1991–2006 (succeeding *Solti) and the Berlin Staatsoper 1992–2023. In 1999, with Palestinian writer **Edward Said** (1935–2003), he founded the West-Eastern Divan Orchestra. *Parallels and Paradoxes* (with Edward Said) was published in 2002 and he delivered the BBC's Reith Lectures in 2006, *In the Beginning Was Sound*. He held citizenship from Argentina, Israel, Spain and Palestine. He was awarded an honorary KBE (2011) and became general music director of La Scala, Milan 2011–13.

Barents, Willem (d.1597). Dutch navigator and explorer. He led three expeditions (1594–97) in an unsuccessful search for a north east sea passage to Asia, reaching Novaya Zemlya on the first two. On the third he accidentally discovered Spitsbergen and rounded the north point of Novaya Zemlya, the expedition was caught in the ice and forced to winter there. In the June he and his crew escaped in small boats but Barents died on the way. In 1871 his winter quarters were discovered undisturbed.

Barere, Simon (1896–1951). Russian American pianist, born in Odessa. He developed a prodigious technique, but his career languished and the quality of his recordings was only recognised in the 1980s.

Barère (de Vieuzac), **Bertrand** (1755–1841). French revolutionary politician, known for his eloquence as the 'Anacreon of the guillotine'. He attached himself to *Robespierre in the Convention and was a member of the Committee of Public Safety 1793–94. Under *Napoléon he became a secret-service agent.

Barham, Richard Harris (1788–1845). English writer. A clergyman who became minor canon at St Paul's, London, he wrote a series of burlesque verse tales under the pen name Thomas Ingoldsby, many of them based on medieval legends. They were published collectively as *The Ingoldsby Legends* (1840).

Baring family. German-British merchant bankers. The brothers John and Francis Baring, sons of a German immigrant, established Baring's Bank, in

London, in 1762, and invested heavily in the slave trade, the Louisiana Purchase and the East India Company. It collapsed in 1995, due to fraud, and was sold for £1. Peerages held by the Baring family included Ashburton, *Howick, *Northbrook, Revelstoke and *Cromer.

Baring, Evelyn, 1st Baron Howick of Glendale (1903–1973). English colonial administrator. Son of Evelyn Baring,1st Earl of *Cromer, he was Governor of Southern Rhodesia 1942–44 and Governor of Kenya 1952–59 at the time of the Mau Mau uprising, suppressed by extensive use of execution and torture. He was created KG in 1972.

Baring-Gould, Sabine (1834–1924). English clergyman, folklorist, hagiographer, novelist, poet and archaeologist. Born to the landed gentry, and educated at Cambridge, he was both squire and vicar at Lew Trenchard, Devon 1881–1924. Now remembered only for the hymn 'Onward, Christian soldiers' and books about saints and werewolves, his bibliography runs to 1,240 works.

Purcell, W., *Onward Christian Soldiers*. 1957; Dickinson, B. H. C., *Baring-Gould, Writer and Folklorist*. 1970.

Barker, Sir Herbert Atkinson (1869–1950). English osteopath and bone-setter. A highly controversial figure, without formal qualifications, he was successful in treating injured joints without surgery. His knighthood (1922) irritated the medical profession.

Barklay de Tolly, Mikhail, Prince (1761–1818). Russian soldier, of Scottish descent. He commanded the Russian forces resisting *Napoléon's march to Moscow (1812). The unpopularity of his policy of continuous retreat into the heart of Russia caused him at last to make a stand and his defeat at Smolensk led to his being replaced by *Kutuzov. On Kutuzov's death in 1813, Barclay again became Commander-in-Chief. In the earlier part of his career he had lost an arm at Eylau in 1807 and in the same year led the army which invaded Finland and forced the Swedes to sue for peace.

Barkley, Alben William (1877–1956). American Democratic politician. A lawyer, he was a Member of the US House of Representatives 1913–27 and US Senator from Kentucky 1927–49, 1954–56. A loyal New Dealer, he became Harry *Truman's Vice President 1949–53.

Barmecides. Persian family of predominant influence at the court of the Abbasid caliphs at Baghdad. Their power was ended in 803 by the execution of one and the dismissal of the rest by *Harun al-Rashid. The term 'Barmecides feast' is derived from a story in the *Arabian Nights* telling of a practical joke which consisted of serving a dinner of elaborately named but empty dishes to a starving beggar. He, however, entered into the spirit of the occasion and was rewarded with real food.

Barnabas, St (Hebrew: son of encouragement. Personal name Joses) (d.c.70 CE). Christian apostle. Probably a Cypriot Jew and a cousin of *Mark, according to the Acts of the Apostles he introduced *Paul to the Christian community in Jerusalem and later accompanied him on a missionary journey until differences of opinion led to a parting of the ways. Barnabas went to Cyprus but accounts of his later movements and supposed martyrdom are apocryphal.

Barnard, Christiaan (Neethling) (1922–2001). South African surgeon, born in Beaufort West, Cape Province. Educated at the Universities of Cape Town and Minnesota, in 1958 he was appointed director of surgical research at the University of Cape Town and from 1961 was head of the cardiothoracic surgical unit at the Groote Schuur Hospital in Cape Town. Barnard introduced open-heart surgery to the Republic of South Africa, designed artificial heart valves and published much on congenital intestinal atresia. In December 1967 he performed the first human heart transplant operation on Louis Washkansky and became instantly famous. He later worked on arthritis.

Barnard, C. and Pepper, C. B., *Christiaan Barnard: One Life.* 1970; Barnard, C., *Heart Attack: You Don't Have to Die*. 1972.

Barnardo, Thomas John (1845–1905). British social reformer, born in Dublin. At the age of 17 he was an evangelist in the Dublin slums, went to London to study and practise medicine and at Stepney founded the first Dr Barnardo's Home for destitute boys. A home for girls at Barkingside followed in 1876 and by the time of his death more than 60,000 children had passed through his hands. In the intervening years the scope and scale of the work vastly increased.

Wymer, N., *Father of Nobody's Children*. 1954.

Barnato, Barney (originally Barnett Isaacs) (1852–1897). South African financier, born in London. Of Jewish parentage, he arrived in South Africa in 1873, made a fortune by buying up abandoned diamond mines and eventually linked his interests with those of his rival Cecil Rhodes by joining the control of the De Beers Mining Companies. He became a member of the Cape Colony legislature 1888–97. He committed suicide at sea after suffering heavy financial losses.

Barnes, Albert Coombs (1872–1951). American chemist and art collector. With Herman Hille he developed Argyrol, a silver nitrate solution used to prevent blindness in babies, made a fortune and created the Barnes Foundation in Merion, Pa. He amassed one of the greatest US collections of modern art and was a notable eccentric.

Schack, W., *Art and Argyrol.* 1960; Greenfield, H., *The Devil and Dr. Barnes.* 1987.

Barnes, Julian Patrick (1946–). English novelist, lexicographer and critic. He worked on the *Oxford English Dictionary* and as a critic on the *New Statesman*, *Sunday Times* and *Observer*. His successful novels included *Before She Met Me* (1982), *Flaubert's Parrot* (1984), *A History of the World in 10½ Chapters* (1989), *Talking It Over* (1991) and *The Porcupine* (1992). He also wrote several novels under the name **Dan Kavanagh**, including *Duffy* (1980) and *Going to the Dogs* (1987). *Nothing to be Frightened Of* (2008) was a memoir. *The Sense of an Ending* (2011), won the Man Booker Prize, and *Levels of Life* (2013), is a meditation on bereavement after the death of his wife **Pat**(ricia Olive) **Kavanagh** (1940–2008), an important literary agent.

Barnes, Thomas (1785–1841). English journalist. Educated at Christ's Hospital, Horsham, and Cambridge, he became an unhappy lawyer and contributed to periodicals edited by his school-fellow Leigh *Hunt. He joined *The Times* (1809) as dramatic critic and in 1817 was appointed editor. During his 25 years of control *The Times* was the most formidable organ of opinion in Britain, and Barnes, who was independent of any political party, was the most powerful journalistic influence.

Barnes, William (1801–1886). English clergyman and poet. Having made a detailed study of local speech he became widely known as the author of three series (1844, 1859, 1862) of idyllic and pastoral poetry in the Dorset dialect, collected as *Poems of Rural Life in Dorset Dialect* (1879). His *Outline of English Speechcraft* (1878) was an odd attempt to teach English by using only words of native origin.

Dugdale, G., *William Barnes of Dorset*. 1953.

Barnum, Phineas T(aylor) (1810–1891). American showman. Famed for his flamboyant publicity, in 1834 he entered show business as the exhibitor of such as a black slave whom he claimed to be the nurse of George *Washington and, later, the midget 'General Tom Thumb'. In 1847 he managed Jenny *Lind's American tour. His circus, 'The Greatest Show on Earth', was founded in 1871, being merged with that of his chief competitor, **James Anthony Bailey** (1847–1906). It soon became an American institution and continued for a generation after his death.

Baroja y Nessi, Pío (1872–1956). Spanish novelist, born in San Sebastian. Son of an engineer-composer, brother of a painter, he studied medicine, practised briefly, then became active in the 'Generation of 1898' radicals. He wrote three trilogies, notable for their forceful, rather bare style and their undertone of social discontent: *La Tierra Vasca* (*The Basque Country*, 1900–09), *La lucha por la vida* (*The Struggle for Life*: 1922–24) and *El Mar* (*The Sea*: 1923–30). *Hemingway hailed his *Memoirs of a Man of Action* (1931), concerned with the 19th-century Carlist wars, as a masterpiece.

Barras, Paul François Jean Nicolas, Vicomte de Barras (1755–1829). French aristocrat and revolutionary politician. He wasted his inheritance and seized the opportunity of the Revolution to restore his fortunes. He was a member of the National Convention 1792–95, joined the Jacobins, and voted for the execution of *Louis XVI. After Bonaparte (*Napoléon) broke the siege of Toulon, a royalist stronghold, in December 1793, Barras massacred about 750 prisoners. However, he was wise enough to see when the people tired of bloodshed and, with *Fouché and *Tallien, organised Robespierre's overthrow in 1794. A leader of the Directorate 1795–99, he promoted Bonaparte and arranged his marriage to Josephine *Beauharnais. He gained a reputation for avarice and corruption, and, after Bonaparte's *coup d'état* in 1799, he was imprisoned and exiled. Returning to France in 1814, he enjoyed wealth but not power.

Barrault, Jean-Louis (1910–1994). French actor and stage director. After training at a drama school and service in World War II he was producer-director at the Comedie Française (1940–47). With his wife **Madeleine Renaud** (1900–1994) he founded a new company, le Troupe Marigny (1947), which gained an international reputation. His own acting was influenced by his talents as a mime, demonstrated in Marcel *Carné's film *Les Enfants du Paradis* (1944). He was director of the Théâtre de France 1959–68 and the Théâtre d'Orsay 1974–81.

Barrault, J. L., *Memories for Tomorrow*. 1971.

Barrès, Maurice (1862–1923). French novelist, journalist and politician. An extreme nationalist, he acquired notoriety by the fervour of his articles in *L'Echo de Paris* during World War I. His literary talents were admired even by those who deplored his politics. Among his best known works are *Les Deracines* (1897) and *Les Amities Françaises* (1903). He was a Deputy 1889–93; 1906–23 and fiercely anti-Dreyfusard.

Barrett, Elizabeth *see* **Browning, Elizabeth Barrett**

Barrie, Sir J(ames) **M**(atthew), **1st Baronet** (1860–1937). Scottish playwright and novelist, born in Kirriemuir. Educated at Edinburgh University, he left Scotland in 1883 and worked as a journalist on the Nottingham *Daily Journal* before coming to London in 1885. He began writing with novels (e.g. *A Window in Thrums,* 1889, *The Little Minister,* 1891), but from 1890 he turned to the theatre and achieved wealth and fame with *Quality Street* (1902), *The Admirable Crichton* (1902), *Peter Pan* (1904), *Dear Brutus* (1917), *Mary Rose* (1920) and *Shall We Join the Ladies?* (1921). He received a baronetcy in 1913,

the OM in 1922 and was chancellor of Edinburgh University 1930–37. The whimsical humour of his works gradually lost much of its appeal, but *Peter Pan* is revived annually: he bequeathed its royalties to the Hospital for Sick Children, London. He had a happy relationship with children, an uneasy one with adults.

Dunbar J., *J. M. Barrie*. 1970.

Barrow, Isaac (1630–1677). English mathematician, born in London. Son of a merchant, he studied at Trinity College, Cambridge, where he became a fellow in 1652 and master 1672–77. His royalist sympathies made life uncomfortable for him, and he left in 1655 for a five year tour of the Continent. Returning at the Restoration in 1660, he became professor of Greek in Cambridge. He took the Lucasian chair of mathematics in Cambridge in 1663. Barrow was a first class teacher. He produced editions of *Euclid's *Element*s (1655) and *Data* (1657) and versions of works by *Archimedes, *Apollonius and *Theodosius. He gave important optical lectures concerning a new method for finding the relationship of a sphere and a curve in a spherical interface. His geometrical lectures were not original, but did digest modern continental writers such as *Descartes, *Huygens and *Pascal to his audiences. Isaac *Newton was a student at Trinity during this period, and it is possible that Barrow's work made some impression on him. Newton succeeded Barrow as Lucasian professor of mathematics.

Osmond, H., *Isaac Barrow: His Life and Times*. 1944.

Barry, Sir Charles (1795–1860). English architect. The Travellers' Club (1829–31) and the Reform Club (1837) in London are good examples of his work in the Italian renaissance style. He won the commission to design the new Houses of Parliament (erected from 1839) to replace the old buildings destroyed by fire in 1834. It was stipulated that the work should be in Gothic style, and Barry, who was essentially a classic architect, therefore obtained some assistance in Gothic detail from A.W.N. *Pugin.

Barry, Sir Redmond (1813–1880). Irish-Australian colonial judge, born near Cork. Son of a general, and an Anglican, he studied in Dublin and migrated to Australia in 1839, settling in Melbourne in 1840. Justice of the Supreme Court of Victoria 1852–80, during the Gold Rush period he was exasperatingly energetic and was the driving force in establishing the Royal Melbourne Hospital, the University of Melbourne, the Public Library, the Art Gallery and the Royal Society of Victoria. He was the judge in the Eureka Stockade trials (1855), sentenced Ned *Kelly to death (1880) and is commemorated in paintings by Sidney *Nolan.

Barrymore. American theatrical family, children of the British actor **Herbert Blythe** (1847–1905) who adopted the stage name **Maurice Barrymore** and married the actor Georgina Drew. **Lionel Barrymore** (1878–1954), like his younger brother, John, was successful both on stage and screen but it was in character rather than romantic parts that he excelled. He became paralysed in 1940 but continued to act from a wheelchair. Their sister **Ethel** (1879–1959) was perhaps the most talented of the trio and in 1928 opened the New York theatre bearing her name. She is especially remembered for parts in plays by *Ibsen and *Shaw, later in Emlyn *Williams' *The Corn is Green* (1942–44). **John** (1882–1942) was the matinee idol of his time, achieving his greatest fame as a Shakespearian actor, particularly in *Hamlet* and *Richard III*. From 1925 onwards he was occupied almost exclusively with the cinema, in which he played romantic and dramatic roles in films such as *Don Juan* and *Dr Jekyll and Mr Hyde*. In his later years he was incapacitated by alcoholism.

Bart, Jean (1651–1702). French sailor. A hero of the French navy and a fisherman's son, he rose to command a squadron. He first served with the Dutch navy, and it was only after he had left that service and had achieved fame as a privateer that he was appointed lieutenant of a French man of war. In the War of the Grand Alliance his exploits were a constant menace to the English and Dutch by whom France was opposed. A raid was made near Newcastle. Many ships were sunk and on one occasion he captured a whole flotilla of Dutch corn ships. In 1697 he was received by *Louis XIV and given command of a squadron.

Bart, Lionel (1930–1999). English composer and songwriter. He wrote several successful musicals, including *Lock Up Your Daughters*, *Fings Ain't Wot They Used t'Be*, *Oliver!*, and *Maggie May*.

Barth, Karl (1886–1968). Swiss Calvinist theologian, born in Basle. He was professor of theology at Göttingen 1923–25, at Munster 1925–30 and then at Bonn, until he was dismissed in 1934 for opposition to *Hitler. He was appointed to a theological professorship at Basle in 1935, retiring in 1962. Barth's teaching insists that the word of God as revealed by Jesus Christ is the sole source of religious truth, and that consequently man is unable to solve his own problems by reason and is completely dependent on divine grace and the workings of the Holy Spirit within him. Barth's theology is systematically set out in his many volumed work *Church Dogmatics*, publication of which began in 1932.

Hartwell, H., *The Theology of Karl Barth*. 1964.

Barthes, Roland Gérard (1915–1980). French philosopher and critic, born in Cherbourg. Educated at the Sorbonne, he developed and updated the ideas of the Swiss linguist Ferdinand de *Saussure in promoting 'semiotics' (the sociology of signs, symbols and representations) and analysed the impact of film, radio, television and advertising in changing language, fashion and cultural iconography. His books include *S/Z* (1970), *The Pleasure of the Text* (1973), *A Lover's Discourse* (1977) and *Camera Lucida* (1980). He lived

with his mother, was deeply interested in photography and held a chair at the Collège de France 1977–80. He was killed by a laundry van.

Bartholdi, Frederic Auguste (1834–1904). French monumental sculptor. He was best known for his *Statue of Liberty* presented to the US by the French Government in 1886 and set up on Bedloe's Island, New York harbour.

Bartholomew, St (Aramaic: 'son of Talmai') (d.c.50 CE). Christian apostle: usually identified with Nathaniel. Almost nothing is known of him but traditions tell of missionary journeys in Asia Minor and India and of being martyred by flaying in Armenia.

Bartholomew, John George (1860–1920). Scottish cartographer and map and atlas publisher. He improved standards of British cartography and introduced into Great Britain the use of contours and systematic colour layering to show relief. His father was Edinburgh map publisher **John Bartholomew** (1831–1893). He published important atlases of Scotland (1895), England and Wales (1903), *An Atlas of Meteorology* (1899) and *Atlas of Zoogeography* (1911), the first two volumes of a major physical atlas. He began work on *The Times Survey Atlas of the World*, published 1921 by his son, **John Bartholomew** (1909–1962), also editor of the new *Times Atlas of the World* (1955).

Gardiner, L., *Bartholomew 150 Years*. 1976.

Barthou, Jean-Louis Firmin (1862–1934). French politician. He entered politics in 1889, was Minister for Justice 1909–10, 1913, 1922, 1926–29, Premier 1913, Foreign Minister 1917, 1934, and Minister for War 1921–22, 1930–31. He wrote biographies of *Mirabeau (1913) and *Lamartine (1916) and in 1918 was elected to the Académie française. In October 1934, when King *Alexander of Yugoslavia was assassinated in Marseilles, Barthou died after being shot in the police crossfire (evidence concealed until 1974).

Bartók, Béla (Viktor János) (1881–1945). Hungarian composer and pianist, born in Nagyszentmiklós (now part of Romania). He was taught music by his mother, studied under Laszlo Erkel before entering the Budapest Academy of Music in 1899, and in 1901 he won the *Liszt scholarship. His early works were influenced by Liszt, *Brahms, *Wagner and Richard *Strauss. In 1905 he began to collect and publish Magyar folk songs with *Kodály which had an important influence on his own compositions. In 1907 he became professor of piano at the Academy. Of his earliest mature works, the ballet *The Wooden Prince* (1917) and opera *Bluebeard's Castle* (1918) were most successful. By 1923 he was commissioned to write an orchestral work for the fiftieth anniversary of the union of Buda and Pest (the *Dance Suite*). He visited Britain 20 times between 1904 and 1938 to give concerts. After tours in the US (1927) and the USSR (1929) he resigned the Academy post (1934) and returned to collecting folk songs for the Hungarian Academy of Arts and Sciences. He composed two violin concertos (1908, 1928), six string quartets (1909, 1917, 1927, 1928, 1934, 1939), among the greatest in the repertoire *Mikrokosmos* (1926–39), a set of 153 lively exercises for piano, three important piano concertos (1926, 1931, 1945), the virtuosic music for strings, percussion and celesta (1936), sonata for two pianos and percussion (1937, also arranged as a concerto 1943) and divertimento for string orchestra (1939). In 1940 he emigrated to the US and became a research assistant in music at Columbia University continuing his work on folk music. There he published several important collections, including a study of Romanian folk music (3 volumes 1967). His most performed work, *Concerto for Orchestra* (1943–45), was commissioned by *Koussevitzky. He became a US citizen in 1945. Financially precarious, but too proud to accept financial support from friends and too ill to work, he died of leukemia in New York. He left an unfinished viola concerto. He combined the essential characteristics of Hungarian folk music with traditional music and developed a national, yet individual, style. He was reburied in Budapest in 1988.

Stevens, H., *The Life and Music of Bela Bartok*. 2nd ed. 1964; Wilson, P., *The Music of Béla Bartók*. 1992; Gillies, G., *The Bartók Companion*. 1993; Chalmers, K., *Béla Bartók*. 1995.

Bartolommeo, Fra (né Baccio della Porta) (c.1472–1517). Italian painter. The son of a muleteer, he early found work in a Florentine studio, but under the influence of *Savonarola, whose portrait he painted, he burnt his drawings of nudes and in 1500 joined the Dominican order. Thenceforth all his work was of a religious character, and it was to reflect in turn the influences of *Raphael and *Michelangelo. But his treatment of figures and draperies and his grand static compositions assert his own instincts.

Bartolozzi, Francesco (1727–1815). Italian engraver, born in Florence. After working in Venice and Rome, he settled in London in 1764, became official engraver to King *George III, and a foundation member of the Royal Academy. Enormously prolific, and technically adventurous, he was director of the National Academy of Lisbon 1802–15.

Barton, Clara (1821–1912). American social worker. Originally a schoolteacher, she served as a nurse in the American Civil War and the Franco Prussian War. In 1877 she founded the American National Committee which later became the American Red Cross, of which she was president 1882–1904.

Barton, Sir Edmund (1849–1920). Australian lawyer, politician and judge, born in Sydney. Educated at Sydney University, he became a barrister and QC/

KC, had broken terms in both houses of the New South Wales Parliament 1879–99 and was Speaker 1883–87 and Attorney-General 1889, 1891–93. He became the most ardent advocate of federation in a state which showed little enthusiasm for it, was elected leader of the 1897–98 Federal Convention (Adelaide and Melbourne) where the constitution was drafted and led the delegation to London that persuaded Joseph *Chamberlain and the British Government to accept it. In January 1901 he became the first Prime Minister of the Commonwealth of Australia and also served as Minister for External Affairs until his appointment as a justice of the High Court of Australia 1903–20.

Bolton, G., *Edmund Barton: The One Man for the Job.* 2000.

Barton, Elizabeth (c.1506–1534). English mystic, known as 'the Maid of Kent'. She was a domestic servant who, after a period of illness, began to fall periodically into trance states, during which she uttered prophecies that were taken to be divinely inspired. Unfortunately the monk, Edward Bocking, sent by Archbishop Warham of Canterbury to examine her, tried to make use of her for political ends. In particular she was impelled to prophesy *Henry VIII's death if he married *Anne Boleyn. Eventually she was arraigned before Cranmer, confessed her imposture and was executed, with Bocking and others.

Bartram, William (1739–1823). American naturalist and traveller. A Quaker, he wrote a well regarded account of *Travels through North and South Carolina* (1791). *Wordsworth and *Coleridge admired his descriptive powers.

Baruch, Bernard M(annes) (1870–1965). American financier. He made a fortune by speculation by the age of 30 and became a friend and economic advisor to Woodrow *Wilson and Franklin D. *Roosevelt during World Wars I and II, and was also a close friend of Winston *Churchill. As US representative to the UN Atomic Energy Commission 1946–47 he devised the 'Baruch plan' for the international control of atomic energy. He coined the term 'Cold War' (1947).

Barwick, Sir Garfield Edward John (1903–1997). Australian lawyer, Liberal politician and judge, born in Sydney. An outstanding advocate, he became a KC in 1941, a Federal MP 1958–64, Attorney-General 1958–64 and Minister for External Affairs 1961–64. A potential rival to *Menzies, he was made Chief Justice of the High Court 1964–81 and played an important role in *Kerr's dismissal of *Whitlam (1975).

Baryshnikov, Mikhail Nikolayevich (1948–). Russian-American-Latvian dancer and actor, born in Riga. He became a soloist with the Kirov Ballet, Leningrad 1966–74, defected to Canada in 1974 and became director of the American Ballet Theatre 1980–92. He ranked with Rudolf *Nureyev as the greatest male dancer of his time.

Bashkirtsev, Maria Konstantinovna (1860–1884). Russian diarist. Her correspondence (e.g. with de *Maupassant) is of great psychological interest but most remarkable are her diaries (published in 1885), a self study undertaken with a conscious effort to attain exact truth and as a revelation of the exultations and despairs of a talented and precocious girl. She lived in France from early childhood, studied painting, in which she achieved a limited success, and died of tuberculosis.

Bashō Matsuo (originally Matsuo Chūemon Munefusa) (1644–1694). Japanese poet, born near Ueno. From a landowning peasant family, he became servant to a noblemen, then a poetry teacher, contributing to collaborative poems, known as renga. He became the greatest master of haiku (then called hokku), three line poems with 17 syllables (5 + 7 + 5). Bashō was deeply influenced by Zen Buddhism.

Basie, 'Count' (William) (1904–1984). American jazz pianist, composer and band leader. Influenced by 'Fats' *Waller, Basie's first band was founded in Kansas City (1935). He became one of the dominant figures of the 'swing' era, continuing as a successful performer with a series of bands for more than 40 years, appearing in films and touring internationally.

Basil I (the Macedonian) (c.812–886). Byzantine Emperor 867–886. Founder of the Macedonian dynasty, he gained the throne of the Eastern Roman Empire by murdering his patron Michael III, but raised the empire to the height of its power, codified its laws and beat back Muslim incursions.

Basil II (Bulgaroctonus) (958–1025). Byzantine Emperor 963–1025. Son of Romanus II, he emerged from his minority as a soldier-emperor, described as 'killer of Bulgars' from his victories in a long war (986–1018). He shared rule with his brother Constantine VIII but was always dominant and protected the peasants from encroachments by the nobles.

Basil, St (c.329–379). Cappodocian Father of the Church, born in Caesarea. From a noble family, he was a brother of St Gregory of Nyssa. Ordained in 364 and appointed bishop of Caesarea in 370, he succeeded Athanasius as one of the main upholders of Nicene orthodoxy over which he conflicted with emperor *Valens. Monastic rules set out by him are still used with little alteration by communities within the Greek Orthodox Church.

Prestige, G. L., *St Basil the Great and Apollinaris*. 1956.

Baskerville, John (1706–1775). English typographer, born in Worcestershire. After working as footman, writing master and manager of a

Birmingham japanning business, he rose to be one of the most influential designers of type in the history of printing. His editions of *Virgil (1757) and *Milton (1758) followed years of experiments. As printer to Cambridge University (from 1758) he produced many magnificent editions, including the Bible and the Greek New Testament.

Gaskell, P., *John Baskerville: A Bibliography*. 1959.

Bass, George (1771–1803?). English surgeon and sailor. A 'surgeon second rate' in the navy (1789), he served in New South Wales from 1795, explored the coast and inland, finding coal in the Hunter Valley. With Matthew *Flinders he established (1798–99) that Van *Diemen's Land (Tasmania) was a separate island. He was lost in the Pacific, possibly captured by pirates.

Bassano, Jacopo (or da Ponte) (c.1510–1592). Italian painter, born in Bassano. With his four sons, he developed a popular style of genre painting. His *Last Supper* (1546) in the Borghèse Gallery, Rome, has disconcerting images of exhausted, quarrelsome disciples.

Bath, 1st Earl of *see* **Pulteney, William**

Bathsheba (11th–10th centuries BCE). Israeli queen. Daughter of Eliam, she was seduced by *David who then contrived the death of her husband Uriah the Hittite, by placing him in the forefront of battle. She became David's queen and the mother of *Solomon.

Batista y Zaldivar, Fulgencio (1901–1973). Cuban soldier and politician. As an army sergeant he organised a 'sergeants' revolt' (1933) against the ruling oligarchy, became Commander-in-Chief of the Cuban forces 1933–40 and de facto ruler, serving as President 1940–44. He retired to Florida with his wealth after a period of stability, reform and corruption. He seized power again in 1952 and as President ruled as a dictator until his overthrow by Fidel Castro (December 1958). Thereafter he lived in the Dominican Republic, then Madeira and finally Portugal.

Batoni, Pompeo Girolamo (1708–1787). Italian painter, born in Lucca. A skilled, prolific and popular artist, he worked especially in portraiture, but also in landscape and was a forerunner of neo-classicism. Many of his portraits are of British subjects, but he also painted popes, emperors and kings.

Batten, Jean Gardner (1909–1982). New Zealand aviator. In 1935 she became the first woman to complete a return flight England–Australia–England. She broke the record for an Atlantic crossing (1936) and flew England–Australia in a record five days 18 hours (1937). She was active in promoting the war effort but did not fly during World War II, and gradually became reclusive, living with her mother. She died in Majorca as the result of a dog bite and was buried with the name 'Gardner'. Auckland airport is named for her.

Mackersey, I., *Jean Batten: The Garbo of the Skies*. 1990.

Battenberg (later **Mountbatten**). Anglo-German family name. Descendants of the morganatic marriage of Prince Alexander of Hesse-Dessau were given the name Battenberg in 1851, which was anglicised to Mountbatten in 1917 when anti-German feeling ran high. **Louis von Battenberg** (*Mountbatten) married a granddaughter of Queen *Victoria; **Alexander** (1857–1893) was Prince of Bulgaria 1879–86; **Henry Maurice** (1858–1896) married Victoria's daughter Princess Beatrice. Henry's daughter **Victoria Eugenie** (1887–1969) married *Alfonso XIII of Spain.

Batu Khan (1205–1255). Khan of the Golden Horde 1227–55. Grandson of *Genghis Khan and son of **Jochi** (who predeceased his father). His Mongol army (or horde) of 130,000 invaded Europe in 1236, first conquered Kiev, and his realm ultimately extended from parts of Italy, up to Poland and east to the Caucasus.

Baudelaire, Charles Pierre (1821–1867). French poet, critic, essayist and translator, born in Paris. His elderly father, a civil servant, died in 1827. His mother survived him and he never forgave her for remarrying. Educated first in Lyon, he studied law in Paris but never practiced. To keep him from dissipation in Paris, his stepfather sent him on a voyage to India, but the ship foundered and his travels ended at Mauritius (1841–42). After returning to Paris he soon spent half of his small inheritance: although the remainder was tied up he constantly struggled with poverty. He was passionate about his mother and his mistress, **Jeanne Duval**, a Haitian, with whom he lived intermittently 1842–62. He frequented the artistic circle of Eugène *Delacroix, and became known as an original critic. He began reading Edgar Allen *Poe in 1848, published an important essay on him in 1852 and devoted years to translating his prose and poetry. He took a minor role in the 1848 Revolution but soon adopted the authoritarian views of Joseph de *Maistre, rejecting 'the transitory, the fugitive, the contingent.' In 1857 he published a collection of poems, *Les Fleurs du mal* (*Flowers of Evil*), an extraordinary mixture of morbidity, eroticism, mysticism, and acute aesthetic perception, for which author, printer and publisher were prosecuted and fined for 'offending public morals' in 1864. (His conviction was reversed in 1949). Much of his reputation for immorality and decadence was due to misunderstanding. He insisted that the unity of all art is a manifestation of the divine essence, which includes the contrast between beauty, ugliness and evil: humanity should not shrink from the poor, the wicked or the tortured. Obsessed with human suffering, as an artist his words invoked colours, scents, sensations, sounds, with glowing

imagination and mastery of poetic symbolism. Other works by Baudelaire include *Petits Poèmes en prose* and studies of *Balzac, *Flaubert and *Gautier. In later life he became addicted to opium and alcohol. He suffered from paralysis with aphasia from 1866 and his condition progressively worsened until his death.

*Mallarmé, *Rimbaud, *Verlaine, *Proust and *Eliot admired his poetry. *Debussy and *Duparc set some poems, and his work was later adopted by hard rock bands.

Leakey, F. W., *Baudelaire and Nature*. 1968; Richardson, J., *Baudelaire*. 1994.

Baudin, Nicolas Thomas (1754–1803). French explorer, cartographer and naturalist. After a series of extraordinary adventures in the navy and as a privateer, he led an expedition to Australia (New Holland) 1801–03, charting the western and southern coasts and Tasmania (Van Diemen's Land). He died on Mauritius.

Baudouin (Boudewijn) **I** (Baudouin Albert Charles Leopold Axel Marie Gustave de Belgique) (1930–1993). King of the Belgians 1951–93. Son of *Leopold III, he succeeded on his father's abdication, married Dona Fabiola Mora y Aragon in 1960, travelled extensively, was interested in astronomy, photography, global poverty and the environment.

Baudrillard, Jean (1929–2007). French cultural theorist and philosopher, political commentator, and photographer. His work is frequently associated with Postmodernism and Post-structuralism.

Baum, L(yman) **Frank** (1856–1919). American author. His *The Wonderful Wizard of Oz* (1900), the popular children's story, the first of a long series, achieved great success on stage (1901) and was filmed as *The Wizard of Oz* in 1908, 1925 and 1939.

Baum, Vicki (née Hedwig) (1896–1960). Austrian novelist, born in Vienna. Her *Grand Hotel* (1930), which used the accidental isolation of a group of people in an artificial setting as the basis of the plot, set a pattern by many other novelists. Its immense success, reinforced by a film version, was never achieved by her later works. She lived in the US from 1931.

Baur, Ferdinand Christian (1792–1860). German theologian. Professor of theology 1826–60 at Tübingen University and the leading Protestant historian of religious dogma, he adopted much of *Hegel's dialectical method and subjected the New Testament and Church tradition to a rigorous analysis. His followers became known as the 'Tübingen School'.

Bax, Sir Arnold Edward Trevor (1883–1953). English composer, born in London. He composed the symphonic poems *In Faery Hills* (1909) and *Tintagel* (1917) in addition to seven symphonies, concertos for piano, violin and cello, songs, piano works and the choral work *Mater, ora Filium …* (1921). His richly romantic style is a musical reflection of the 'Celtic Twilight' movement in literature. Bax, who was knighted in 1937, was Master of the King's Musick 1942–53. He wrote an evocative memoir *Farewell My Youth* (1943). He seems to have coined the adage: 'Try everything once, except incest and folk-dancing'.

Scott Sutherland, C., *Arnold Bax*. 1973.

Baxter, James Keir (1926–1972). New Zealand poet. His parents were radical pacifists, and after an unhappy schooling in the South Island and England, he published his first volume of poetry *Beyond the Palisade* at 18 (1944). After a sporadic education at three universities, he worked as a postman, teacher and public servant, and became a Catholic (1958). He struggled with alcoholism, was tormented by his linking of sexuality and death, and torn between radical and conservative instincts. His poetry collections included *Pig Island Letters* (1966), *Jerusalem Sonnets* (1970) and *Autumn Testament* (1972). He set up an unsuccessful commune for juvenile drug addicts, and malnutrition contributed to his early death.

Baxter, Richard (1615–1691). English Puritan divine, born in Shropshire. In 1638 he was ordained in the Church of England but never became a strong adherent of any particular denomination, though his pastoral work at Kidderminster (from 1641) is said to have 'transformed the town'. A chaplain in the parliamentary army in the Civil War, he opposed the King's execution and worked for the restoration of Charles II. Forced to leave the Church because he rejected episcopacy, he was persecuted as a dissenter and imprisoned (1685–86) after a brutal trial before Judge *Jeffreys. A prolific writer, his best known works are *The Saints Everlasting Rest* (1650) and an autobiography, *Reliquiae Baxterianae*.

Bayard, Pierre du Terrail, Seigneur de (c.1473–1524). French soldier, known as 'le chevalier sans peur et sans reproche'. When only 20 years old he went with *Charles VIII to Italy and in battle after battle he was to be found wherever danger was greatest. His reputation for humanity and piety grew with the fame won by his courage. In the wars of *Louis XII and *François I his exploits continued, but while returning from Italy in 1524 he was mortally wounded by an arquebus shot.

Bayes, Thomas (1702–1761). English mathematician and theologian. 'Bayes' theorem', unpublished in his lifetime, marks the beginning of probability theory.

Bayezid I Yilderim (= **'Thunderbolt'**: Bāyezīd Han bin Murad Han) (c.1360–1403). Fourth Sultan of the Ottoman Empire 1389–1402. He succeeded his father, Murad I, greatly extended his dominions in Anatolia and invested Constantinople. The threat to Europe provoked a crusade against him by the

emperor Sigismund, but by his victory at Nicopolis on the Danube he was able to move into northern Greece. Meanwhile a threat was developing from the rear from the Mongol leader Timur the Lame (*Tamerlane) who entered Anatolia in 1400. Bayezid was defeated and captured at Ankara (1402); he died in captivity. He is a character in *Marlowe's *Tamburlaine the Great*.

Bāyezīd II Veli (= **'the Saint'**: Bāyezīd bin Mehmed) (1447–1512) Eighth Sultan of the Ottoman Empire 1481–1512. He was defeated in battle by his son *Selim I and soon died.

Bayle, Pierre (1647–1706). French philosopher. Son of a Calvinist minister, he became a Catholic and then reverted to Protestantism. He was professor of philosophy at Sedan 1675–81, of philosophy and history at Rotterdam University 1681–93, and wrote a famous *Dictionnaire historique et critique*. This acute and urbane work questioned many of the precepts of orthodox religious teaching and influenced *Voltaire, *Diderot and the French Encyclopaedists.

Baylis, Lilian Mary (1874–1937). English theatrical manager. Trained as a violinist, she managed the Royal Victoria Hall, a music hall off Waterloo Road, London, for her aunt Emma Cons from 1898 to 1912. She ran it alone from 1912 and, as the 'Old Vic', it became a national institution, notable as 'the home of Shakespeare'. She received a CH in 1929 and in 1931 acquired the Sadler's Wells Theatre for opera and ballet.

Bazaine, Achille François (1811–1888). French marshal. Having gained distinction in the Crimean War and against the Austrians in the Italian unification campaign, he was sent to Mexico where, from 1863, he was in supreme command and the main prop of *Napoléon III's protégé, the ill fated emperor *Maximilian. In the Franco Prussian War, he was forced to take refuge in the fortress of Metz after the defeat at Gravelotte. His surrender with over 150,000 men (October 1870) was a decisive disaster. In 1873 he was court martialled for failure of duty and given a death sentence (commuted to 20 years' imprisonment). In 1874 he escaped to Spain, where he died.

Bazalgette, Sir Joseph William (1819–1891). English civil engineer. On the recommendation of I. K. *Brunel, he was appointed chief engineer of London's Metropolitan Board of Works 1856–89 and organised a vast reorganisation of the city's sewers, regarded as an outstanding achievement in civil engineering.

Beaconsfield, 1st Earl *see* **Disraeli, Benjamin**

Beadle, George Wells (1903–1989). American geneticist. Professor at the California Institute of Technology, he shared the Nobel Prize for Medicine (1958) with Joshua *Lederberg and Edward Tatum, for discovering that genes act by regulating definite chemical events.

Beaglehole, John Cawte (1901–1971). New Zealand historian. After a slow climb up the academic ladder, he became professor of Commonwealth History at Victoria University, Wellington 1963–66 and received the OM (1970) in the Cook Bicentennial Year for his scholarly work, including editing the four volume *Journals of Captain James Cook* (1955–67).

Beale, Sir Simon Russell (1961–). English actor, author and historian, born in Malaysia. Educated at Cambridge, he made his debut in comic roles but soon excelled on stage as Hamlet, Lear, Falstaff, Richard III and Prospero, in television series as Kenneth Widmerpool, and on radio as George Smiley. He became Professor of Contemporary Theatre at Oxford 2014– and was an outstanding *Beria in the film *The Death of Stalin* (2017).

Bean, C(harles) **E**(dwin) **W**(oodrow) (1879–1968). Australian war correspondent and historian. Born in Bathurst, but educated in England, he became an official war correspondent in 1914, reporting on Gallipoli and the Western Front. He edited *The Official History of Australia in the War of 1914–18* (12 volumes, 1920–42), writing six volumes himself. He did much to promote the ANZAC legend but was not an enthusiast for Sir John *Monash. A driving force for establishing the Australian War Memorial in Canberra (1941), he declined several offers of a knighthood.

Coulthart, R., *Charles Bean*. 2015; Rees, P., *Bearing Witness*. 2016.

Beard, Dame (Winifred) **Mary** (1955–). English classical scholar. Professor of Classics at Cambridge 2004– , she was a prolific author, reviewer, blogger and television presenter whose programs on the classical world were highly praised. Her books include *Pompeii* (2008), *SPQR: A History of Ancient Rome* (2015) and *Women & Power* (2017).

Beardsley, Aubrey (1872–1898). English illustrator, born in Brighton. Associated with the English Aesthetic movement which his work typifies, he early developed a highly individual two dimensional style, characterised by contrasts of fine richly detailed linework and solid blacks, and by all the preoccupations and morbid tendencies of the Decadents. Among his most famous illustrations are those to *Wilde's *Salome*, *Pope's *Rape of the Lock* and his own work *Under the Hill* (1904). He became a Roman Catholic shortly before his early death from tuberculosis.

Symons, A., *Aubrey Beardsley*. 1972.

Beatles, The (1960–1970). British pop group, born in Liverpool. The group comprised John *Lennon, **George Harrison** (1943–2001), Sir Paul *McCartney

and **Ringo Starr** (Sir Richard Starkey) (1940–), and first became cult figures in Germany. From 1963–67 'Beatlemania' was the dominant feature of world pop culture. Lennon and McCartney composed much of the Beatles' most successful material which revealed a strong lyrical gift, and a yearning for new ideas (e.g. 'flower power', eastern religions). *Sergeant Pepper's Lonely Hearts Club Band* was released in 1967.

Beaton, Sir Cecil WaIter Hardy (1904–1980). English photographer and designer. Originally known for his portraits of the fashionable, he extended his range to include designs of sets and costumes for theatre and films. His costumes for the film *Gigi* and his colour compositions for the musical success *My Fair Lady* in both its stage and screen versions, were widely acclaimed. He was the friend and (briefly) lover of Greta *Garbo 1929–51.

Vickers, H., *Cecil Beaton*. 1985.

Beaton (or Bethune), **David** (1494–1546). Scottish prelate and statesman. Equipped for the Church by studies at the universities of Glasgow, St Andrews and Paris, and qualified as a statesman by skilful diplomacy for *James V, he was created a cardinal in 1538 and became archbishop of St Andrews and therefore primate of Scotland. After the death of James V, when his widow Mary of Guise headed the regency for her young daughter, *Mary Queen of Scots, Cardinal Beaton, though he had to contend with the Protestant faction and other rivals, attained almost supreme power, which he used in the Roman Catholic and French interest. He was murdered by Protestant conspirators in revenge for the execution of George Wishart, a Calvinist preacher. Beaton was a typical Renaissance figure, cultivated, able, brave, intensely individual but largely amoral.

Beatrix (Beatrix Wilhelmina Armgard van Oranje-Nassau) (1938–). Queen of the Netherlands 1980–2013. Daughter of Queen *Juliana and Prince *Bernhard, she married Claus von Amsberg (created Prince Claus) in 1966 and succeeded on her mother's abdication. A gifted painter, she abdicated in favour of her son **Willem-Alexander**.

Beatty, Sir (Alfred) **Chester** (1875–1968). American-British-Irish mining magnate, art collector and philanthropist, born in New York. He used his geological knowledge to identify mining sites (few of which he visited), amassed a fortune, became a discriminating connoisseur and a generous patron of libraries, art galleries, museums and cancer research. The Chester Beatty Library in Dublin has the world's greatest collection of early Gospel fragments.

Beatty, David Richard Beatty, 1st Earl (1871–1936). British admiral of the fleet, born in Cheshire. He joined the Royal Navy in 1884, served with Nile gunboats in the Sudan (1896–98) and in the Boxer Rebellion in China (1900), was naval secretary to Winston *Churchill (1912) and commanded the 1st Battle Cruiser Squadron (1912–16). He directed successful naval actions at Heligoland Bight (1914) and Dogger Bank (1915). At the Battle of Jutland (1916), he lost two of his ships, but escaped the criticism encountered by *Jellicoe. He succeeded Jellicoe as Commander-in-Chief of the Grand Fleet 1916–18 and received the surrender of the German fleet in November 1918. Beatty, a capable and flamboyant leader, received an earldom, the OM, and a grant of £100,000 in 1919 and served as First Sea Lord 1919–27.

Chalmers, W. S., *The Life and Letters of David, Earl Beatty*. 1951.

Beaufort. Name taken by the children of *John of Gaunt and Catherine *Swynford when they were legitimised (1397). One of them, Cardinal **Henry Beaufort** (1377–1447), bishop of Winchester, was the chief rival of his nephew Humphrey, Duke of *Gloucester, for control of the government of England during the early years of *Henry VI. The cardinal's brother, John, Duke of Somerset, was grandfather of Margaret Beaufort, mother of *Henry VII, who through her, inherited the claim to the throne of the Lancastrian house.

Beaufort, Sir Francis (1774–1857). British naval hydrographer. In 1805 he devised a scale of numbers (the Beaufort Scale) for expressing wind force. Originally the numbers ran from 0 (calm) to 12 (hurricane that no canvas can withstand) but they have now been given precise values in knots and the scale has been extended to Force 17. Beaufort also devised a system of letters, still in use, for denoting weather phenomena.

Beauharnais. French family that attained distinction during the Revolutionary and Napoléonic periods. **Alexandre, Vicomte de Beauharnais** (1760–1794), served in the American War of Independence and supported the Revolutionary cause in France, but was executed during the Terror. His widow, *Josephine, became the first wife of *Napoléon Bonaparte. His son, **Eugène de Beauharnais** (1781–1824), with Napoléon in Italy and the East, was an able and popular viceroy of Italy 1805–14. He was one of the few to gain fresh laurels during the Moscow campaign of 1812, and returned to hold Italy loyally to the last. After Napoléon's downfall he lived in Munich as Duke of Leuchtenberg.

Beaumarchais, Pierre Augustin Caron de (1732–1799). French playwright, born in Paris. Son of a watchmaker called Caron, as a young man he invented an improved watch escapement and taught the harp to the daughters of *Louis XV. He made a fortune from investment, took the name Beaumarchais from the first of two wealthy widows whom he married, went on secret missions in the king's service, and supplied arms to the insurgents in the American War of Independence. As a comic playwright he is regarded

as second only to *Molière. His plays *The Barber of Seville* (1775) and *The Marriage of Figaro* (1784) were sensationally successful and were used as operatic libretti by *Rossini and *Mozart respectively.

Beaumont, Francis (1584–1616). English playwright, born in Leicestershire. The son of a judge, he studied law but from 1603 he devoted himself to literature. From 1606 until his marriage to Ursula Isley in 1613, Beaumont lived with his collaborator and friend John *Fletcher. Beaumont's part was predominant in *The Knight of the Burning Pestle* (1609), but the partners can share equal credit for *Philaster* (1611) and *The Maid's Tragedy* (1611). Altogether Beaumont is believed to have had a hand in about 10 of the ingenious and sophisticated tragedies and tragi-comedies attributed to the joint authorship.

Macaulay, G. C., *Francis Beaumont: A Critical Study*. 1972.

Beaumont, William (1785–1853). American physiologist and surgeon, born in Lebanon, Connecticut. Son of a farmer, he became a village teacher and began to study medicine. After an apprenticeship with a surgeon, he became an assistant in the US Army in North Michigan. In July 1822 he began treating a French-Canadian fur trapper, Alexis St Martin, who had been badly wounded in the stomach by a shotgun accident. The patient recovered (living to the age of 82) but developed a fistula, 25mm across, through which the operation of his digestion could be observed. Over 10 years Beaumont carried out 238 experiments on St Martin, publishing the results in his classic *Experiments and Observations on the Gastric Juice* (1833). Beaumont established the presence of free hydrochloric acid in the juice, thus confirming that its action was primarily chemical in nature. He noted that gastric juices were not to be found in the stomach in the absence of food, and that psychological factors could influence their secretion. He also carefully investigated the digestibility of different aspects of diet, and studied the action of stimulants, such as coffee and alcohol, on the workings of the digestive system. His work was highly influential, especially in Germany.

Miller, G., *William Beaumont's Formative Years*. 1946.

Beauregard, Pierre Gustave Toutant (1818–1893). American soldier, born in New Orleans. A West Point graduate, he joined the Confederate army on the outbreak of Civil War in 1861, and was appointed to a command at Charleston in South Carolina. His order to fire on Fort Sumter marked the opening of the war, throughout which he held high command with varying success.

Beauvoir, Simone (Lucie Ernestine Maria Bertrand) **de** (1908–1986). French philosopher and author, born in Paris. Daughter of a lawyer, she was brought up in a conventional Catholic household, studied at the Sorbonne, graduated in 1929, being placed second in the competitive examinations to Jean-Paul *Sartre, her lifelong collaborator (and exploiter). She taught philosophy and literature at lycées in Marseille 1931–32, Rouen 1932–36 and Paris 1936–43, then worked as scriptwriter and editor for Radiodiffusion Nationale 1943–44. She became an important exponent of existentialism. Long assumed to have been Sartre's disciple, the influence was two-way and her contribution was both original and profound. She joined the board of the review *Les Temps Modernes* in 1945 and wrote many articles for it. Her most important work was *The Second Sex* (2 vols, 1949), an encyclopaedic study of the human female and still the greatest feminist text, transforming debate about the role of women. Other books included *The Mandarins* (1954), a novel about Parisian literary circles which won the Prix Goncourt, *The Long March* (1958), a study of modern China, and the autobiographical *Memoirs of a Dutiful Daughter* (1959), *The Prime of Life* (1963), *Force of Circumstance* (1965), *A Very Easy Death* (1966), *All Said and Done* (1972) and *Farewell to Sartre* (1981). She was buried with him at Montparnasse Cemetery.

Bair, D., *Simone de Beauvoir.* 1990.

Beaverbrook, (William) **Max**(well) **Aitken, 1st Baron** (1879–1964). British newspaper proprietor and politician, born in Canada. A cement and timber millionaire when he went to England 1910, he was a Conservative MP 1910–16, and friend and protégé of Andrew Bonar *Law. Created a peer in 1916, he was Britain's first Minister of Information (1918). The *Daily Express*, almost derelict when he bought it in 1919, became his life's work. It became in a sense an enlargement of his own personality, energetic, exciting, entertaining, mischievous and sometimes brash. Later he founded the *Sunday Express*, and the *Evening Standard* was taken over in 1929. Beaverbrook's active interest in every detail and department of his newspaper was maintained throughout his life. He pursued Imperial preference with frantic zeal and clashed with *Baldwin. Under *Churchill, with whom he had an uneasy friendship, he served as Minister for Aircraft Production 1940–41, Minister for Supply 1941–42 and Lord Privy Seal 1942–45. Churchill sent him to Moscow to negotiate with *Stalin (Sept. 1941) and he developed a rapport with *Roosevelt. His great collection of political papers, as well as providing valuable source material for historians (notably his friend and biographer A.J.P. *Taylor), helped him with the writing of *Men and Power, 1917–18* (1956) and *The Decline and Fall of Lloyd George* (1963).

Davie, M. and Chisholm, A., *Beaverbrook*. 1992.

Beazley, Kim Christian (1948–). Australian Labor politician. His father **Kim Edward Beazley** (1917–2007) was *Whitlam's Education Minister 1972–75. A Rhodes Scholar, he was a Federal MP 1980–2007,

Minister 1983–96, and succeeded Paul *Keating as Labor Leader 1996–2001 and (after Mark *Latham) 2005–06: he was then defeated by Kevin *Rudd. He served as Australian Ambassador to the US 2009–16 and Governor of Western Australia 2018–22.

FitzSimons, P., *Beazley.* 1998.

Bebel, (Ferdinand) **August** (1840–1913). German socialist politician. A founder of the German Social Democratic Party, he was a Member of the Federal German Legislature (Reichstag) 1871–81, 1883–1913, prominent in his opposition to Germany's nationalist policies, and several times imprisoned. He belonged to the Marxist wing of his party and with Wilhelm *Liebknecht founded the political journal *Vorwarts (Forward)*. His *Women under Socialism* (1883) compared women to the proletariat and was highly praised by Simone de *Beauvoir.

Beccaria, Cesare Bonesana di, Marchese di Gualdrasco e Villareggio (1738–1794). Italian economist, philosopher and legal reformer, born in Milan. From an aristocratic family, he became an economist, anticipating Adam *Smith, *Bentham and *Malthus, and pioneered statistical analysis. In his work *On Crimes and Punishment (Dei delitti e delle pene)* published in 1764 he followed *Montesquieu's assertion that punishment is a function of civil society, not the expression of divine vengeance, advocating abolition of the death penalty and torture as being 'neither necessary nor useful'. He urged comparative statistical examination of crime rates, that the aims of punishment are reformation and deterrence, and that certainty of apprehension and conviction is a greater deterrent than severity of punishment. His book, widely translated, influenced *Leopold II (then Grand Duke of Tuscany) and *Joseph II and inspired criminal law reformers for more than a century. He adopted Francis *Hutcheson's concept of 'the greatest good for the greatest number' ('*la massima felicità divisa nel maggior numero*'). Alessandro *Manzoni was a grandson.

Hostetter, J., *Cesare Beccaria: The Genius of 'On Crimes and Punishments'*. 2010.

Becker, Gary Stanley (1930–2014). American economist. Educated at Princeton and Chicago, he taught at Chicago from 1954 and was interested in the relationship of economics and psychology, such as the determining of consumer preference, first set out in an essay 'A theory of the allocation of time' (1965). His books include *The Allocation of Time and Goods over the Life Cycle* (1975) and *A Treatise on the Family* (1976). He won the 1992 Nobel Prize for Economics.

Becket, St Thomas (or Thomas à Becket) (1118–1170). English archbishop and martyr, born in London. Son of a rich merchant of Norman descent, having been given a knightly training, he studied theology in Paris, and entered the household of *Theobald of Bec, Archbishop of Canterbury. Theobald sent him to Bologna and Auxerre to study canon law, and appointed him as Archdeacon of Canterbury in 1154. Theobald persuaded *Henry II to appoint Becket as Lord Chancellor 1155–62, and he became the king's confidant and chief minister, offending many by his ostentation and pride. Henry was preoccupied with preventing what he regarded as the encroachments of Church courts upon secular jurisdiction. To achieve this, in 1162 he decided that the presumably compliant Becket would be the ideal successor to Theobald as Archbishop of Canterbury and Pope *Alexander III acquiesced. Before enthronement as Archbishop, Becket had to be ordained as a priest. Henry was soon bitterly disappointed: once appointed archbishop, Becket became as devoted to the pope's cause as he had been to the king's. Henry was furious and, to escape persecution, in 1164 Becket took refuge in Sens and Pontigny. Becket excommunicated many of his opponents, and there were bitter disputes about land ownership. The pope's role had been ambiguous but, at last, he supported Becket's threat to put England under an interdict (essentially withdrawing the right of priests to administer the sacraments). A settlement was negotiated and in December 1170 Becket returned to Canterbury. However, he continued to challenge royal authority, and within weeks Henry, holding court at Bur-le-Roi, near Bayeux, Normandy, reacted with the fatal words indicating his wish for 'deliverance from this turbulent priest', or something similar. Four of his knights eagerly took up the hint, proceeded to Canterbury and hacked Becket to death in his cathedral, near the entry to the crypt (29 December 1170). The dead martyr was far more powerful than the living priest. In 1173 the pope proclaimed Becket a saint and the king did public penance in 1174. After Rome and Compostella, Canterbury became one of the greatest European pilgrimage destinations. This was the context for *Chaucer's *Canterbury Tales*, written 200 years after the murder. In 1538, *Henry VIII ordered the destruction of Becket's tomb and his remains were scattered.

Barlow, F., *Thomas Becket*. 1986; Duggan, A., *Thomas Becket*. 2005; Guy, J., *Thomas Becket: Warrior, Priest, Rebel*. 2012.

Beckett, Dame Margaret Mary (née Jackson) (1943–). British Labour politician. She qualified as a metallurgist, was MP 1974–79, 1983– ; Deputy Leader of the Labour Party 1992–94, acting as Leader after John *Smith's sudden death in 1994. She became Secretary of State for the Environment, Food and Rural Affairs 2001–06, the first female Foreign Secretary 2006–07 and Lord President of the Council 1998–2001.

Beckett, Samuel (Barclay) (1906–1989). Irish dramatist, novelist and poet, born near Dublin. Educated at Trinity College, Dublin, he lectured in English in Paris (1928–30) and was James

*Joyce's literary assistant and translator. He wrote a monograph on Marcel *Proust (1931) and had an obvious sympathy with Franz *Kafka. He lectured in French at Trinity College, Dublin 1930–32, then returned to Paris where he spent most of his life (1932–37; 1938–89). During World War II he was active in the Resistance.

His important early novel, *Murphy* (1938), written in English, shows the influence of Joyce, and a second comic novel *Watt*, completed in 1945, and later dramatised, was published in 1953. *Molloy* (1951, translated 1955), *Malone meurt* (1951; *Malone dies* 1956), and *L'Innommable* (1953; *The Unnamable* 1958), a trilogy, written in French and translated by Beckett, are interior monologues which can be read as plays, just as his plays can be read as novels. Beckett showed some affinity with existentialism and his spare, lucid style is minimalist. There is a bracing stoicism in Beckett's words (from *The Unnamable*):

'It will be I? It will be the silence, where I am? I don't know. I'll never know, in the silence you don't know. You must go on. I can't go on. I'll go on.'

Like Eugène *Ionesco, Jean *Genet, Edward *Albee and Harold *Pinter, Beckett was identified with the 'theatre of the absurd', in which humans exist in a moral vacuum, unable to communicate, hurtling towards death without the consolation of meaning, either religious or secular. His plays have the quality of chamber music with the beauty of the words (either in French or English) and significant pauses and silence. They include *En Attendant Godot*, 1952 (*Waiting for Godot*, 1955), *Fin de Partie* (1957; *Endgame,* 1957), *All that Fall* (1957), *Krapp's Last Tape* (1957; *La Dernière Bande*, 1959), *Happy Days* (1961; *Oh les beaux jours*, 1962), *Comment c'est* (1961; *How It Is*, 1964) and *Quoi où* (1983; *What Where*, 1983).

Waiting for Godot, his most famous work, is a 'tragicomedy in two acts'. Two men, Estragon and Vladimir, sit near a tree in the country waiting interminably for Godot to arrive. He never does. Later they are joined by the bullying Pozzo, who is trying to sell his slave, Lucky. A boy who seems to know Godot makes an enigmatic appearance. The play's ambiguities are challenging, even transcendental and it has been performed more than any other contemporary drama.

Beckett was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature in l969 'for his writing, which—in new forms for the novel and drama—in the destitution of modern man acquires its elevation'.

Bair, D., *Samuel Beckett.* 1978; Knowlson, J., *Doomed to Fame: the Life of Samuel Beckett.* 1996; Cronin, A., *Samuel Beckett: the Last Modernist.* 1997.

Beckford, William Thomas (1760–1844). English writer and collector. A large inherited fortune enabled him to lead an easy cultured life as a man of letters. His novel *Vathek,* a tragicomic oriental fantasy, was begun in 1782 and in French. 'Episodes' intended to be interpolated were not published until 1912. From 1785 to 1798, partly as the result of a scandal, he spent most of his time in France, Switzerland, Spain and Portugal. His *Recollections of an Excursion to the Monasteries of Alcobaca and Batalha* (1835), esteemed as his best book, recalls a Portuguese visit made in 1795. Much of his time was, however, spent in building up collections of books and pictures which were eventually housed at Fonthill, a Gothic extravaganza which he commissioned *Wyatt to build for him in Wiltshire (1796–1807). He lived there in hermit-like seclusion.

Beckmann, Max (1884–1950). German painter. A figurative artist, he was associated with the Expressionists, working in Berlin, Frankfurt, Amsterdam and New York. His paintings were large, powerful and savage, reflecting despair at human cruelty.

Becquerel. French scientific family. **Antoine César Becquerel** (1788–1878) served as an engineer in the Peninsular War and in 1837 became professor of physics (working on animal heat, electrochemistry, etc.) at the Musée d'Histoire Naturelle. In this post he was succeeded by his son **Alexandre Edmond** (1820–1891), whose principal field of study was optics. The same chair was held by Alexandre's son (Antoine) **Henri** (1852–1908), who held it for three years before becoming professor of physics (1895) at the École Polytechnique. In 1896, while investigating the fluorescence produced by exposing uranium salts to X-rays, Becquerel discovered that radiation was given off by the uranium salts even when they had not been exposed to X-rays. This 'radioactivity' he showed to be a fundamental property of salts of uranium, thorium and other heavy elements. His suggestion that Marie and Pierre *Curie should investigate radioactivity in pitchblende led them to isolate the element radium. Becquerel and the Curies were jointly awarded the Nobel Prize for Physics in 1903.

Beddoes, Thomas Lovell (1803–1849). English poet. The son of a physician, he studied at Oxford (1820–24) and spent the rest of his life as a doctor in Germany and Switzerland with occasional visits to England. From 1825 he worked on his most important work, a drama called *Death's Jest Book*, or the *Fool's Tragedy*, which was published posthumously after his suicide in Basle. His morbidity and obsession with death (he described himself as a 'creeper into worm holes'), is reminiscent of the Jacobean dramatists, but occasionally his lyrics display a delicate and moving poignancy. His collected poems first appeared posthumously in 1851.

Bede (or Baeda)**, St** (c.673–735). English historian and theologian. Known as 'the Venerable Bede', he spent most of his life as a Benedictine monk at Jarrow, near Durham, became the greatest scholar in the English Church and a European figure, writing works

on grammar, theology and history with standards of scholarship unusual for his time. In *On the Reckoning of Time* (c.725), he promoted the Christian chronology proposed by *Dionysius Exiguus. He calculated that the creation of the universe occurred in 3952 BC, using Genesis as his source. His main work was *The Ecclesiastical History of the English Nation*, still an essential source for the period 597 to 731. He died immediately after completing a vernacular translation of St John's Gospel and is buried in Durham Cathedral. His influence on the school at York was transmitted by *Alcuin to the court of *Charlemagne. In 1899, he was canonised and proclaimed as a Doctor of the Church by *Leo XIII.

Bedford, John of Lancaster, Duke of (1389–1435). English prince. On the death (1422) of his brother, *Henry V of England, Bedford was regent in France for the boy king *Henry VI. He proved himself able both as a soldier and administrator but found himself confronted by the French national spirit revived by *Joan of Arc.

Beebe, Charles William (1877–1962). American ornithologist and explorer. In 1934 he reached a record depth of 993 m (3,028 feet) in the sea off Bermuda in a bathysphere, a diving bell of his own design, in order to study marine life at intense pressures. He described the experience in *Half a Mile Down* (1934).

Beecham, Sir Thomas, 2nd Baronet (1879–1961). English conductor, born in St Helens, Lancashire. Son of a millionaire laxative (Beecham's Pills) manufacturer, educated at Rossall School, Fleetwood, and Oxford, he made his debut in 1905. In 1906 he founded the New Symphony Orchestra and in 1910 initiated a series of opera seasons at Covent Garden. The following year he introduced *Diaghilev's Ballets Russes to London. He strove to establish opera permanently in Britain and to improve operatic and orchestral performances. Admired for the verve and elegance of his interpretations, he was associated particularly with music by *Haydn, *Mozart, *Delius, *Sibelius and Richard *Strauss. He founded the London Philharmonic Orchestra in 1932 and the Royal Philharmonic Orchestra in 1946, was artistic director at Covent Garden 1932–39, and lived in the US (1940–44). In 1916 he was knighted, succeeded to his father's baronetcy in the same year, and received a CH in 1957.

Cardus, N., *Sir Thomas Beecham*. 196l.

Beecher, Henry Ward (1813–1887). American preacher. The brother of Harriet Beecher *Stowe, the author of *Uncle Tom's Cabin*, as a Congregational minister he attracted 3,000 to Plymouth Church, Brooklyn (1847–87), where he won fame as a preacher of great eloquence and power. He denounced black slavery and advocated temperance and women's suffrage. A visit to Britain (1863) proved a triumph. In 1874 he was charged with having committed adultery with Mrs Elizabeth Tilton, the wife of prominent journalist, Theodore Tilton, but after a long trial the jury was unable to agree on a verdict.

Beethoven, Ludwig van (1770–1827). German composer, born in Bonn. Of Flemish descent, his father **Johann** (c.1740–1792), a tenor in the Electoral choir, was Beethoven's first teacher and took him from school at the age of 11 to exploit his musical talents. Beethoven studied composition (1781–87) with the organist Christian Neefe who stimulated his interest in *Bach. On a journey to Vienna (1787) he played for *Mozart and perhaps had a few lessons from him. He was assistant conductor at the Electoral court (1784–88) and also played the viola in the Bonn opera orchestra. With the financial support of the Elector Maximilian Franz and Count Ferdinand Waldstein, Beethoven was sent to Vienna where he studied with *Haydn, J. G. Albrechtsberger and *Salieri. Apart from short visits to Berlin and Budapest, he remained in Vienna until his death. His acceptance by the highest social circles showed the revolutionary change in the status of composers since Haydn and Mozart. Archduke Rudolph, Prince Lichnowsky, Prince Kinsky and Prince Lobkowitz were not only Beethoven's patrons but also friends and subscribed to a large annuity to keep him in Vienna, despite his rude manners, outbursts of temper and rough appearance.

Beethoven's works, 722 in total, are usually classified into three periods, although these classifications cannot be applied arbitrarily. His early music shows the extent of his debt to the Classical masters, especially Haydn and Mozart, with its restraint, balance, subtle emotion and strict observance of form. To this period belong the first two symphonies (1800, 1802), the first two piano concertos (1797, 1795–98), the first 12 piano sonatas, the first six string quartets and 13 trios.

From 1796 Beethoven suffered from acute tinnitus, and by 1798 there was serious hearing loss, a cause of profound personal and professional anguish for 30 years. After 1801 he became a highly functioning alcoholic, suffered from progressive cirrhosis of the liver and from lead poisoning, due to plumbing, complicated by a bad diet. He contemplated suicide in 1802. His deafness was almost certainly caused by osteosclerosis, abnormal growth of bone in the cochlea or the stirrup-shaped stapes. He tried various treatments including diet and even electric shock. He rarely performed on piano in public from 1808 and abandoned it in April 1814. However, a letter of 1823 indicated that he retained vestigial hearing in the left ear and last conducted, erratically, in May 1824.

Between 1802 and 1815 (the second period), Beethoven broke away from the Classical tradition and developed the new 'romantic' style, which had been hinted at in the late works of Haydn and Mozart. His symphonies and sonatas were longer

than their Classical forebears, more vigorous, with a much greater range of dynamics, tempos, rhythms, key changes, syncopation and harmony. The music was much less predictable and much more emotional in both form and content. Beethoven's symphonies substituted the scherzo for the traditional minuet and trio movement and are scored for a substantially larger orchestra than Mozart's. An ardent democrat and republican, Beethoven originally dedicated his Symphony No. 3 in E flat, op. 55 (1804) to *Napoléon but, disillusioned when he proclaimed himself Emperor, changed the dedication and renamed it 'Eroica'. The longest symphony written to that time, it is marked by a driving urgency, exceptional dynamic range and unprecedented orchestration, leaving behind the world of Haydn and Mozart, just as the impact of the French Revolution and the long turmoil of the Napoléonic Wars transformed European society, its traditions and institutions. The symphony begins starkly with two fierce chords followed by a long powerful theme over a grinding bass. The slow movement is a long, unprecedented, funeral march, followed by a wild scherzo, concluding with a heaven storming set of variations on the theme of Prometheus. Its power and the obsessive repetition of dissonance shocked the Viennese audience. The hero, the creative artist challenging the world and defying death and infirmity, is Beethoven himself.

Other works of this period include the Piano Concertos Nos 3 (1803), 4 (1806), 5 (1809, nicknamed the 'Emperor', but not by Beethoven); his Symphony No. 4 in B flat, op. 60 (1806); 15 piano sonatas; the 'Kreutzer' (1803) and 'Spring' (1805) violin sonatas; much chamber music including five string quartets, string and piano trios including the 'Archduke' op. 97 (1811); the Violin Concerto in D major, op. 61(1806); several sets of variations; and the opera *Fidelio.* Originally titled *Leonora,* after the heroine, *Fidelio* was a failure when first performed in 1805. It succeeded in 1814 only after drastic revisions had been made. Four more symphonies were also composed during this period: No. 5 in C minor, op. 67 (1807) probably the most performed in the repertoire; No. 6 in F major, op. 68 (1808, 'Pastoral'); No. 7 in A major, op. 92 (1812, described by *Wagner as the apotheosis of the dance') and No. 8 in F major, op. 93 (1813).

His third period begins in 1815, but until 1824 there was a comparative hiatus in Beethoven's productivity, due to sickness, depression and family problems: no symphonies, concertos or string quartets. However, there were five superb piano sonatas, Nos. 28, 29 (the 'Hammerklavier', 1818), 30. 31 and 32, two cello sonatas, the *Diabelli Variations* (1823), the *Missa Solemnis* (1823) and many songs.

Symphony No. 9 in D minor, op. 125 (1823–24), the 'Choral' Symphony, his longest and most innovative, creates a completely new sound, introducing four soloists and a chorus in the last movement, singing *Schiller's 'Ode to Joy'. In November 1989 the 'Choral' Symphony was played in Berlin when the wall came down because it expresses, as Daniel *Barenboim wrote, 'a social affirmation of the human being, with promises of fulfilment, of liberation and brotherhood'. The last five string quartets, beginning with No. 12 in E flat major, op. 127 (1824–25), and the *Grosse Fuge* (1824–27), are the greatest in the repertoire. His favourite among his works (Wagner's choice as well) was the String Quartet No. 14 in C sharp, op. 131 (1826). Quartet No. 15 in A minor, op. 132 (1825) contains his *Heiliger Dankgesang* ('Sacred Song of Thanksgiving'), a profound expression of personal experience and conviction, and a hint of belief in a personal God. The music begins with an attempt to grapple with the stress of existence, pain and uncertainty, moving through questioning to understanding, to resolution, to affirmation and finally to joy.

He never married, although he had several brief and pathetic love affairs; he never found his Leonora. He had wealthy patrons, a reasonable income, lived at a fashionable address, but in squalor and lacked all social graces. He lost savings in unwise investments and his later years were darkened by anxiety over his hapless nephew **Karl** (1806–1858). Associates tried to communicate through ear trumpets, then by correspondence books, of which 139, between 1818–27, survive. After questions were written out, Beethoven would reply, either by scrawling in the book or shouting. Raised as a Catholic, he was a deist with a profound reverence for nature. After a long illness he died of dropsy and jaundice at his lodgings in the Schwarzspanierhaus (demolished in 1904). His funeral was attended by 20,000 people. His will directed an autopsy.

Beethoven remains the most popular of the greatest composers perhaps because listeners feel that in his constant struggles with fate he never fails to win a victory.

Solomon, M., *Beethoven.* 1977; Cooper, B. (gen. ed.), *The Beethoven Compendium.* 1991; Kinderman, W., *Beethoven*. 1996; Swafford, J., *Beethoven: Anguish and Triumph*. 2014.

Beeton, Isabella Mary (née Mayson) (1836–1865). English author. Mrs Beeton's was a household name in British kitchens for over a century. Educated in Heidelberg and trained as a pianist, she married a publisher and began writing on cookery in his *Englishwoman's Domestic Magazine*. Her famous *Book of Household Management* (1861) originally appeared in three parts during 1859–60.

Begin, Menachem (1913–1992). Israeli politician, born in Poland. After working as a Jewish youth organiser in Poland he was deported to Siberia by the Russians, released and sent to Palestine. In 1943 he became leader of Irgun Zvai Leumi which adopted more militant tactics against the British than David

*Ben Gurion's Zionists. He led the Likud party in the Knesset and defeated the Mapai to become Prime Minister 1977–83. He welcomed the visit of Egypt's President *Sadat to Jerusalem (November 1977) and in 1978, with assistance from President Jimmy *Carter, concluded an Israeli Egyptian peace treaty at Camp David, Maryland. Begin and Sadat shared the 1978 Nobel Peace Prize.

Behan, Brendan (1923–1964). Irish playwright, born in Dublin. Son of a house painter, he was arrested in Liverpool for terrorist activities on behalf of the Irish Republican Army in the early days of World War II. His subsequent years in an institution were described in *Borstal Boy* (1958). His fame rests on two plays *The Quare Fellow* (1956) and *The Hostage* (1958), both owing much to Joan *Littlewood's production at the Theatre Workshop in East London, and his notorious conviviality and outspokenness.

O'Connor, V., *Brendan Behan*. 1970.

Behn, Aphra (née Amis) (1640–1689). English author. The first professional woman writer in English, she was brought up in Surinam before returning to England and marrying a merchant called Behn. An adventurous interlude as a spy in Holland followed her husband's death, and it was only then, after imprisonment for debt, that she took to writing as a career. She wrote two plays and 14 novels, including *Oroonoko*, or *The Royal Slave*, which anticipated Rousseau's 'noble savage'.

Hahn, H., *Aphra Behn*. 1951.

Behrens, Peter (1868–1940). German architect, born at Hamburg. He worked as an industrial designer in Munich before being appointed professor of architecture at Darmstadt in 1900. He became the principal architect of the Deutscher Werkbund, founded in 1907, an association of architects and designers formed to meet the needs of and take advantage of the new opportunities provided by industrial building and design. Among the earliest and best known of Behrens' functional buildings was his turbine factory (1909) in Berlin, built for the great electrical combine AEG, for whom he designed other major buildings and a number of industrial products. Both his architecture and his design are characterised by functional expression and geometric simplicity. *Le Corbusier, *Gropius and *Mies van der Rohe were influenced by his work.

Behring, Emil Adolf von (1854–1917). German bacteriologist. He graduated at Berlin and joined the Army Medical Corps, which he left (1888) to work on immunisation at Robert *Koch's Institute for Infectious Diseases. In 1890, with *Kitasato Shibasaburo, he produced an anti-toxin for use against tetanus. In 1892 he developed an anti-toxin for diphtheria. Paul *Ehrlich demonstrated how it could be produced in greater strength and volume by growing it in horses. In1895 he became a professor at Marburg, where he set up his own laboratories for manufacturing anti-toxins. He won the first Nobel Prize for Medicine in 1901 for his 'work in serum therapy, especially diphtheria' (and Ehrlich never forgave his exclusion). He failed in attempts to find a vaccine for tuberculosis but his tetanus vaccine saved many lives in World War I.

Beiderbecke, Bix (né Leon Bismark) (1903–1931). American cornettist, pianist and composer, born in Davenport, Iowa. He was the first to attempt to incorporate concert hall harmonies into jazz improvisation, and the first white musician to be acknowledged an important innovator by African-American contemporaries. *Singin' the Blues* (1927) is extraordinary. He worked with various musicians, including Frank Trumbauer and Jean Goldkette. He died, in comparative obscurity, of brain oedema, caused by alcoholism. His posthumous reputation grew and he was remembered for the purity of tone of his cornet style, and the impressionistic influences shown in his piano playing. A Beiderbecke cult was initiated with the publicity of Dorothy Baker's novel *Young Man with a Horn* (1938), followed by films and biographies. Asteroid 23457 Beiderbecke (1989) is named for him.

Béjart. French acting family, closely associated with the playwright *Molière. **Madeleine Béjart** (1618–1672) formed a company of strolling players with her sister Geneviève and brothers, Joseph and Louis. An able administrator, she is credited with persuading Molière to enter upon a theatrical career. They formed the Illustre Théâtre and he wrote many parts for her, notably Dorine in *Tartufe*. Her daughter **Armande Béjart** (1645–1700) joined the company at Lyons in 1653, married Molière in 1662, parted in 1665 but reconciled 1771. After Molière's death in 1673 she kept the company together, and in 1680 it became the Comédie Française, the French national theatre, later managed by her second husband **François Guerin d'Etriche**, a leading actor.

Belasco, David (1853–1931). American dramatist, theatre manager, and actor, born in San Francisco. From childhood he worked in stock touring companies, lived in San Francisco 1873–79 and moved to New York in 1880, becoming an independent producer from 1890. He established the Belasco Theatre in 1906. His lavish productions were marked by technical innovations and new standards of professionalism. However, his taste was conservative and he ignored the emerging major playwrights of Europe and the US. His own plays included *Hearts of Oak* (1880), *The Heart of Maryland* (1895), *Madame Butterfly* (1900) and *The Girl of the Golden West* (1905)—both used as libretti for *Puccini's operas, *Du Barry* (1901) and *Lulu Belle* (1926). He affected a clerical style of dress and was often called 'the Bishop of Broadway'.

Belinsky, Vissarion Grigorievich (1811–1848). Russian literary and social critic, born in Helsinki. An associate of *Herzen and *Bakunin, he was

attracted to the Western tradition of individualism and gave early support to *Dostoevsky who soon broke with him.

Belisarius (c.505–565). Byzantine general. In the service of the emperor *Justinian, his most successful campaigns were fought when he was trying to win back the former territories of the Roman Empire in Africa and Italy. He defeated the Vandals in Africa (533–34) and in 535 occupied Sicily, whence he proceeded to his main task of expelling the Ostrogoths from Italy. Rome was triumphantly reoccupied in 536 but this was only a beginning and it was not until 540 that the Ostrogoths' capital at Ravenna was taken. Recalled to repel Persian attacks in the East, he returned to Italy (544) when the Ostrogoths had renewed the struggle. Mainly through lack of support by the emperor, he failed to achieve decisive results and in 549 he was again recalled. Justinian, indeed, found it difficult not to suspect the loyalty of so successful and popular a general and though in the case of Belisarius they were quite groundless, these suspicions continually hampered his career. Indeed in 562 he was even imprisoned for a short time, though only three years earlier the Huns had been driven back from the outskirts of Constantinople by his skill and courage. However, the legend that he was blinded and died a beggar is untrue.

Graves, R., *Count Belisarius*. 1938.

Bell, Alexander Graham (1847–1922). American inventor, born in Edinburgh. His father was an elocutionist, his mother became increasingly deaf. He attended classes at Edinburgh University and University College, London, and worked with his father as a teacher of the deaf. He migrated to Canada for his health (1870), then went to Boston where he taught 'deaf mutes' (as they were then called) and became professor of vocal physiology at Boston University (1873). (He married a deaf student in 1877 and Helen *Keller was one of his later protégés.) He opposed use of sign language and became preoccupied with the mechanical transmission of sound vibrations by wire. He invented the first practical telephone, submitting a patent application on 14 February 1876, only a few hours before Elisha *Gray. (Both used a crude 'liquid transmitter', with a vibrating reed touching acidified water, instead of a microphone.) The telephone was an instant success at the Philadelphia Centennial Exposition (1876) and the Bell Telephone Company was founded in 1877. (Queen *Victoria had a telephone in 1877 and Melbourne a telephone exchange by 1880.) *Edison's carbon microphone (1878) improved performance greatly. In return he improved Edison's phonograph (1880). France awarded him the Volta Prize in 1880 and he used the money to establish the Volta Laboratory in Washington DC, later renamed for him. Bell became a US citizen in 1882, was a co-founder of the magazines *Science* (1880) and the *National Geographic* (1898), supported experimentation in aviation, and invented the tetrahedral kite. He studied the genetic basis of deafness and sonar detection and was an advocate for eugenics. He died in Nova Scotia. The decibel (db: measure of intensity of sound) was named for him. His father, **Alexander Melville Bell** (1819–1905), who also went to America, settled in Washington, DC, in 1881. He invented a system of 'visible speech', his methods combining 'phonetic signs and graphs of the organs and motions of speech'.

Mackay, J., *Alexander Graham Bell.* 1998.

Bell, Andrew *see* **Lancaster, Joseph**

Bell, Clive Arthur Howard (1881–1964). English art and literary critic. He did much by his critical works, e.g. *Art* (1914) and *Since Cezanne* (1922), to explain and popularise the Post Impressionists and Fauves. Other works include *Civilisation* (1928) and *Proust* (1929). A member of the Bloomsbury group, Bell married Vanessa, daughter of Sir Leslie *Stephen, and sister of Virginia *Woolf.

Bell (né Bolotsky), **Daniel** (1919–2011). American sociologist. Originally a journalist, he became a socialist, then a liberal, finally a conservative, holding a chair in sociology at Harvard 1969–90. His major works were *The End of Ideology* (1960) and *The Coming of Post-Industrial Society* (1973).

Bell, George Kennedy Allen (1883–1958). Anglican prelate. Bishop of Chichester 1929–58, a pioneer of the ecumenical movement, he became close to Dietrich *Bonhoeffer and during World War II campaigned to draw attention to Nazi atrocities.

Bell, Gertrude Margaret Lowthian (1868–1926). English traveller, mountaineer, linguist, author and archaeologist. Educated at Oxford (but unable to take out a degree), her travels from 1892 in almost every part of the Middle East were of great importance to the British Government when these lands became battlefields or areas of political contention during and after World War I. She worked with T. E. *Lawrence and, as 'oriental secretary', largely drew the boundaries for the new state of Iraq in 1921. A strong supporter of the Hashemite interest, she pushed for the imposition of *Faisal as King of Iraq. She lived in Baghdad, worked at the museum and committed suicide there. She was anti-Zionist and also (oddly) strongly opposed to votes for women.

Meyer, K. E. and Brysac, S. B., *Kingmakers*. 2008.

Bell, John (1940–). Australian actor and theatre director, born in Maitland. A Sydney University graduate, he worked with the Royal Shakespeare Company in England, acted, taught and directed in Sydney, and founded the Bell Shakespeare Company in 1990. In addition to *Shakespeare, his company was successful in plays by *Marlowe, *Webster, *Goldoni, *Strindberg and *Williamson.

Bell, J., *The Time of My Life*. 2002.

Bell, John Stewart (1928–1990). Irish physicist. Educated at Birmingham University, he worked at CERN (Conseil Européen pour la Recherche Nucléaire), Geneva, from 1960. 'Bell's theorem' (1964) argues that there is an interconnectedness between subatomic particles that raises fundamental questions about models of, and the nature of, causation.

Bell, Patrick (1801–1869). Scottish inventor, born in Angus. Son of a farmer, his agricultural machinery derived from a practical understanding of a farmer's needs rather than from specialised training. He invented the first practical reaper for cereal crops and machines for grinding oats and making wheat-flour, and devised equipment for extracting the sugar from sugar beet. He later became a minister in the Kirk.

Bell Burnell, Dame Jocelyn (née Susan Jocelyn Bell) (1943–). British astrophysicist, born in Northern Ireland. An active Quaker, she studied at Glasgow and Cambridge, where, as a graduate student, working (1967) with Antony *Hewish, she identified the first four pulsars. Hewish, who initially dismissed her observation, went on to share a Nobel Physics Prize in 1974 from which Bell was excluded, one of the most egregious failures in the history of the Prize. She became FRS in 2003 and DBE in 2007.

Bellamy, Edward (1850–1898). American novelist and political writer. His most famous work was *Looking Backward* (1888), a Utopian romance which influenced socialist ideas of economic organisation and became a bestseller, ranking only behind *Uncle Tom's Cabin* and *Ben-Hur*. Other romances with similar aims were *Equality* (1897) and *The Duke of Stockbridge* (1900).

Morgan, A. E., *Life of Edward Bellamy*. 1944.

Bellarmino, St Roberto Francisco Romulo (1542–1621). Italian cardinal and theologian. He entered the Jesuit Order in 1560 and was ordained, after studying at Louvain and Padua, in 1570 and spent the rest of his life either teaching theology (at Louvain until 1576 and then in Rome) or engaged in theological controversy. Among the most persuasive supporters of the papacy and obliged to denounce the teachings of *Galileo Galilei, he was regarded as a moderating influence and praised for his tolerance and learning. Against his wishes, he was made a cardinal in 1599 and in 1602 Archbishop of Capua. He avoided election to the papacy on the death (1605) of *Clement VIII but was given high office at the Vatican. He was canonised in 1930.

Brodnick, J., *Robert Bellarmine: Saint and Scholar*. 1961.

Bellingshausen, Faddei Faddeivich (1778–1852). Russian navigator. He led an expedition which, in January 1820, was the first to sight Antarctica, but did not land.

Bellini. Venetian family of painters, **Jacopo** (c.1400–1470) and his sons **Gentile** (c.1429–1507) and **Giovanni** (c.1430–1516). Few of Jacopo's paintings survive but his many drawings show his work covered a wide range of religious and secular themes and provided a link between the old Venetian style and its Byzantine traditions, and the art of the High Renaissance.

Both sons were probably trained in their father's studio. Gentile, the lesser of the two, won success as a portrait painter and, in his narrative works, (e.g. *The Procession in the Piazza of San Marco*) showed a taste for spectacular display. An interlude in Constantinople (1479–81) in response to a request by Sultan *Mohammed II resulted in a number of paintings with an oriental flavour, including a portrait of the Sultan himself (National Gallery, London). Giovanni, the greatest of the Bellini family, is justly regarded as the father of Venetian High Renaissance style, the most important influence on his work being clearly that of his brother-in-law Mantegna. His paintings are characterised by a sense of tragic pathos, quiet dignity and compassion: his masterpiece *St Francis in Ecstasy* (c.1480) hangs in the Frick Collection, New York. Although mostly a painter of religious subjects, Bellini also executed mythological works such as the famous *Feast of the Gods*, later completed by *Titian. As the teacher of Titian and *Giorgione, Bellini's influence upon the next generation was profound. In many of his paintings we see in embryo the mood, the pastoral setting and the soft, warm colours which were to typify the work of his pupils. The well known *Doge Leonardo Loredano* (National Gallery, London) is one of several fine portraits.

Robertson, G., *Giovanni Bellini*. 1968.

Bellini, Vincenzo (1801–1835). Italian operatic composer, born in Catania, Sicily. He studied in Naples and his operas, distinguished by their melodic sophistication include *I Capuleti e I Montecchi* (*The Capulets and the Montagues*, 1830), *La sonnambula* (*The Sleepwalker*, 1831), *Norma* (1832) and *I Puritani* (1834), performed with great success in Milan and Paris. His music had an important influence on *Chopin and *Verdi.

Belloc, (Joseph) **Hilaire** (Pierre) (1870–1953). English writer, born near Paris. Son of a French advocate and his English wife, he was educated at Oxford, became a Liberal MP 1906–10 and first gained fame with his nonsense verse in *The Bad Child's Book of Beasts* (1896), followed later by *Cautionary Tales* (1907). Versatile and prolific, he wrote essays; innumerable discursive travel books, historical studies, e.g. *Marie Antoinette* (1910), *Richelieu* (1929) and *Napoleon* (1932); fantastic or satirical novels, e.g. *Mr Clutterbuck's Election,* and serious political works such as *The Servile State* (1912). In World War I he gained a short-lived reputation as a military critic. He shared with his friend G. K.

*Chesterton his Roman Catholic religion, a hatred of the manipulations of finance, a gift for friendship and a romantic nostalgia for the Middle Ages. His sister **Marie-Adelaide Belloc-Lowndes** (1868–1947), wrote many detective stories and thrillers including *The Lodger* (1913, and later filmed), an imaginary reconstruction of the *Jack the Ripper murders.

Wilson, A. N., *Hilaire Belloc*. 1985.

Bellow, Saul (1915–2005). American novelist, born in Québec of Russian Jewish parents. His novels, some of which were filmed, include *The Adventures of Augie March* (1953), *Henderson the Rain King* (1959), *Herzog* (1964) and *Humboldt's Gift* (1975). He won the 1976 Nobel Prize for Literature.

Leader, Z., *The Life of Saul Bellow*. 2 vols, 2015, 2018.

Belshazzar (or Balthasar) (d.c.539 BCE). Babylonian prince. He was regent for his father king Nabonidus (Nabu-Na'id) when Babylon fell to *Cyrus II of Persia (538). Daniel, Chapter 5, tells how the words 'mene, mene, tekel, upharsim' (that he had been 'weighed in the balance and found wanting') appeared on the walls of the banqueting room and were taken for a warning of the approaching disaster. Belshazzar seems to have been killed that night or shortly afterwards.

Belzoni, Giovanni Battista (1778–1823). Italian traveller and archaeologist. Of humble origins, he was gifted with enormous size and strength, which he exploited as a 'strong man' when he came to England in 1803. He also devised a hydraulic engine. A visit to Egypt (1815) stirred his interest in archaeology, or rather, in tomb robbing. He discovered the sepulchre of *Seti I at Thebes (1817), cleared the rock temple of Abu Simbel and opened up the second pyramid at Giza. His clumsy practice and the adventurous circumstances of his Egyptian explorations are described in his *Narrative of the Operations and Recent Discoveries within the Pyramids, Temples, Tombs, and Excavations in Egypt and Nubia* (1820).

Bem, Józef Zachariasz (later, **Murad Pasha**) (1794–1850). Polish general, engineer and nationalist leader, born in Tarnów, now in Poland, then in Austrian Galicia. He was appointed by *Kossuth to lead Hungarian nationalist forces against the Russians and Austrians during the revolution of 1848–49. On its failure, he fled to Türkiye, became a Muslim, was given a command and died in Aleppo, Syria.

Bembo, Pietro (1470–1547). Italian poet and cardinal. He held a commanding position in Italian literature during his lifetime and was mainly instrumental in establishing *Petrarch's versification and Tuscan vocabulary as standard poetical practice. His dialogue *Gil Asolani* (1505), which discusses platonic love, and his letters are well known. He was appointed historian to the republic of Venice in 1530.

Benavente y Martinez, Jacinto (1866–1954). Spanish dramatist. Son of a physician, he abandoned the study of law to become an actor and playwright. His very large output includes plays of many different styles and moods satirical, romantic or fantastic. The best known of them is perhaps *Los intereses creados* (*Vested Interests*, 1907). Others well known in translation include *Saturday Night* (1903) and *Rose of Autumn* (1905). He won the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1922.

Ben Ali, Zine El Abidene (Ben Haj Hamda Ben Haj Hassen) (1936–2019). Tunisian politician and soldier. Educated in France and the US, he was Minister for Defence and National Security 1977–80 and as Prime Minister 1987 peacefully deposed *Bourguiba, becoming President of Tunisia 1987–2011. He was forced into exile in Saudi Arabia in January 2011.

Ben Bella, Ahmed (1916–2012). Algerian politician. A former sergeant major in the French Army, he was among the early workers for Algerian independence from France and became the leader of the Algerian nationalists in exile. In 1956 an aeroplane in which he was travelling was brought down by the French and he remained in confinement until the cease-fire conference at Evian in 1962. His advance to power in Algeria now became rapid; he displaced Yusuf Ben Khedda to become Prime Minister in September of the same year. A year later (1963) the president Ferhat *Abbas was also removed and, under a new constitution confirmed in a referendum by an overwhelming majority, Ben Bella occupied both offices. He was overthrown in a coup by his second-in-command, *Boumedienne, in 1965.

Merhe, R., *Ahmed Ben Bella*. 1967.

Benbow, John (1653–1702). English sailor. He first entered the navy (1678) as master's mate and had risen to be rear admiral at the time of his last and most famous exploit. This took place in August 1702 when he kept up a running fight for four days with a French squadron off St Marta in the West Indies. Virtually deserted by most of his squadron, probably because of his bullying temperament, he fought alone. With his leg smashed by a chain shot he still directed operations. In the following November he died of his wounds in Jamaica.

Benda, Julien (1867–1956). French author and philosopher. The work for which he is chiefly remembered is *La Trahison des clercs* (1927), published in England as *The Great Betrayal*. The treason is that of intellectuals who apply double standards, surrendering their analytical skills to promote an ideology. Other works are the novel *The Yoke of Pity* (1912) and *La Jeunesse d'un clerc* (1936), an intellectual autobiography.

Benedict (Benedictus) **of Nursia, St** (c.480–547). Italian religious, born at Nursia, near Spoleto (Umbria). Founder of Western monasticism, as a boy

of 14 he withdrew from the world, and lived alone in a cave near Subiaco. He became famous for his piety and was soon surrounded by a number of disciples. He founded 12 small monasteries from the most devout of these followers and in c.529 founded a monastery at Monte Cassino, between Rome and Naples, which later became one of the richest and most famous monasteries in Europe. His *Regula Monachorum*, in addition to the usual spiritual exercises, directs that the monks shall do manual labour by working in the fields, teaching the young and copying manuscripts, following the principle that 'to work is to pray' ('laborare est orare'). St Benedict did not found a particular order and the name Benedictines was applied to all who followed his rule. In 1964 *Paul VI proclaimed him patron saint of Europe.

Benedict XIV (Prospero Lambertini) (1675–1758). Pope 1740–58. Archbishop of Bologna 1731–40, he was one of the wisest and most conciliatory of popes and proved himself one of the most successful at reconciling the interests of the Church with those of the sovereigns. Thus he came to terms with *Friedrich II ('the Great') of Prussia concerning the Catholic minority, showed a tolerant attitude to the Jansenists in France, assented to nominations by the Spanish crown to nearly all benefices, and made concordats with Naples and Sardinia.

Benedict XV (Giacomo della Chiesa) (1854–1922). Pope 1914–22. He served in the papal diplomatic service for many years and was Archbishop of Bologna 1907–14, being appointed a cardinal only a few months before his election to the papacy. His attempts to settle World War I by negotiation failed but he did much to alleviate the lot of prisoners of war and other sufferers.

Benedict XVI (Joseph Alois Ratzinger, later known as Pope Emeritus Benedict XVI) (1927–2022). Pope 2005–13. Born in Marktl, Bavaria, he was forced to join the Hitler Youth but deserted from military service. Educated at Munich University, and ordained in 1951, he became a professor of theology at Tübingen 1966–69 and Regensburg 1969–77, and Archbishop of Munich-Freising 1977–81. Although regarded as a progressive during Vatican II, as *John Paul II's Prefect of the Sacred Congregation of the Faith 1981–2005 he took a strongly conservative line. Elected as Pope on the fourth ballot, he was the oldest person to have been chosen since 1730. He came under sustained attack for responding inadequately to charges of sexual abuse inside Church institutions. His encyclical *Caritas in Veritate* ('*Love in Truth*') was published in 2009. In February 2013, he resigned as Pope, the first to do since *Gregory XII in 1415, pleading 'lack of strength in mind and body'.

Beneš, Eduard (1884–1948). Czechoslovak scholar and politician, born in Kozlány. Of peasant origin, he built up his position solely by his own abilities. Educated in Prague and Paris (where he supported himself by journalism) he returned to become professor of sociology in Prague. During World War I he worked abroad with his political mentor *Masaryk to secure recognition by the Allies of Czechoslovakia's right to nationhood. So successful were these efforts that the Allied victory in 1918 was followed by the creation of Czechoslovakia as a separate state with Masaryk as President and Beneš Foreign Minister 1918–35. He was the main architect of the Little Entente (Czechoslovakia, Romania and Yugoslavia), which in alliance with France was intended to sustain the postwar settlement. One of the strongest upholders of the League of Nations, he was President of the Assembly in 1935. He succeeded Masaryk as President of the Republic 1935–38. *Hitler demanded autonomy for Germans living in Sudetenland, the mountainous Czech border region. When Beneš mobilised forces to resist, a peace settlement was negotiated by Germany, Italy, France and the UK at Munich (September 1938). The result was imposed on Czechoslovakia without consultation and Beneš resigned. In London he became President of the provisional Czechoslovak Government in exile 1942–45. Restored as President in 1945, he resigned in June 1948, after the Communists seized power, and he died in September.

Beneš, E., *Memoirs*. 1954.

Benet, Stephen Vincent (1898–1943). American writer. He won the Pulitzer Prize for Poetry in 1929 for *John Brown's Body*, a ballad-epic of the Civil War, and in 1944 for his narrative poem *Western Star*. His story *The Devil and Daniel Webster* (1937) demonstrated his gift for re-interpreted American legends. His brother **William Rose Benet** (1886–1950) won the 1942 Pulitzer Prize for Poetry for his verse-novel *The Dust Which is God*.

Ben-Gurion, David (né David Grün) (1886–1973). Israeli politician, born in Płońsk, Poland. He emigrated to Palestine in 1906, then worked in Salonika and in 1911 studied briefly at Istanbul University.

He collaborated with **Yitzhak Ben-Zvi** (1884–1963) to promote Zionism and the use of Hebrew instead of Yiddish, campaigned in the United States 1915–18 to win support for a Jewish state and published *Eratz-Israel – Past and Present* (1918). Originally he supported the Ottomans in World War I, but joined the Jewish Legion of the British Army in Canada in May 1918, then served briefly in Egypt. Meanwhile, the *Balfour Declaration (November 1917) promised British support for 'a Jewish national home', and one month later Edmund *Allenby, assisted by the Jewish Legion, captured Jerusalem.

Ben-Gurion was general secretary of Histadrut, the Jewish trade union movement, 1921–35, leader of Mapai, a democratic socialist party, 1930–54; 1955–63 and chair of the Jewish Agency 1935–48.

An atheist since his youth, he advocated a rigorous secularism. He urged caution in reacting to Arab attacks on Jewish settlements, supported the British in World War II and, after initial equivocation, opposed the 1944 armed attacks by Irgun and Lehi, factions which followed the ideas of Ze'ev *Jabotinsky.

In 1947, the *Attlee Government decided to give up its Palestinian Mandate and return it to the United Nations. In May 1948 Israel was created with Ben-Gurion as the first Prime Minister 1948–53; 1954–63. About 750,000 Palestinian Arabs were displaced ('Nakba', 'catastrophe') and 15,000 killed. During the Suez War (1956), in which Britain and France attacked Egypt, Israel invaded the Sinai Peninsula. Surprisingly, until the trial and execution (1962) of Adolf *Eichmann there was limited emphasis on the creation of Israel having been a response to the Holocaust. He cultivated good relations with Germany. In 1965 he broke with Mapai and formed his own party, Rafi. He bitterly attacked former colleagues for strategic failures in the 1967 war (even more galling because they were successful), retired to a kibbutz and lived austerely. An airport and a university are named for him.

Teveth, S., Ben-Gurion and the Holocaust. 1996; Peres, S., *Ben-Gurion*. 2011; Shapira, A, *Ben-Gurion*. 2014.

Benjamin (Binyamin) (fl. c.1850 BCE). Hebrew patriarch. Youngest son of *Jacob and Rachel (who died giving him birth). The tribe named after him, with the tribe of Judah, remained loyal to the house of *David when, in the reign of Rehoboam, son of *Solomon, the other 10 tribes broke away to form a separate kingdom.

Benjamin, Judah Phillip (1811–1884). American politician and lawyer, born in the West Indies. Educated at Yale, he was a lawyer in New Orleans, a US Senator from Louisiana 1853–6l, serving as Attorney-General 1861, Secretary of War 1861–62 and Secretary of State 1862–65 in the Confederate Government of Jefferson *Davis. He then became a leading commercial lawyer in England, a QC and author of a classic textbook *The Law of Sale* (1868).

Benjamin, Walter (1892–1940). German-Jewish literary critic. He worked in Berlin as a literary journalist until 1933 and became a friend of *Brecht, then lived in Paris, committing suicide when refused entry to neutral Spain. He wrote on Marxism, *Baudelaire, the philosophy of history and the material, productive base of art.

Benn, Tony (Anthony Neil Wedgwood-Benn) (1925–2014). British Labour politician. Educated at Oxford, he worked for the BBC, was a Labour MP 1950–60, but had to leave the House of Commons when he became **2nd Viscount Stansgate** on the death of his father. He refused to use the title and campaigned for the right to disclaim inherited peerages; this led to the passage of the Peerage Act (1963). Elected MP 1963–83, 1984–2001, he served as Postmaster General 1964–66, Minister of Technology 1966–70, Secretary of State for Industry 1974–75 and Energy 1975–79. In opposition he emerged as leader of Labour's left and wrote *Arguments for Socialism* (1979).

Bennett, Alan (1934–). English playwright and actor, born in Leeds. Son of a butcher, educated at Oxford University, he lectured in modern history at Magdalen College 1960–62 until his full time involvement as writer and performer in *Beyond the Fringe*, with **Peter Cook**, **Dudley Moore** and Jonathan *Miller. He wrote plays for the stage including *Forty Years On* (1968), *The Old Country* (1977), *The Madness of George III* (1991), *The History Boys* (2004), *The Habit of Art* (2009), *People* (2012), and television (*Talking Heads* 1982–88, *102 Boulevard Haussmann* 1991, *A Question of Attribution* 1991).

Bennett, (Enoch) **Arnold** (1867–1931). English novelist, born near Hanley, Staffordshire. He grew up in one of the 'Five Towns' of the potteries, which inspired so many of his novels. He completed his education at London University and subsequently spent most of his working life in London, but the years (1902–10) which he spent in France provided him with a French wife, introduced him to European culture and awakened a taste for fine living. His novels belong to two groups: the first and most lastingly important gives a vivid and naturalistic account of life in the industrial society in which he was brought up, it includes *Anna of the Five Towns* (1902), *The Old Wives' Tale* (1908), *Clayhanger* (1910), and *The Card* (1911). To this genre, though with a different setting (Clerkenwell, London), belongs also *Riceyman Steps* (1923). The second group is more concerned with entertainment than with character study and social comment, to it belong e.g. *The Grand Babylon Hotel* (1902) and *Buried Alive* (1908), dramatised (1913) as *The Great Adventure*. With Edward Knoblock he wrote the play *Milestones* (1912), which also proved popular. In his later years Bennett achieved a new reputation as literary critic on the *London Evening Standard.*

Drabble, M., *Arnold Bennett*. 1974.

Bennett, James Gordon (1795–1872). American journalist, born in Scotland. He emigrated in 1819 and in 1835 founded the *New York Herald* which was both successful and revolutionary. His son, also **James Gordon Bennett** (1841–1918), was a pioneer of modern journalism. He commissioned H. M. *Stanley to head the expedition that found Livingstone, and shared with the London *Daily Telegraph* the financing of Stanley's great journey in central Africa (1874–77). He established the *New York Herald's* reputation as one of the great newspapers of the world, with a brilliant team of reporters.

Bennett, Naftali (1972–). Israeli politician, born in Haifa. Son of American immigrants, he became a software entrepreneur, joined Likud and worked closely with Benjamin *Netanyahu, then broke with him, forming the New Right. Minister for Diaspora Affairs 2013–19, he formed an alliance with Yair Lapid and displaced Netanyahu to become Prime Minister 2021–22 until his coalition lost its majority.

Bennett, Richard Bedford Bennett, 1st Viscount (1870–1947). Canadian politician, born in New Brunswick. Elected to the House of Commons from Alberta 1911–17, 1925–38, he was Leader of the Conservative Party 1927–38. He defeated Mackenzie *King in 1930, when the depression was deepening, serving as Prime Minister until 1935. A strong economic nationalist, he organised the Imperial Economic Conference in Ottawa (1932) which created a system of tariff preference for the British Empire. His government set up the Canadian Wheat Board, Air Canada and the Canadian Broadcasting Corporation, and legislated on minimum wages and maximum hours of work, pensions and health insurance. In 1938 he retired to Great Britain, receiving a peerage in 1941. He drowned in the bath.

Benois, Alexandre Nikolaievich (1870–1960). Russian artist, designer, historian and critic, born in St Petersburg. Of partly French descent and member of a distinguished artistic family, he studied law, then became, with Sergei *Diaghilev and Leon *Bakst, co-founder of the artistic movement and periodical *Mir Iskusstva* (*World of Art*, 1899–1904). His concept of décor, integrated with music and dancing, added a third dimension to ballet, and his work with Diaghilev's Ballets Russes, collaborating with Bakst and *Fokine, was transformative in *Les Sylphides* (1909), *Giselle* (1910) and *Petrushka* (1911). He was curator of old masters at the Hermitage, Petrograd/Leningrad 1918–27, then returned to Paris.

Benson, E(dward) **F**(rederic) (1867–1940). English novelist, short story writer and biographer. Son of **Edward White Benson**, later Archbishop of Canterbury, and educated at Cambridge, he wrote more than 100 books, and is best known for his six lightly satirical 'Mapp and Lucia' novels, set in a fictitious town based on Rye in Sussex, later dramatised for radio and television. His brother, **A**(rthur) **C**(hristopher) **Benson** (1862–1925), poet, essayist and Master of Magdalene College, Cambridge, wrote the words to *Elgar's *Land of Hope and Glory*.

Masters, B., *The Life of E.F. Benson*. 1991; Goldhill, S., *A Very Queer Family Indeed: Sex, Religion, and the Bensons in Victorian Britain*. 2016.

Bentham, George (1800–1884). English botanist. He worked in France and for his uncle Jeremy *Bentham, then devoted himself to the taxonomy of plants and compiled the *Genera Plantarum* (3 vols, 1862–83) with Joseph *Hooker.

Bentham, Jeremy (1748–1832). English utilitarian philosopher, born in London. Son of a solicitor, he was a precocious and prodigious student. After graduating from Oxford in 1763, he studied law under *Blackstone but was dismayed by its anomalies and illogicalities and thus abandoned the idea of going into practice. The publication of his *Fragment on Government* in 1776 brought him to the friendly notice of Lord *Shelburne, at whose house, by meeting people from the social and political worlds, he was able to gain self-confidence. In 1789, after four fruitful years of travelling in Russia and elsewhere, he published *An Introduction to the Principles of Morals and Legislation,* which argues, following *Priestley, that all laws should work for the greatest happiness of the greatest number of people, and sets out a general doctrine of Utilitarianism, which inspired J. S. *Mill and others. He believed that all men seek only their own pleasure, and combined this psychological claim with the moral view that the right action is that one which seems likely to produce more happiness (pleasure or absence of pain) than any other possible action. Utilitarianism, modified by his followers, was the source of much social investigation and reform in the 19th century. In 1785–88, Bentham spent much money and time on a plan for a model prison, the 'Panopticon', in which all prisoners could be observed from a single point. Reform and codification of the law to accord with his utilitarian principles remained his chief interest, but in later life he campaigned for a number of specific reforms: the secret ballot, universal suffrage, abolition of capital and corporal punishment, a national system for registering births, deaths and marriages, the ending of transportation of criminals and imprisonment for debt, and the setting up of an international authority to prevent the outbreak of wars. He attacked the idea of 'natural' or 'universal' human rights as an abstraction ('nonsense on stilts'), insisting that rights and responsibilities had to be linked to specific structures and attitudes in societies. He founded the *Westminster Review* in 1823, and was also a founder of University College, London, where, at his wish, his skeleton sits, dressed in his clothes and with a model head.

Mack, M., *Jeremy Bentham 1748–1792*. 1963.

Bentinck, Lord William Cavendish (1774–1839). English Whig politician. The son of the third Duke of Portland, he was an MP 1796–1803, Governor of Madras 1803–07 and served under Wellington in the Peninsular War. He became Governor-General of Bengal in 1828 and by statutory conferment became the first holder of the title Governor-General of India 1833–35. He abolished *suttee* (the religious custom of widow burning), suppressed the Thugs (a group of religious assassins), and introduced English as the language of higher education.

Bentley, Edmund Clerihew (1875–1956). English novelist and journalist. He originated the 'clerihew', a four-line humorous verse form, and wrote what is

regarded as the first of the modern type of realistic detective novels, *Trent's Last Case* (1913). The clerihew can be illustrated by:

The Art of Biography
Is different from Geography,
Geography is about maps,
But Biography is about chaps.

Bentley, E. C., *Those Days: An Autobiography*. 1940.

Bentley, Richard (1662–1742). English classical scholar. Educated at Wakefield Grammar School and at Cambridge, he was master of Trinity College 1700–42. He established his reputation with the *Dissertation upon the Epistles of Phalaris* (1699), a brilliant contribution to a controversy concerning their authorship. This was followed by editions of *Horace, *Terence, *Cicero and Manilius. A master of textual emendation, noted for his pedantic, quarrelsome and arrogant nature, he has maintained his reputation as one of the greatest of English classical scholars.

White, R. J., *Dr Bentley*. 1965.

Bentsen, Lloyd Millard (1921–2006). American Democratic politician. A Texas businessman and lawyer, he was a US Congressman 1948–54, defeated George *Bush in 1970 to become a US Senator, serving 1971–92, and ran as vice presidential candidate with Michael *Dukakis in 1988. He became Bill *Clinton's Secretary of the Treasury 1993–94.

Benz, Karl (1844–1929). German motor car pioneer. He produced (1885) a three-wheeled, chain-driven vehicle with a watercooled internal-combustion engine using coal gas as fuel. It travelled at a maximum speed of 24 kph.

Berchtold (von und zu Ungarschitz), **Leopold, Graf** [Count] **von** (1863–1942). Austrian diplomat. He served as Ambassador in Paris 1894–99, London 1899–1906 and St Petersburg 1906–12 before his appointment as Imperial Foreign Minister 1912–15. Largely responsible for escalating the assassination of *Franz Ferdinand (1914) into a world war, Berchtold was not a war criminal but a vacillating lightweight: the wrong man in the wrong job at the wrong time.

Berdyaev, Nikolai Aleksandrovich (1874–1948). Russian religious and social thinker, born in Kiev. Originally a Marxist, he returned to the Orthodox Church in 1907, supported the Revolution but was expelled in 1922. He established the Academy of the Philosophy of Religion at Clamart near Paris. He insisted in his books, e.g. *The Destiny of Man* (Eng. tr.1937) and *Spirit and Reality* (1939), that history is subject to the control of God, and looked forward to a Christian society, by which term he designated a way of life rather than outward observance.

Vallon, M., *Apostle of Freedom*. 1960.

Béregovoy, Pierre Eugene (1925–1993). French Socialist politician. Of Russian descent, he became a lawyer and administrator, worked in the Socialist Party apparatus and was Minister for Economy, Finance and Budget 1984–86, 1988–92. He succeeded Edith *Cresson as Prime Minister 1992–93. He shot himself after the crushing Socialist defeat in the May 1993 elections for the Chamber of Deputies.

Berengario da Carpi, Giacomo (1460–1535). Italian anatomist, born in Carpi. He attended Bologna University, received his degree in 1489 and was appointed to the faculty in 1502. He became consultant to famous men, and his attendance upon Lorenzo de'*Medici in 1517, who had received a gunshot wound and a fracture of the skull, led to his book on the subject in 1518. Partly because of its first hand discussion of the different lesions, grouped according to symptoms, Berengario's book is a classic of neurosurgery. His interest in anatomy grew, and after performing several hundred dissections, he distilled his knowledge into his *Commentaria* (1521). His accounts of the reproductive organs were particularly important, as also of the greater capacity of the female pelvis. He described the pituitary and pineal glands and noted the corpus striatum. He could find no sign of *Galen's *rete mirabile* (the supposed source of animal spirit) though he was traditionalist enough not to dismiss the idea of animal spirit itself. Berengario's importance lies in his pioneering careful anatomising of the human body, and attempting to correlate his own observations with classical medical opinion. In this—as in his use of medical illustrations—he was engaged in similar work to *Vesalius.

Lind, L. R., *Berengario: A Short Introduction to Anatomy*. 1959.

Berenson, Bernard (Bernhard Valvrojenski) (1865–1959). American-Lithuanian-Jewish art historian and connoisseur, born in Lithuania. Brought up in Boston and educated at Harvard, he lived in Italy from 1900, became a great authority on Italian Renaissance art and, as advisor to the dealer Joseph *Duveen, enjoyed a position of unparalleled eminence in matters of attribution and connoisseurship. His disciples included Kenneth *Clark. He left his art collection, library and villa I Tatti (near Florence) to Harvard University. His best known work is *Italian Painters of the Renaissance* (1932).

Secrest, M., *Being Bernard Berenson*. 1979.

Beresford, Charles Carr Beresford, 1st Viscount (1768–1854). British general. An illegitimate son of the 1st Marquess of Waterford, he played an adventurous part in the French Revolutionary and Napoléonic Wars. After distinguished service in Toulon and Corsica, in General David Baird's desert march from the Red Sea to Egypt (1801), at the Cape of Good Hope (1806), and at Buenos Aires (1807), he eventually found permanent fame as the successful organiser and commander of the Portuguese army

in the Peninsular War. His later life was troubled by controversy over his generalship at Albuera. He bore the Spanish title of Duke of Elvas, and the Portuguese title of Conde de Trancoso and was master general of ordnance in *Wellington's cabinet 1828–30.

Berg, Alban (1885–1935). Austrian composer, born in Vienna. As a boy he composed many songs which reveal his deeply romantic temperament, but after studying composition with Arnold *Schoenberg (1904–10) he developed his own modification of Schoenberg's 'atonal/atonic' or 'twelve-tone' system. His music is notable for its lyricism and dramatic intensity, especially the operas *Wozzeck* (completed 1921) and *Lulu* (unfinished). Among his other works are the *Lyric Suite* for string quartet (1926) and a violin concerto (1935) dedicated 'to the memory of an angel' (Manon Gropius). The tone row for the Violin Concerto is: G, B♯, D, F♯, A, C, E, G♯, B, C♯, E♯, F. Berg died of blood poisoning from an abscess on his back caused by an insect bite.

Reich, W., *The Life and Work of Alban Berg*. 1982.

Berger, Hans (1873–1941). German physiologist. His early work concentrated mainly on the effect blood supply and pressure had on brain action, taking into account the influence of the heartbeat, respiration, and stimulants (e.g. caffeine, cocaine). He then moved on to the brain's electrical activity. Building on crude 19th-century recordings of electrical activity in animal brains, Berger pioneered the technique of planting needle electrodes under the scalp of patients. He pioneered the use of the electroencephalogram as a tool of diagnosis. His work was neglected in Germany, and shortly after his retirement he committed suicide in a fit of depression.

E. Adrian and B. Matthews, 'The Berger Rhythm', *Brain*, 57 (1934), 355–385.

Bergerac, (Savinien) **Cyrano de** (1619–1655). French soldier, satirical poet and dramatist. Famous as a duellist and for his enormously long nose, his best known works are two fantastic romances (translated by Richard *Aldington as *Voyages to the Moon and the Sun*), which influenced *Swift and *Voltaire. He is best remembered as the hero of a play (1897) by Edmond *Rostand.

Bergman, (Ernst) **Ingmar** (1918–2007). Swedish director and playwright, born in Uppsala. Son of a Lutheran pastor, he had a traumatic childhood, then studied literature at Stockholm University. One of the major influences on cinema since the 1950s, his films show an often uncomfortable psychological penetration, sometimes using symbolism and the grotesque. They include *Smiles of a Summer Night* (1955), *The Seventh Seal* (1956), *Wild Strawberries* (1957), *The Devil's Eye* (1961), *The Silence* (1963), *Shame* (1968), *Scenes from a Marriage* (1974), *Face to Face* (1976), *Autumn Sonata* (1978), *Fanny and Alexander* (1983) and *Best Intentions* (1992), most of which he wrote. He directed the Royal Dramatic Theatre, Stockholm 1963–66 and worked in Munich 1976–78. He won many international awards, but never an Oscar.

Wood, R., *Ingmar Bergman*. 1969.

Bergman, Ingrid (1915–1982). Swedish actor, born in Stockholm. She moved to Hollywood in 1938 and achieved immediate recognition in *Intermezzo* (1939), *Casablanca* (1942) and *For Whom the Bell Tolls* (1945). She appeared in three *Hitchcock films: *Spellbound* (1945), *Notorious* (1946) and *Under Capricorn* (1949) and won three Academy Awards for best actor, in *Gaslight* (1944), *Anastasia* (1956) and *Murder on the Orient Express* (1974). She made *Stromboli* (1949) in Italy and her affair and later marriage with its director Roberto *Rossellini damaged her box office appeal until *Anastasia*. She made many stage appearances in London, notably in a revival of *Hedda Gabler*. She appeared in opera (Honegger's *Joan of Arc at the Stake*, 1954) and television (as Golda *Meir, 1982). Her last (and possibly best) film was *Autumn Sonata* (1978), directed by her compatriot Ingmar *Bergman.

Bergoglio, Jorge Mario *see* **Francis**

Bergson, Henri Louis (1859–1941). French philosopher, born in Paris. Son of a Polish Jewish musician and an English mother, he studied and taught at the École Normale Supérieure, and became a professor at the Collège de France 1900–14. He married a cousin of Marcel *Proust. He is best known for the theory set out in *Time and Freewill* (1889) and *Creative Evolution* (1907), which enjoyed considerable popularity despite its lack of clarity. It is opposed to the view that life evolves in a mechanical way subject to physical laws and thus towards ends that are already fixed. Evolution, rather, results from a life force (*'elan vital'*) which is creative and unpredictable in its effects. This life-force, not adequately specified, is in conflict with 'matter', by which Bergson appeared to mean the regularity and repetitiveness of the natural world. This latter aspect of the universe is known by what Bergson calls Intelligence, which classifies reality into separate items and kinds, and tends to look upon natural change as a series of different fixed states. The faculty of Intuition, on the other hand, is related to the life-force and gives us knowledge of the kind of change which characterises it: a development not made up of separable stages but one in which past and present run together in an unbroken stream or flux. This was called duration ('la duree'). Other important works include *Laughter* (1900) and *The Two Sources of Morality and Religion* (1932). A member of the Académie française from 1914, he was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1928.

Jankelevitch, V., *Henri Bergson*. 1959.

Beria, Lavrenti Pavlovich (1899–1953). Russian (Georgian) commissar. Of peasant origin, and a confidant of *Stalin, he ran the NKVD (Commissariat of Internal Security) 1938–53 and became a Deputy Premier 1941–53, a Marshal of the USSR 1945 and Politburo member 1946–53. On Stalin's death (1953) he was (with *Malenkov and *Molotov) one of the triumvirate that assumed power. Almost immediately, however, he was accused of treason, tried and shot, an action instigated by *Khrushchev. Beria was mistrusted because he aimed at making his security organisation the ultimate power.

Williams, A., *Beria Papers*. 1973.

Bering, Vitus Jonassen (1681–1741). Danish navigator. He joined the Russian navy in 1704 and in 1725 was commissioned by Peter the Great to explore the eastern extremity of Siberia. In 1728 he sailed through the Strait (separating Asia from North America), later named after him, but did not then recognise its importance. On a later expedition he reached Alaska. He died after his ship was wrecked on what is now called Bering Island. The naturalist G. W. Steller, who escaped in a boat, wrote an account of the voyage.

Berio, Luciano (1925–2003). Italian composer, conductor and teacher. He was a serial composer (using 'tone rows' like *Schoenberg and *Berg), also writing for electronic instruments and tape recorders, and he produced some 'indeterminate' or 'aleatory' music in which the players themselves determine in what order they play the notes. His best known work was *Sinfonia* (1968–69). He was married to the American soprano **Cathy Berberian** (1928–1983) from 1950 until 1966, and wrote virtuosic works for her, even after their marriage ended.

Berkeley, Busby (William Berkeley Enos) (1895–1976). American choreographer and director. After success as a Broadway dance director, he moved to Hollywood in 1930. His imaginative and extravagant mass choreography of young women used new film techniques and created kaleidoscopic imagery, often highly (but subliminally) erotic. His films include *Whoopee!* (1930), *42nd Street* (1933), *Gold Diggers of 1933* (1933) and *The Gang's All Here* (1943). He became a cult figure in the 1990s.

Berkeley, George (1685–1753). Irish philosopher and Anglican Bishop of Cloyne, born in Kilkenny. Educated at Trinity College, Dublin, he spent several years in London, where he knew *Swift, *Pope and *Addison. In 1728–31 he taught at Rhode Island in preparation for the carrying out of his ill-fated plan to found a missionary college in Bermuda, a government grant for which was later withdrawn. In 1734 he accepted the bishopric of Cloyne in Southern Ireland. There he lived until 1752 when he retired through ill health and went to Oxford, where he died. Berkeley's philosophy of idealism is centrally a denial of the existence of matter, in the ordinary sense of the word. *Locke had argued that the world of material objects gives rise to 'ideas' or subjective sense-impressions in our minds. We are directly aware of only these impressions. Berkeley held that there is no reason to suppose that anything lies behind these impressions: objects depend for their actuality on being perceived (*esse est percipi*—'to be is to be perceived'). This doctrine can be easily misunderstood and ridiculed as it appears to violate common sense, but Berkeley is leading the argument to the point that since such impressions must be had by someone if they are to exist at all, and since it is accepted that material objects continue to exist when unperceived by men, their existence must depend upon perception by reason and ultimately by that of Supreme Reason or God. His doctrine, he claimed, therefore refuted scepticism. This is a vast over simplification of the difficult series of arguments presented in his *Principles of Human Knowledge* (1710) and *Three Dialogues between Mylas and Philonus* (1713). On his return from Rhode Island he published *Alciphron* (1732), using the American background as a setting for more dialogues, Platonic in form.

Ritchie, A. D., *George Berkeley: A Re-appraisal*. 1967.

Berkeley, Sir Lennox (Randal) (1903–1989). English composer, born at Oxford. Educated at Oxford University, he studied under Nadia *Boulanger in Paris and shows the influence of such French composers as *Bizet and *Chabrier. Among his better known works are many songs, the *Stabat Mater* (1946), the operas *Nelson* (1954) and *Ruth* (1956). He tried most musical forms including incidental music for films, cantatas and works for unaccompanied choirs. He was President of the Composers' Guild and the Performing Right Society.

Berlichingen, Götz von (1480–1562). German (Swabian) knight and adventurer. He lost his right hand in battle and wore an iron one. He was one of the discontented nobles who led the rebellious peasants in the Peasants' War (1524–26) and later fought against the French and the Turks. His life is the basis of plays by *Goethe (*Götz von Berlichingen*), *Sartre (*Le Diable et le Bon Dieu*) and John Arden (*Ironhand*).

Berlin, Irving (Israel Isidore Baline) (1888–1989). American songwriter, born in Russia. He wrote more than 1,000 popular songs, including *Alexander's Ragtime Band* (1911) and *White Christmas*, scores for several musicals (e.g. *Annie Get Your Gun*, 1946) and revues.

Berlin, Sir Isaiah (1909–1997). Russian-Jewish-British political philosopher, born in Riga. He went to England with his parents after the Russian revolution, gained a double first at Oxford and remained there, except during World War II (when he was attached to the British Embassies in Washington and Moscow).

He succeeded G. D. H. *Cole as Chichele professor of social and political theory 1957–67 and was first President of Wolfson College 1966–75. His works include *Karl Marx* (1939), *The Hedgehog and the Fox* (a study of *Tolstoy's theory of history, 1953), *Historical Inevitability* (1954), *Four Essays on Liberty* (1969), *Vico and Herder* (1976) and *The Crooked Timber of Humanity* (1990). He received the OM in 1971 and was President of the British Academy 1974–78. Berlin argued for 'value pluralism' and against the rigidity of any system that asserted the right to compel belief.

Gray, J., *Isaiah Berlin*. 1995; Ignatieff, M., *Isaiah Berlin. A Life*. 1998.

Berliner, Emile (1851–1929). American inventor, born in Germany. In 1878 he invented the carbon microphone, simultaneously with David *Hughes, followed by a gramophone in 1887. He was best known for his invention (1888) of the disc record for the gramophone, a word which he probably originated. In 1898 he founded The Gramophone Co. Like *Edison and *Bell he failed to grasp the significance of electric recording for music.

Berlioz, (Louis) **Hector** (1803–1869). French composer, born near Grenoble. Son of a physician, he studied medicine in Paris for some years but loathed it and, after a violent quarrel with his family, began to study music under Lesueur and entered the Paris Conservatoire in 1826. But again his emotional temperament brought him into conflict with his teachers. While a student he fell in love with the Irish actor Harriet Smithson, whom he married in 1833. The marriage was unsuccessful and they separated in 1842. Despite his genius for orchestration, Berlioz never completed his formal studies and was a poor instrumentalist, mastering only the guitar and flageolet. In 1830 his cantata *Sardanapale* won the Prix de Rome and then he studied in Italy for about a year. He won his first public success in 1832 with a performance of his *Symphonie fantastique* (1830, subtitled 'An episode in the life of an artist'), an extraordinarily vivid work describing five scenes (supposed to have been dreamt by Berlioz) in which the artist seeks out his beloved, kills her, is executed and then descends to hell. Berlioz composed most of his orchestral works to a definite literary program and most contemporary critics attacked his addiction to 'program music'. His later symphonies were *Harold in Italy* (1834, based on *Byron's *Childe Harold*), *Romeo and Juliet* (1838, with soloists and chorus) and *Symphonie funèbre et triomphale* (1840, written to commemorate victims of the 1830 Revolution). He also composed the concert overtures *Waverley* (1827), *King Lear* (1831), *Le Carnaval romain* (1844) and *The Corsair* (1855); the operas *Benvenuto Cellini* (1838), *Beatrice and Benedict* (1862, based on *Shakespeare's *Much Ado About Nothing*), and *The Trojans* (1862), an enormous work which Berlioz regarded as his masterpiece, rarely performed for a century, has received notable productions in the 21st century and been much recorded. Among other works were the song cycle *Nuits d'été* (1842), the oratorio *L'Enfance du Christ* (1852) and the operatic cantata *The Damnation of Faust* (1846). He wrote a great *Treatise on instrumentation* (1844) and *Memoirs* (1865). He was a vigorous and vivacious music critic and his writings on his own music did much to attract attention to his genius. *Paganini, *Liszt, and, to a lesser degree, *Schumann were among the few of his contemporaries to acknowledge his place in 19th-century music. His second wife was the singer Marie Recio (d.1862). He travelled widely, giving concerts in England and in Russia. He was appointed librarian of the Paris Conservatoire from 1852 and a member of the French Institute from 1856. There is debate about his place among the great composers, but the colour and originality of his orchestration have never been in dispute.

Elliot, J. N., *Berlioz*. 1967; Cairns, D., *Berlioz*. 2 vols, 1989, 1999.

Berlusconi, Silvio (1936–2023). Italian businessman and politician. From 1969 he created a business empire which included commercial television, a cinema chain, department stores, real estate, insurance, publishing and the Milan A C Milan soccer club. He founded a conservative political party, Forza Italia, and in March 1994 his Freedom Alliance won the elections for the Chamber of Deputies. He became Prime Minister in a coalition government which included neo-Fascist ministers (May–Dec. 1994). He was charged with corruption and his party lost ground in the elections of April 1996. In July 1998 he was sentenced to a prison term but served no time. His party won the May 2001 election and he became Prime Minister again, losing narrowly in April 2006. Prime Minister for the third time 2008–11, he was forced out when his coalition fractured in the parliament, and Italy needed to take unpopular decisions following the 'Global Financial Crisis'. Convicted of tax evasion in 2012 and sentenced to four years' jail, he served no time. He led the People of Freedom alliance for the 2013 elections and during the campaign expressed sympathy for *Mussolini's alliance with *Hitler. His extravagant sexuality, and 'bunga bunga' parties, much publicised internationally, seems to have been discounted by Italian voters. His coalition polled 29.1 per cent of the primary vote for the Chamber of Deputies in 2013. In June 2013 he was convicted of abuse of power and paying for sex with an underaged prostitute, and sentenced to seven years jail, suspended while he appealed. His sentence was upheld on appeal, but then commuted in 2014 to 'community service'.

Bernadette, St (Marie-Bernard Soubirous) (1844–1879). French visionary, born in Lourdes. Daughter of a miller, in 1858 she claimed to have experienced 18 visions in which she saw and spoke with the Virgin Mary. The grotto at Lourdes where the visions

occurred have become a major place of pilgrimage for Catholics. There was much controversy at the time and since concerning the event, its interpretation and the subsequent cures, and religious, national and local politics have been at various times involved; but no one has questioned the sincerity of the girl herself. She became a nun, served as a nurse in the Franco Prussian War and died of tuberculosis. She was canonised in 1933.

Bernadotte (af Wisborg), **Folke, Count** (1895–1948). Swedish diplomat. A nephew of King *Gustaf V of Sweden, in World War II he acted for the Swedish Red Cross in the exchange of wounded prisoners and was an intermediary in conveying an offer of surrender from Himmler to the US and British authorities. While serving as United Nations mediator between Jews and Arabs he was murdered by Jewish terrorists.

Bernadotte, Jean Baptiste Jules (1763–1844). French marshal and Swedish King (as **Karl XIV Johan**). Son of a lawyer at Pau, he enlisted when 17, was a sergeant when the Revolution broke out and seizing his chance rose (1792–94) from lieutenant to brigadier. He entered the *Bonaparte family circle by marrying Desirée Clary, Napoléon's first fiancee and a sister of Joseph Bonaparte's wife. He took part in several of Napoléon's campaigns and was prominent in Austerlitz, but it was his governorship of the Hanseatic cities (1807–09) that made him known and liked in northern Europe. This explains why in 1810 he was invited by the childless *Karl XIII of Sweden to become his crown prince and de facto ruler. Napoléon accepted on his behalf in the hope of having a faithful ally, but Bernadotte put the needs of his adopted country first and made an alliance with Russia. Accordingly, he was allowed to retain his position when Napoléon fell. As a reward for his services, Norway (acquired from the Danes in 1814) was confirmed by the Congress of Vienna as being in union with Sweden. In 1818 Bernadotte duly succeeded as Karl XIV Johan to the joint throne and proved a popular and successful ruler.

Bernal, John Desmond (1901–1971). British physicist and mathematician, born in Ireland, of Sephardic descent. He studied at Emmanuel College, Cambridge, worked with William *Bragg and became the great pioneer of X-ray crystallography. Disliked by *Rutherford, and denied a Fellowship, he left Cambridge to become professor of physics at Birkbeck College, London, in 1937. His pupils included Dorothy *Hodgkin, Max *Perutz, Aaron *Klug and Rosalind *Franklin. During World War II he worked on mapping for the Normandy landings (1944). A Communist for some years, he won a Stalin Peace Prize (1953) but was overlooked for a Nobel Prize. A prolific writer, his books include the masterly *Science in History* (1954).

Swann, B. and Aprahanian, F., *J. D. Bernal: A Life in Science and Politics*. 1999; Brown, A., *J. D. Bernal: The Sage of Science*. 2005.

Bernanke, Ben Shalom (1953–). American economist and banker, born in Georgia. A graduate of Harvard and MIT, he was a professor of economics at Princeton 1996–2002, and chair of the US Federal Reserve 2006–14. Originally appointed by George W *Bush, he was reappointed by Barack *Obama. He received the 2022 Nobel Prize for Economics.

Bernanos, Georges (1888–1948). French writer, born in Paris. He became one of the best known of the group of Catholic novelists of major importance in modern French literature. Among his best known works are *Sous le soleil de Satan* (1926, translated into English as *The Star of Satan*, 1940) and *Journal d'un cure de campagne* (1936, English version: *The Diary of a Country Priest*, 1940). His *Les Grands Cimetieres sous la lune* (1938) contains an unusually strong criticism (for a Roman Catholic) of *Franco's rule in Spain. During World War II he was in South America, where he wrote *Lettre aux anglais* (1940–42).

Speaight, R., *Georges Bernanos*. 1973.

Bernard, Claude (1813–1878). French physiologist, born near Villefranche. He worked in a Lyon pharmacy before studying medicine in Paris. He graduated in 1843 and worked for several years with François *Magendie, professor of medicine at the Collège de France, to whose chair he succeeded in 1855. He is best known for his work on the function of the pancreas in digestion, and for the inference which he drew from his experiments that the production of sugar in the liver is controlled by the nervous system: he isolated and named the sugar-producing substance, 'glycogen'. He became a member of the Académie française 1868, a Senator in 1869 and received the Copley Medal (1876).

Holmes, F. L., *Claude Bernard and Animal Chemistry*. 1974.

Bernard of Clairvaux, St (1090–1153). French theologian and reformer, born near Dijon. A member of a noble family, in 1113 he entered the original Cistercian (White Monks) monastery at Citeaux, and in 1115 became the first Abbot of the newly founded monastery at Clairvaux, in Champagne. Clairvaux remained the centre of his activities for the rest of his life and during his tenure of office its numbers rose from 12 to 700. From there he made the famous journeys which led to the foundation of 68 more Cistercian houses, and his reputation as the second founder of the Order. His ascetic and studious life made him one of the most influential men of his time. His stirring eloquence won him the name of 'Mellifluous Doctor', and his emphasis on spirituality and devotion still influences Catholicism. His practical achievements were also considerable. In 1131, by securing recognition for Pope Innocent II,

he averted a schism, and his preaching before *Louis VII at Vezelay in 1146 stirred support for the Second Crusade. He condemned the teachings of his great enemy, Peter *Abelard.

Bernard of Menthon, **St** (923–1008). Italian religious. He was founder of the Augustinian hospice near the crest of the Great St Bernard Pass, which bears his name, and is the patron of mountaineers.

Berners, 14th Baron, Gerald Hugh Tyrwhitt-Wilson (1883–1950). English composer, painter and novelist. Eccentric, gifted and versatile, his works include the ballet score *The Triumph of Neptune* (1926), the novel *The Girls of Radcliff Hall* (1937), an autobiography, and many paintings.

Zinovieff, S., *The Mad Boy, Lord Berners, My Grandmother and Me*. 2014.

Berners-Lee, Sir Tim(othy John**)** (1955–). English physicist and computer scientist, born in London. Educated at Queens College, Oxford, he worked at CERN (Geneva) and there designed the World Wide Web (WWW, 1989), the gateway to the Internet, linking 'hypertext' documents together to form a 'web'. He also developed a web server, a web browser, the Hypertext Transfer Protocol (http://) and Hypertext Markup Language (html). The WWW was made available to the general public in August 1991. He campaigned to ensure that it remained 'open, non-proprietary and free'. He chaired the World Wide Web Consortium (W3C), held a chair at MIT, and became a professorial fellow at Oxford. He was elected FRS (2001) and awarded a KBE (2004) and the OM (2007). He wrote *Weaving the Web: The Original Design and Ultimate Destiny of the World Wide Web* (1999).

Bernhard (Bernhard Leopold Friedrich Eberhard Julius Kurt Karl Gottfried Peter Prinz zur Lippe-Biesterfeld) (1911–2004). German-Dutch prince. A prince of Lippe Biesterfeld, he joined the Nazi Party briefly, but left Germany to marry Princess *Juliana, the future Queen of the Netherlands, and was father of Queen *Beatrix. During World War II he served in the RAF as a pilot. He had many scientific, business and sporting interests. In 1976 Bernhard was accused of receiving a $US 1 million bribe from the Lockheed Corporation but insisted that the money went to the World Wildlife Fund (WWF) which he chaired 1961–76.

Fasseur, C., *Juliana & Bernhard*. 2008.

Bernhardi, Friedrich von (1849–1930). German general and military writer. His book *Germany and The Next War* (1912) advocated that, where necessary for victory or survival, treaties should be disregarded and battles fought without regard for humanitarian principles. His book, translated in cheap editions, did much to exacerbate anti-German feeling in Allied countries during World War I.

Bernhardt, Sarah (1844–1923). French actor, born in Paris. Daughter of a French father and a Dutch-Jewish mother, she became known as 'the divine Sarah', a description that gives an idea of the emotions inspired by her art. More than once she joined the company of the Comédie Française, but the restrictions of the national theatre irked her and she finally left in 1880, formed her own company and from 1899 controlled her own theatre (Théâtre Sarah Bernhardt). She toured frequently and was as warmly acclaimed in London, America and elsewhere as in her own country. She triumphed in the great classical parts, such as in *Racine's *Phedre*, and equally in a romantic and tearful melodrama such as the younger *Dumas' *La Dame aux camelias*. *Sardou provided her with several parts: she could exploit a delicious comedy sense in *Molière. She even achieved male impersonations as Hamlet or in the title part (*Napoléon I's young son) in Rostand's *L'Aiglon*. Despite the amputation of a leg in 1915, she continued to act.

Skinner, C. O., *Madame Sarah*. 1967.

Bernini, Gian (Giovanni) **Lorenzo** (1598–1680). Italian architect and sculptor, born in Naples. The greatest master of the Italian baroque, he went as a child to Rome, where his youthful skill, fostered and trained by his father, attracted the attention of Cardinal Scipione Borghese. The virtuosity and psychological subtlety of sculptures, such as *Apollo and Daphne*, *Rape of Persephone*, and *David*, commissioned by his patron brought him to the notice of the Vatican, and in 1629 he was appointed architect to St Peter's by Pope *Urban VIII. He did much work there during the next decades, notably the great bronze baldacchino, 29 m high (1663) and *Cathedra Petri* (a reliquary throne for St Peter's chair, with a *Gloria* above, 1666). It was not until 1667 that he completed his most ambitious and spectacular achievement, the enormous double colonnade which enclosed the piazza in front of the basilica. This consists of 640 columns, each 1.4 metres in diameter, so arranged that the enclosed space acts as an enormous stage in which pilgrims congregate to receive the papal blessing. In 1665 Bernini was invited to France by *Louis XIV. He executed a magnificent bust of the king but his plans to redevelop the Louvre were rejected. Other great works include the statue *The Ecstasy of St Teresa* (1652) and the church Sant' Andrea Quirinale (called 'the Pearl of the Baroque', completed 1670). Passionate and sometimes violent, Bernini was also an occasional painter, caricaturist, stage designer, playwright and composer. Bernini and *Borromini detested each other.

Hibbard, H., *Bernini*. 1965; Avery, C., *Bernini: Genius of the Baroque*. 1997.

Bernouilli. Swiss family of mathematicians, originally from Antwerp. They are completely identified with Basle in Switzerland where they lived and worked

(though not exclusively) during their period of fame. They include **Jakob Bernouilli I** (1645–1705), who wrote about the possibilities of the newly invented calculus; his brother **Johann I** (1667–1748), much of whose work was concerned with the mathematics of curves; **Daniel** (1700–1782), a son of Johann who contributed much to the study of hydrodynamics and held chairs in anatomy, botany and physics at Basle. He solved the differential equation now known as Bernouilli's Equation. Less famous members of the family were **Nicolaus I** (1687–1759), nephew of Jakob and Johann, **Nicolaus II** (1695–1726), a son of Johann, **Johann II** (1710–1790), Johann I's youngest son, **Johann III** (1744–1807) and **Jakob II** (1759–1789) both sons of Johann II. All taught mathematics.

Bernstein, Eduard (1850–1932). German socialist. During years of exile in London he became a close friend of Friedrich *Engels. Bernstein argued that the teaching of *Marx and Engels needed drastic revision in view of the increasing wealth and size of the middle class and slowly improving working class conditions, concluding that class war was not inevitable. Known as the father of 'revisionism', he was elected to the Reichstag 1906–12, 1912–18, 1920–28 and, as a pacifist, opposed World War I.

Bernstein, Henri (1876–1953). French dramatist. He became a prolific playwright and theatrical manager in Paris and scored an enormous success with *Israel* (1906), *Le Voleur* (1906), *Le Secret* (1913) and *Judith* (1922).

Bernstein, Leonard (1918–1990). American composer and conductor, born in Lawrence, Mass. He studied at Harvard and with *Reiner and became a protégé of *Koussevitzky and *Mitropoulos. He composed the ballet *Fancy Free* (1944), the symphony *Jeremiah* (1943) and the musicals *Candide* (1956) and *West Side Story* (1957). He succeeded Dimitri Mitropoulos as conductor of the New York Philharmonic Orchestra in 1958–69. He wrote several books including *The Joy of Music* (1959), and made many recordings and films. He toured extensively with the Israel and Vienna Philharmonic orchestras and was much admired for his *Mahler performances.

Burton, H., *Leonard Bernstein*. 1994; Secrest, M., *Leonard Bernstein: A Life*. 1995.

Berry. English publishing family, originating in Wales. **William Ewert Berry, 1st Viscount Camrose** (1879–1954) founded *Advertising World* (1901) and *Boxing* (1909), bought the *Sunday Times* in 1915 and the *Daily Telegraph* in 1928. With his brother (James) **Gomer Berry, 1st Viscount Kemsley** (1883–1968) he controlled many magazines and provincial newspapers. They divided the empire in 1937: Kemsley took the *Daily Graphic* and *Sunday Times*, Camrose the *Daily Telegraph*. Camrose's second son (William) **Michael Berry, Baron Hartwell** (1911–2001) was chairman and editor-in-chief of the *Daily Telegraph* until Conrad *Black bought it in 1987.

Berry, Charles Ferdinand, Duc de (1778–1820). French duke. Younger son of the Comte d'Artois (later *Charles X of France), he returned to France in 1814 and was assassinated in 1820. His posthumous son was **Henri, Comte de Chambord** (1820–1883). His wife **Caroline** (1798–1870), a princess of Naples, attempted to raise a revolt in favour of her son, who was recognised by French royalists as Henri V. In 1832 she reached the Vendée, but was captured at Nantes and for a time imprisoned. She died at Palermo.

Berthelot, (Pierre Eugène) **Marcellin** (1827–1907). French chemist. He became professor at the École Supérieure de Pharmacie in 1859 and at the Collège de France in 1864 where he taught until his death. His career in chemistry was chiefly devoted to synthesis. Beginning with alcohol, he moved on to the synthesis of benzene, acetylene, and compounds of coal tar. He believed that organic compounds of great complexity could be built up out of simple elements and simple carbon compounds. Acetylene seemed to be the starting point in the investigation of hydrocarbons, since from it one could obtain ethylene, methane and benzene. The study of fatty acids interested him equally. Many of his experiments of the 1850s investigated the production of compounds of glycerin through heating it with hydrochloric acid and various fatty acids. These researches, together with similar analysis of sugars, led to studies of fermentation and the preparation of alcohol from ethylene. His work was extremely important in demonstrating the inter-relationship between organic and inorganic chemistry. He carried out important researches on explosives following the French defeat by Germany in the war of 1870. He was a senator 1881–1907, Minister of Public Instruction 1886–87 and Foreign Minister 1895–96. On the political left, he attacked the influence of the Church, particularly in education.

Berthier, Louis Alexandre, Prince of Neuchâtel (1753–1815). French marshal. A soldier's son, he enlisted in 1770, fought against the British in the war of American Independence and rose to be Chief of Staff of the French army in Italy (1795). He was a friend of *Napoléon Bonaparte, both before and after he became Emperor, and acted as his chief of staff throughout his wars, as well as being Minister for War 1800–06. In 1814 he submitted to Louis XVIII, showed irresolution when he heard of Napoléon's return from Elba, and, as the Russian armies entered France after Waterloo, committed suicide.

Berthollet, Claude Louis, Comte (1748–1822). French chemist. He studied medicine at the University of Turin, graduating in 1768, then took up chemistry in Paris. During the Revolutionary period in particular he was deeply involved in

practical chemistry, seeking improvements in soap, explosives and metals. His theoretical researches into chlorine led to his pioneering its use for bleaching purposes. Berthollet was one of the earliest supporters of *Lavoisier's anti-phlogiston chemistry. His understanding of oxygen helped in his analysis of ammonia, and in other researches in the chemistry of gases. In later life he became more involved in theoretical issues. In his *Essai de Statique Chimique* he claimed that the forces of chemical affinity were proportional to the masses of the reacting substances, a view seemingly undermined by *Dalton's law of definite proportions. Berthollet was a public figure in Revolutionary France. He taught at the École Polytechnique, was a friend of *Napoléon, and became a senator in 1804. At Napoléon's request he travelled to Egypt in 1796 to collect art treasures and help found the Institute of Egypt.

Bertillon, Alphonse (1853–1914). French criminologist. Son of an anthropologist, he introduced a system of identifying criminals by a series of body measurements (anthropometry). In 1892 nearly 700 French criminals were identified by this method, later replaced by fingerprinting.

Bertolucci, Bernardo (1940–2018). Italian film director, born in Parma. He gained international recognition with his films *The Spider's Strategy* (1970), *The Conformist* (1970), *Last Tango in Paris* (1972), *1900* (1975), *La Luna* (1979) and *The Last Emperor* (1986), which combined powerful, violent or sensual subjects with rich lyricism and elegant imagery.

Bertrand, Henri Gratien, Comte (1773–1844). French general. He entered the army as an engineer and in that capacity fortified Alexandria in the Egyptian campaign. He was prominent at Austerlitz and his bridge-building skill helped to save the army at Aspern. He then became *Napoléon's adjutant, sharing his exile in Elba (1814–15) and St Helena (1815–21), and writing valuable diaries. After Napoléon's death, he returned to France, a death sentence imposed in 1817 having been annulled by *Louis XVIII. Elected Deputy in 1831, in 1840 he accompanied the expedition which brought back Napoléon's remains to France.

Berwald, Franz Adolf (1792–1868). Swedish composer, born in Stockholm. The son of a violinist, he played in orchestras until 1828, then travelled, devoting himself to composition, later managing a glassworks and sawmill. His music was virtually ignored for a century, but his four symphonies (1842–45), strongly influenced by *Beethoven, are now frequently played.

Berwick, James Fitz-James, 1st Duke of (1670–1734). English soldier in France. Illegitimate son of *James II and Arabella Churchill, the sister of the Duke of *Marlborough, he received his title in 1687 from his father, whom he later accompanied into exile. Joining the French army he served with distinction under Marshal *Luxembourg. In 1706 he was created a marshal and by his victory at Almansa established *Louis XIV's grandson *Philip V on the throne of Spain. During the War of the Polish Succession he was killed at the siege of Philippsburg.

Berzelius, Jöns Jakob, Baron (1779–1848). Swedish chemist, born near Linköping. He studied medicine at Uppsala University, worked in Stockholm from 1802 and was professor of chemistry at the Carolinska Medical Surgical Institute 1815–32. He discovered selenium, thorium and cerium, and first isolated silicon, titanium and zirconium. By consolidating and extending John *Dalton's work on the atom and compiling the first accurate table of atomic weights he did much to make the advances of modern chemistry possible. He first suggested the modern system of chemical symbols (e.g. H^2O for water, indicating that there are two atoms of hydrogen and one of oxygen in a molecule of water).

Besant, Annie (née Wood) (1847–1933). British theosophist. After separating from her husband, a clergyman, she became an active free-thinker closely associated with Charles *Bradlaugh, with whom she was tried for immorality after reprinting a pamphlet on birth control, and then an ardent propagandist for socialism. G. B. *Shaw considered her the finest orator he had heard. In 1889 she met Madame *Blavatsky and turned to theosophy. She lived in India from 1895, interested herself in the education of women and, having taken up nationalism, became president of the Indian National Congress in 1917. In later life, she identified a young Indian, Jiddu *Krishnamurti, as a new messiah.

Bessel, Friedrich Wilhelm (1784–1846). German astronomer and mathematician. By studying astronomy in his spare time as a merchant's clerk and at sea he eventually became director of Königsberg Observatory 1810–46. In 1804 he had recalculated the orbit of *Halley's Comet from observations that had been made in 1607, and in 1838 he made the first accurate measurement of the distance of a star (61 Cygni). His theory that irregularities in the motion of Sirius and Procyon were due to gravitational pull was confirmed when, as he predicted, 'dark' companion stars were subsequently discovered. At the time of his death Bessel was investigating the irregularities in the motion of Uranus that later enabled *Adams and *Leverrier to discover the existence of Neptune. His chief mathematical work was on the functions now known as Bessel functions.

Bessemer, Sir Henry (1813–1898). English metallurgist. Of Huguenot descent, in 1856 he invented the 'Bessemer Converter', in which some types of pig iron can be directly and economically converted into high grade steel by oxidising the impurities. This was originally achieved by passing

air into the converter, but oxygen alone is now used. Bessemer also adapted the first composing machine invented by the Belgian printers Young and Delcambre in Lille. One of the founders of the Iron and Steel Institute in 1869, knighted and elected FRS in 1879, Bessemer wrote an autobiography. Eight US towns were named for him.

Bessette, St André *see* **André of Montréal, St**

Best, Charles Herbert (1899–1978). Canadian physiologist. With F. G. *Banting, he first succeeded in preparing insulin for the treatment of diabetes, and Banting shared his Nobel Prize money when Best was unfairly excluded from the award. He was professor of physiology at Toronto University 1929–67 and received many distinctions, including the US Legion of Merit (1947) the CC (1967) and a CH (1971).

Betancourt, Romulo (1908–1981). Venezuelan politician. He was driven into exile under the dictatorship of Juan Vicente *Gômez, and again in 1939 for his underground activities. On his return he organised the *Accion Democratica* and was largely responsible for the revolution of 1945 which resulted in his becoming provisional president. In 1948 a military *coup d'etat* once more forced him into exile, and this time he had to wait 10 years for the tide of fortune to turn and enable him to return in 1958. He was President 1959–64 and proceeded with his program of social and economic reform.

Bethe, Hans Albrecht (1906–2005). German-American physicist, born in Strasbourg. He left Germany in 1933, worked in the US on quantum and solid state theory and won the Nobel Prize for Physics in 1967.

Bethmann-Hollweg, Theobald von (1856–1921). German politician. Prussian Minister of the Interior 1905–07 and Secretary of State 1907–09, he became a reluctant Imperial Chancellor 1909–17. He was alleged to be shocked and dismayed that Britain should enter the war just for a 'scrap of paper' (the treaty with Belgium), but he was considered too moderate by the militarists and was dismissed in 1917.

Betjeman, Sir John (1906–1984). English poet and journalist. Educated at Marlborough and Oxford, he wrote several architectural guidebooks, championed Victorian and Edwardian taste, and gained wide recognition for his light verse, mild satire and nostalgic descriptive pieces. His blank verse autobiography, *Summoned by Bells* (1960), was a popular success. His *Collected Poems* appeared in 1958. He was Poet Laureate 1972–84.

Bettelheim, Bruno (1903–1990). Austrian-American psychologist, born in Vienna. He worked in the US from 1939 and wrote extensively on child rearing, education and the problems of autism in children. His books include *The Uses of Enchantment* (1976). He committed suicide.

Betterton, Thomas (c.1635–1710). English actor. Despite disadvantages of face, voice and figure, he was esteemed by *Pepys to be the best actor in the world. All, including *Addison and *Dryden, speak well of him as an actor and man and, when speculation proved his undoing, a public benefit was arranged on his behalf. In 1705 he moved his company from his theatre in Lincoln's Inn Fields to the new Haymarket Theatre, designed for him by *Vanbrugh.

Gildon, C., *Life of Mister Thomas Betterton*, *The Late Eminent Tragedian*. 1970.

Betti, Ugo (1892–1953). Italian poet and playwright. A lawyer, he became a judge 1930–43 but had no involvement with Fascism. He wrote 25 plays on the theme of justice, notably *Corruption in the Palace of Justice* (1949), *The Queen and the Rebels* (1951) and *The Fugitive* (1953). They were translated and widely performed in the last years of his life.

Rizzo, G., *Ugo Betti: Three Plays*. 1966.

Beuys, Joseph (1921–1986). German sculptor, graphic and performance artist. A Luftwaffe pilot in World War II, he created his own personal mythology and was a pioneer of 'performance art', in which the artist him/herself creates an interaction with static art works. He taught at Dusseldorf, was involved in 'green' politics and became a major cult figure.

Bevan, Aneurin ('Nye') (1897–1960). British Labour politician, born in Tredegar, Monmouthshire (now Gwent). One of the great orators of the House of Commons, he was the son of a miner and worked in a mine as a boy. He had early experience of trade union organisation in the South Wales Miners Federation and gained a knowledge of politics and economics at the Central Labour College. He was elected MP for Ebbw Vale in 1929 and held the seat for the rest of his life. In World War II he often carried on a one-man opposition to the Winston *Churchill coalition government and afterwards in *Attlee's postwar Labour governments he was the life and soul of the left wing. As Minister of Health 1945–51 he gave the final shape to the National Health Service and secured the passing of the Act. His resignation in 1951 over what he regarded as excessive re-armament was soon followed by the Conservative return to office. In opposition his hostile attitude to the nuclear deterrent was almost as much an embarrassment to his own party leaders as to his opponents. However, as time went on, Bevan's views and those of his leader, *Gaitskell, tended to converge and Bevan became Deputy Leader of the Party 1959–60. In 1934 he married **Jennie Lee** (1904–1988). She was Minister for the Arts 1967–70 and became **Baroness Lee**. *Tribune*, a publication founded by Bevan, survived his death.

Foot, M., *Aneurin Bevan*. 2 vols, 1962, 1973.

Beveridge, William Henry Beveridge, 1st Baron (1879–1963). English economist, born in Bengal. Educated at Charterhouse and Oxford, he became a civil servant and Secretary of the Ministry of Food 1919. He directed the London School of Economics 1919–37 and was master of University College, Oxford 1937–44. *Social Insurance and Allied Services* (1942, usually called 'the Beveridge Report') recommended an extension of the 'welfare state'. His famous *Full Employment in a Free Society* (1944) was soon adopted as government policy in Britain, Australia and New Zealand and influenced *Truman's 'Fair Deal' in the US. He became a Liberal MP 1944–45 and received a peerage in 1946.

Beveridge, W. H., *Power and Influence*. 1953.

Bevin, Ernest (1881–1951). English trade union leader and Labour politician, born in Somerset. Son of an unknown father and a hard-working but illiterate mother, he had a sporadic education until the age of 11, then became a van boy and lorry driver in Bristol. An active trade unionist, then an organiser, at the age of 30 he was an official of the dockers' union, and the skill with which he put their case earned him the nickname of 'the dockers' KC'. But his greatest achievement and monument was the uniting (1922) of 32 separate unions into the huge Transport and General Workers Union; he became its General Secretary 1922–40. Strongly opposed to appeasement of fascism, and intolerant of pacifism, he supported Clement *Attlee as Labour leader. He served in Winston *Churchill's wartime coalition as Minister for Labour and National Service 1940–45, and proved an outstanding success in keeping industry going and meeting the demands of the services. In Attlee's postwar Labour Government, Bevin was an unexpected choice as Foreign Minister 1945–51 and his performance remains deeply controversial. He strongly opposed *Stalin's dictatorship and his totalitarian control of Eastern Europe, supported dismembering the British Empire, especially India, and Britain acquiring its own nuclear weapons. He encouraged the United States to play a major role in European reconstruction and was an architect of the Brussels treaty of 1948 (Western European Union) and NATO (1949). He was criticised for his pro-Arab outlook and lack of sympathy towards Israel.

Bullock, A., *The Life and Times of Ernest Bevin*. 3 vols, 1960, 1967, 1983; Adonis, A., *Ernest Bevin. Labour's Churchill*. 2020.

Bewick, Thomas (1753–1828). British wood engraver, born in Northumberland. He was apprenticed to a Newcastle engraver, Ralph Beilby, with whom he afterwards entered into partnership. His best work was in his *History of Quadrupeds* (1790) and *History of British Birds* (2 volumes, 1797 and 1804).

Bain, I., *Thomas Bewick*. 1975.

Beza (or **de Béze), Theodore** (1519–1605). French theologian, born in Vézelay. As a young man he led a dissipated life in Paris, but after a serious illness he changed his ways, and joined *Calvin at Geneva. He was professor of Greek at Lausanne (1549–54) and, returning to Geneva (1559) to take up a theological professorship, he worked closely with Calvin, proving his skill as a diplomat by obtaining *Henry of Navarre's help for the Huguenots. On Calvin's death (1564) much of the burden of leadership fell upon Beza and he presided at the Huguenot Synods at La Rochelle (1571) and at Nîmes (1572). He was also an important biblical scholar.

Bezos, Jeff (né Jeffrey Preston Jorgensen) (1964–). American entrepreneur, born in New Mexico. Educated at Princeton, he became a computer scientist. He founded Amazon.com in 1994 and by 2017 had a net worth of $US100 billion, greater than Bill *Gates. He also invested in newspapers and aerospace and was a major philanthropist.

Bhumibol Adulyadej (Rama IX) (1927–2016). King of Thailand 1946–2016. Born in Cambridge, Massachusetts (where his father studied medicine), he was partly educated in Switzerland and succeeded on the assassination of his brother **Ananda Mahidol**. He generally remained aloof from Thai politics but intervened twice (1973 and 1992) against military rule. He took an active interest in global environmental problems.

Bhutto, Zulfiqar Ali (1928–1979). Pakistani politician, born in Larkana, Sindh. From a wealthy family of Hindu origin, he studied at the University of California (Berkeley) and Oxford and became a barrister (1953). Minister of Commerce 1958–60 and Foreign Minister 1963–66, he founded the Pakistan Peoples' Party (PPP) in 1967 and described himself as a democratic socialist. Imprisoned 1968–69 by *Ayub Khan's Government, he won an election victory in West Pakistan in December 1970. Following the war of December 1971 which resulted in the secession of East Pakistan (Bengal) and the creation of Bangladesh, Bhutto became president of Pakistan 1971–73. After the adoption of a parliamentary constitution, Bhutto stepped down to become Prime Minister 1973–77 until his overthrow by a military coup led by General *Zia ul-Haq. Accused and convicted of a political murder, he refused to ask for clemency and was hanged. His daughter **Benazir Bhutto** (1953–2007), educated at Harvard and Oxford, became leader-in-exile (with her mother) of the PPP. She returned to Pakistan in 1986, was swept into office as Prime Minister 1988, but confronted the opposing forces until her dismissal in 1990 by President Ghulam Ishaq Khan who accused her of nepotism and corruption. Beaten decisively in the 1990 elections, she was re-elected Prime Minister in 1993. Following repeated accusations of corruption she was dismissed again by the president in November 1996. In 1998 she

went into self-imposed exile in Dubai, returned in October 2007 to lead her party in the election and was assassinated (27 December 2007) in Rawalpindi, under mysterious circumstances that have never been explained. The PPP won the ensuing election and her husband **Asif Ali Zardari** (1955–) became President of Pakistan 2008–13.

Taseer, S., *Bhutto A Political Biography*. 1979.

Biber, Heinrich Ignaz Franz von (1644–1704). Czech/Bohemian composer. A brilliant violinist, from 1670 he was Kapellmeister for the Archbishop of Salzburg. His *Mystery Sonatas* (1674), also known as the *Rosary Sonatas*, 15 works for violin and continuo, are virtuosic, experimental and profound. He was also a prolific composer of choral music, e.g. *Plaudite tympana* (1682), in 53 parts.

Bichat, Marie François Xavier (1771–1802). French physician, born in the Jura. He studied at Lyon and Paris and in 1797 began giving courses of instruction in anatomy and physiology. He gained his practical experience in some 600 postmortems. His work on body tissues (called by him 'membranes') earned him the distinction of being virtually the founder of morbid histology.

Bickerstaffe, Isaac (c.1735–1812). Irish playwright. He became an officer of marines but had to flee abroad in 1772 on a capital charge. The best known of his plays include *Love in a Village* (1762), *The Maid of the Mill* (1765) and *Lionel and Clarissa* (1768). The name 'Isaac Bickerstaff' was used as a pen name by both *Swift and *Steele.

Bidault, Georges (-Augustin) (1899–1983). French politician and journalist. A leader of the resistance movement during World War II, after the liberation he was appointed Foreign Minister by *de Gaulle 1944–46 and, as founder and leader of the Mouvement Republicain Populaire (Catholic Socialist party), he was Premier 1946, 1949, 1958 and Foreign Minister 1947–48, 1953–54. In 1962 he became head of the National Resistance Council, violently opposed to de Gaulle's granting of independence to Algeria. Associated with the OAS (*Organisation de l'armée secrète*) and deprived of parliamentary immunity, Bidault went into exile in Brazil in 1962, later in Belgium, but was amnestied in 1968.

Bidault, G., *Resistance*. 1967.

Biden, Joe (in full Joseph Robinette Biden, Jr) (1942–). 46th President of the US 2021– . Born in Scranton, Pennsylvania, of Irish descent, his father, Joe Biden, Sr, suffered financial setbacks and the family moved to Wilmington, Delaware. The younger Biden studied law at the University of Maryland and Syracuse University, became an attorney and a county councillor 1970–72. In November 1972, at the age of 29, he was elected as US Senator from Delaware, serving 1973–2009. (In December 1972 his wife and daughter were killed in a motor accident. He remarried in 1977.) He chaired the Senate Judiciary Committee 1987–95 and Foreign Relations Committee 2007–09.

He sought the Democratic Presidential nomination in 1988, 2008 and 2020. Elected on Barack *Obama's ticket in 2008, he served as Vice President of the United States 2009–17 and was the first Catholic to hold the office. He received the Presidential Medal of Freedom in January 2017.

Biden declared his candidature for the Democratic Presidential nomination for 2020. His son Hunter's business dealings led to Donald *Trump's application of pressure on Ukraine's President *Zelensky to obtain damaging material on the Bidens, and were central to the impeachment proceedings against Trump. After a shaky start, he polled well in the 'Super Tuesday' primaries, and the other candidates withdrew in his favour in April. The coronavirus pandemic transformed political campaigning, Biden was nominated at a 'virtual' Convention in August, and campaigned cautiously, avoiding crowds and wearing a mask at public appearances, in sharp contrast to Donald *Trump. Biden and his running mate Kamala *Harris, won a 7 million vote plurality on 3 November, and after narrow victories in 'swing states' gained a majority in the Electoral College. Trump refused to concede, claiming that postal voting had been fraudulent.

At 78 years 2 months, Biden was the oldest American President to be inaugurated. In July 2024, after a disastrous debate with Trump, raising concerns about infirmity, he announced that he would not seek Democratic nomination for President, endorsing Vice-President Harris to succeed him.

Osnos, E., *Joe Biden: American Dreamer*. 2020.

Bierce, Ambrose Gwinnett (1842–1914?). American writer, born in Ohio. He served in the Union army 1861–64, was wounded and promoted major. Apart from journalism, he was the author of cynical, sardonic, often macabre short stories, published in collections such as *Can Such Things Be?* (1893), and *In the Midst of Life* (1898), a re-issue of *Tales of Soldiers and Civilians* (1891). He compiled *The Cynic's Word Book* (1906), later republished under the title of *The Devil's Dictionary*. He disappeared while on a journalistic assignment in Mexico to join the rebel leader *Villa.

O'Connor, R., *Ambrose Bierce: A Biography*. 1968.

Bildt, (Nils Daniel) **Carl** (1949–). Swedish conservative politician. Member of the Riksdag 1979–2000, he was leader of the Moderate Party 1986–99 and Prime Minister of Sweden 1991–94, in the first centre-right government since 1930. He negotiated Sweden's entry into the EU (1994) and became Foreign Minister 2006–14. He was UN Special Envoy in the Balkans 1999–2001.

Billroth, (Christian Albert) **Theodor** (1829–1894). German surgeon, born in Prussia. From a well-connected clerical family, he pursued extensive medical studies at Göttingen and Berlin, receiving his MD in 1852. Director of the Zürich surgical hospital 1860–67, he moved to Vienna in 1867 and there combined a career in pathological anatomy with brilliant innovations in practical surgery. He made extensive studies of wound fever (especially the chemical poisons that produced it). He pioneered the use of antisepsis in Europe, and developed important surgical techniques. He was the first to operate on the oesophagus (1872), the larynx (1872) and to perform stomach re-sections (1881). He was especially skilled in plastic surgery. An expert violin and viola player, he was a friend of *Brahms, who dedicated two string quartets to him, but was deeply hostile to *Wagner. He developed ideas on the physiological basis of musical talent, which he wrote up in *Wer ist Musikalisch*?, published after his death by the music critic, Edouard Hanslick.

bin Laden, Osama *see* **Laden, Osama bin**

Bingham, Hiram (1875–1956). American explorer, historian and politician, born in Honolulu. Son and grandson of missionaries, he taught history at Yale 1909–24 and in July 1911 discovered a great Inca religious centre in the Peruvian Andes, abandoned for nearly 400 years, which he named Machu Picchu ('old peak'). A Republican, he became Governor of Connecticut 1924 and a US senator 1924–33.

Binyon, Laurence (1869–1943). English poet, dramatist and art critic. During World War I he wrote the elegiac poem 'For the Fallen', which became enormously popular, especially for war memorials. His *Collected Poems* was published in 1931. His plays include *Arthur* (1923) and *The Young King* (1935). He joined the British Museum staff in 1893 and became keeper of prints and drawings with a special interest in Chinese and Japanese art. He received the CH in 1932 and was professor of poetry at Harvard 1933–34.

Birdseye, Clarence (1886–1956). American businessman and inventor, born in New York. His first employment was as a fur trader in Labrador, where he observed the method used of freezing food in winter when fresh supplies were unobtainable. Returning to the US, he began experiments. In 1924 he was co-founder of the General Seafoods Co. and developed a highly profitable and efficient method of freezing which aimed at preserving original taste.

Birdwood, William Riddell Birdwood, 1st Baron (1865–1951). English field marshal, born in India. Except during the South African War, when he was on *Kitchener's staff, most of his service had been in India. He commanded the Australian and New Zealand Army Corps (ANZAC) in World War I, leading them at the Gallipoli landing and after the evacuation (when he was in command of all troops) in France. He was promoted to command the 5th Army in 1918 in time to lead it to the final victory. In 1925 he was promoted to Field Marshal both in the British and the Australian armies (when John *Monash was only a retired Lieutenant General) and became Commander-in-Chief in India 1925–30. In 1930 he was *George V's choice as Governor-General of Australia, but *Scullin insisted on *Isaacs. He was Master of Peterhouse, Cambridge, 1930–38 and wrote his memoirs, *Khaki and Gown* (1941).

Birkbeck, George (1776–1841). English educationist, born in Settle, Yorkshire. He studied medicine at Leeds and Edinburgh. Birkbeck College, London University, founded in 1824, was originally one of the Mechanics Institutes for the education of the working classes, in the establishment of which he played a leading part.

Kelly, T., *George Birkbeck, Pioneer of Adult Education*. 1957.

Birkenhead, Frederick Edwin Smith, 1st Earl of (1872–1930). English lawyer and Conservative politician, born in Birkenhead. Educated at Oxford, he became a barrister in 1899 and soon acquired an enormous practice. As MP 1906–19 his wit and audacity soon marked him out, but as *Carson's chief lieutenant ('Galloper Smith' was his derisive nickname) he also won a reputation for reckless partisanship in support of the Ulster cause. In World War I coalitions he served as Solicitor-General 1915 and Attorney-General 1915–19; in the latter office he conducted the prosecution in the trial of Sir Roger *Casement. He showed more generosity as an architect of the Irish settlement of 1921. As Lord Chancellor 1919–22 he was responsible for revising the Law of Property Act (1922) Created Earl in 1922, on the breakup of the coalition Birkenhead left office with *Lloyd George. He joined the second *Baldwin Government as Secretary of State for India 1924–28, but his performance was impaired by heavy drinking. His books include *International Law* (4th ed., 1911) *Famous Trials of History* (1927) and *Law, Life and Letters* (1927).

Campbell, J., *F. E. Smith*. 1983.

Biro, László Jozsef (1899–1985). Hungarian inventor. He patented a ballpoint pen in 1938, escaped to Argentina in 1943 and began manufacturing pens there.

Biron (Bühren), **Ernst Johann von** (1690–1772). German courtier. Son of a groom, he became Duke of Courland. As the lover of *Anna Ivanovna, Empress of Russia, he was hated for his insolence and greed, and Anna's death (1740) brought exile in Siberia and temporary eclipse. He was recalled by *Peter III in 1762 and restored to his dukedom by *Catherine the Great.

Birtwistle, Sir Harrison Paul (1934–2022). British composer, born in Lancashire. Educated in Manchester and London, he taught in the US and in 1967 formed the Pierrot Players with (Sir) Peter Maxwell *Davies. His works include *Silbury Air* (1977), *Secret Theatre* (1984), *Earth Dances* (1985) and the operas *The Mask of Orpheus* (1981) and *Gawain* (1990). He was awarded a CH in 2001.

Bīrūnī, Abū Rayḥān Muḥammad ibn Aḥmad Al- (973–c.1050). Persian mathematician, astronomer, geographer and polymath. In the 'Golden Age of Islam', he had an extraordinary range of interests, made a reasonably accurate estimate of the Earth's circumference, mastered several languages, including Hebrew and Greek, challenged *Aristotle and *Ptolemy on elliptical orbits, compiled a pharmacopoeia, studied comparative religion and wrote an encyclopaedia of India.

Bishop, Julie Isabel (1956–). Australian lawyer and Liberal politician. Member of the House of Representatives 1998–2019, she was Minister for Education, Science and Training 2006–07, Deputy Leader of the Liberal Party 2007–18 and Minister for Foreign Affairs 2013–18. She became Chancellor of The Australian National University 2020– .

Bismarck(-Schönhausen), Otto Eduard Leopold, Prince von, Duke of Lauenburg (1815–1898). German statesman, born in Schönhausen, Brandenburg. From a Junker family, he was deeply influenced by his mother who encouraged him to study law at Göttingen and Berlin with a view to public service. At the university he was bored by the law but developed lifelong interests in history and literature. He entered the Prussian civil service in 1835, disliked his duties and was disapproved of for unpunctuality and the excessive demands of his social life. Resignation (1839) and a post as an estate manager in Pomerania followed. He engaged in country pursuits, read and corresponded much and entered into a happy marriage (1847) with **Johanna von Puttkamer**. He lost all religious belief but supported the Lutheran Church as a force for social stability, together with the monarchy and the army. As a member of the Prussian Landtag (Lower House) 1847–58, he was a crude advocate of royal absolutism, objecting to the lack of authoritative measures for dealing with the liberal risings of 1848–49. As Prussian Ambassador to the German Diet at Frankfurt 1851–59 he quickly acquired the arts of a diplomat and saw how assemblies of this kind could be used for his own ends, which more and more became clarified as the unity of Germany under Prussian leadership with the exclusion of Austria. After serving as Ambassador to Russia 1859–62, and to France 1862, appointments that enabled him to gain the confidence of one emperor (*Aleksandr II) and to study the weaknesses of another (*Napoléon III), Bismarck was called to head the Prussian Government in order to overcome parliamentary opposition to King *Wilhelm I's army plans. He achieved this by the dissolution of parliament over a legal quibble and at once proceeded with his plans to unify Germany. He was Minister-President (i.e. Premier) and Foreign Minister of Prussia 1862–71 and Chancellor of the North German Confederation 1867–71. A war with Denmark, over ownership of the duchies of Schleswig and Holstein, was provoked in 1864 and Prussia soon displaced Austria as Germany's natural leader. Next, Bismarck provoked war with Austria (1866) by claiming control of both Schleswig and Holstein. After seven weeks of savage fighting, in which Bismarck adopted techniques used in the US Civil War, Austria surrendered, but a generous settlement avoided the dangers of extreme bitterness and antagonising Germany's southern states. The North German Confederation was then set up and Bismarck became Chancellor 1867–71. His next step was to anticipate any possible resistance to his plans by France. By a series of adroit manoeuvres, such as support for the candidature of Prince Leopold of Hohenzollern for the vacant Spanish throne and 'editing' a telegram from Napoléon III to King Wilhelm, he created a situation which practically forced Napoléon to declare war in July 1870. Once more Bismarck had judged the military situation correctly: by August Napoléon's armies had been smashed at Sedan and he had been taken prisoner. In January 1871 in Versailles, Wilhelm I was proclaimed sovereign of the new German empire, and Bismarck became first Chancellor 1871–90. For the next 20 years the history of Bismarck was the history of Germany. In 1873, he initiated a campaign (*Kulturkampf*) to provide for secular education and limit the power of the Roman Catholic Church, provide for secular marriage and expel the Jesuits. In 1878 the new pope, *Leo XIII, was able to negotiate an end to hostilities. His foreign policy was based on a friendly alliance between the three emperors of Germany, Austria, and Russia, and he was able to assert Germany's leadership in 1878 by getting Berlin chosen as the venue of a conference that successfully settled the Balkan problems created by the Russo-Turkish war. At home he tempered his conservatism with an opportunism which often shocked his friends as it disarmed his opponents. He accepted manhood suffrage and initiated such reforms as the Sickness Insurance Law, the Accident Insurance Law (both subsidised by the employers) and the Old Age and Invalidity Insurance Law (subsidised by the state). But his dictatorial methods were offensive to *Friedrich III who soon died (1888) and to his successor *Wilhelm II who wanted to assert royal authority. In 1890 Bismarck was dismissed. In retirement he was a constant and bitter critic of the emperor's policies, especially in his memoir *Reflections and Reminiscences* (1898).

An hysteric, he alternated between outbursts of rage and floods of tears. His personal charm disarmed opponents (e.g. Ferdinand *Lassalle) and he defined genius as 'knowing where to stop'.

Taylor, A. J. P., *Bismarck: the Man and the Statesman*. 1955; Steinberg, J., *Bismarck. A Life*. 2011.

Bizet, Georges (Alexandre César Léopold) (1838–1875). French composer, born in Paris. A pupil of *Gounod, he showed early brilliance but received late recognition. His lively Symphony in C major (1855) was unperformed until 1935. He won the Prix de Rome in 1857 and spent three years studying in Italy. His operas include the *Pearl Fishers* (1863), *The Fair Maid of Perth* (1867) and *Carmen* (1875), his last and greatest work, based on a story by Prosper *Mérimée. This was Bizet's first real success but he died a few months after its first performance. The incidental music to *L'Arlesienne* (1872) was written for a play by *Daudet.

Dean, W., *Bizet*. 1965.

Bjelke-Petersen, Sir Joh(annes) (1911–2005). Australian politician, born in New Zealand of Danish descent. A peanut farmer, he was a Queensland MP 1950–87, a minister from 1963 and Premier 1968–87, a record term, leading the National (formerly Country) Party. He appealed to the traditional values of rural Australia, securing strong support from people who felt alienated from the complexities of modern urban society. In 1987 the abortive 'Joh for Canberra' campaign made him a national figure and split Coalition forces.

Bjorling, Jussi (1911–1960). Swedish tenor. He sang with great success in London and New York, with sensitive phrasing, clear diction and a ringing tone, and made many recordings. His father, brothers and son were all accomplished singers.

Bjørnson, Bjørnstjerne Martinius (1832–1910). Norwegian poet, novelist and dramatist. Son of a Lutheran pastor, he was educated at Molde, Christiania and Copenhagen. He managed theatres in Bergen 1857–59, Christiania 1865–67, lived in Italy 1860–62 and travelled widely throughout Europe, while working as a newspaper editor and taking an active part in politics as an advocate of Norwegian nationalism and republicanism. His marriage to Karoline Reimers in 1858 was followed by one of his most creative periods to which belong the historical dramas *King Sverre* (1861) and the trilogy *Sigurd the Bastard* (1862) as well as the peasant novels *Arne* (1859) and *A Happy Boy* (1862). In 1874, influenced by his friend *Ibsen, he wrote the first of his modern plays, *The Editor*, followed by the successful *A Bankruptcy* (1875) and a political play called *The King* (1877) which caused considerable offence. *The New System* (1879) contrasted the honest quest for truth by the younger generation with the hypocrisy of the old. As the years went by Björnson continued to combine political agitation (the liberal victory of 1882 owed much to him) with writing, *A Gauntlet* (1883) advocated sex equality and two plays under the title *Beyond Our Power* (1889) also dealt with such controversial topics as miracles and a strike. Also noted as a lyric poet, Björnson wrote 'Yes, we love this land' adopted as the Norwegian national anthem. With Ibsen he was one of the great figures of the Scandinavian literary renaissance. He won the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1903.

Black, Conrad Moffat, Baron Black of Crossharbour (1944–). Canadian investor and publisher, born in Montréal. Educated at Carleton, Laval and McGill universities, he had investments in newspapers, banks, railways, insurance, electronics and retailing. He controlled more than 260 newspapers, large and small, including the *Daily Telegraph* (London), the *Jerusalem Post*, the *Sydney Morning Herald*, and the Melbourne *Age*. He wrote biographies of the former Québec Premier Maurice Duplessis**,** Franklin D. *Roosevelt, Richard *Nixon and Donald *Trump. In December 2007, he was sentenced to 78 months' imprisonment for multiple counts of fraud. He received a Presidential pardon from Trump in 2019.

Black, Sir James Whyte (1924–2010). Scottish pharmacologist. A graduate of St Andrews, he held chairs at University College and Kings' College, London. A major pioneer in analytical pharmacology, he developed beta-blockers, to inhibit the effects of adrenalin on the heart, and propranolol was used to treat heart attack, angina, high blood pressure and migraine. He also developed the anti-peptic ulcer drug cimetidine (Tagamet), shared the Nobel Prize for Medicine in 1988 with George *Hitchings and Gertrude *Elion, and received the OM in 2000.

Black, Joseph (1728–1799). Scottish physician and chemist, born in Bordeaux. Educated in Belfast and at Glasgow University, he took a medical degree at Edinburgh in 1754. He realised that carbon dioxide is chemically distinct from air, and was the first to show the difference between mild and caustic alkalis. Black also propounded the theories of specific and latent heat (the latter was applied by James *Watt to the steam engine with historic consequences) and laid the foundations of calorimetry. He became professor of medicine at Glasgow 1756–66 and of medicine and chemistry at Edinburgh 1766–97.

Black Prince *see* **Edward the Black Prince**

Blackburn, Elizabeth Helen (1948–). Australian molecular biologist, born in Hobart. Educated at the universities of Melbourne, Cambridge and Yale. Blackburn co-discovered telomerase, the enzyme that replenishes the telomere. For this work on the nucleotide sequence which protects the ends of chromosomes from deteriorating, she shared the 2009 Nobel Prize in Physiology or Medicine, with Carol W. Greider and Jack W. Szostak. She also worked in medical ethics, and was controversially dismissed from the President's Council on Bioethics in 2004 because of her support for stem cell research.

Blackett, Patrick Maynard Stewart, Baron Blackett (1897–1974). English physicist. He studied under *Rutherford at Cambridge and developed the use of C.T.R. *Wilson's cloud chamber in the study of atomic structure and cosmic rays. In his cosmic ray studies in 1933 he confirmed the existence of the positron previously discovered by C. D. *Anderson. He also confirmed (1935) the accuracy of *Einstein's $E=mc^2$ equation and worked on the atomic bomb project during World War II. He was professor of physics at Birkbeck College, University of London 1933–37, Manchester University 1937–53 and Imperial College, London 1953–74. In 1948 he was awarded the Nobel Prize for Physics, was President of the Royal Society 1965–70 and received a CH, an OM and a peerage.

Blackmore, Richard Doddridge (1825–1900). English novelist. Educated at Blundell's School, Tiverton, and at Exeter College, Oxford, he gave up the law because of epilepsy and took up writing and gardening. Of his 15 novels, *Lorna Doone* (1869) is best known. The story is set in Exmoor, with *Monmouth's rebellion against *James II as one of its episodes. The heroine herself and John Ridd, who rescues her from the Doone clan of robbers and murderers, are among the most romantic characters of fiction.

Blackstone, Sir William (1723–1780). English jurist. Son of a silk mercer and educated at Charterhouse and Oxford, he practised at the bar until 1758, when he became the first Vinerian professor of law at Oxford. In this post he inaugurated courses in English law (only Roman law having been studied there until then). Blackstone was a Tory MP 1761–68, and a Justice of the Common Pleas 1770–80. His *Commentaries on the Laws of England* (1765–69), a lucid exposition of the whole of English law, exercised an immense influence upon succeeding generations of lawyers, and remains a standard work of reference.

Blackwell, Elizabeth (1821–1910). British woman doctor, born in Bristol. She was taken to America as a child, studied in New York and in 1849 became the first woman medical graduate. Having then come to London to study at St Bartholomew's Hospital she later (1859) became the first woman on the British medical register. Back in America she organised nursing services during the Civil War. In 1869 she settled in England, and in 1875 she became a professor at the London School of Medicine for Women, which she had helped to establish.

Fancourt, M. St J., *They Dared to be Doctors: Elizabeth Blackwell and Elizabeth Garrett Anderson*. 1966.

Blackwood, William (1776–1834). Scottish publisher. He became prominent by publishing the first series of Sir Walter *Scott's *Tales of My Landlord*. Later writers whose books bore the Blackwood imprint included George *Eliot, *Trollope and Charles *Reade. In 1817 Blackwood founded *Blackwood's Magazine* as a Tory rival to the *Edinburgh Review*. Under his descendants it grew to be a national institution.

Blaine, James Gillespie (1830–1893). American Republican politician, born in Pennsylvania. After working as a school teacher, lawyer and journalist he entered the Maine legislature and the US House of Representatives 1863–76, serving as Speaker 1869–75. Allegations of corruption were responsible for his loss of the presidential nomination in 1876 and 1880, but he was US Senator 1876–81 and served as US Secretary of State under *Garfield 1881 and under Harrison 1889–92. In 1884 he was narrowly beaten for the presidency by Grover *Cleveland.

Blainey, Geoffrey Norman (1930–). Australian economic historian. Professor of history at Melbourne University 1968–88, he was a prolific author whose works include the influential *The Tyranny of Distance* (1966), *Triumph of the Nomads* (1977), *A Shorter History of Australia* (1994) and *A History of the World* (2000). An optimistic conservative, critical of 'the black armband' view of Australian history, he opposed becoming a Republic and was much admired by John *Howard.

Blair, Sir Tony (Anthony Charles Lynton) (1953–). British Labour politician, born in Edinburgh. As a child he lived briefly in Adelaide, then attended Chorister School, Durham and Fettes College, Edinburgh, before studying law at Oxford. He became a barrister, MP 1983–2007, and a shadow minister 1984–94. After John *Smith died, he became Leader of the Opposition 1994–97. He continued Neil *Kinnock's revision of party policy, and, under the name New Labour, accepted many of the Thatcherite economic changes. He won the May 1997 election with 44.5 per cent of the vote and a record Labour majority of 179 seats and became Prime Minister. In June 2001 his government was re-elected with a majority of 166 seats. Britain took a leading role in supporting the US invasion of Iraq in March 2003 and Blair emerged as *Bush's principal foreign supporter, a decision, based on faulty intelligence, which compromised his reputation for judgment. Nevertheless, in February 2005 he became the longest serving British Labour Prime Minister, winning a third election in May 2005. He supported strong action to combat global warming, urged debt relief for the Third World, and invested heavily in education and health. He resigned as Prime Minister in June 2007, when Gordon *Brown succeeded, and was appointed as Middle East Envoy for the UN, EU, US and Russia. In 2007, he became a Roman Catholic; oddly, no Catholic had ever been a serving British Prime Minister until Boris *Johnson. He was awarded a KG in 2022.

Blair, T., *A Journey*. 2010; Bower, T., *Broken Vows. Tony Blair. The Tragedy of Power*. 2016.

Blake, Robert (1599–1657). English admiral, born in Bridgewater, Somerset. Son of a merchant and educated at Oxford, he spent his early years at home occupied by business or country pursuits. Election to parliament in 1640 marked his entry into public life and during the Civil War he served with great distinction in the parliamentary land forces, his defence of Taunton for a year winning him great renown. In 1649 he was appointed to command (with two others) the Commonwealth navy. Although he had little naval training he managed to destroy Prince *Rupert's fleet (1650) and establish Britain's naval supremacy in the North Sea and English Channel after a series of encounters with the famous Dutch admirals *Tromp and de *Ruyter. In 1654 he sailed to the Mediterranean and destroyed the power of the Tunisian and Algerian pirates. In 1657, having heard of the arrival of the Spanish West Indian Fleet at Vera Cruz, Tenerife, he immediately set sail and destroyed all 16 ships, but as his ship entered Plymouth harbour on its return Blake died suddenly.

Blake, William (1757–1827). English poet, artist and mystic, born in London. His father, a hosier, was a follower of Emanuel *Swedenborg. From the very first he was a highly imaginative child who claimed to see angelic visions. Apprenticed to an engraver (1771–78), he studied briefly with the Royal Academy School and then set up shop in 1784 as a printseller and engraver. His first book of poems, *Poetical Sketches* (1783), was followed by *Songs of Innocence* (1789) and *Songs of Experience* which includes *The Tyger* (1794), illustrated like all his later books with his own hand-painted engravings. Poems such as *The French Revolution* (1791) and *Americ*a (1793) express a temporary political fervour which he did not retain as his views became more and more imbued with mysticism. His mystical and prophetic works include the *Marriage of Heaven and Hell* (1791), *The Book of Urizen* (1794), *The Book of Los* (1795) and many others, printed from his own copper plates and illustrated with his visionary designs. Nearly all his works have a highly individual symbolism, but while his early poems are notable for their simple language and serene brightness, his later works, with their symbolic characters—Urizen, the author of restrictive moral law, Orc in rebellion against him and Los, the captive champion of light—create an atmosphere of gloom and mystery. However, despair is set aside and mutual love and forgiveness of sin offer revived hope of salvation in the epics the *Four Zoas* (1796–1804), *Milton* (1804–08) and *Jerusalem* (1804–20). Some of *Blake's finest artistic work went into the illustrations for the *Book of Job* (1820–26) and for *Dante's *Divine Comedy* (left unfinished at his death). His paintings were ignored by the public but he enjoyed the unfailing support and belief of his wife, the friendship and sometimes the financial help of other artists such as *Flaxman and Samuel *Palmer and he remained serenely happy until his death. Most modern critics have acknowledged him as a lyrical poet and visionary artist of supreme power.

Ackroyd, P., *Blake*. 1995.

Blamey, Sir Thomas Albert (1884–1951). Australian soldier, born in Wagga Wagga. He served as Chief of Staff to *Monash in World War I, was a controversial chief commissioner of police in Victoria 1925–36, commanded Australian troops in the Middle East and Greece 1940–41, and was Commander-in-Chief of Allied land forces in the southwest Pacific area 1942–45 under General Douglas *MacArthur. In 1950 he became the first Australian-born Field Marshal.

Hetherington, J., *Blamey: Controversial Soldier*. 1974; Horner, D., *Blamey. The Commander-in-Chief*. 1998.

Blanc, (Jean Joseph Charles) **Louis** (1811–1882). French socialist politician and author, born in Madrid. He was a dwarf and a twin. After studying law he became a journalist and was attracted to socialism by the utopian schemes of *Saint-Simon and *Fourier. In his *Organisation du Travail* (1840) he advocated the nationalisation of property and the institution of co-operative workshops to be run by the workers themselves. He became a member of the revolutionary government formed in 1848 and when this collapsed took refuge first in Belgium and then in England. On returning to France after the fall of *Napoléon III (1871), he condemned the Commune, but served for the rest of his life as a leading deputy of the extreme left. He wrote a 12-volume *Histoire de la Revolution Française* while in exile (1847–64).

Vidalenc, J., *Louis Blanc, 1811–1882*. 1948.

Blanchett, Cate (Catherine Elise) (1969–). Australian actor and director, born in Melbourne. Educated at Melbourne University, she gained early success both on stage and with films, taking the leading role in *Elizabeth* (1998), and received many awards, including an Academy Award (2004) for best supporting actress as Katharine *Hepburn in *The Aviator*. She and her husband, Andrew Upton, were joint directors of the Sydney Theatre Company 2009–13. She won the Academy Award (2013) for best actress for her performance in Woody *Allen's *Blue Jasmine*. She received an AC in 2017.

Blanqui, (Louis) **Auguste** (1805–1881). French revolutionary socialist. He took an active part in the political risings of 1830, 1839 and 1848 and was exiled and imprisoned for sedition for much of his life. Blanqui coined the term 'industrial revolution' (1837), which was taken up by *Engels (1844) and later popularised (1882) by Arnold *Toynbee. He favoured dictatorship by a revolutionary leadership but never used the term 'dictatorship of the proletariat'. He organised several secret political societies in an attempt to gain power by force. Elected

President (*in absentia*) of the Paris Commune 1870, he was amnestied from a life sentence imposed after the Commune and elected a deputy for Bordeaux but never took his seat.

Bernstein, S., *Auguste Blanqui and the Art of Insurrection*. 1971.

Blasco Ibáñez, Vicente (1867–1928). Spanish novelist, born in Valencia. An active republican, he was jailed several times, exiled twice and served in the Cortes 1901–07. His early novels deal realistically with provincial life and social change. Later he achieved world fame with *Blood and Sand* (1908), about a bullfighter's life, and the *Four Horsemen of the Apocalypse* (1916), a sensational novel of World War I, both successfully filmed.

Cardwell, R.A., *Blasco Ibáñez 'La Barraca'*. 1973.

Blatchford, Robert (1851–1943). English journalist. A socialist and agnostic, he became a lively and prolific pamphleteer writing under the pen name 'Numquam'. His paper, *The Clarion*, and his books, e.g. *Merrie England* (1894), had a strong influence on British socialism.

Blavatsky, Helena Petrovna (née Hahn) (1831–1891). Russian American theosophist, born in the Ukraine. Little is known of her early life but she seems to have travelled widely in the East and even to have penetrated Tibet. She became a keen spiritualist and while living in New York (1873–78) founded, in 1875, the Theosophical Society. From New York she moved to India where the tenets of her mystical creed were said to have evolved. Despite the fact that her psychic powers failed to satisfy the Society for Psychical Research she had about 100,000 followers at the time of her death. *Isis Unveiled* (1877) was the first of several books. She was succeeded by Annie *Besant as leader of the Theosophists.

Symonds, J., *Madame Blavatsky*. 1959.

Blériot, Louis (1872–1936). French aviator and engineer. He devoted his personal fortune to the construction of monoplanes and in 1909 made the first aeroplane flight across the English Channel (Calais to Dover in 37 minutes), winning a prize of £1,000 offered by Lord *Northcliffe's *Daily Mail*.

Blessington, Marguerite Gardiner (née Power), **Countess of** (1789–1849). Irish writer. After a first marriage at the age of 14, forced upon her by her father, a small Irish landowner, she married in 1818 the 1st Earl of Blessington. Their house in London became a social and literary centre. *Byron was among the guests, and in 1834 she published *A Journal of conversations with Lord Byron*. Another friend was the notorious Count *d'Orsay, who was her lover for 12 years and with whom she fled to France in 1849 to avoid imprisonment for debt. Her writings included travel books and many forgotten novels.

Bligh, William (1754–1817). English sailor, navigator and administrator, born in Plymouth. Son of a customs officer, he was master of HMS *Resolution* (1776–80), during *Cook's third exploration of the Pacific, and brought back news of his death. He commanded HMS *Bounty* on an expedition to Tahiti to collect breadfruit plants (1789), with the object of introducing them into the West Indies. On the return journey the ship's crew, led by Fletcher Christian, mutinied and cast Bligh and 18 of his men adrift in an open boat. The act was probably motivated more by the thought of wives left behind in Tahiti than Bligh's alleged harshness of discipline. Despite his lack of navigational aids, Bligh sailed 6,701 km (3,618 nautical miles) until picked up 47 days later at Timor. Ten mutineers were captured in Tahiti, and court martialled in 1792: four were acquitted, three pardoned and three hanged. (Christian had escaped to Pitcairn Island.) In 1793 he brought back breadfruit from Tahiti and ackee (*Blighia sapida*) from Jamaica and was elected FRS in 1801. He served under *Nelson with distinction in the French wars. Bligh was Governor of New South Wales 1806–08, appointed, on the recommendation of Joseph *Banks, to succeed Philip Gidley *King. He clashed with the New South Wales Corps, largely over his attempt to control the traffic in rum, and in 1808 was imprisoned by rebels. After a year under house arrest he sailed for Hobart on HMS *Porpoise* and remained there until 1810. He was promoted to rear admiral in 1811 and vice admiral in 1814.

Hough, R., *Captain Bligh and Mr Christian*. 1972; Dening, G., *Mr Bligh's Bad Language*. 1992; Salmond, A., *Bligh*. 2011.

Blinken, Antony John (1962–). American diplomat and official. Of Hungarian-Jewish descent, educated at Harvard, he was Deputy Secretary of State 2015–17 and US Secretary of State 2021– .

Bliss, Sir Arthur Edward Drummond (1891–1975). English composer. Educated at Rugby and Cambridge, he served in the army during World War I and, after teaching in the US, was director of music for the BBC 1942–44. Among his vivid, somewhat astringent, works are *A Colour Symphony* (1922), *Clarinet Quintet* (1932), the music for the film of H. G. *Wells *Things To Come* (1935), *Music for Strings* (1935), the ballets *Checkmate* (1937), *Miracle in the Gorbals* (1944), and *Adam Zero* (1946), Piano Concerto (1939) and Violin Concerto (1955). Knighted in 1950, he was appointed Master of the Queen's Musick in 1953 and received a CH in 1971.

Bliss, A., *As I Remember*. 1970.

Blix, Hans Martin (1928–). Swedish diplomat, lawyer and politician, born in Uppsala. Educated at Uppsala, Stockholm, Columbia and Cambridge universities, he was active in the Liberal Party, served as Foreign Minister 1978–79, and Director-General of the International Atomic Energy Agency

1981–97. As Executive Chair of the UN Monitoring, Verification and Inspection Commission for Iraq 2000–03, he pursued the issue of whether *Saddam Hussein had 'weapons of mass destruction' and an active nuclear program, but his work was truncated when the US made a pre-emptive strike in March 2003. Blix was bitterly attacked by George W. *Bush for his (understandable) failure to find WMDs. He published *Disarming Iraq* (2004).

Bloch, Ernest (1880–1959). American composer, born of Swiss-Jewish parents in Geneva. Educated in Switzerland and Germany, he studied the violin under Eugène *Ysäye, and became a teacher and conductor in Geneva. His opera *Macbeth* was produced in Paris in 1910. He lived in the US from 1916, teaching music in Cleveland 1920–25 and San Francisco 1925–30. He returned to Switzerland 1930–38, taught at the University of California 1939–52, but lived in Oregon. His works include the *Israel Symphony* (1916) and *Schelomo* ('Solomon'), a rhapsody for cello and orchestra (1936). He composed religious works and a large quantity of chamber music, reviving the Handelian form of the concerto grosso. Bloch was a thoughtful composer who never aimed at, or achieved, wide popularity. Many of his compositions have a Hebraic quality, while his violin concerto (1938) uses American Indian themes.

Strassburg. R., *Ernest Bloch: A Voice in the Wilderness*. 1977; Kushner, D. Z., *The Ernest Bloch Companion*. 2002.

Blok, Aleksandr Aleksandrovich (1880–1921). Russian symbolist poet. Mysticism and romanticism distinguish his earlier poems, such as the cycle *Verses about the Lady Beautiful* (1904). He applauded the revolution of 1917, about which his poem *The Twelve* (1918) became famous. Later, his hopes of the new regime were disappointed. He died in poverty.

Kisch, C., *Alexander Blok: Prophet of Revolution*. 1960.

Blomstedt, Herbert Thorson (1927–). Swedish conductor, born in Massachusetts. Still active at the age of 95, Blomstedt achieved cult status for his interpretations of *Beethoven, *Schubert, *Bruckner, *Mahler, *Nielsen and *Sibelius, many downloadable on YouTube. He had been chief conductor of orchestras in Copenhagen, Dresden, San Francisco and Leipzig.

Blondel de Nesle (fl. c.1200). French troubadour. Tradition relates that when, in 1191, *Richard I ('Coeur de Lion'), returning from the First Crusade, was imprisoned by Leopold of Austria, Blondel discovered his whereabouts and so enabled his release to be secured by hearing the king responding to his song.

Blondin, Charles (né Jean François Gravelet) (1824–1897). French acrobat. In 1859 he crossed Niagara Falls on a tight rope, varying the act by being blindfolded, and pushing a man in a wheelbarrow.

Blood, Thomas (c.1618–1680). Irish adventurer. In 1671, dressed as a clergyman, he disabled the keeper and actually managed to escape with the crown under his arm while an accomplice carried off the orb. They were pursued, caught and imprisoned but later pardoned by *Charles II.

Bloom, Claire (1931–). English actor, born in London. She studied at the Guildhall School of Music and Drama, London and after working for the BBC, played Ophelia in *Hamlet*, Blanche in *King John* and Perdita in *A Winter's Tale* at Stratford-upon-Avon in 1948. In 1952 she co-starred with Charles *Chaplin in the film *Limelight* and was highly praised. She then concentrated on stage and was noted for moving portrayals of Shakespearian heroines. She also acted in many films including *Look Back in Anger*, *Alexander the Great*, *The Spy Who Came in From the Cold*, *A Severed Head*, and in television series, *A Legacy* and *Brideshead Revisited*.

Bloomberg, Michael Rubens (1942–). American businessman, philanthropist and politician, born in Boston. He amassed a fortune of $US49 billion, was an independent and reforming Mayor of New York City 2002–13, was created an Hon. KBE, and contemplated a run for the Presidency in 2016, but withdrew in case his candidature helped to elect *Trump or *Cruz. In 2020 he made a late entry into the Democratic contest.

Bloomer, Amelia (née Jenks) (1818–1894). American feminist, born in Homer, New York. She was remembered for her introduction of the 'rational' style of dressing for women originally a loose skirt and loose trousers gathered at the ankles. This costume and its later modifications came to bear her name. She was an ardent campaigner for temperance and female suffrage.

Blow, John (1648–1708). English musician. He composed the masque *Venus and Adonis*, in which Venus was played by Mary Davies before *Charles II. He also wrote anthems and songs. For a time he was organist at Westminster Abbey. One of his pupils was *Purcell.

Clarke, H. L., *John Blow. A Tercentenary Survey*. 1949.

Blücher, Gebhard Leberecht von, Prince of Wahlstadt (1742–1819). Prussian general, born at Rostock, Mecklenburg-Schwerin. He joined the Swedish army in the Seven Years' War (1757), but having been immediately taken prisoner by the Prussians joined the army of his captors. Having resigned in 1772 he rejoined in 1793 to oppose the French revolutionary armies. In the ensuing campaigns he gained renown as a cavalry header. In 1806, by then a lieutenant general, he was captured after the battle of Auerstadt, but was exchanged a fortnight later for the French general Claude Victor-Perrin. When Prussia re-entered the war in 1813 he cleared Silesia and played an important part in

*Napoléon's decisive defeat at Leipzig. Having fought his way through northern France in 1814 he entered Paris on 31 March. When Napoléon escaped from Elba, Blücher again took the field, was defeated at Ligny (16 June 1815), but rallied his troops and arrived at the decisive moment to complete *Wellington's victory at Waterloo.

Bluetooth, Harald *see* **Harald Bluetooth**

Blum, (André) **Léon** (1872–1950). French lawyer, writer and Socialist politician, born in Paris. From a secular Jewish family, he was shaken by the *Dreyfus affair and inspired by Jean *Jaurès, who became a mentor. He worked in the civil service, edited *Le Populaire* 1921–42, 1946–50 and wrote a biography of *Stendahl. A deputy 1919–28, 1929–42, 1946–50, he was the main architect of the Popular Front of left-wing parties, including the Communists, between the wars and was Prime Minister for two short periods (1936–37,1938), the first Jew to head a ministry. For most of World War II he was interned in Germany. He was the foundation President of UNESCO 1946 and President of the Provisional Government of France and Minister of Foreign Affairs December 1946–January 1947, before the inauguration of the Fourth Republic (Vincent *Auriol).

Blumenbach, Johann Friedrich (1752–1840). German physiologist and anthropologist, born in Gotha. He studied first in Jena, then in Göttingen, where he became professor of anatomy 1778–1835. One of the founders of physical anthropology and comparative anatomy, on the basis of measuring cranial angles and capacity, in 1779 he proposed the division of *homo sapiens* into five races: 'Caucasian' (a term he coined for 'white race'), Mongolian ('yellow'), Malayan ('brown'), Ethiopian ('black') and American ('red'). He believed that Adam and Eve had been Caucasian, and that this was the most beautiful race. Although his thesis was used as a scientific justification for racism, Blumenbach was a liberal who argued against slavery and recognised that racial differences were not innate but shaped by environment, diet and other physical factors. He influenced *Humboldt, was elected FRS and given honours in France, Sweden and the US.

Blunden, Edmund Charles (1896–1974). English poet and critic. His novel *Undertones of War* (1928) was based on his experiences in the Royal Sussex Regiment in World War I. His poetry, at first mainly pastoral, was issued in collected editions in 1930 and 1940. He also wrote a biography of Leigh *Hunt and discovered and published works by John *Clare. Professor of English literature at Tokyo 1924–27 and at Hong Kong 1953–64, he was elected professor of poetry at Oxford in 1966.

Hardie, A. M., *Blunden*. 1958; Thorpe, M., *The Poetry of Blunden*. 1971.

Blunt, [Sir] Anthony Frederick (1907–1983). English art historian. Educated at Trinity College, Cambridge, recruited as an agent for the USSR, he served in the War Office 1940–45. Surveyor of the King's/Queen's Pictures 1945–72, Director of the Courtauld Institute of Art 1947–74, he held Slade chairs of fine art at Oxford 1962–63 and Cambridge 1965–66 and wrote books on Poussin and Blake. In 1979 he was revealed as the 'fourth man' (*Burgess and Maclean, *Philby) and stripped of his KCVO.

Blunt, Wilfred Scawen (1840–1922). English poet and traveller. He served in the diplomatic service (1859–70) but it is as a romantic figure that his memory survives—travelling in the Middle East, espousing the cause of Egyptian, Indian or Irish nationalism and writing passionate political verse or tender love poems. He married Baroness Wentworth, a granddaughter of *Byron. His *Diaries* appeared in 1922.

Lytton, E., *Wilfred Scawen Blunt: A Memoir*. 1961.

Blyton, Enid Mary (1897–1968). English writer for children. She trained as a nursery teacher, began publishing poetry (1917) and stories (1921), becoming enormously prolific in the 1930s. She published more than 400 titles, selling more than 200 million copies. Her characters, including Noddy and Mr Plod the policeman, were ubiquitous. Her plots were criticised, but not by her readers, as simple-minded, lacking in imagination and unduly conventional.

Boabdil (Abu Abdullah Mohammed XI) (1459–1527/8). Sultan of Granada 1482–92. He was the last Nasrid ruler of the Moorish sultanate of Granada in Spain before its capture (1492) by the troops of *Ferdinand and *Isabella.

Boadicea (or Boudicca) (d.62). Queen of the Iceni, a British tribe in East Anglia. On her husband's death (c.60) her territory was occupied by the Romans and, so it was said, her daughters ravished. In revenge she gathered an army, destroyed the Roman camp at Colchester and took St Albans and London before being defeated by the Roman governor, Suetonius Paulinus. She then committed suicide to avoid capture.

Dundley, D. R. and Webster. G., *The Rebellion of Boudicca*. 1962.

Boccaccio, Giovanni (1313–1375). Italian poet and author, born in Paris. Author of *The Decameron*, a famous collection of amusing, amatory and often bawdy tales, he was the illegitimate son of a Florentine merchant, sent for further study to Naples, where he began his literary career. The prose-work *Il Filicolo* was followed by the verse romances *Filostrato and Teseida* (on the legends of Theseus, Palamon and Arcite), on which *Chaucer based his *Troilus and Criseyde* and his *Knight's Tale* respectively. It was in Naples, too, that he fell in love with Maria

d'Aquino, an illegitimate daughter of King Robert. The title of his novel *Faimena* hides her identity. News of his father's threatened ruin brought him back to Florence in 1340 and there he became close friends with *Petrarch and *Dante, whose biography he wrote and whose poetry he expounded in his later years. The stories of the *Decameron* (finished in 1358) were ostensibly told by a group of young Florentines sheltering in the country during the plague of 1348. Apart from its intrinsic interest, the *Decameron* was a stylistic model for future Italian writing, a source for countless other European writers, and a milestone in European literature, representing as it does a move towards realism and wholeheartedly secular themes. In 1362 *Petrarch restrained Boccaccio from destroying his works during a spiritual crisis; he then limited his writing to works of scholarship.

MacManus, F., *Boccaccio*. 1947.

Boccherini, Luigi Rodolfo (1743–1805). Italian composer and cellist, born in Lucca. He studied in Rome, worked in Vienna, Paris, Madrid and Berlin, and wrote 90 string quartets and nine cello concertos. Although sometimes dismissed as '*Haydn's wife', he was an important innovator developing the string quartet and quintet and *Mozart admired his concertos. He also wrote choral music and died in poverty in Madrid.

Rothschild, G. de, *Luigi Boccherini*. 1965.

Bodin, Jean (c.1530–1596). French political philosopher. Trained as a lawyer and appointed king's attorney by *Henri III, he accompanied the Duke of Alençon on his journey to England to request *Elizabeth I's hand in marriage. His books reveal views in advance of his time. In one, *Les six livres de la république* (1576), he introduces the idea of progress in history and anticipates *Hobbes in his statement of the need for a monarchy limited only by the laws of God and nature. His economic theories questioned much of the prevailing mercantilist doctrine.

Franklin, J. H., *Jean Bodin and the Rise of Absolutist Theory*. 1973.

Bodley, Sir Thomas (1545–1613). English bibliophile, born in Exeter. Brought up in Geneva, he became a fellow of Merton College, Oxford. On retirement from diplomatic work, which took him on several missions abroad, he offered to restore and re-equip *Humphrey, Duke of Gloucester's library at Oxford University. He devoted himself to this with great enthusiasm, buying books all over Europe and the name Bodleian Library acknowledged his work. He increased his benefaction by endowment and bequeathed the rest of his fortune to the university.

Boece, Hector (c.1465–1536). Scottish historian, born in Dundee. He completed his education at Paris University, where he met Erasmus and other humanist scholars. He was chosen (c.1500) to preside over the new university at Aberdeen. His vast and famous *History of Scotland* (written in Latin) appeared in 1527. Though it harbours a fair amount of fiction, the author makes some attempt to apply critical standards.

Boehme, Jakob (1575–1624). German mystic, born in Lusatia. Son of peasants, he became a cobbler, but spent much of his time in meditation and profound biblical study. His major works are *Aurora, De signatura rerum* and *Mysterium magnum*. In his theory, obscured by cloudy mystical language, all things come into existence by the separation of the original oneness, which is God, the nothing and the all, into discrete elements. Evil, in nature or in man, results from the efforts of single elements to become the whole. Boehme's works were studied in Holland and England (e.g. by Isaac *Newton) as well as in Germany, and interest in his work was revived in the 19th century, e.g. by *Schelling, *Hegel and *Schopenhauer.

Grunsky, H., *Jacob Boehme*. 1956.

Boeing, William Edward (1881–1956). American industrialist. A timber merchant in Seattle, he became an airmail contractor between Seattle and British Columbia and founded the Boeing Airplane Co. in 1917. He retired before the planes bearing his name—e.g. B-17 (Flying Fortress) and B-29 (Super Fortress)—became famous.

Boerhaave, Herman (1668–1738). Dutch physician. At Leyden University he studied the whole range of natural sciences, but then specialised in medicine, taking the chair of medicine and botany in 1709. He was also professor of physics from 1714 and chemistry from 1718. The most famous medical and chemical teacher of the 18th century, he attracted students from many countries. The substance of his medical lectures appeared as the *Institutiones medicae* (1708), but his most important work was his *Elementae chemiae* (1732). Brought up in the rationalist tradition of *Descartes, Boerhaave was influential in introducing the English science of *Boyle and *Newton to the Continent. He accepted a corpuscular view of matter, and was deeply committed to the ideal of extensive experimentation, and strict quantification. The core of his system of medical ideas remained the mechanical theories of the 17th century, with their emphasis on the body as a system of hydraulics, pumps, physical pressures and devices such as levers and valves. But the nature of vital heat also preoccupied him, and his teachings on the nervous system look forward to the physiology developed by scientists, including *Haller, later in the century.

King, L. S., *The Medical World of the Eighteenth Century*. 1958.

Boëthius, Anicius Manlius Severinus (c.480–525). Roman philosopher, theologian and administrator, born in Rome. From a patrician family, whose members included emperors and consuls, he was an administrator in the court of the Ostrogothic king *Theodoric the Great, and was appointed senator around 505. His first major work was *De mathematica* (c.500). His treatise *De musica* (c.510) was authoritative and many manuscript copies survive. Boëthius wrote extensively upon the corpus of Classical Greek texts, producing translations, commentaries, and fresh treatises in their own right. He was interested in *Aristotle's logical writings, and was a student of the Neo-Platonists. Most of his writings seem to be didactic in intention, and it is possible that he aimed to provide an encyclopaedic coverage of traditional learning. Boethius produced two works of philosophical theology, on the Trinity, and on the nature of Christ. He attempted to reconcile classical philosophy with Christian theology, using Greek logic to overcome the apparent paradox of the Trinity in which three persons were also one. Easily his most famous work is the *Consolation of Philosophy* written while in prison. This sets out, within a Neo-Platonic context, to prove that unaided reason can have certainty about the existence of an omnipotent God. He seeks to show that human free will is not incompatible with Divine foresight. It was one of the most popular books in the Middle Ages, and was translated into almost all the European languages. He was imprisoned from 522 and executed in Pavia, on a false charge of treachery.

Barret, H. M., *Boethius, Some Aspects of his Times and Work*. 1940; Chadwick, H., *Boethius, the Consolations of Music, Logic, Theology and Philosophy*. 1981; Manerton, J., *Boethius*. 2004.

Bogarde, Sir Dirk (Derek van den Bogaerde) (1921–1999). English actor and biographer. Between 1947 and 1980, he appeared in more than 60 films, graduating from light comedies to more serious roles, e.g. *King and Country* (1964), *Death in Venice* (1971) and *The Night Porter* (1975). He wrote a highly praised autobiography in six volumes.

Bogart, Humphrey (de Forest) (1899–1957). American film and stage actor. After several years of playing minor parts, his first big success came when he acted with Leslie Howard and Bette Davis as the gangster in *The Petrified Forest* (1934). This led to a long series of tough dramatic and romantic parts in 75 films including *The Maltese Falcon*, *Casablanca*, *The Big Sleep*, *The Treasure of the Sierra Madre*, *Key Largo*, *The African Queen*, *Beat the Devil*, *Sabrina* and *The Caine Mutiny*. In 1947 he married the actor Lauren Bacall.

Bohr, Niels Henrik David (1885–1962). Danish physicist, born in Copenhagen. Son of a professor of physiology, he studied at Copenhagen University and Trinity College, Cambridge, and was lecturer in physics at Manchester University (1914–16), where he worked with *Rutherford. In 1916 he became professor of physics at the University of Copenhagen, transferring to the Institute for Theoretical Physics when this was founded in Copenhagen (1922). Bohr also helped to develop quantum theory, applying it to the theory of atomic structure (1913), and he put forward the first theory of nuclear structure (1936). He won the Nobel Prize for Physics (1922) and the Copley Medal (1938). In September 1943, he escaped from German-occupied Denmark to neutral Sweden, then to Britain. He then flew to the US and advised on research that produced the atomic bomb. He was very influential in setting up CERN in Geneva (1957) and the International Atomic Energy Agency (1957). Asteroid 3948, a lunar crater and the element bohrium (No. 107) were named for him. His son, **Aage Niels Bohr** (1922–2009), was director of the Niels Bohr Institute for Theoretical Physics in Copenhagen and shared the 1975 Nobel Prize for Physics for work on investigating motion inside nuclei.

Moore. R. E., *Niels Bohr, The Man and the Scientist*. 1967; Frayne, M., *Copenhagen*. 1958.

Boileau, Nicolas (1636–1711). French poet and critic. In his satires and burlesques he gives a realistic first-hand portrayal of bourgeois life in the reign of *Louis XIV. He was the friend of many well known writers and especially of *Racine, with whom he shared the honour of being made historiographer royal. His verse treatise *L'Art poétique* (1674) won great contemporary esteem for its statement of classical literary principles. Renowned in his lifetime as the 'law-giver of Parnassus', his reputation did not survive the era of Romanticism, to which his views were anathema.

Brody, J., *Boileau and Longinus*. 1958.

Boito, Arrigo (1842–1918). Italian poet and composer, born in Padua. He studied in Milan and composed the opera, *Mefistofele* (1868). He wrote excellent libretti for *Verdi's *Otello* and *Falstaff*.

Bokassa, Jean-Bédel (1921–1996). Central African marshal and politician. He joined the French army in 1939 and was Commander-in-Chief of the Central African Republic's forces from 1963, seized power in a coup in 1965 and became President 1966–79. In 1976 he proclaimed himself as Emperor but was overthrown in 1979, went into French exile 1979–86, then returned to the CAR to face trial. Sentenced to death, he was reprieved and condemned to forced labour. He was released in 1993.

Boleyn, Anne *see* **Anne** (Boleyn)

Bolger, Jim (James Brendan) (1935–). New Zealand National politician. A farmer, he was a Member of Parliament 1972–98, served as Minister for Labour 1978–84 and for Immigration 1978–81 under

*Muldoon and on Labour's defeat became Prime Minister 1990–97. In 1996, after adoption of an MMP system, he formed a Coalition Government with Winston *Peters of the New Zealand First Party. Jenny *Shipley displaced him as Prime Minister in December 1997. He was Ambassador to the US 1998–2001 and then entered business.

Bolingbroke, Henry of, Duke of Hereford and Duke of Lancaster *see* **Henry IV**

Bolingbroke, Henry St John, 1st Viscount (1678–1751). English Tory politician. Entering parliament in 1701 as member for the family borough of Wootton Bassett, Wiltshire, he attached himself to Robert *Harley and intrigued skilfully for the Tory cause. In the Tory Ministry which began in 1710 he became a Secretary of State and conducted the negotiations which led to the Treaty of Utrecht (1713). He became Viscount Bolingbroke in 1712 and, as Harley's power declined, rose to leadership. He had tried secretly to secure the succession of the Old Pretender (James *Stuart) and had openly dismissed Whig officers, replacing them with Tories. When *George I became king on the death of Queen Anne, he fled to Paris, where he helped to plan the Jacobite rising of 1715. In 1723 he was allowed to return. *Walpole denied him the right to sit in the House of Lords, but Bolingbroke led the opposition to him, particularly with the brilliant letters published in the *Craftsman.* In his later years he wrote the *Idea of a Patriot King* (1749), in which he envisaged the king standing above and removed from party faction and serving the interests of the nation as a whole. *George III's attempt to put these ideas into practice disastrously failed. Bolingbroke is remembered as a brilliant orator, a profligate, and a skilful if unscrupulous intriguer and propagandist.

Dickinson, H. T., *Bolingbroke*. 1970.

Bolívar, Simón (1783–1830). South American revolutionary soldier, known as 'the Liberator', born in Caracas (Venezuela). He came from an ancient Basque family which had lived in Venezuela for 200 years. A tour of Europe during the early years of *Napoléon's power awakened a mind already inspired by the writings of *Voltaire and *Rousseau to an interest in public affairs. It is said that it was in Rome (1805) that he determined to liberate South America from Spanish domination. He took part, under *Miranda's leadership, in the formation of the first Venezuelan republic and when that was overthrown was allowed to leave the country unharmed. Eventually, in 1813, in New Granada (Colombia) he was put in command of a force of 600 men and defeated the isolated Spanish detachments one by one to re-occupy Venezuela's capital at Caracas. But again the Spaniards rallied and restored the situation. Undismayed Bolívar collected a new army, secured Angostura in 1816 and by a daring winter march over the Andes drove the Spanish viceroy from Bogota (Colombia). Venezuela was finally gained after the battle of Carabobo in 1821; the liberation of Ecuador followed almost at once. This was linked with the republic of Gran Colombia (Colombia and Venezuela), already formed under Bolívar's presidency. Meanwhile General Jose de *San Martin had liberated the South with Chile and had entered Peru, which was Bolívar's next objective, but all possibility of a clash was avoided by San Martin's unselfish resignation in Bolívar's favour. Victories at Junin (August 1824) and the final triumph at Ayacucho (December) ended Spain's era of domination, and Upper Peru was named Bolivia in honour of its liberator. But faction and jealousy prevented his dream of a South American federation and the same influences turned against himself so that he was forced to resort to dictatorial methods which provoked hatred. He resigned from the presidency shortly before his death, but time has reinstated him as the greatest of South American heroes. He died poor in Santa Marta, Colombia and was buried in Caracas.

Masur, G., *Simon Bolivar*. 1969; Bushnell, D., *The Liberator: Simon Bolivar*. 1970; Arena, M., *Bolívar. American Liberator*. 2013.

Böll, Heinrich Theodor (1917–1985). German novelist, born in Cologne. He served in the German forces during World War II and became a full-time writer in 1947. His works, pre-occupied with the implications of German war guilt, attack all forms of authoritarianism and bureaucracy and include *The Unguarded House* (1954), *Billiards at Half-Past Nine* (1961), *The Clowns* (1963), *Group Portrait of a Lady* (1973) and *The Lost Honour of Katharina Blum* (1974). He received the 1972 Nobel Prize for Literature and was President of International PEN 1971–74.

Reid, J. H., *Heinrich Böll*. 1973.

Bolsonaro, Jair Messias (1955–). Brazilian politician, born near São Paulo. An army officer 1973–88, he represented Rio de Janeiro in the National Congress 1991–2018 as an outspoken conservative on social issues and a strong nationalist. Elected in October 2018 with 55 per cent of the vote, he served as President of Brazil 2019–23, the first conservative to win since 1990. He promoted Trumpian, authoritarian policies, sceptical about climate change, the Covid pandemic and female liberation. He began stripping the Amazonian rainforest and Covid deaths were second only to the US. After a bitterly polarised campaign he was defeated narrowly (51 per cent to 49 per cent) in October 2022 by Luiz Ignácio *Lula da Silva.

Bolt, Robert Oxton (1924–1995). English dramatist, born in Manchester. Educated at Manchester Grammar School and Manchester University, he became a schoolmaster. *Flowering Cherry* (1957) was his first successful play, a 'Chekhovian study of failure and self-deception'. His third play *A Man for All Seasons* (1960), a sympathetic study of Thomas

*More, was also filmed (1966). Other plays included *The Tiger and the Horse* (1960), *Gentle Jack* (1963), *Vivat! Vivat! Regina!* (1970). He scripted the films *Lawrence of Arabia*, *Doctor Zhivago*, *Ryan's Daughter*, *The Mission* and *Lady Caroline Lamb* (which he directed).

Bolte, Sir Henry Edward (1908–1990). Australian Liberal politician, born in Ballarat. A farmer, he was an army sergeant in World War II and a Member of the Victorian Legislative Assembly 1947–72. An unexpected choice as Liberal leader, following the Labor split of 1954–55 he defeated John *Cain and served as Premier of Victoria for a record term 1955–72. Authoritarian, but shrewd and often underrated, he retired at a time of his own choosing.

Boltzmann, Ludwig Eduard (1844–1906). Austrian physicist, born in Vienna. He taught at Graz, Vienna, Munich and Leipzig, worked (independently from *Maxwell) on the kinetic theory of gases and devised the 'Boltzmann constant' (the ratio of the mean total energy of a molecule to its absolute temperature). He modified the second law of thermodynamics to introduce the concept of probability; this led to statistical mechanics. He also grasped the significance of information theory and proposed (1894) that 'entropy is missing information'. Boltzmann hanged himself, feeling isolated over atomic theory.

Bonaparte (Buonaparte). Corsican-French family which migrated from Italy in the 16th century, made famous by *Napoléon I. His father, **Carlo Buonaparte** (1746–1785), was a lawyer. His mother, **Letizia Ramolino** (1750–1836), came of an old Corsican family. She was the **Madame Mère** of imperial history, a strong personality in her own right, who, however, eschewed political power. The fortunes of her other children were dependent upon their famous brother. **Joseph** (1768–1844), who married Julie Clary (*Bernadotte), was made king of Naples in 1806 and transferred to the throne of Spain in 1808. He was a competent administrator but the Peninsular War prevented effective rule. He abdicated in 1813. After Waterloo he farmed in the US until 1832 and finally settled in Florence. **Lucien** (1775–1840) was President of the Council of 500 in 1799 and played a decisive part in the *coup d'état*, which brought Napoléon to power. A republican by conviction he dissociated himself from his brother's policies but gained a large fortune by speculation. He was captured by the English army on the way to America in 1810 and imprisoned for the rest of the war. **Louis** (1778–1846), a soldier, married Hortense de Beauharnais, daughter of *Josephine, later Napoléon's empress, in 1802 and was father of the future *Napoléon III. Napoléon made him King of Holland in 1806 but forced him out in 1810 when he refused to join the Continental blockade against English trade. He lived in Switzerland, then in Italy, devoting himself to literature. The youngest of the brothers, **Jerôme** (1784–1860), married Elizabeth Patterson while in America as a young man. Later, as King of Westphalia 1806–13, he was forced to marry Princess Catherine of Württemberg, and their descendants maintained the Bonapartist claims. Jerôme returned to influence and office under Napoléon III. He was created a marshal of France in 1850. Of the sisters of this imperial brotherhood, **Élisa** (née Maria Anna Bonaparte, later Baciocchi Lévoy) (1777–1820), was created Princess of Piombino and Lucca in 1805, and Grand Duchess of Tuscany in 1809; after her first husband General Charles Leclerc died, the fascinating and frivolous **Pauline** (née Maria Paolo Bonaparte) (1780–1825) married Prince Camillo Borghese, was created Process of Guastalla, and became the subject of a semi-nude sculpture, *Venus Victrix*, by *Canova. Niccolo *Paganini was one of her lovers; **Caroline** (née Maria-Annonciata Carolina Bonaparte, later Murat) (1782–1839) married Joachim *Murat, Napoléon's dashing cavalry general and was queen consort of Naples 1808–15.

Markham, F., *The Bonapartes*. 1975.

Bonar Law, Andrew *see* **Law, Andrew Bonar**

Bonaventura, St (Giovanni di Fidenza) (1221–1274). Italian theologian, born near Orvieto. He studied in Paris and entered (1243) the Franciscan Order of friars of which he finally became general (1256). In 1274 he was appointed cardinal and Bishop of Albano. He died during the Council of Lyon, and was canonised in 1482. His mystical philosophy earned him the name 'seraphic doctor'. As general he did much by tact and personality to reconcile the differences between those who demanded strict adherence to the order of absolute poverty laid down by St *Francis and those who pointed out the impracticability of such rigour, as well as the evils of mendicancy. Bonaventura adopted a middle way: he enjoined the strictest simplicity of life but allowed certain departures from the letter of the rule, e.g. by defending the friars' right to receive offerings. In disputes between friars and regular clergy he strongly defended the friars' rights, e.g. to hear confession and preach without clerical permission. Bonaventura's theological writings remain important.

Bondarchuk, Sergei Fedorovich (1920–1994). Russian film actor and director, born in the Ukraine. A notable stage *Othello* (1956), his masterpiece was the four-part film *War and Peace* (1962–67) which he directed and in which he played the role of Pierre Bezukhov. This won the 1968 Oscar for best foreign film.

Bondfield, Margaret Grace (1873–1953). English Labour politician, born in Somerset. She became an organiser with the shop assistants' union, was a Member of Parliament 1923–24 and 1926–31 and the first British woman Cabinet member as Minister

of Labour 1929–31. The first woman to be appointed a Privy Counsellor (1929), she was awarded a Companion of Honour (1948).

Bondi, Sir Hermann (1919–2005). Austrian-British mathematician and cosmologist, born in Vienna. With Fred *Hoyle and Thomas Gold he was a proponent of the now discredited 'steady state' theory of the universe. He was a professor at King's College, London, 1954–85 and Master of Churchill College, Cambridge, 1983–90.

Bonhoeffer, Dietrich (1906–1945). German Protestant pastor and theologian, born in Breslau, Prussia (now Wroclaw, Poland). He studied at the universities of Tübingen, Rome and Berlin 1923–27 and was then ordained a Lutheran minister. After working in Barcelona, New York and Britain, he became a lecturer at the University of Berlin in 1931, and from 1933 spoke for the German Protestant opposition to the Nazis. He left Germany in 1933 but returned in 1935 as head of the seminary at Finkenwalk, and as a member of the Military Intelligence Department worked secretly with the resistance. Arrested in April 1943, he was held at Tegel, briefly at Buchenwald, then at Flossenberg, where he was hanged, naked, in April 1945, together with Admiral *Canaris, a fortnight before US troops liberated the camp. His brother and brother-in-law were also executed, elsewhere, for their suspected involvement in the 1944 plot against *Hitler. A radical theologian, Bonhoeffer rejected much of the apparatus of traditional Christianity. His posthumous published works include *Letters and Papers from Prison* (1953), *The Cost of Discipleship* (1959) and *Acting and Being* (1962).

Bethge, E., *Dietrich Bonhoeffer*. 1970.

Boniface, St (originally Wynfrith) (c.675–754). English missionary, born in Wessex. Educated in Benedictine monasteries at Exeter and Nursling, he became abbot of Nursling in 717. A preliminary mission to Germany failed, but in 718 he went to Rome and was commissioned by Pope Gregory II to resume his task of converting the heathen. His method was to follow up his preaching by building churches and monasteries and planting little colonies of monks and nuns. Successes in Hesse and Thuringia led to his appointment as bishop of a new German church east of the Rhine, which, having become an archbishop (c.732), he divided into the dioceses of Salzburg, Freising, Regensburg and Passau. Re-organisation of the Frankish Church followed and he is reputed to have anointed *Pepin as king. In 753 Boniface resumed his missionary work in Friesland, but in the following year he and 50 of his followers were killed in a pagan attack. He was buried at Fulda Abbey in Hesse, a future centre of learning which he had founded. His feast day is 5 June.

Reuter, T. A. (ed.), *The Greatest Englishman*. 1980.

Boniface (Bonifatius) **VIII** (Benedetto Caetani) (1235–1303). Pope 1294–1303. Trained in law and experienced in papal diplomacy he succeeded *Celestine V, whose resignation he helped to bring about. Despite his ability and energy he failed to maintain the temporal supremacy of the papacy against *Edward I of England and *Philippe IV of France. He was attacked by *Dante in the *Commedia*.

Bonington, Richard Parkes (1801–1828). English painter in France. He grew up in France, devoted himself to watercolours until 1824, then turned to oils. A friend of *Delacroix, he greatly admired *Constable, and his seascapes, landscapes and travel scenes were popular in London and Paris.

Bonnard, Pierre (1867–1947). French painter. From about 1890 to 1899 he belonged with *Vuillard and others to a Symbolist group of Post-Impressionist painters called the 'Nabis' (after a Hebrew word for prophet), mainly inspired by *Gauguin. Bonnard's particular circle was known as 'Intimists'. After 1900, Bonnard developed an individual style, not working, like the Impressionists, direct from nature but from memory. Subtle light and colour effects provide the main theme of subjects such as landscapes, gardens, sailing boats, and nudes in various outdoor and indoor settings.

Ferminger, A., *Pierre Bonnard*. 1969.

Bonnet, Georges-Etienne (1889–1973). French Radical politician. He served as a Deputy 1924–40 and 1956–68. As Foreign Minister 1938–39, he took part in the Munich Conference, supported 'appeasement' and was equivocal under *Pétain.

Boole, George (1815–1864). English mathematician and logician, born in Lincoln. Son of a shoemaker, he was largely self-educated, became a schoolteacher and professor of mathematics at Queen's College, Cork 1849–64. Boole pioneered modern symbolic logic and his 'algebra of logic' is one of the basic principles used in modern computer design, especially in 'binary switching', where quantities can be expressed by using only two symbols (0 and 1). 'Binary logic' led to the creation of the NOT, AND and OR gates in computers.

Boone, Daniel (1735–1820). American pioneer, born in Pennsylvania. In 1750 his family moved to the frontier of North Carolina. He gained his first experiences of frontier wars as blacksmith and teamster in General Edward Braddock's campaign of 1755, but the heroic legends that have attached themselves to his name date from when he first entered Kentucky in 1767 and subsequently colonised and opened up the country, hunting, exploring and fighting Indians the while.

Boot, Jesse, 1st Baron Trent (1850–1931). English pharmacist and manufacturer, born in Nottingham. His father bought a herbal medicine shop in 1849,

and after he died, Jesse Boot assisted his mother from the age of 10, opening his own business in 1877. He founded Boots Pure Drug Co. in 1888. The Boots chain, calling itself 'Chemists to the Nation', both manufactured and retailed drugs, and diversified into libraries and bicycles. Jesse Boot was an active Liberal and a generous donor to the University of Nottingham. Boots was sold to American investors in 1920, returned to UK ownership in 1933, moved to Switzerland in 2007 and Walgreen's bought it in 2012.

Booth, John Wilkes (1838–1865). American actor, born in Maryland. He assassinated Abraham *Lincoln in Washington in April 1865 as an act of revenge for the Union's defeat of the Confederacy. He escaped to Virginia, where he was shot by troops. His father, **Junius Brutus Booth** (1796–1852) was an actor who, having made successes in Shakespearian parts, especially Richard III, emigrated to America in 1821 and there enjoyed a successful career, but, owing to alcoholism and melancholia, died insane. **Edwin Thomas Booth** (1833–1893), the assassin's brother, acted with his father for some years. He also acted in Australia in 1854. The success of his Hamlet in New York in 1864 marked him out as one of the foremost actors of the day. During a European tour (1880–82) his Othello, played to *Irving's Iago, was enthusiastically received. His 1890 recording of a speech from *Othello* can be heard on YouTube.

Smith, G., *American Gothic*. 1988.

Booth, William (1829–1912). English religious leader, born in Nottingham. Founder of the Salvation Army, he was an evangelist with the Methodist New Connexion for many years. Having left them to act independently, he founded, in 1865, a mission in Whitechapel, London, which proved to be the forerunner of the Salvation Army, established in 1878. He introduced military methods, uniform and discipline into evangelising work, 'General' Booth himself being in supreme command. The organisation, which spread over the world, became known for the rousing music of its open-air services, its shelters for the down-and-out and the courage with which its members penetrated the most degraded districts of the great cities. His son (William) **Bramwell Booth** (1856–1929), a capable organiser, succeeded his father as 'General' 1912–29 and was awarded the CH. Bramwell's sister, (Cory) **Evangeline Booth** (1865–1950), directed the Salvation Army in the US 1904–34 and became 'General' 1934–39. Bramwell's daughter, **Catherine Bramwell Booth** (1883–1985) was an effective publicist for the Army.

Collier, R., *The General Next to God*. 1965.

Boothroyd, Betty, Baroness Boothroyd (1929–2023). English Labour politician. She worked as a political secretary, became an MP 1973–2000 and the first woman to be elected Speaker of the House of Commons 1992–2000. She received the OM in 2005.

Borden, Lizzie Andrew (1860–1927). American accused murderer. She was 'heroine' of one of the most famous of American trials and of a rhyme commemorating it. In 1892 her stepmother and father were hacked to death with an axe at their home at Fall River, Massachusetts. She was tried for their murder and acquitted.

Borden, Sir Robert Laird (1854–1937). Canadian politician, born in Nova Scotia. Distantly related to Lizzie *Borden, he became prominent as a lawyer before his election to the Canadian Parliament 1896–1904; 1905–20. He led the Conservative Party 1901–20, won the election of 1911 and, as Prime Minister 1911–20, guided the country through World War I. By insisting upon Canada's signing the treaty of Versailles separately from Great Britain he confirmed its status as a sovereign independent state. He resigned in 1920 and was succeeded by Arthur *Meighen.

Wilson, H. A., *The Imperial Policy of Sir Robert Borden*. 1966.

Bordet, Jules (1870–1961). Belgian bacteriologist. He won the Nobel Prize for Medicine (1919) for discovering the bacillus of whooping cough.

Borelli, Giovanni Alfonso (1608–1679). Italian scientist. In his early career he was chiefly a mathematician, becoming professor of mathematics at Messina in 1640 and professor at Pisa in 1656. He examined the mechanical basis of respiration, circulation, nerves, and above all muscular activities. He closely studied the processes whereby the brain communicated physical impulses to muscles via the nervous system, and tried to calculate the quantity of force involved. He was interested in the physical force required to pump blood round the body, and studied digestive processes (which he believed were chiefly mechanical rather than chemical). He made accurate observations of Jupiter's satellites and studied volcanic eruptions on Etna.

Borges, Jorge Luis (1899–1986). Argentinan poet, critic, short story writer and essayist, born in Buenos Aires. He learned English at home (his mother was a translator), was educated in Buenos Aires and Geneva, lived in Spain 1920–21 and became associated with the *ultraismo* movement in poetry, which he introduced to Argentina. His volumes of poetry include *Ferver de Buenos Aires* (1923) and *Luna de enfrente* (1925). His tales, revealing a baroque imagination, a taste for the arcane and an interest in metaphysical problems, appear in such collections as *Ficciones 1935–44* (1944, English translation 1962). Other important works include *El Aleph* (1949), *Extraordinary Tales* (1955), *Labyrinths* (1962) and *The Book of Imaginary Beings* (1967). He was librarian 1938–47, demoted to market inspector by *Perón, but appointed director of the National Library in 1955 just as he became totally blind.

Borghese. Italian noble family, originally from Siena, then Rome. Camillo Borghese became Pope *Paul V. His nephew, **Cardinal Scipio Borghese** (1577–1633), a patron of *Bernini, built the Villa Borghese to house his treasures. It was rebuilt and extended in 1782 and remains one of Rome's greatest galleries. The existing collection (now state property) was mainly brought together by **Prince Camillo Borghese** (1775–1832), husband of *Napoléon's sister, Pauline. The Borghese palace is one of the most magnificent in Rome.

Borgia, Cesare (1476–1507). Italian soldier. Son of Pope *Alexander VI, he was made a cardinal by his father in 1493 but gave up the office five years later. A mission to France in 1498 carrying papal dispensation for *Louis XII to marry *Anne of Brittany was rewarded with the duchy of Valentinois and the promise of help in the Romagna, which it was Alexander VI's policy to unite and rule. This aim was achieved by Cesare in three campaigns in which guile and military skill were artfully combined. His father's death in 1503 caught him ill and unprepared to meet his enemies. Arrested in Neapolitan territory he escaped from a prison to die fighting at last in the cause of his brother-in-law, the King of Navarre. His political tactics, often treacherous, were described with a mixture of horror and fascination in *Machiavelli's *The Prince*.

Sacerdote, G., *Cesare Borgia*. 1950.

Borgia, Lucrezia, Duchess of Ferrara (1480–1519). Italian noblewoman, born in Rome. Daughter of the Spanish cardinal Rodrigo Borgia, later Pope *Alexander VI, and sister of Cesare, she married first Giovanni Sforza, second the Duke of Biscelgie, and third the Duke of Ferrara. She was often accused of complicity in her family's crimes and moral excesses, though there is no evidence to support her active participation. In fact, she left a reputation for learning, beauty and charity, and was said to have enjoyed the respect of her subjects. In 1501 she appeared with the mysterious Roman Infant, Giovanni, her supposed natural son. Two papal bulls recognised him first as Cesare's illegitimate son, then Alexander's. The latter was probably the true father. This and Lucrezia's attendance at an infamous orgy held at the Vatican led to rumours of incest. On Alexander's death in 1503 Lucrezia ceased to be a political pawn and led a more normal life at the court of Ferrara, which became a cultural centre of the Italian Renaissance.

Borglum, (John) **Gutzon** (de la Mothe) (1867–1941). American sculptor. Obsessed by the monumental sculptures of ancient Egypt, his works include the huge bust of *Lincoln in the Capitol Rotunda, Washington DC, and the heads of *Washington, *Jefferson, *Lincoln and Theodore *Roosevelt carved on Mt Rushmore, South Dakota (memorably featured in *Hitchcock's film *North by North-West*). He supported the Ku Klux Klan.

Borg Olivier, Giorgio (1911–1980). Maltese Nationalist politician. The political history of Malta in the years preceding independence (September 1964) were largely struggles for power between Borg Olivier's party, with strong clerical backing, and Dom *Mintoff's Labour Party. He was Prime Minister 1950–55 (under British rule) and 1962–71.

Boris I (?d.907). Prince of Bulgaria 853–88. Regarded as a national saint, he succeeded his father, and was baptised (865) into the Greek Church, to which he confirmed his allegiance in 870, though in the intervening year he had addressed a questionnaire to Pope Nicholas II, obviously with a view to change. He abdicated in favour of his son Vladimir (888), but four years later left the monastery to which he had withdrawn to blind and depose the new king and substitute his second son, Symeon.

Boris III (né Boris Klemens Robert Maria Pius Ludwig Stanislaus Xaver von Saxe-Coburg-Gotha) (1894–1943). Tsar of Bulgaria 1918–43. He succeeded his father *Ferdinand, who had been forced to abdicate after World War I and, despite a strange passion for driving steam trains, was generally regarded as a well-meaning monarch with considerable skill at balancing opposing factions. Willingly or unwillingly, he became *Hitler's ally in World War II, but courageously refused to deport Bulgarian Jews or send troops to fight the USSR. After being summoned to visit Hitler in August 1943, three weeks later he died mysteriously: either a heart attack or poisoning. His son *Simeon II succeeded him.

Boris Godunov *see* **Godunov, Boris**

Borlaug, Norman Ernest (1914–2009). American agronomist. Working in Mexico on wheat and maize improvement from 1944, he became the most important figure in the 'Green Revolution', receiving the Nobel Peace Prize in 1970.

Bormann, Martin (1900–1945). German Nazi functionary. He joined the Nazi Party in 1927 and was personal secretary to Rudolf *Hess 1933–41. After Hess' eccentric flight to Scotland, Bormann became *Hitler's deputy 1941–45, and remained with him until his death. He disappeared at the end of the war, and was tried and condemned to death *in absentia* at the Nuremberg War Crimes Tribunal. There was much speculation that he had escaped to South America, but the discovery of his remains in 1972 confirmed that he died in Berlin.

Trevor Roper, H. (ed.), *Bormann Letters*. 1954.

Borodin, Aleksandr Porfirievich (1833–1887). Russian composer, born at St Petersburg. Illegitimate son of a prince, he first trained as a chemist and his

musical studies began in 1862 under *Balakirev. His works include three symphonies (one unfinished), the unfinished opera, *Prince Igor* and *In the Steppes of Central Asia*.

Dianin, S., *Borodin*. 1963.

Borotra, Jean (1898–1994). French tennis player. Known as 'the Bounding Basque', he won the men's singles at Wimbledon in 1924 and 1926 and the men's doubles with Jacques Brugnon in 1932 and 1933. Borotra, Cochet and *Lacoste, who dominated French lawn tennis for many years, were known as 'The Three Musketeers'.

Borromeo, St Carlo (1538–1584). Italian prelate, born in Arona. From a noble Milanese family, and a nephew of Pope Pius IV, he was made a cardinal before he was a priest. His ordination took place in 1563 and enabled him to become Archbishop of the See of Milan, of which he had so far been only the administrator. Meanwhile as Papal Secretary of State he was attending the final sessions (1563–64) of the Council of Trent and took the leading part in its success by formulating the decisions by which the Roman Church put its house in order and was so enabled to resist the spread of Protestantism. Later in his own diocese he put the reforms into practice, himself setting an example by his austere and simple life. Canonised in 1610, his biography was written by Pope *John XXIII. A kinsman, **Federico Borromeo** (1564–1631), also Cardinal-Archbishop of Milan, founded the Ambrosian Library there.

Borromini, Francesco (Francesco Castelli) (1599–1667). Italian architect and sculptor, born in Ticino. He worked in Rome with *Bernini, then became his rival, and was noted for his use of spectacular effects and pioneered the Baroque style. He designed three masterpieces in Rome. San Carlo alle Quattro Fontane (1638–41), appears weightless, with its beehive dome and interplay between concave and convex shapes. Sant'Ivo alla Sapienza (1642–50) has an interior marked by tension between concave and convex elements and has a surging quality, in constant movement. The Re Magi chapel in the Collegio di Propaganda Fide (1660–65), is small, restrained, contemplative and soothing. Borromini was melancholic, probably bipolar, and committed suicide by falling on his sword.

Morrissey, Jake, *The Genius in the Design. Bernini, Borromini and the Rivalry that Transformed Rome*. 2005.

Borrow, George (Henry) (1803–1881). English author and traveller. Son of a Cornish army captain, he was educated at the Royal Grammar School, Norwich, but studied languages in preference to law. In London he helped compile the *Newgate Calendar* but soon left (1825) to take up a wandering life, either alone or with gypsies, describing them in *Lavengro* (1851) and *Romany Rye* (1857). He worked for the British and Foreign Bible Society in Russia and Spain (1832–40) and wrote *The Bible in Spain* (1843). Spanish gypsies are the theme of *The Zineali* (1841). *Wild Wales* appeared in 1862 and in 1874 *Romano Lavo-Lil*, a much criticised book on the gypsy language.

Myers, R. R., *George Borrow*. 1966.

Bosch, Carl (1874–1940). German chemist and engineer, born in Köln. Nephew of Robert Bosch, who produced the first successful spark plug, he studied at Leipzig. Pioneering high pressure chemistry to synthesise nitrates, with Fritz *Haber he developed the Haber-Bosch nitrogen fixation process (1908–09), enabling large-scale production of ammonia and fertiliser. In 1925 he organised the merger of six large German chemical companies to become IG Farben. He shared the 1931 Nobel Prize for Chemistry, was hostile to the Nazis, denied work and became an alcoholic. Asteroid 7414 Bosch was named for him.

Bosch, Hieronymus (originally van Aeken) (c.1450–1516). Dutch painter, born probably at Hertogenbosch. He spent his life in his presumed birthplace and adopted its name. His paintings, strongly imbued with the fantastic and full of bizarre composite figures and grotesques, are perhaps the most extreme expression of the haunted mood of the late Middle Ages; the significance of his symbolism is now largely lost. Among the best known of his works are the *Seven Deadly Sins*, *The Hay Wain*, *The Earthly Paradise* and *The Temptation of St Anthony*. He was regarded by the Surrealists as an important precursor. His earlier work (e.g. *The Adoration of the Kings*) follows the tradition of Flemish religious art.

Combe, J., *Bosch*. 1957.

Bose, Amar Gopal (1929–2013). American-Bengali inventor, born in Philadelphia. Educated at the Massachusetts Institute of Technology, he founded the Bose Corporation in 1964, manufacturing outstanding home audio equipment and was a major benefactor to MIT.

Bose, (Sir) Jagadish Chandra (1858–1937). Indian (Bengali) polymath, born in Bikrampur. Educated in Calcutta (Kolkata), London and Cambridge, he experimented in an extraordinary diversity of fields: radio and microwave optics, discovery of millimetre length electro-magnetic waves, plant physiology (inventing the crescograph, which measured comparable electrical responses to stimuli by animal and plant tissues), the polarisation of rays by crystals, the first use of semiconductor crystals as detectors for radio waves, then analysed electrical responses in metals. He was also the first Bengali writer of science fiction and took a deep interest in archaeology. Knighted (1917) and elected FRS (1920), he never received a Nobel Prize but is now regarded as having been (as Sir Nevill Mott said) 'at least 60 years ahead

of his time'. He refused to patent his discoveries and his working conditions at the University of Calcutta were very primitive.

Bose, Satyendra Nath (1894–1974). Indian (Bengali) mathematician and physicist, born in Calcutta (Kolkata). Educated at Calcutta, where he was inspired by (but not related to) J. C. *Bose, he taught at Calcutta and Dhaka Universities, working on X-ray crystallography, relativity and quantum theory. He was also a linguist with profound knowledge of anthropology, zoology, geology and engineering. A pioneer of 'particle statistics' (1922), his methodology was adopted by *Einstein, and is now called 'Bose-Einstein statistics'. He also proposed (1925) what are now called 'Bose-Einstein condensates', proposing the clumping together of elementary particles, a concept that was theoretically attractive, but not able to be proven until 2012. The 'boson', defined as 'any of a class of particles, such as the photon, pion, or alpha particle, that have zero or integral spin and obey statistical rules permitting any number of identical particles to occupy the same quantum state', was named for him by Paul *Dirac. He never received a Nobel Prize but was elected FRS in 1958.

Bose, Subhas Chandra (1897–1945). Indian nationalist leader, born in Orissa. Educated at Calcutta and Cambridge universities, he opposed *Gandhi's policy of non-violent resistance to the British. In World War II he escaped to Germany and later became head of a provisional government of India under Japanese sponsorship. He is said to have met his death in an air crash. The Kolkata/Calcutta international airport is named after him.

Bossuet, Jacques Bénigne (1627–1704). French bishop, historian, and rhetorician, born in Dijon. Precocious, he was tonsured at the age of 10 and after instruction from (St) *Vincent de Paul became a priest. A master of baroque rhetoric, he was famous for his funeral orations, including those for *Henrietta Maria, widow of *Charles I, and the great *Condé. Bishop of Condom 1669–70, he became tutor to the Dauphin Louis (1661–1711), was elected to the Académie française and had great influence at court until his appointment as Bishop of Meaux 1681–1704. He supported Gallicanism, asserting that the king could exercise jurisdiction over the French Church, approved the revocation (1685) of the Edict of Nantes, removing legal protection for Protestantism (but then urged moderation), and obtained Rome's condemnation of *Fenelon's doctrine of Quietism (a passive form of religious mysticism). He wrote *Discours sur l'histoire universelle* (1681) and corresponded with *Leibniz.

Calvet, J., *Bossuet*. 1968.

Boswell, James (1740–1795). Scottish author and biographer, born in Edinburgh. Son of Lord Auchinleck, a judge, he was called to the bar but found his main interest in literature. In 1760 he went to London, living as an energetic libertine, and in May 1763 first met Dr Samuel *Johnson, taking notes of the conversations and opinions of the famous lexicographer until his death in 1784. Between 1764 and 1766 he toured the Continent, introduced himself to *Voltaire and *Rousseau and had numerous love affairs. His *Account of Corsica* (1768) commemorated a visit to the island's hero, Pasquale di *Paoli. In 1773 he took Johnson to the Hebrides but it was 12 years before the appearance of *Journal of a Tour of the Hebrides* (1785). In 1791 he published the *Life of Samuel Johnson*, which has become the most famous biography in the English language. It was the product of careful research as well as being an eyewitness—it has been calculated that Boswell met Johnson on 276 occasions (about 425 days). Yale University Press began publishing his journals in 1950, the private papers in 1993. He had 17 bouts of venereal disease, periods of alcoholism, bipolar mood swings and gambling addiction. His letters to his great friend William Johnson Temple provide biographical detail covering nearly 40 years. After initial support for the anti-slavery movement, he became a partisan of the slave trade.

Pottle, F. A., *The Literary Career of James Boswell*. 1966; *James Boswell, the Earlier Years*. 1966; Wain, J., *The Journals of James Boswell 1762–95*. 1994.

Botha, Louis (1862–1919). South African general and politician, born in Natal. Though an opponent of *Kruger's Uitlander policies he joined the Transvaal forces as a volunteer in the Boer War, and later captured Winston *Churchill. Later, having been given command, he defeated the British at Colenso and Spion Kop. After the peace of Vereeniging (1902) he bore no bitterness and when Transvaal was given a constitution (1906) became its first premier 1907–10. As first Prime Minister of the Union of South Africa, and Commander-in-Chief, 1910–19, his main policy was restoring harmony between white South Africans of British and Afrikaner descent. (The role of black South Africans was given lower priority.) On the outbreak of World War I in 1914, Botha, strongly supported by his deputy, Jan *Smuts, immediately brought in South Africa on the British side, defeated an Afrikaner rebellion led by Christiaan de Wet and led the troops who occupied (1915) German South West Africa (now Namibia). He attended the Versailles Conference (1919), signed the treaty reluctantly and returned home to die.

Botha, Pieter Willem (1916–2006). South African Nationalist politician. He served as Minister of Defence 1965–78 and succeeded B. J. *Vorster as Prime Minister of South Africa 1978–84. He became the first executive state president under the new constitution 1984–89. Secret negotiations with Nelson *Mandela and the ANC began in 1989 but Botha suffered a stroke and was replaced as party leader by F. W. *de Klerk.

Bothwell, James Hepburn, 4th Earl of (c.1535–1578). Scottish nobleman. After the murder of *Rizzio (1566), he became one of the chief advisors of *Mary Queen of Scots, who had probably first met him when he came to France on a mission to ask help for her mother and regent, Mary of Guise, widow of *James V. When *Darnley, the queen's second husband, was killed in an explosion (1567), Bothwell was charged with the murder and acquitted, although most historians believe him to have been guilty (and probably Mary as well). Bothwell then abducted the queen (almost certainly with her connivance) and married her, after divorcing his wife. The nobles rose in revolt, and the queen was captured and deposed. Bothwell escaped to Norway. He later became prisoner of the King of Denmark and died in captivity, insane. The popular belief that Bothwell was a boorish, unmannered brute is not borne out by fact: he was reckless, pitiless and unscrupulous but he had the graces of a courtier and was fond of poetry as well as of dancing and dress.

Botticelli, Sandro (Alessandro di Mariano dei Filipepi) (c.1445–1510). Florentine painter. A pupil of Fra Filippo *Lippi, he was patronised by the *Medici family. His early works (e.g. his *Birth of Venus*, *Primavera* and *Mars and Venus*) have a great delicacy, freshness and poignancy coupled with a rare linear subtlety of design. The iconography of the major mythological pieces is highly complex. Although a product of Renaissance humanism as regards content, his painting represents, in its essentially linear manner, the persistence of a 'Gothic' tradition which was in slightly archaic contrast to the strongly plastic High Renaissance style evolved by *Leonardo, *Raphael and *Michelangelo, and he declined in popularity after about 1500. Most of his work was done in Florence but in 1481 he was in Rome helping to decorate the Sistine Chapel for Pope *Sixtus IV. After 1497 he became a follower of *Savonarola and most of his later works are religious, ecstatic and anti-naturalistic, like *The Adoration of the Magi* and *The Coronation of the Virgin*. He also illustrated Dante's *Divine Comedy* with sensitive outline drawings (1492–97). His work was much loved (and extensively forged) in the 19th century.

Argan, G. C., *Botticelli*. 1957.

Botvinnik, Mikhail Moiseyevich (1911–1995). Russian chess player. He was world champion 1948–57, 1958–60, 1961–63.

Bouchard, Lucien (1938–). Canadian politician. He was Ambassador to France 1985–88, Minister for the Environment 1989–90 and Leader of the Opposition in the Canadian Parliament 1993–96 after the Bloc Québécois ran second to *Chrétien's Liberals. His leg was amputated in 1994. He led the campaign for Québec independence in the 1995 referendum and was Premier of Québec 1996–2001.

Boucher, François (1703–1770). French artist. The most typical of the rococo decorators, he was a protégé of Madame de *Pompadour (*Louis XV's favourite) and was noted for tapestry designs, panelled interiors and gay, slightly improper mythological paintings. Fine examples of his work can be seen in the Wallace Collection, London, and the Frick Collection, New York.

Boucher de Crèvecoeur de Perthes, Jacques (1788–1868). French prehistorian. A customs official at Abbeville, he became an amateur archaeologist and was one of the first to declare that man had existed in the Pleistocene epoch. In 1837 he began collecting roughly worked flints in the Somme gravels and declared them to be of 'antediluvian' origin because of their association with extinct Ice Age animals. At first his theories were received with scepticism, but they began to win acceptance after Charles *Lyell pronounced in their favour before the Royal Society in 1859.

Boucicaut, Jean II le Meingre de (c.1366–1421). French nobleman and soldier. He fought in Prussia, Spain and France, and was created Maréchal de France. Captured in the catastrophic Crusade of Nicopolis (1396), now in Greece, and ransomed, he later defended Constantinople. He fought at Agincourt (1415), was taken by the English and died in Yorkshire. Famous as a jouster, he created a chivalric order and commissioned magnificent illuminated manuscripts.

Bougainville, Louis Antoine de (1729–1811). French navigator and scientist. After the end of the Seven Years' War, during which he served with *Montcalm in Canada, he joined the navy and established a French colony in the Falkland Islands. He sailed round the world (1766–79) and rediscovered the Solomon Islands, one of which is named after him. He served with distinction in the War of American Independence but then occupied himself entirely with science. Bougainville was an expert mathematician and a friend of *Diderot and *Rousseau. His membership of the Legion d'honneur was one of several distinctions conferred on him by *Napoléon.

Boulanger, Georges Ernest Jean Marie (1837–1891). French general, born in Rennes. After service in Algeria, Italy and Indochina, he was wounded in suppressing the Paris Commune in 1871. In 1884 he commanded in Tunisia, and was Minister of War 1886–87, attaining immense popularity by his jingoistic policy and unwavering attitude to Germany over an incident involving a frontier arrest. Fears, perhaps exaggerated, of a *coup d'etat*, caused the removal of his name from the army list. This enabled him to seek election. With a somewhat vague program of parliamentary dissolution and constitutional revision he drew support not only from militarists and monarchists but also from radicals. However, the government and its supporters

reacted strongly. Boulanger was defeated in the Marne election (1888) and fearing arrest for treason he went to Brussels where, after the death of his mistress, he committed suicide. The term 'boulangisme' was later used to decry any such movement towards military dictatorship.

Boulanger, Nadia Juliette (1887–1979). French teacher, conductor, composer and pianist. She worked in France and the US, took a leading role in the revival of *Monteverdi and her pupils included Lennox *Berkeley, Aaron *Copland, Jean Francaix, Igor Markevitch, Dinu *Lipatti, Elliot *Carter, Philip *Glass and her sister **Lili Boulanger** (1893–1918), an able composer.

Boulez, Pierre (Louis Joseph) (1925–2016). French composer and conductor, born in Montbrison. He studied mathematics, engineering and music at Lyon, composition with Olivier *Messiaen at the Paris Conservatoire (1944–45) and conducting under René Leibowitz. In 1947 he became musical director of *Barrault's theatre company, the Marigny. In 1954 he founded the Concerts Marigny, avant-garde concerts later known as Domaine Musical. Influenced by *Debussy and *Stravinsky, his early compositions included *Flute Sonatina* (1946) and *La Visage Nuptial* (1946–52). His *Structures* (1952 and 1961) for two pianos were a turning point in his musical development. His work has produced interesting and sometimes violent criticism and is extremely difficult to perform. By the 1960s he had an international reputation as a composer and conductor, and was musical director of the Cleveland Orchestra (1970–72), the New York Philharmonic (1971–77) and the BBC Symphony Orchestra (1971–75). He directed *Wagner's *Ring* cycle at Bayreuth (1976–80) in Patrice Chereau's production. Georges *Pompidou invited Boulez, after a decade of self-imposed exile from France to create the Ensemble intercontemporain (EIC) in 1976 and establish IRCAM (*Institut de Recherches et Coordination Acoustique/Musique*) which he directed 1977–91. He also wrote extensively, including musical theory, aesthetics and on Paul *Klee.

Boulle (or Buhl), **André Charles** (1642–1732). French cabinet maker. His elaborate marque-tried furniture was in great demand in the reign of *Louis XIV. The description 'boulle' is often applied not only to his own work and that of his sons, who worked with him, but to the many imitations of later years. There are examples in the Louvre, in Windsor Castle and the Wallace Collection, London.

Boullée, Etienne-Louis (1728–1799). French architect, born in Paris. After 1780 he planned vast futuristic structures (none actually built) which anticipate 20th-century architectural megalomania. His work was featured in Peter Greenaway's film *The Belly of an Architect* (1987).

Pérouse de Montclos, J-M., *Etienne-Louis Boullée*. 1974.

Boult, Sir Adrian Cedric (1889–1983). English conductor, born in Chester. He received his musical training at Oxford and with *Nikisch in Leipzig. He conducted the City of Birmingham Orchestra 1924–30 (and again 1959–60) but won international recognition as the first chief conductor of the BBC Symphony Orchestra 1930–50, admired as one of the world's greatest ensembles. He made many recordings, became principal conductor of the London Philharmonic Orchestra 1951–57 and received a CH in 1969.

Boult, A., *My Own Trumpet*. 1973.

Boulton, Matthew (1728–1809). English engineer, born in Birmingham. Best known for his partnership with James *Watt for the construction of steam engines, his main interest lay in the provision of power for the factory in Soho (near Birmingham), where a variety of metal articles, useful or ornamental, were produced. Later Boulton applied steam power to the manufacture of coins. Many scientists and writers (e.g. *Boswell) were among his friends. He was a founder of the Lunar Society (Erasmus *Darwin) and an FRS.

Clay, R., *Matthew Boulton and the Art of Making Money*. 2009.

Boumédienne, Houari (Mohammed Boukharraba) (1927–1978). Algerian politician, born in Bône. From a poor peasant family, he became a schoolteacher. He joined the National Liberal Front (1954) and became friend and confidant of *Ben Bella whom he supported in becoming the first president of independent Algeria. In 1965 he organised a coup, which deposed Ben Bella and he became the new president. He died in office in December 1978.

Bourassa, Robert (1933–1996). Canadian politician. Educated at Montréal, Oxford and Harvard universities, he became a lawyer, then a bureaucrat and a professor of public finances at Montréal and Laval universities. A moderate on the secession issue, he led the Québec Liberal Party 1970–77, 1983–1994 and was Premier 1970–76, 1985–94.

Bourbon. French noble family that provided dynasties for France, Spain, Naples and Parma. The line, named after a village in central France, was founded when in 1276 Robert de Clermont, a son of King *Louis IX, married Beatrice de Bourbon. The direct line died out but the name and title passed in 1527 to Charles, Duke of Vendôme, whose son married Jeanne d'Albret, Queen of Navarre. Their son *Henri IV became the first of the Bourbon kings. The last of the senior line was *Charles X, though *Louis Philippe of the Orléanist branch reigned 1830–48, and his descendants are the present pretenders. The Spanish Bourbons replaced the Habsburgs after Charles II had died childless and left his kingdom to Louis XIV's grandson *Philip V. Members of the dynasty continued to

reign until *Alfonso XIII left the country in 1930. The Neapolitan Bourbons and the Parma branch stemmed from the Spanish line.

Bourgeois, Léon Victor Auguste (1851–1925). French Radical politician. He defeated *Boulanger in the Marne election of 1888 and subsequently held a long series of ministerial posts. He was prominent internationally at The Hague conferences and in the League of Nations which he helped to found. He won the Nobel Peace Prize in 1920.

Bourgeois, Louise (1911–2010). French-American sculptor and graphic artist, born in Paris. A pupil of *Leger, she lived in the US from 1938 and became a citizen in 1953. Her works were powerful and sexually ambiguous, and include the nine-metre-high metal sculpture of a spider *Maman* (2000) (at the Guggenheim in Bilbao and in Qatar).

Bourget, Paul (1852–1935). French writer. His novels at first concentrated on the psychological analysis of characters but after his conversion to Catholicism in 1901 they tended to become vehicles for the transmission of traditionalist views. *L'Etape* (1902) marks the culmination of the first period, during which his best known books include *L'Irréparable* (1884). *On Crime d'amour* (1886) and *André Cornélis* (1887). *Le Démon de Midi* (1914) is typical of the later period.

Bourguiba, Habib Ben Ali (1903–2000). Tunisian politician. Son of an officer, he studied law in Paris, became a journalist and founded the Neo-Destour party in 1934. Imprisoned 1934–36, 1938–43, he escaped and travelled for years promoting the cause of Tunisian independence. He was interned again 1952–54 and 1954–55, then after negotiations with the French became Prime Minister under the Bey of Tunis 1955–57. After the proclamation of a Republic, Bourguiba became President 1957–87 until his peaceful overthrow. He was then kept under house arrest.

Boutros-Ghali, Boutros (1922–2016). Egyptian politician and diplomat, born in Cairo. A Copt, educated at Cairo, Sorbonne and Columbia universities, he was professor of international law at Cairo 1949–77 and a prolific author. As Minister of State (i.e. undersecretary) for Foreign Affairs 1977–91, he was an architect of the Camp David accords (*Sadat) leading to the resumption of diplomatic relations between Egypt and Israel. After a brief period as Foreign Minister 1991–92, he became Secretary-General of the United Nations 1992–97. The US vetoed his candidature for a second term.

Bouts, Dirk (or Deiric) (c.1415–1475). Dutch painter, born in Haarlem. One of the most powerful of the Early Netherlandish school, his deeply emotional religious scenes are highly prized. He worked mostly in Louvain and died there.

Boyce, William (1710–1779). English composer and organist. Master of the King's Musick 1735–79, he also wrote Church music, stage music, chamber and orchestral works and several songs, including 'Hearts of Oak'. He made a compilation of Church music entitled *Cathedral Music* (1760–78).

Boycott, Charles Cunningham (1832–1897). English land agent. As agent for Lord Erne in Co. Mayo, Ireland his refusal to lower rents in times of hardship was punished (1880) by complete social and business isolation. This form of protest, invented by the Irish Land League, came to be known as a 'boycott'.

Boyd, Arthur Merric Bloomfield (1920–1999). Australian painter, born in Melbourne. The most prominent of a distinguished artistic family, he worked in London for many years, and turned from landscape to figurative works, many with literary, biblical or mythological themes, e.g. the *Nebuchadnezzar* series.

Niall, B., *The Boyds.* 2002; Bungey, D., *Arthur Boyd: A Life* 2007.

Boyd-Orr, John Boyd Orr, 1st Baron (1880–1971). Scottish agricultural scientist and dietetic expert. Educated at Glasgow University, he was director of the Rowett Research Institute, Aberdeen 1914–45, won a DSO and MC in World War and discovered many of the causes (e.g. lack of minerals) of nutritional deficiency in animals and human beings. These he subsequently expounded before many national and international bodies. His report *Food, Health and Income* (1936) made him famous. An independent MP 1944–45 and Chancellor of Glasgow University 1946–71, he became first Director-General of the UN Food and Agriculture Organisation (FAO) 1945–48 and in 1949 received the Nobel Prize for Peace and a peerage. He was awarded a CH in 1968.

Boyer, Charles (1899–1978). French actor, in the US from 1934. He played romantic leads with such actors as Greta *Garbo, Marlene *Dietrich and Ingrid *Bergman, later gaining a second reputation as a skilful character actor, e.g. in *Stavisky* (1972).

Boyle, Robert (1627–169l). Irish physicist and chemist, born at Lismore Castle, Munster. As his tombstone in Westminster recorded, Boyle was 'father of chemistry and brother of the Earl of Cork'. Educated at Eton, and by tutors, he travelled extensively in Europe, mastered Latin, French, Italian, Hebrew and Greek, became deeply devout and never married.

His book *Sceptical Chymist* (sic, 1661), demolished the concept of 'the four elements', transforming alchemy into a new discipline (although he kept an open mind on the transmutation of gold), and developed the art of experimentation. He was the first clearly to define an element in the terms we accept today (i.e. as a substance that cannot be split into simpler

substances by chemical analysis), and explained that all matter consists of atoms or combinations of atoms in motion. His widely ranging studies included pneumatics and crystallography. He is probably best known for his statement of the law (now known as Boyle's Law) that, at constant temperature, the volume of a gas varies inversely with the pressure. He founded a series of lectures to prove the existence of God. An original fellow of the Royal Society (1662), he was elected President (1680) but refused to take the oath and declined a peerage.

Maddison, R. E. W., *Life of the Honourable Robert Boyle*. 1969.

Bracken, Brendan Rendall Bracken, 1st Viscount (1901–1958). British Conservative politician, born in Ireland. Educated in Australia and at Sedbergh, he entered publishing and helped to build up the group of periodicals which centred on the *Financial News*. A Tory MP 1929–45, 1945–51, and devoted follower of Winston *Churchill, he succeeded Duff *Cooper as Minister of Information 1941–45 and was briefly First Lord of the Admiralty 1945.

Boyle, A., *Poor, Dear Brendan*. 1974; Lysaght, C. E., *Brendan Bracken*. 1979.

Bracton, Henry de (d.1268). English ecclesiastic and lawyer. He was an itinerant justice, who eventually became Chancellor of Exeter Cathedral, but his fame arises from his great treatise *On the Laws and Customs of England*, the first printed edition of which appeared in 1569.

Bradbury, Sir Malcolm (Stanley) (1932–2000). English novelist and critic, born in Sheffield. He held a chair at the University of East Anglia from 1970, and had a profound influence on Ian *McEwan, Kazuo *Ishiguro and W. G. *Sebald. His novels include *The History Man* (1975) and *To the Hermitage* (2000).

Bradlaugh, Charles (1833–1891). English radical politician. After working as a soldier and solicitor's clerk, he became an active pamphleteer under the name of 'Iconoclast' and ran the journal *National Reformer* from 1862. He worked with Annie *Besant 1874–85. Elected as MP for Northampton in 1880, he asked, as an atheist, to be permitted to take an affirmation instead of a religious oath. He was required to take an oath which he did not believe and was unseated following a petition from a common informer. Three by-elections followed and Bradlaugh won them all, only to be refused his seat. He won a fourth in 1885 and was permitted to take his seat in 1886. In 1888 he secured passage of the Affirmation Act.

Bradley, Francis Herbert (1846–1924). English philosopher. A research fellow of Merton College, Oxford 1867–1924, his philosophy of idealism was inspired by *Hegel and yet quite individual. In *Appearance and Reality* (1893) he argued that the ordinary world of qualities, relations, space, time and selves is in some sense 'unreal' and only 'appearance'. True reality is 'The Absolute', which is all encompassing and mental or spiritual in nature. Bradley was a vigorous critic of utilitarianism and his best known writing in ethics is an essay called 'My Station and Its Duties', contained in his *Ethical Studies* (1876). *Essays on Truth and Reality* appeared in 1914. He received the OM in 1924. His brother **Andrew Cecil Bradley** (1851–1935), literary critic, was professor of poetry at Oxford 1901–06. He wrote the influential *Shakespearian Tragedy* (1904) and *Oxford Lectures in Poetry* (1909).

Wollheim, R., *F. H. Bradley*. 1959.

Bradley, James (1693–1762). English astronomer, born at Sherborne, Dorset. Educated at Oxford he became vicar of Bridstow in 1719. Even earlier a remarkable talent for astronomy and mathematics had led to his election as FRS (1718). He was a professor of astronomy at Oxford from 1721 until he became astronomer royal in 1742. While attempting to measure stellar parallax he discovered the aberration of light, thus providing the first confirmation by observation of the theory that the earth moved round the sun (*Copernicus). Bradley also discovered nutation (oscillation of the earth's axis about its mean position).

Bradley, Omar Nelson (1893–1981). American General of the Army, born in Missouri. He served in North Africa 1942–43 and became Commander-in-Chief of US land forces in Europe 1944–45. He succeeded *Eisenhower as US Army Chief of Staff 1948–49 and became the first Chairman of the US Joint Chiefs of Staff 1949–53. He backed *Truman on the *MacArthur issue and wrote the memoirs *A Soldier's Story* (1951).

Bradman, Don (Sir Donald George) (1908–2001). Australian cricketer, born in Cootamundra. He grew up in Bowral, New South Wales. Perhaps the most brilliant and consistent batsman ever known, he first played for New South Wales in 1927 and for Australia in 1928, making the record score for first-class cricket of 452 runs, not out, in a state match against Queensland in 1930. (This stood until Hanif Mohammed scored 499 for Karachi in 1959). His Test batting average was 99.94 runs. He was Australian cricket captain 1936–49, receiving a knighthood in 1949 and an AC in 1979. He became a stockbroker in Adelaide, retiring in 1954, but became an active company director in Adelaide. He chaired the Australian Cricket Board 1960–63; 1969–72 and, after initial hesitancy, decided that Australia would not play in Apartheid South Africa (1972). An enthusiastic pianist who dabbled with composition, he wrote four books and was commemorated with a postage stamp and a coin. Cricket grounds and stands, a museum and Asteroid 2472 Bradman were named for him.

Bradman, D. G., *Farewell to Cricket*. 1950; Williams, C., *Bradman*. 1996.

Bradshaw, John (1602–1659). English lawyer and regicide. The culmination of his career came when he was selected to preside over the trial of King *Charles I, on whom he passed sentence of death in 1649. After the Restoration, his body, buried in Westminster Abbey, was disinterred and hanged.

Bradstreet, Anne (c.1612–1672). American poet. She emigrated to Massachusetts in 1630. Her *The Tenth Muse Lately Sprung Up in America* was published in London in 1650 (second ed., Boston 1678). Her poems represent the first work of literary value to have been produced in New England. She left her *Meditations* in manuscript.

Bradwardine, Thomas (c.1290/1300–1349). English mathematician. At Oxford University he became a fellow of Balliol in 1321 and Merton in 1323, was later chaplain to *Edward III and died of the plague. His philosophical and mathematical works were probably all composed while he was in Oxford. The range of problems that occupied him concerned the physical and mathematical understanding of motion. He was searching for some general formula for understanding speed of motion in terms of the forces which produced and hindered it. His conclusion was that the ratio of speeds of motions follows the ratio of the motive powers to the resistive powers. In some ways, this is a confused notion, but his attempt to study speed in its own right was an important influence upon later medieval writers on physics such as Richard *Swineshead and Nicole Oresme. Bradwardine also wrote on theological subjects. He was concerned to reduce the role of human free will in favour of the Divine Will. In his view, God was free to create whatever kind of world he wished, including one of infinite space.

Obermann, H. A., *Thomas Bradwardine*. 1958.

Braga, (Joaquim) **Teofilo Fernandes** (1843–1924). Portuguese writer and politician. Though a leader of the anti-clericals in politics, he was better known as a poet, collector of folklore and author of a monumental history of Portuguese literature. He became provisional president 1910–11 on the deposition of King *Manoel II. He was provisional president again in 1915.

Bragança (or Braganza). Dynasty that ruled Portugal 1640–1910, beginning with *João (John) IV, and Brazil 1822–89, when *Pedro I became emperor.

Bragg, Sir William Henry (1862–1942). British physicist, born in Cumberland. Educated on the Isle of Man and at Cambridge, he became professor of mathematics and physics at Adelaide University 1886–1909 (carrying out Australia's first X-ray procedure, on his son, in 1895) and held the chair of physics at Leeds University 1909–15 and University College, London 1915–23. He designed the X-ray spectrometer which permitted exact measurement of X-ray wavelengths and crystal structure. His son, **Sir** (William) **Lawrence Bragg** (1890–1971) was born in Adelaide and educated there and at Cambridge. He formulated Bragg's Law which helped to explain and measure the lattice arrangements in crystals and became the basis of X-ray crystallography. He shared the 1915 Nobel Prize for Physics with his father and, at 25, was the youngest Nobel laureate. Bragg senior received a KBE in 1920, the Copley Medal in 1930 and the OM in 1931, was director and professor of chemistry at the Royal Institution, London 1923–40 and president of the Royal Society 1935–40. The younger Bragg was technical advisor on sound-ranging at the British GHQ in France 1915–19, and succeeded *Rutherford both as professor of physics at Manchester University 1919–37 and Cavendish professor of experimental physics at Cambridge 1938–53. Like his father, he directed the Royal Institution 1954–66. His interests were unusually wide: silicates, metals, alloys and proteins and he was a founding father of two disciplines, X-ray crystallography and molecular biology. He received the Copley Medal in 1966 and a CH in 1967. Both Braggs promoted scientific programs for children.

Brahe, Tycho (or Tyge) (1546–1601). Danish astronomer, born in Scania (southern Sweden). At 19 he lost his nose in a duel and wore a silver replacement. The last great astronomer before the use of telescopes, he was attracted to the study of the stars by an eclipse that occurred during his student days at Copenhagen University. In 1572 he identified a supernova ('Tycho's star'). Between 1576 and 1580, under the patronage of King Frederik II, he established Uraniberg, a large and well-equipped observatory on the island of Ven (Hveen). There he made a series of astronomical observations more comprehensive and accurate than any previously recorded. Brahe did not accept in full the astronomical system of *Copernicus, for though he believed that the five known planets revolved around the sun he still affirmed that the sun itself, as well as the moon, revolved around the earth. So accurate were his observation, however, that *Kepler was later able to deduce the laws of planetary motion from them. Frederik's death in 1588 exposed Brahe to the hostility of his fellow nobles, prejudiced against him because of his work and the king's favour. He went to Prague, where the emperor *Rudolf II provided an observatory for him, and Kepler joined him as an assistant.

Brahmagupta (598–670). Indian mathematician and astronomer, born in Bhinmal (or Ujjain), Rajasthan. He is credited with being the first to use negative and positive numbers and zero (0) as a number, not a placeholder. He worked at an observatory in Ujjain, which now bears his name. He denied the rotation of the earth.

Brahms, Johannes (1833–1897). German composer, born in Hamburg. Taught first by his father, a double bass player in the Hamburg State Theatre Orchestra, he then studied in Hamburg under **Eduard Marxsen** (1806–1887). He appeared in public as a pianist

from the age of 15 until 1853 when he accompanied the Hungarian violinist Ede Remenyi (1828–1898) on a concert tour, after which Robert and Clara **Schumann befriended him. Largely because of Schumann's promotion, Brahms gained recognition, becoming a part-time musician in residence at the court of Detmold. Brahms was devoted to Clara Schumann but after Robert died in 1856 marriage was never in prospect. His Piano Concerto No. 1 in D Minor (1858), conceived on a heroic scale, initially a failure, was later popularised by Clara. Joseph *Joachim hailed his Quintet in F Minor for Piano and strings (1864) 'the greatest piece of chamber music since *Schubert.'

Brahms settled in Vienna in 1863, where he directed the Wiener Singakademie from 1863 and the concerts of the Gesellschaft der Musikfreunde 1872–75. Among his greatest later works were *The German Requiem* (1857–68), Sextet for Strings No. 2 in G major (1865), four symphonies (1877, 1878, 1884, 1886), Violin Concerto in D (1878), Piano Concerto No. 2 in B Flat (1881), Double Concerto for Violin and Cello (1887), and Clarinet Quintet (1891). He also composed 180 songs, three piano sonatas, ballades, capriccios and intermezzi, three violin sonatas and two sets of 'Liebeslieder' waltzes for chorus and piano.

Brahms preserved the great musical traditions of the past when *Liszt and *Wagner were advocating 'revolution and progress' in art and had a long feud with Wagner. His highly personal style was influenced by the current Romanticism, as in many of his lieder where he combined lyricism and nostalgia with a striking simplicity. He was a solitary, somewhat anti-social figure, politically conservative (an admirer of *Bismarck), an indifferent Lutheran, and a collector of books and manuscripts, including *Mozart's Symphony No. 40, *Haydn quartets and Schubert songs. He died of liver cancer and was buried near Beethoven and Schubert. His stature suffered in the late 20th century because of the revival of *Bruckner and *Mahler who took Romanticism far beyond Brahms' classical restraint. Intensely self-critical, he destroyed much of his output. He was much admired by *Schoenberg.

James, B., *Brahms: A Critical Study*. 1972; Geiringer, K., *Brahms: His Life and Works*. 1984; Swafford, J., *Johannes Brahms*. 1999.

Braid, James (1870–1950). Scottish golfer, born in Fife. He won the British Open championship five times (1901, 1905, 1906, 1908, 1910) and was French champion in 1910. He, Harry Vardon and J. H. Taylor were known among golfers as 'the great triumvirate'.

Braille, Louis (1809–1852). French teacher of the blind. He became blind after an accident at the age of three. He spent most of his life, as pupil and professor, at the Paris Institution des Jeunes Aveugles. From 1825 he developed the system of 'raised point' writing, which is named after him.

Bramah, Joseph (1748–1814). English inventor, born in Yorkshire. He became a carpenter and cabinet maker and moved to London, where he invented or perfected many useful devices. His hydraulic press and security lock were of great value, but his water closet, beer pump and machine for printing serial numbers on bank notes also bear witness to his ingenious and versatile mind.

Bramante, Donato (c.1444–1514). Italian architect. Usually considered the greatest architect of the High Renaissance, he is lastingly famous as the designer of the initial, centralised, plan for St Peter's Basilica, Rome. His plan, which was commissioned by Pope *Julius II and upon which work began in 1506, was somewhat altered by *Michelangelo and *Raphael, but the original conception remains Bramante's (except for the nave, which was an extension by Maderna). Other work in Rome includes the Tempietto (1502) in the courtyard of S. Pietro in Montorio as well as parts of the Vatican palace (notably the Belvedere). Before he went to Rome in 1499, Bramante, who was humbly born, had worked mostly in Milan, as a painter. His architectural work there includes the chancel of San Satiro and the domed church of Santa Maria delle Grazie (1492–98). Bramante's mature work is in a severe, pure Roman classical style.

Foster, O., *Bramante*. 1956.

Branagh, Sir Kenneth Charles (1960–). British actor and director, born in Belfast. He trained at the Royal Academy of Dramatic Art (RADA) in London and founded the Renaissance Theatre Co. in 1987. His first successful stage production, *Another Country* (1982) was followed by plays by *Shakespeare, *Ibsen, *Chekhov and later dramatists. His film *Henry V* (1989), in which, like *Olivier, he directed and played the leading role, was both moving and austere. *Dead Again* (1990) and *Peter's Friends* (1992), both written and directed by Branagh, co-starred his wife **Emma *Thompson**, who won an Oscar for her role in *Howard's End* (1993). They both acted in his film of Shakespeare's *Much Ado about Nothing* (1993), but separated in 1995. His epic film *Hamlet* (1996) running for four hours, was a critical success and box office failure. Other Shakespearean films include *Othello* (1995), *Love's Labour's Lost* (2000), and *As You Like It* (2006). He directed and starred in a memorable *Macbeth* (2013), making his New York debut with it in 2014.

Brancusi, Constantin (1876–1957). Romanian sculptor. Having been trained in art in Bucharest he went in 1904 to Paris, where he lived for the rest of his life. His work has been described as abstract, but his sculptures are rather symbolic reductions of

objects to their essential form, as in his *Egg* (called by him *The Beginning of the World*) and *Seal*. The Musee de l'Art Moderne. Paris, has good examples of his work and a reproduction of his studio. Brancusi has been one of the most important influences on modern sculpture.

Geist, S., *Brancusi*. 1968.

Brand, Sir Johannes Hendricus (1826–1888). South African politician. A barrister, he was elected to succeed M.W. *Pretorius as President of the Orange Free State 1864–88. His chief aim being to maintain the state's independence, he refused all British attempts at federation. The Basutos were defeated by him (1865–66) but their territory was safeguarded (at their request) by British annexation. He maintained a cautious neutrality between the Transvaal and Cape Colony. The development of diamond mining underpinned the OFS's prosperity.

Brandauer, Klaus Maria (1944–). Austrian actor. He won international recognition for his roles in the films *Mephisto* (Academy Award for Best Foreign Film, 1981), *Colonel Redl* (1985), *Out of Africa* (1985), *Druids* (2001) and *Tetro* (2009).

Brandeis, Louis Dembitz (1856–1941). American lawyer and judge, born in Kentucky. His family, secular Jews, migrated from Prague. Educated at Harvard, he virtually created the law of the right to privacy and campaigned laws limiting the power of big corporations and was sympathetic to trade unions. An Associate Justice of the US Supreme Court 1916–39, nominated by Woodrow *Wilson, and the first Jew to serve, he had never been a judge or a law professor. A Zionist sympathiser, he was surprisingly silent on race and segregation. Brandeis University in Massachusetts was established in 1948.

Rosen, J., *Louis D Brandeis: American Prophet*. 2016.

Brandes, Georg Morris Cohen (1842–1927). Danish literary critic. After a tour of Europe, on which he met *Taine, *Renan and J. S.* Mill, he wrote *Main Currents in Nineteenth-century Literature* (6 volumes, 1872–90), which proclaimed him as a leading supporter of realistic literature, in which problems of everyday life should be discussed. Such views and his belief in free thought roused opposition which affected his career. Later he came to know *Nietzsche whose influence can be seen in his studies of *Shakespeare (1896), *Goethe (1915),* Voltaire (1916) and others. In 1925 he wrote *Jesus, a Myth*.

Brando, Marlon (1924–2004). American actor, born in Omaha, Nebraska. His naturalistic style of acting, acquired largely at Lee Strasberg's Actors Studio, achieved great popular success in the play and film of Tennessee *Williams' *A Streetcar Named Desire* and such films as *The Wild One*, *Julius Caesar* (where he played Antony), *On the Waterfront* (for which he obtained an Academy award in 1954), *The Young Lions*, *The Ugly American*, *Last Tango in Paris* and *The Godfather*.

Mizruchi, S., *Brando's Smile*. 2014.

Brandt, Willy (Karl Herbert Frahm) (1913–1992). German Social Democratic politician, born in Lübeck. Educated at Lübeck, he made an early mark as a socialist propagandist. After *Hitler came to power he went to Norway to become a Norwegian citizen and during the German occupation in World War II he worked with the Norwegian underground movement. After the war he re-entered German politics and became a member of the Bundestag in 1949. In 1957 he became *Oberbürgermeister* (Governing Mayor) of Berlin 1957–66 and in 1960 succeeded Erich *Ollenhauer as leader of the West German Social Democratic Party (SPD). He was Chancellor 1969–74, resigning after the arrest of one of his secretaries as a Communist spy. As Chancellor he improved relations with Eastern Europe and was awarded the Nobel Peace Prize in 1971. He chaired the Independent Commission on Development Issues 1977–79, and the Brandt Report (1980) asserted that East–West (communist v. capitalist) issues would decline in significance and North–South (development v. under-development) problems would increase. He was a member of the European Parliament 1979–83. His books include *The Ordeal of Co-existence* (1963), *Reflections and Letters* (1971), *People and Politics 1960–75* (1978) and *My Life in Politics* (1992).

Harprecht K., *Willy Brandt: Portrait and Self Portrait*. 1972.

Brangwyn, Sir Frank (1867–1956). Welsh artist, born in Bruges, Belgium. As a boy he was apprenticed to William *Morris, ran away to sea at the age of 17, and exhibited at the Royal Academy the following year. He achieved his greatest success in mural paintings of great size and rich colouring. Among the finest examples are those in the Skinners' Hall, London, and the parliament buildings, Winnipeg, Canada. Among other forms of art in which Brangwyn excelled were tapestry and furniture design. He was knighted in 1941.

Branson, Sir Richard Charles Nicholas (1950–). English entrepreneur, born in Greenwich. He founded the first Virgin store in 1969 and developed interests in aviation, travel, entertainment, film and music.

Brant, Sebastian (1453–1521). German satirist, born in Strasbourg. He studied philosophy and law at Basel University, taught there and became heavily involving in editing and the development of printing. His book *The Ship of Fools* (*Das Narrenschiff*, 1494), a long, witty, satirical poem about corruption, follies, pedantry, adultery and greed, illustrated with about 70 woodcuts by the young Albrecht *Dürer, was

enormously successful, and was soon translated into most European languages. Brant returned to Strasbourg in 1500 and became a judge. Whether he was a humanist remains a subject of dispute: his perspective is essentially medieval.

Branting, Hjalmar (1860–1925). Swedish politician. The virtual creator of the Swedish Social Democratic party, he was its only member in the Riksdag of 1896. Though the party never attained an independent majority in his lifetime Branting was able to form the first socialist government in 1920 and was Prime Minister in 1920, 1921–23 and 1924–25. He had been a strong supporter of the Allies in World War I and as Prime Minister he represented his country at the League of Nations, of which he was a vigorous upholder. He won the 1921 Nobel Prize for Peace.

Brantôme, Pierre de Bourdeille, Seigneur and Abbé de (c.1534–1614). French writer and courtier. In 1561 he accompanied *Mary, Queen of Scots to Scotland and later took part in military expeditions throughout Europe and in Africa. His works, particularly the *Vies de dames galantes*, are collections of anecdotes, mainly scandalous, that reflect the gay and immoral life of the Valois court.

Braque, Georges (1882–1963). French painter. Son of a decorator, he joined the group known as the 'Fauves' ('wild beasts') in 1905, then in 1908 began an association with Pablo *Picasso which was to lead first to a monumental, brutal 'African' phase (*Nude*, 1908) and then to the development (about 1910) of the analytical style known as Cubism. In subsequent still lifes' Braque introduced elements of 'reality' into a pictorial context newsprint, stencilled letters etc. After World War I he developed a less revolutionary but highly personal two-dimensional semi-abstract style, mainly in a still-life idiom, to which he brought a remarkable sense of design and significant shape. He also designed ballet settings and jewellery.

Mullins, E. B., *Braque*. 1969; Danchev, A., *Georges Braque: A Life*. 2005.

Brasidas (d.422 BCE). Spartan commander in the Peloponnesian War. By a brilliant diversionary campaign in Thrace (424 BCE) he may have saved his country from defeat. In 422 BCE he overtook and defeated the Athenians withdrawing from Amphipohis but both he and his opponent Cheon were killed.

Bratby, John (1928–1992). English painter. A vigorous and colourful artist, his concern was with the immediate environment of daily life, into which he projected both religious and mundane themes. His pictures gained wider recognition after being used in the film of Joyce *Cary's book *The Horse's Mouth* (1958). His writings included novels, a play and a study of Stanley *Spencer (1969).

Brătianu, Ion Constantin (1821–1891). Romanian politician. After the failure of the revolutionary movement of 1848, in which he had been a leading spirit, he lived in exile in Paris but continued to work underground for the unity of the Romanian principalities. He returned to Romania in 1856 and was mainly instrumental in securing the throne for Prince Karl of Hohenzollern (*Carol I). From 1876 to 1888, as leader of the Liberal Party he was seldom out of office. His son, **I. C. Brătianu** (1864–1927), his party successor, held a comparable position in Romanian politics and was largely responsible for bringing Romania into World War I on the Allied side. A grandson, **Constantin (Dinu) Brătianu** (1866–1950), led the liberal opposition to Ion *Antonescu before World War II and, briefly, to the Communist regime that followed it.

Brattain, Walter Houser (1902–1987). American physicist, born in China. Educated at the universities of Oregon and Minnesota, he carried out research at the Bell Labs 1929–67. With William *Shockley and John *Bardeen he invented the point-contact transistor 1947–48. They shared the Nobel Prize for Physics in 1956 for their investigations.

Brauchitsch, (Heinrich Alfred Hermann) **Walther von** (1881–1948). German field marshal, born in Berlin. He had a complicated relationship with *Hitler, borrowed money from him, but despised him, contemplated leading a coup, but accepted appointment as Commander-in-Chief of the German Army 1938–41. He directed the conquest of France and planned the abortive invasion of Great Britain. He was dismissed for the failure of the attack on Moscow in 1941, undertaken against his advice, with the Führer becoming Commander-in-Chief himself. Brauchitsch was harsh to civilians in Poland and spineless with Hitler. He died before he could be tried as a war criminal.

Braudel, Fernand (1902–1985). French historian. Educated at the Sorbonne, he taught in Algeria and Brazil, was a prisoner of war (1940–45), held a chair at the Collège de France 1949–72, and edited the periodical *Annales* 1957–68. Often described as the greatest modern historian (although not in Britain), his major works include *The Mediterranean and the Mediterranean World in the Age of Philip II* (1949) and *Civilisation and Capitalism 15th–18th Century* (3 vols, 1967–79). He was elected to the Académie française in 1984.

Braun, Eva (1912–1945). German model. After some years as a model for Hitler's friend and photographer Heinrich Hoffman she became *Hitler's mistress. They were married in the moment of defeat in the bunker headquarters of Hitler in Berlin on 29 April 1945, and both committed suicide the next day.

Braun, Wernher Magnus Maximilian von (1912–1977). German-American rocket scientist, born in Poland. He joined the Nazi Party in 1937, became technical director of the missile establishment at Peenemünde 1937–45, a major in the SS and the driving force for the development of the V2 rocket weapon, using slave labour. In the US from 1945, he claimed to have experienced a religious conversion in 1946, and became an American citizen in 1955. He worked on rockets for launching missiles and satellites and his Saturn V rocket was used in the first moon landing (1969).

Goodrum, J. C., *Wernher von Braun: Space Pioneer*. 1969.

Brazza, Pierre Savorgnan de (1852–1905). French explorer, born in Rome. He joined the French navy in 1868 and was naturalised in 1874. He explored West Africa 1875–78 and 1879–82, established the course of the Ogoove River 1883–85, became Commissioner-General in the (French) Congo 1886–97 and founded Brazzaville. He died at Dakar.

Breakspear, Nicholas *see* **Adrian IV**

Brecht, Bertolt (1898–1956). German dramatist, poet and director, born in Augsburg. Of middle-class parentage, in 1916 he went to Munich University to study medicine, but his studies were interrupted by World War I in which he served as a medical orderly. His first play, *Baal*, was written in 1918 and was shortly followed by *Drums in the Night*. In 1921 he became Dramaturg (resident playwright and advisor) in a Munich theatre, his first plays were produced and brought their author immediate recognition as a powerful new presence in the German theatre. From the first the special character of the Brechtian theatre began to emerge. Brecht demanded, and tried to achieve, both by his writing and by the styles of acting and direction that he developed, a theatre that would deny its audience the satisfaction of emotional involvement, instead they were to be fully aware that they were in a theatre, alert, conscious and 'ready for action'. In 1924 Brecht went to Berlin, where, under the influence of Erwin Piscator's revolutionary epic theatre, his work became even more directly propagandist. He was by now a confirmed, if highly independent, Marxist, as he was to remain for the rest of his life. In 1926 he published the first major collection of his poems (*Taschenpostille*) and met the composer Kurt *Weill, who was to collaborate with him in his most famous musical works, *The Threepenny Opera* (1928), *Rise and Fall of the City of Mahagonny* (1930) and *Happy End* (1929). He ruthlessly exploited his mistress-collaborators Elizabeth Hauptmann and Margarete Steffin and his major plays were essentially collective works. The series of didactic plays, the *Lehrstücke*, aimed at educating the social attitudes of his audience; *St Joan of the Stockyards* (1929–30) stands out in this period. In 1933 *Hitler came to power and Brecht, now a prominent writer in Germany, went into exile and semi-oblivion with his wife, the actor Helene Weigel. Living mainly in Denmark, Brecht produced some anti-Nazi propaganda plays, *The Threepenny Novel*, and some of his finest poetry. Then, between 1938 and 194l, he wrote the great and mature works for which he is mainly remembered: *The Life of Galileo* (1938–39), *Mother Courage and Her Children* (1939), *The Trial of Lucullus* (1939), *The Good Woman of Setzuan* (1938–40), *Herr Puntila and his Man Matti* (1940–41) and *The Resistible Rise of Arturo Ui* (1941). In 1941 he went to the US and settled in Hollywood. There he wrote *Schweik in the Second World War* (1941–44) and *The Caucasian Chalk Circle* (1944–45), but failed properly to re-establish himself as a dramatist. In 1947 he was summoned to appear before the Committee on Un-American Activities, which was investigating Communist infiltration of the film industry. Adopting the Schweikian philosophy of self-interest and survival, Brecht denied his Marxist sympathies and emerged unscathed. He was, in fact, never a member of the Communist Party. Soon after, however, he left the US, and went to Switzerland, where he wrote his last complete play *The Days of the Commune* (1948–49). In 1949 he returned to East Germany and settled in Berlin. His relations with the East German authorities were uneasy, but his reputation was immense, and he was granted almost unlimited facilities for the production of plays. With these he created the Berliner Ensemble, a theatre company which could at last put into practice the dramatic theories he had spent a lifetime in developing. At the time of his death he was beginning to be recognised in western countries as one of the major figures in 20th-century theatre.

Fuegi, J., *Brecht and Company.* 1994.

Breckinridge, John C(abell) (1821–1875). American politician, born in Kentucky. A lawyer, he served in the US Congress 1851–55, was Vice President of the US 1857–61, and a strong supporter of states' rights on the slavery issue. As the presidential candidate of the southern Democrats in 1860, he won 10 states. Briefly a Senator (1861), although uneasy about secession, he became a heavy-drinking general in the Confederate army, with mixed success, and Jefferson *Davis appointed him as Secretary of War (1865). He spent three years of exile in Canada and Europe 1865–68, denounced the Ku Klux Klan and showed some sympathy for the legal rights of African-Americans.

Breivik, Anders Behring (later adopted name Fjotolf Hansen, pen name Andrew Berwick) (1979–). Norwegian terrorist. A far-right race supremacist, he was fanatically anti-Muslim and anti-immigrant. He compiled *2083: A European Declaration of Independence*, 1518 pages long, under the name Andrew Berwick and published it, by email, on 22 July 2011. On the same day he killed eight people by detonating a fertiliser bomb in Oslo, then fatally shot 69 Labour

Party members and teenagers at a summer camp on the island of Utøya, injuring 319 more. Convicted of mass murder and terrorism in July 2011, he was sentenced to 21 years imprisonment, the maximum sentence under Norwegian law. He has repeatedly litigated, without success, claiming ill-treatment in prison. In his manifesto he applauded conservatives, including five Australians, whom he regarded as anti-Muslim, and committed to European cultural hegemony.

Brendel, Alfred (1931–). Austrian-British pianist. He made his debut in 1948, toured extensively and relocated to London in 1972. He was regarded as a great *Mozart specialist and recorded all the keyboard music of *Beethoven and *Schubert. He also wrote extensively on aesthetics. He was awarded an Hon. KBE in 1989.

Brennan, William Joseph, Jr (1906–1997). American jurist. A justice of the US Supreme Court 1956–90, he was regarded as leader of the liberal wing.

Brenner, Sydney (1927–2019). British biologist, born in South Africa. Of Jewish-Lithuanian descent, he studied at Witwatersrand and Oxford. He developed the use of the roundworm *Caenorhabditis elegans* for genetic analysis and succeeded Max *Perutz as director of the Medical Research Laboratory, Cambridge 1979–86. He received a CH in 1986, the Copley Medal in 1991 and shared the Nobel Prize for Medicine in 2002 with **Robert Horvitz** and **John Sulston** for 'discoveries concerning genetic regulation of organ development and programmed cell death'.

Brentano, Franz (1838–1917). Austrian philosopher. Known as 'the Austrian Socrates' because his influence depended more upon the spoken than the written word, he taught at Würzburg and Vienna 1866–80. He had a major influence on Tomas *Masaryk, the future president of Czechoslovakia. Through inability to accept papal infallibility he gave up his priesthood in 1873. Much of his work consisted of reviewing and revising *Aristotle's conceptions of logic and psychology. Parallels between right thinking and right living are discussed in *Origin of the Knowledge of Right and Wrong* (Eng. tr. 1902).

Breton, André (1896–1966). French poet and critic. He was the pioneer and ideologist of Surrealism, defining it as 'pure psychic automatism' and wrote *The Surrealist Manifesto* (1924). He worked with Louis *Aragon and Tristan *Tzara, was active as an anarchist and was a discriminating collector of paintings and ethnographic art.

Breuer, Josef (1842–1925). German Jewish physician, born in Vienna. A formative influence on the development of psychoanalysis, he undertook medical studies at the University of Vienna. He kept up contacts with the university, but made a living through private practice. Breuer's main early scientific research lay in the field of physiology, but his fame chiefly rests upon his studies of hysteria, particularly one of his patients, 'Anna O'. She suffered from severe classic hysteria, including paralysis and aphasia. But Breuer found that, over a long period, by getting her to talk about her distant past, particularly when under hypnosis, a state of catharsis was induced and the symptoms gradually ceased. Thus Breuer had hit upon the 'talking cure' which became central to Freudian analytic therapy. *Freud and Breuer collaborated closely in the 1880s on a technique of curing by bringing into consciousness repressed phobias and wishes long consigned to the unconscious. After a series of quarrels their relationship ended in 1896, when Breuer refused to accept Freud's belief that infantile sexuality was a product of seduction by adults. (Freud himself later abandoned that belief.)

Sulloway, F., *Sigmund Freud, Beyond the Psychoanalytic Myth*. 1979.

Breuer, Marcel Lajos (1902–1981). American architect, born in Hungary. He studied at the Bauhaus in Germany and designed the first tubular steel chair in 1925. In 1937 he went to the US to teach at Harvard, where *Gropius, the German architect, whose pupil he had been, also came to work. They carried out some schemes in partnership. Breuer was a co-architect of the UNESCO building in Paris (1953–59).

Breughel, Pieter *see* **Bruegel, Pieter**

Breuil, Henri Edouard Prosper (1877–1961). French abbé and archaeologist. He was ordained in 1900 but from the first devoted himself to the study of prehistory and became recognised especially as the greatest authority on cave art. He studied and traced the figures of animals etc. in the caves of northern Spain (Altamira etc.) and France (the Dordogne and elsewhere), and by assigning them to the upper Palaeolithic enabled them to be dated approximately between 25,000 and 10,000 BCE. Breuil was professor of prehistory at the Collège de France (1929–17) and wrote many books, including *Four Hundred Centuries of Cave Art* (1952) and *The Painted Rocks of the Sahara* (1955).

Brodrick, A. H., *The Abbe Breuil*. 1963.

Brewer, E(benezer) **Cobham** (1810–1897). English clergyman and teacher, born in Norwich. His *Dictionary of Phrase and Fable* (1870), generally known as Brewer's, was a popular reference work, last revised in 2012.

Brewster, Sir David (1781–1868). Scottish physicist, born at Jedburgh. He worked mainly in the field of physical optics, and discovered the law (now known as Brewster's Law) that when polarisation occurs in a reflected beam of light, the tangent of the angle of polarisation is equal to the refractive index of the reflecting medium. Brewster invented the kaleidoscope, improved the stereoscope and devised a polyzonal lens still used in lighthouses. He received

the Copley Medal in 1815. He helped to found the British Association for the Advancement of Science in 1831 and was knighted in that year. He wrote an authoritative life of *Newton and many encyclopaedia articles.

Breytenbach, Breyten (1939–). South African novelist, poet and painter. Writing in Afrikaans, he became deeply opposed to the Nationalist regime and was imprisoned 1975–82. His books included *A Season in Paradise* (1973), *The True Confessions of an Albino Terrorist* (1984) and *Return to Paradise* (1993).

Brezhnev, Leonid Ilyich (1906–1982). Russian Communist politician, born in Ukraine. He worked as a surveyor, then as a metallurgist, joining the CPSU in 1931. He met *Khrushchev during the Great Purges and became a senior political officer during World War II. As Party Secretary in the Kazahk Republic 1954–60, he directed the (largely unsuccessful) 'Virgin Lands' campaign. He was a candidate member of the Politburo 1952–53, 1956–57 and, after the expulsion of the 'anti-Party group', a full member 1957–82. He succeeded Marshal *Voroshilov as Chairman of the Presidium of the Supreme Soviet (i.e. President of the USSR) 1960–64 and again 1977–82. When *Khrushchev fell from power (1964) Brezhnev succeeded him as First Secretary of the Central Committee of the Communist Party, and so with *Kosygin became one of the two most powerful men in the government. He was awarded the Lenin Peace Prize in 1972, became a marshal of the Soviet Union in 1976 and his resumption of the Soviet presidency in 1977, an office he held with the post of first secretary, was regarded as the end of an era of collegiate leadership. Brezhnev's name became proverbial for corruption and nepotism.

Dornberg J., *Brezhnev*. 1974.

Brian, (William) **Havergal** (1876–1972). British composer, born in Staffordshire. Largely self-taught, he worked as a clerk, copyist, occasional critic and organist, devoting himself to a frenzy of composition, little of it played in his lifetime, including 32 symphonies and four operas. Symphony No. 1 in D Minor ('the Gothic', 1919–27), for an orchestra of 150 and a choir of 400, probably the longest symphony ever performed (about 107 minutes), is available on CD. The film *The Curse of the Gothic Symphony* (2012) describes the herculean task of organising its Australian première.

Brian Boru (or Bóroimhe) (d.1014). Irish King. Having succeeded his brother as King of Munster in 976, he disputed the authority of Malachy II, the High King, gained supremacy over southern Ireland (997) and eventually (1002) expelled Malachy and usurped his power. The end came when in 1014 he found himself confronted with an alliance between the King of Leinster and the Vikings then holding Dublin. At Clontarf Brian Boru won a complete victory but was himself murdered after the battle. The many O'Briens perpetuate his name.

Briand, Aristide (1862–1932). French radical politician, born at Nantes, he became an advocate, co-founder of *L'Humanité* with his friend Jean *Jaurès, and a Socialist deputy 1902–32. He was Premier of France for six periods 1909–11, 1913, 1915–16, 1921–22, 1925–26, 1929 and Foreign Minister four times 1915–17, 1921–22, 1925, 1926–32. After World War I he advocated reconciliation with Germany and after the Locarno Treaty of 1925 he shared the Nobel Peace Prize (1926) with Gustav *Stresemann. The Briand-*Kellogg Pact outlawing war followed in 1928. He was defeated by Paul *Doumer in a parliamentary vote to elect the President in 1931.

Bridge, Frank (1879–1941). English composer, conductor, violist and teacher, born in Brighton. He studied at the Royal College of Music under Sir Charles *Stanford, played in the English String Quartet and assisted Sir Henry *Wood as a conductor. He set many poems, and wrote an ambitious Piano Quintet in D Minor (1904–05; revised 1912), a symphonic suite *The Sea* (1911) and a tone poem *Summer* (1916). Deeply affected by World War I, his style, at first romantic, became astringent and radical in his later years in such works as the second and third string quartets (1920, 1937), *Oration: Concerto elegiaco* (for cello, 1930), *Phantasia* for piano and orchestra (1931) and many songs. He taught Benjamin *Britten from 1927. *Variations on a Theme by Frank Bridge* (1937) was one of Britten's earliest successes.

Bray, T., *Frank Bridge*. 1977.

Bridges, Harry (Alfred Bryant Renton) (1901–1990). American trade unionist, born in Melbourne. He worked in San Francisco from 1920, formed the International Longshoremen's Association and organised a general strike in 1934. He became President of the International Longshoremen's and Warehousemen's Union (ILWU) in 1937, and resisted many attempts to have him deported.

Bridges, Robert Seymour (1844–1930). English poet, born at Walmer. Educated at Eton and Oxford, he became a physician in London but was rich enough to be able to retire in 1882. Three volumes of graceful lyrics had already won him recognition as a poet. Later he wrote several plays and the narrative poem *Eros and Psyche*, now largely forgotten. A collected edition of 1912, followed by a more complete collection in 1936, introduced him as a major poet to a wider world. Bridges was a great friend of Gerard Manley *Hopkins, whose poems he collected and published posthumously in 1918. The two shared a great interest in metrical and rhythmic experiments. Bridges also wrote critical studies of *Keats and *Milton and succeeded Alfred *Austin as Poet Laureate 1913–30.

He expressed his philosophical and aesthetic ideas in his last long poem *The Testament of Beauty* (1929) and received the OM in 1929.

Sparrow, J., *Bridges*. 1962.

Bridget (or Brigid or Bride), **St** (c.450–c.525). Irish religious. Little is known of her life except that she founded the first Irish convent, in Kildare.

Bridget, St (c.1303–1373). Swedish visionary. Born of an aristocratic family, she became absorbed in religion only after the death (1344) of her husband by whom she had eight children. For the rest of her life she was seeing and recording visions. Her revelations concerned not only spiritual matters but also political questions. In 1349 she left Sweden after a disagreement with the king and settled in Rome. In 1370, with papal consent, she founded the Augustinian Order of Bridgettines.

Bridgewater, Francis Egerton, 3rd Duke of (1736–1803). English nobleman. Responsible for the first canal in England, he commissioned James *Brindley to build a canal from his Worsley coalmines to Manchester. This, later extended to join the Mersey at Runcorn, and subsequent canals, forestalled the railways in providing cheap transport for heavy industrial loads. Bridgewater died unmarried and the dukedom became extinct.

Bridgman, Percy Williams (1882–1961). American physicist. He held professorships at Harvard 1926–54. In 1946 he was awarded the Nobel Prize for Physics for his pioneering studies in the physics of very high pressures. He also made valuable contributions to the philosophy of science.

Bridie, James (Osborne Henry Mavor) (1888–1951). Scottish playwright. A physician in Glasgow for many years, he achieved great success with his plays, some whimsical, some pleasantly macabre. They include *Tobias and the Angel* (1930), *The Anatomist* (1931), *Mr Bolfry* (1943), *Dr Angelus* (1947) and *Daphne Laureola* (1949). He was one of the founders of the Glasgow Citizens' Theatre.

Luyben, H. L., *James Bridie: Clown and Philosopher*. 1965.

Brieux, Eugène (1858–1932). French dramatist. Originally a journalist, he wrote many didactic plays aimed at the exposure of social evils and middle-class hypocrisy. His works include the play *Les Avariés* (*Damaged Goods*, 1901), dealing with venereal disease.

Briggs, Henry (1561–1630). English mathematician, born in Halifax. His life was spent in the academic world and his fame rests on his simplification of logarithms (invented by Napier in 1614) and his extension of their use. He originated the use of 10 as the most practical base for tables and in his *Arithmetica Logarithmica* (1624) published logarithms for 30,000 natural numbers, calculated to 14 decimal places. In his *Trigonometria Britannica* (1633) he gave tables of logarithms of sines and tangents to a hundredth of a degree, calculated to 15 decimal places.

Bright, John (1811–1889). English Radical and Quaker politician, born in Rochdale, Lancashire. The son of a cotton manufacturer he left school at 16 to enter the family business. He already had a reputation for speaking on such subjects as temperance when, in 1841, he joined the Anti-Corn Law League and with his lifelong friend Richard *Cobden campaigned ardently for the repeal of taxes on imported grain. The Corn Laws were repealed under Sir Robert *Peel in 1846. Bright's parliamentary career began in 1843 when he was elected for Durham, and he represented this and later constituencies, Manchester and Birmingham, until 1889 (apart from 1857–58). He campaigned for electoral reform, opposed *Palmerston's aggressive foreign policy, especially the Crimean War ('The angel of death has been abroad throughout the land; you may almost hear the beating of his wings'), and, despite Lancashire's cotton interests, supported the Union cause in the American Civil War. He served under *Gladstone as President of the Board of Trade 1868–70 and Chancellor of the Duchy of Lancaster 1873–74, 1880–82, but resigned over the government's Egyptian policy and finally broke with Gladstone in 1885–86 on the issue of Home Rule for Ireland. A supporter of *laissez faire* and an opponent of trades unions and factory legislation, he was one of the greatest parliamentary orators. He died of Bright's disease (not named for him: *see* Richard *Bright).

Ausbel, H., *John Bright: Victorian Reformer*. 1966.

Bright, Richard (1789–1858). English physician, born in Bristol. In 1812 he graduated in Edinburgh after studying at Guy's Hospital in London. He became a leading London consultant and on the accession of Queen *Victoria became her 'physician-extraordinary'. His name is perpetuated by the term Bright's disease, still applied collectively to a number of kidney disorders.

Brillat-Savarin, Anthelme (1755–1826). French lawyer. Famous for his *La Physiologie du Goût* (1825), a witty treatise on gastronomy, he was mayor of his native Belley near Chambery in 1793, but then took refuge from revolutionary excesses in Switzerland and America. On his return (1796) he became a member of the court of appeals.

Brin, Sergey Mikhailovich (1973–). Russian-American internet entrepreneur, born in Moscow. His family migrated to the US in 1979, and he studied at the universities of Maryland and Stanford. With Larry *Page he was the co-founder of Google Inc. in 1998 which was floated as a public company in 2004. Brin had a net worth of $US20 billion by 2012.

Brindley, James (1716–1772). English engineer, born in Thornsett, Derbyshire. Apprenticed to a millwright, he set up on his own at Leek (1742) but was still almost illiterate when he was commissioned to design and supervise important canal systems by the Duke of *Bridgewater. Brindley built about 600 kilometres of canals, the longest being the Grand Trunk Canal linking the Mersey with the Potteries, Derby and Birmingham.

Brink, André (Philippus) (1935–2015). South African writer. He wrote both in Afrikaans and English, and taught at the University of Cape Town. *Looking on Darkness* (1974) was the first novel by an Afrikaaner to be banned in South Africa. *A Dry White Season* (1979) was successfully filmed.

Brinvilliers, Marie-Madeleine d'Aubray, Marquise de (1630–1676). French murderer. She and her lover, Godin de Sainte-Croix, poisoned her husband and all his family to obtain their fortune and avenge her lover's imprisonment. The crime remained undiscovered until after Sainte-Croix's death, when incriminating papers were discovered. The marquise was arrested, tortured and beheaded.

Brisbane, Sir Thomas Makdougall, 1st Baronet (1773–1860). Scottish administrator and astronomer. After distinguished army service, close to *Wellington, he was appointed Governor of New South Wales 1821–25. During his term of office the penal code was reformed and a constitution given to the colony. The Brisbane River, observed in 1823, and the city which was built on its banks were named after him. While in Australia he catalogued over 7,000 stars, receiving the Copley Medal of the Royal Society. In 1836 he was made a baronet, and in 1837 a GCB.

Brissot, Jacques Pierre (known as de Warville) (1754–1793). French revolutionary politician, born at Chartres. Son of an innkeeper, he became a lawyer and campaigned for penal reform, abolition of slavery and other liberal causes. In the revolutionary period he was a member of the Legislative Assembly 1791–92 and of the Convention 1792–93 and became a leader of the Girondists, the more moderate faction which was overcome and destroyed by *Robespierre's extremist Jacobins. Brissot attempted to flee but was caught and guillotined.

Brittain, Vera (Mary) (1893–1970). English writer and pacifist. Her family was prosperous and she read English at Oxford, breaking off study to become a nurse during World War I, in which her brother, fiancé and two close friends were killed. She devoted her life to pacifism and feminism. Her memoir *Testament of Youth* (1933) was adapted for television (1979) and as a feature film (2014). She married the philosopher (Sir) George Catlin. Shirley *Williams was their daughter.

Bostridge, M., *Vera Brittain and the First World War*. 2014.

Brittan, Leon, Baron Brittan (1939–2015). British Conservative politician and bureaucrat. Educated at Cambridge and Yale, he became a barrister, MP 1974–88, Home Secretary 1983–85, Secretary of State for Industry 1985–86 and Vice President of the European Commission 1989–99.

Britten, (Edward) **Benjamin, Baron Britten of Aldeburgh** (1913–1976). English composer, born in Lowestoft. Son of a dentist, educated at Gresham's School, Holt, he began composing from the age of nine (some early work being preserved in *Simple Symphony*, 1934), studied under Frank *Bridge and at the Royal College of Music. *Mahler, *Berg and *Shostakovich were important early influences. His first international success was *Variations on a Theme of Frank Bridge* (1937), followed by *Les Illuminations* (song cycle to poems by *Rimbaud, 1939). A conscientious objector, he lived in the US 1939–42 with his lifelong partner (Sir) Peter *Pears, for whom many works were written, including the *Seven Sonnets of Michelangelo* (1940), *Serenade* for tenor, horn and strings (1943), *The Holy Sonnets of John Donne* (1945), *Winter Words* (*Hardy, 1953), *Nocturne* (1958) and *Five Canticles* (Francis *Quarles, Chester Mystery Play, Edith *Sitwell, two by T. S. *Eliot, 1947–74). His opera *Peter Grimes* (based on *The Borough*, by George *Crabbe, 1945), commissioned by *Koussevitzky, with Pears in the title role, was an immediate success and remains in the international repertoire. Other operas include *The Rape of Lucretia* (after André Obey, 1946), *Billy Budd* (libretto by E M *Forster and Eric Crozier, 1951), *Gloriana* (after Lytton *Strachey, 1953), *The Turn of the Screw* (after Henry *James, 1954), *A Midsummer Night's Dream* (after *Shakespeare, 1960), *Curlew River* (1962) and *Death in Venice* (adaptation of Thomas *Mann, 1973). *The Young Person's Guide to the Orchestra* (*Variations on a Theme by Purcell*, with commentary, 1945) has been much recorded. In 1947 he founded the Aldeburgh Festival which became the centre of his musical activities and made many recordings as pianist and conductor, including music by *Bach, *Haydn, *Mozart and *Schubert. Among other works were Violin Concerto (1939), *Spring Symphony* (1949), *The War Requiem* (1962) and the *Cello Symphony* (1963, written for *Rostropovich). He also recorded with *Richter and *Arrau. Britten received the CH (1953), the Aspen Award (1964), the OM (1965) and in 1976 became the first musician created a peer. Shostakovich dedicated his Symphony No. 14 to Britten but *Stravinsky disparaged him. He died of congestive heart failure.

Carpenter, H., *Benjamin Britten.* 1993; Kildea, P., *Benjamin Britten: A Life in the Twentieth Century*. 2013.

Brockhaus, Friedrich Arnold (1772–1823). German publisher. Founder of the firm in Leipzig which has borne his name, he published the encyclopaedic

Konversations Lexikon (completed 1811), which has been followed by many encyclopaedias during the history of the family firm.

Brodkey, Harold (1930–1996). American novelist and short story writer, born in Illinois. Educated at Harvard, he taught at Cornell and CCNY and contributed to the *New Yorker*. His novels included *The Runaway Soul* (1991) and *Profane Friendship* (1994). He died of AIDS.

Brodsky, Joseph Aleksandrovich (1940–1996). Russian-Jewish poet, born in St Petersburg. After leaving school, he began writing poetry and was sentenced to hard labour in Arkhangelsk for 'social parasitism' 1964–65. He lived in the US from 1972, teaching at the universities of Michigan, Queen's College, New York, and Mt Holyoake College 1981–96. He was awarded the 1987 Nobel Prize for Literature in 1987 and named as the Poet Laureate of the US in 1991. His poems were translated into English, German and French.

Broglie, Maurice, Duc de (1875–1960). French physicist. As a young man and again in World War I he served in the French navy, but was known for his work on the ionisation of gases, radioactivity and X-rays, of which he obtained the first spectra. He became a member of the Académie française in 1934. His younger brother **Louis Victor Pierre Raymond, Duc de Broglie** (1892–1987), studied history for a diplomatic career, became a radio engineer in World War I, then took up physics at the University of Paris. He laid the foundations of wave mechanics and his prediction of the diffraction of electrons was confirmed in 1927 by C. J. *Davisson and G. P. *Thomson. Awarded the Nobel Prize for Physics in 1929, he was professor of physics at the University of Paris 1932–62, a member of the Académie française 1943–87, and a prolific writer. His publications include *New Perspectives in Physics* (1962).

Bromfield, Louis (1896–1956). American novelist and short-story writer. He won the Pulitzer Prize for 1926 with *Early Autumn*, his other novels include *The Rains Came* (1937), *Night in Bombay* (1940), and *Mrs Parkington* (1943).

Brown, M., *Louis Bromfield and His Books*. 1956.

Bronowski, Jacob (1908–1974). British mathematician, humanist and poet, born in Łódz. In England from 1920, educated at Cambridge, he had an encyclopaedic range of interests, worked for government, wrote books on *Blake, broadcast for the BBC and researched in California. With Bruce Mazlish he wrote *The Western Intellectual Tradition* (1960) and presented an inspiring television series *The Ascent of Man* (1971–72).

Brontë (originally Brunty or Prunty, the familiar form was adopted after *Nelson was made Duke of Brontë). Anglo-Irish literary family, resident in Yorkshire. **Patrick Brontë** (1777–1861), born in County Down, was educated in Cambridge and, despite Methodist leanings, ordained as an Anglican clergyman in 1806, serving parishes in West Yorkshire until his death, first Hartshead (1811), then Thornton (1815) and as perpetual curate of Haworth (1820). In 1812 he married **Maria Branwell** (d.1821). Two daughters, **Maria** (1813–1825) and **Elizabeth** (1814–1825), were born in Hartshead; Charlotte, Branwell, Emily and Anne in Thornton. Originally educated at home, after their mother's death the girls were cared for by their kindly but austere aunt Elizabeth Branwell. Their father became increasingly eccentric and in 1824 they were sent to a hated school for the daughters of the clergy at Cowan Bridge (the Lowood of *Jane Eyre*). The two older girls were sent home to die of tuberculosis and the younger three soon returned as well. The four surviving children, ardent readers of *Shakespeare, Walter *Scott and *Byron, created literary worlds of their own: Charlotte and Branwell wrote a cycle of plays, stories and poems about the imaginary kingdom of Angria (about 1500 pages of which survive), while Emily and Anne produced the island kingdom of Gondal (only a few fine poems remaining). To avoid personal publicity, scarcely necessary as it happened, the sisters adopted masculine names for their first publication, *Poems by Currer, Ellis and Acton Bell*, which appeared in 1846 and sold only two copies.

Charlotte Brontë (Currer Bell) (1816–1855) attended Miss Wooler's school at Roe Head (1831–32), made lasting friendships, returning to teach her siblings. She then taught at Roe Head (1835–38), became a private governess, and a pupil teacher at Constantin Heger's boarding school in Brussels (1842 and 1843). Her first novel *The Professor*, set in Brussels, completed in 1846, was rejected and published posthumously (1857). *Jane Eyre: An Autobiography*, edited by Currer Bell, appeared in 1847. With its romantic intensity, the vividly Byronic Mr Rochester, and the rejection of love through moral conviction, it won immediate success. *Shirley* (1849) and *Villette* (1853), also set in Brussels, followed. In 1849 the sisters' authorship was revealed. Charlotte visited London three times in 1850, meeting *Thackeray, then went to the Lake District, Scotland and Manchester (1851–52). In 1854 she married **Arthur Bell Nicholls** (1817–1906), her father's curate, and died nine months later of pregnancy toxaemia, complicated by tuberculosis. Elizabeth *Gaskell became her first biographer (1857).

(Patrick) **Branwell Brontë** (1817–1848) showed youthful gifts and is remembered only for a striking but incomplete portrait of his sisters. Dismissed as a railway clerk and tutor, he was wayward and unstable. Addiction to alcohol and opium contributed to his early death.

Emily (Jane) **Brontë** (Ellis Bell) (1818–1848), the most gifted of the family, was the best poet, as Charlotte conceded, and the most powerful novelist. She was a governess in Halifax, taught English and

piano in Brussels (1842) while learning French and German, then kept house at Haworth. Emily's poems are by far the best in the 1846 collection. Her only novel, *Wuthering Heights* (1847), set on the Yorkshire moors, is a work of great passion and power, suggesting elemental conflict between nature and civilisation, masterfully complex in structure, using time shifts and marked by touches of cruelty. The central character is the passionate Heathcliff, and Catherine Earnshaw is a self-portrait. Criticised for morbidity on publication, it was later recognised as a masterpiece. Emily died of tuberculosis after refusing all medical assistance.

Anne Brontë (Acton Bell) (1820–1849) was most influenced by her aunt and Emily, with whom she created Gondal. Gentle and submissive in character, she worked as a governess and died at Scarborough. Her novels were the autobiographical *Agnes Grey* (1847) and *The Tenant of Wildfell Hall* (1848), the story of a violent drunkard, partly modelled on Branwell.

Gerin, W., *Anne Brontë*. 1959; *Charlotte Brontë*. 1967; *Emily Brontë*. 1971; Winnifrith, T., *The Brontës and Their Background*. 1973; Barker, J., *The Brontës.* 1988.

Brook, Peter Stephen Paul (1925–2022). English stage producer and film director. After student productions at Oxford, he worked for the Royal Shakespeare Company, becoming co-director 1962–70. He also produced drama, ballet and opera at Covent Garden, the New York Metropolitan, in Iran and West Africa and (from 1970) in Paris. His films include *The Beggar's Opera, The Lord of the Flies, King Lear, A Midsummer Night's Dream, Marat/Sade, The Conference of the Birds* and *Meetings with Remarkable Men.* From 1985 until 1989 he toured the world with his production of a Sanskrit epic *The Mahabharata*, which was then adapted for television and film. He received a CH in 1998.

Brook, P. S. P., *The Empty Space*. 1968.

Brooke, Sir Alan Francis *see* **Alanbrooke**

Brooke, Sir Basil Stanlake *see* **Brookeborough**

Brooke, Rupert Chawner (1887–1915). English poet, born at Rugby. Educated at Rugby School, where his father was a master, he studied at King's College, Cambridge. He epitomised the golden youth of the Edwardian era: beautiful, sexually ambiguous, a questing Fabian. After travelling in Germany, the US and the Pacific he was commissioned in the Royal Naval Division in the early days of World War I and died of blood poisoning caused by an insect bite in Skyros on his way to the Dardanelles. He was the 'gifted and golden youth', the poignancy of whose early death typified the tragedy of his generation.

> If I should die think only this of me
> That there's some corner of a foreign field
> That is for ever England …

are the most famous lines from his two slim volumes of poetry (1911 and 1915).

Hassal, C., *Rupert Brooke: A Biography*. 1972; Jones, N., *Rupert Brooke: Life, Death and Myth*. 2016; Delany, P., *Fatal Glamour: The Life of Rupert Brooke*. 2016.

Brookeborough, Basil Stanlake Brooke, 1st Viscount (1888–1973). Northern Ireland politician, born near Brookeborough. A nephew of Viscount *Alanbrooke, he inherited a baronetcy, served in World War I (CBE, MC), and was a Senator 1921–22. A Member of the Northern Ireland parliament at Stormont 1929–69, he became a minister in 1933 and succeeded J. M. Andrews as Prime Minister 1943–63. Deeply anti-Catholic, he worsened Catholic v. Protestant divisions in Northern Ireland. He received a viscountcy in 1952 and a KG in 1965.

Brooks, Van Wyck (1886–1963). American essayist, literary critic and translator. He wrote much on the influence of Puritanism on American culture, e.g. in *America's Coming-of-Age* (1915). Other works include notable biographies of Henry *James (1925) and *Emerson (1932) and *The Flowering of New England* (Pulitzer Prize for History, 1936).

Brougham, Henry Peter, 1st Baron Brougham and Vaux (1778–1868). British lawyer and politician. Born and educated in Edinburgh, he was admitted to the Scottish bar and became active in journalism, helping to found the *Edinburgh Review* (1802). In 1805 he moved to London and in 1808 was called to the English bar, and was a Whig MP 1810–12, 1816–30. He won notoriety and popularity as counsel for Queen *Caroline when the 'bill of divorcement' brought against her in 1820 by *George IV was withdrawn by the government. A prolific writer, Brougham founded the Society for the Diffusion of Useful Knowledge (1825) and, with others, London University (1828). In parliamentary opposition, he became an advocate for public education and the abolition of slavery (1833). In February 1828 he delivered the longest speech in the history of the House of Commons—six hours. When the Whigs returned to office (1830) he became Lord Chancellor and was prominent in the Reform Bill debates. His eccentricities became so marked that after the defeat of the government (1834) he never held office again. His most important work, if least known, was in law reform, where he followed the principles of Jeremy *Bentham. A carriage built to his design became the prototype of the brougham. He popularised Cannes as a resort, and died there.

Stewart, R., *Henry Brougham*. 1986.

Brouncker, William Brouncker, 2nd Viscount (1620–1684). English mathematician, born in Ireland. Educated at Oxford, he developed 'Brouncker's formula', which involves 'generalized

continued fractions of π'. He was the first President of the Royal Society 1662–77 and a Commissioner of the Navy 1681–84.

Brouwer (or Brauwer), **Adriaen** (1606–1638). Flemish painter, born at Oudenaarde. A pupil of Frans *Hals, his pictures of brawls and taverns, in which he displays a strong sense of character, reflect the dissipation of his own life. He died of the plague in Antwerp.

Brown, Sir Arthur Whitten (1886–1948). British engineer and aviator. He was navigator to Sir John William *Alcock on the first non-stop Atlantic flight (June 1919) and received a knighthood.

Brown, Edmund G(eorge: **'Pat'**) (1905–1996). American lawyer and Democratic politician. Governor of California 1959–66, he defeated Richard *Nixon in 1962 and lost to Ronald *Reagan in 1966. His son **Edmund Gerald ('Jerry') Brown, Jr** (1938–), formerly a priest, then a lawyer, was Governor of California 1975–83 and a liberal contender for the presidential nomination in 1976, 1980 and 1992; his sister **Kathleen Brown** (1946–) was the unsuccessful Democratic candidate for Governor 1994. Jerry Brown was Attorney-General 2007–11 and again Governor of California 2011–19 (the youngest, longest-serving and oldest to hold the office).

Brown, Ford Madox (1821–1893). English painter, born in Calais. Though closely associated with the Pre-Raphaelite Brotherhood by style and personal contact he never became a member. *Christ Washing St Peter's Feet*, in the National Gallery, London, is a fine example of his mature style, but more characteristic are pictures of historical subjects, such as the murals for Manchester Town Hall which occupied the last years of his life.

Hilton, T., *The Pre-Raphaelites*. 1970.

Brown, George Alfred, Baron George-Brown, (1914–1985). British politician. He became a local official of the Transport and General Workers Union and was elected as Labour MP for Belper in 1945. In the faction fights of the Labour opposition period he was a loyal supporter of *Gaitskell's defence policy and was deputy leader of the parliamentary party 1960–70. *Wilson beat him for the leadership in 1963 after Gaitskell died. After Labour won in 1964 he was given the new post of Secretary of State for Economic Affairs 1964–66, but clashed with Treasury and had little influence. He was Foreign Secretary 1966–68, was created a life peer in 1970 and left the Labour Party. He had superior natural gifts, but heavy drinking and an erratic style prevented his rise to the top.

Paterson, P., *Tired and Emotional: The Life of Lord George-Brown.* 1993.

Brown, (James) **Gordon** (1951–). British Labour politician, born in Glasgow. Son of a clergyman, he studied at Edinburgh University, and, after being blinded in the left eye after a football accident, became a lecturer and television journalist, gaining a PhD in 1982 for a thesis on James *Maxton. A Labour MP 1983–2015, he supported Tony *Blair for Labour's leadership in 1994, in return for a promise that he would control economic policy in a future government. Brown served as Chancellor of the Exchequer 1997–2007, the longest continuous tenure since 1823, working closely with Blair despite constant speculation about tensions between them, especially over Iraq. He succeeded Blair as Prime Minister in June 2007 and had to cope with the impact of bank collapses in the global financial crisis of 2008–09. The election of May 2010 resulted in a comparatively narrow defeat for Labour, and a Conservative-Liberal Democrat coalition. He became a consultant for the UN and WHO and received a CH in 2024.

Brown, G., *My Life, Our Times*. 2017.

Brown, John (1800–1859). American abolitionist, born in Connecticut. Attempts to gain a living by cattle trading and land speculation in Kansas proved largely abortive, but as the years went by he developed a fanatical belief in his personal mission to carry out, by force if necessary, the liberation of slaves. For this object he collected considerable sums from well-meaning sympathisers. His plan was to establish places of refuge first in one state and then in another where slaves would gather or be brought, in the belief that such insurrections would force anti-slavery legislation. Virginia was his first choice, but his raid on the US arsenal and rifle factory at Harper's Ferry proved a fiasco. No one rose in his favour and all 20 members of his tiny force were killed or captured. Brown was condemned for treason and hanged. The emotional fires lit by this futile attempt did much to precipitate the Civil War, during which the song *John Brown's Body* became a marching song of the Northern troops.

Baird, J., *Victoria the Queen*. 2016; Oates, S. B., *'To Purge this Land of Blood': Biography of John Brown*. 1972.

Brown, John (1826–1883). Scottish servant. Queen *Victoria's faithful retainer at her Scottish estate of Balmoral was not only a servant but a privileged friend whose pungent remarks to the sovereign herself and her visitors became legendary. Mementos of Brown were buried with the Queen but *Edward VII removed his statue.

Cullen, T., *The Empress Brown*. 1969; Baird, J., *Victoria the Queen*. 2016.

Brown, Lancelot ('Capability') (1716–1783). English landscape gardener. His nickname referred to his custom of assessing the 'capabilities' of a landscape. As a gardener at Stowe he learnt much from William *Kent, who worked there. Kent's ideas, improved upon by Brown, involved the abandonment of the

formal symmetrical beds and walks of earlier gardens and the laying out of gardens and parks by adapting or simulating the natural features of a landscape. The surroundings of many great country houses, e.g. Harewood and Blenheim, bear witness to his skill. He also designed houses himself, mainly in the Palladian style.

Stroud, D., *Capability Brown*. 1957.

Brown, Robert (1773–1858). Scottish botanist, born at Montrose. Educated at Edinburgh University, he collected many specimens while surveying the Australian coasts for the *Flinders expedition (from 1801), worked for Joseph *Banks, then became keeper of the botanical department at the British Museum from 1827 until his death. He was awarded the Copley Medal in 1839. The behaviour of pollen grains in water led him to discover and investigate a random movement to which particles in suspension are subjected. *Einstein explained (1905) this movement, known as 'Brownian motion', as being due to molecular bombardment.

Browne, Hablot Knight (known as 'Phiz') (1815–1882). English artist. He is best known for his illustrations to *Pickwick Papers* (in succession to Seymour and Bass) and several of Dickens' later works. He also illustrated books by Charles Lever, Harrison *Ainsworth and *Surtees.

Browne, Robert (1550–1633). English religious leader. He gave his name to the Brownists, afterwards known as 'independents' and 'Congregationalists'. He was related to Queen *Elizabeth's minister *Burghley, who obtained his release when he was imprisoned for his views. Later he moved with his congregation to Middleburg in Holland but his quarrelsome nature brought disruption, as it did wherever he went. Eventually he accepted Anglican orders but as a rector of Achurch from 1589–1631 he seems to have organised his church on Congregational lines. He died in Northampton gaol where he was incarcerated for an assault.

Browne, Sir Thomas (1605–1682). English scholar, physician and author, born in London. Educated at Winchester and Oxford, he studied medicine at Montpellier, Padua and Leyden Universities, and settled as a physician in Norwich. His famous *Religio Medici* (published 1642–43) is self-revealing but leaves his actual religion in doubt. In his *Pseudoxia Epidemica* or *Vulgar Errors* (1646) he speculates widely on new and old beliefs. His *Hydrotaphia* or *Urn Burial* (1658), with which was printed *The Garden of Cyrus*, was inspired by the discovery of some sepulchral urns in Norfolk. All of his works display vast and curious learning and are couched in a rhythmic, exotic style, rich in imagery.

Keynes, G., *A Bibliography of Sir Thomas Browne*. 1968.

Browning, Elizabeth Barrett (née Moulton-Barrett) (1806–1861). English poet. Her father, Edward Moulton of Coxhoe Hall, Durham, where she was born, took the name Barrett on inheriting estates in Jamaica. Most of her childhood was spent among the Malvern Hills, but, injured by a fall from a horse at the age of 15, she became a semi-invalid. After her mother's death (1832) the family moved more than once until in 1838 Elizabeth was living in seclusion with her father in Wimpole Street, London. She had been a precocious child and her poems had long been published and known when, in 1846, Robert *Browning rescued her by an elopement and secret marriage from her father's jealous affection and from an invalidism continued through habit and nerves. She and Robert lived in great happiness in Florence where their only child **Robert** (1849–1912), was born. Her works published after her marriage included *Sonnets from the Portuguese* (1850)—misleading title as they are her own—and *Aurora Leigh* (1856), a verse-novel. Her elopement is the theme of a play, *The Barretts of Wimpole Street,* by Rudolf Besier (1930).

Hayter, A., *Elizabeth Barrett Browning*. 1965.

Browning, Robert (1812–1889). English poet, born in London. Education by private tutors and a background of taste and learning provided by cultured and sufficiently wealthy parents offered the opportunity and inducement to a life of travel and poetry. He visited Russia and Italy, a country which thenceforth dominated his imagination and in which he spent his married life with Elizabeth Barrett *Browning. His first important publication, *Paracelsus* (1835) brought him the friendship of *Landor, *Dickens and other literary men, but though *Men and Women* (1855) attracted wider attention, for renown he had to await the issue of his masterpiece *The Ring and the Book* (1868–69), based on a murder story of Renaissance Italy. Other works include *Strafford* (1837) and other verse plays now largely forgotten, *Sordello* (1840), a narrative poem of the Guelph and Ghibelline feuds but described by Browning himself as the 'development of a soul', and several dramatic monologues *My Last Duchess*, *Andrea del Sarto*, *The Bishop Orders his Tomb* for which he is now particularly remembered. Of his narrative poems, *Pippa Passes*, *How They Carried the Good News From Ghent to Aix* and *The Pied Piper of Hamelin* are among the best known. Browning obtained much of his story material from books, but his characterisation was based on a close observation of ordinary people moving round him or doing their ordinary work and he approached moral questions unprejudiced by preconceived Victorian ideas. His verse has not the limpid flow or musical rhythm of that of some of his contemporaries. His idioms are sometimes obscure, and his eye often seems more widely open to the grotesque than to the beautiful but these qualities emphasise an individuality which, with his mastery of

verse forms, has ensured the survival and enjoyment of his work. He died in Venice and was buried in Westminster Abbey.

Griffin, W. H., *The Life of Robert Browning*. 1966.

Brubeck, Dave (David Warren) (1920–2012). American composer and jazz pianist, born in California. He formed the Dave Brubeck Quartet in 1951 and was a prolific composer of complex and sophisticated music in a variety of styles, including 'cool jazz'. Asteroid 5079 Brubeck was named for him.

Bruce, Sir David (1855–1931). Scottish parasitologist and microbiologist, born in Melbourne, Australia. Having graduated at Edinburgh he became a British army surgeon, rising to the rank of major-general. He discovered the bacterial cause of Malta (undulant) fever, which was renamed brucellosis. In Zululand in 1894 he identified a protozoan parasite, later named *Trypanosoma brucei* for him, transmitted by tsetse flies to cause sleeping sickness in humans, *nagana* in cattle. He collaborated with his wife, **Mary Elizabeth Bruce** (née Steele) (1849–1931), a microbiologist, and died during her funeral service.

Bruce, James (1730–1794). Scottish explorer. Having originally studied law, he became a wine merchant, entered the consular service and acquired enough medical knowledge to enable him to travel as a physician in North Africa and the Middle East. In 1768 he went to Egypt, whence he set out on his famous journey to Abyssinia (Ethiopia). He arrived at Gondar, then the capital, early in 1770; in November he reached the source of the Blue Nile, then considered the main stream. Back in Scotland he married Mary Dundas (1776). It was not until 1790 that his five-volume account of his journey appeared.

Bruce, Robert (1274–1329). King of Scotland (as Robert I) 1306–29. A Scottish national hero, his family was of Norman descent (from Bruis) and his grandfather Robert Bruce contended for the throne in 1291 when John de *Balliol was ultimately chosen. It was his murder of the Red (John) Comyn in the Greyfriars Church, Dumfries, an act for which he was excommunicated, that brought him into the open as national leader against England. He was crowned in 1306 at Scone and was fortunate that England's warrior King *Edward I died the following year, for though Bruce still had to face some years of varying fortune he gradually asserted his mastery over the country and by his great victory over the English at Bannockburn (1314) assured Scotland's independence (finally recognised in 1328). He was succeeded by his son (by his first wife) *David II. From his daughter Marjorie (by his second wife) was descended the Stewart (Stuart) dynasty. His brother **Edward Bruce** crossed with a Scottish force to Ulster in 1315 and succeeded in having himself crowned King of Ireland. He failed, however, to maintain his power, was driven back into Ulster and was killed in 1318 near Dundalk.

Barrow, G. W. S., *Robert Bruce*. 1965.

Bruce, Stanley Melbourne, 1st Viscount Bruce of Melbourne (1883–1967). Australian politician, born in Melbourne. He spent only 34 of his 84 years in Australia, was educated at Trinity Hall, Cambridge, called to the English bar, served with the Royal Fusiliers in World War I, winning the MC at Gallipoli and a *Croix de guerre avec palme*. A Member of the House of Representatives 1918–29, 1931–33, he was Treasurer 1921–23. He displaced W.M. *Hughes to become Prime Minister and Minister for External Affairs 1923–29, in a Nationalist-Country Party coalition, with Earle *Page as his deputy. The coalition was overwhelmingly defeated in 1929 over a proposal that the states should in future control industrial arbitration and Bruce lost his seat. He lived in London from 1932, was High Commissioner 1932–45 and President of the League of Nations Council 1936. An arch-appeaser, he made constant excuses about why the Empire should avoid war with *Hitler's Germany. He represented Australia in Britain's War Cabinet 1942–45, received a CH in 1927 and a peerage in 1947. Elected FRS in 1944, he was foundation Chairman of the World Food Council (forerunner of the Food and Agriculture Organisation) 1947–51 and first Chancellor of The Australian National University, Canberra 1951–61.

Lee, D., *Stanley Melbourne Bruce: Australian Internationalist.* 2010.

Bruch, Max (Karl August) (1838–1920). German composer, born in Cologne. He conducted and taught composition in Germany and in England directed the Liverpool Philharmonic Society 1880–83. He was a close friend of *Brahms. Prolific, including three symphonies, six string quartets, six concertos, and many choral works, he is now remembered only for his Violin Concerto No. 1 in G minor (1866), the virtuosic *Scottish Fantasy* for violin and orchestra (1880), and the *Kol Nidrei* variations for cello and orchestra (1881).

Bruckner, Anton (1824–1896). Austrian composer, born in Ansfelden, Upper Austria. He studied Bach's organ works intensively and in 1856 became organist at Linz Cathedral. He was highly regarded as an organist, giving concert performances in Paris (1868) and London (1871). In Vienna, where he settled in 1868, he became organist at St Stephen's Cathedral and was for many years a revered teacher at the Conservatoire. He never married. In his early life, Bruckner's musical idols had been *Bach and *Beethoven; at Vienna he became a devotee of *Wagner. He was painfully naive and often ridiculed by his more sophisticated musical contemporaries, but his piety and sincerity emerge from his music. His best known symphonies are No. 3, dedicated

to Wagner (1873), No. 4, the *Romantic* (1874), No. 5 (1877), No. 6 (1881), No. 7 (1883) the best known of the series; its slow movement, intended to commemorate Wagner's death, incorporates an inversion of themes from *Tannhäuser*, No. 8 (1886) and No. 9 (1894), dedicated to 'Our dear God', and left unfinished.

Watson, D., *Bruckner*. 1975.

Bruegel (or Brueghel or Breughel), **Pieter** (c.1526–1569). Flemish painter, born in Breda. He studied at the Antwerp Guild and in 1552–53 travelled through France, Switzerland and Italy making scores of landscape drawings, ancestral to the landscapes of his mature work. In fact, the influence of the Alpine landscape was of infinitely greater significance than that of Italian art, even in the time of *Michelangelo and *Titian. Bruegel's early grotesque fantasies such as *The Fall of The Rebel Angels* clearly display the influence of Hieronymus *Bosch, but in his mature works Bruegel shows himself a painter of greater subtlety and humanity than Bosch. Ugly, squat, puppet-like, Bruegel's tragi-comic characters constitute a teeming and toil-ridden humanity in uneasy truce with their natural environment, but at the same time give a fascinating representation of the peasant life and lore of his time (as in *The Peasant Wedding* and *Children's Games*). The cosmic perspective of Bruegel's landscapes, the villages crouched at the bottom or teetering on the slopes of huge mountain formations, are a comment on the human condition which contrasts with the anthropocentric world of Italian painting. Bruegel moved from Antwerp to Brussels in 1563 and there spent the rest of his life. His work was well received by his contemporaries and is still greatly admired. Most of his finest works are in Vienna; they include the superb landscape sequence known as *The Seasons*. Two of his sons achieved a lesser reputation. **Pieter II** (c.1564–1636/8) became known as 'Hell Bruegel' for his nightmare scenes; **Jan** (1568–1625), known as 'Velvet Bruegel', became a court painter at Brussels and was a friend of *Rubens with whom he collaborated. He is best known for his artificial landscapes and flower pictures.

Grossmann. F. (ed.), *Pieter Brueghel: Complete Paintings*. 1973; Schama, S., *Landscape and Memory*. 1996; Orenstein, N. M., *Pieter Bruegel the Elder*. 2001.

Brummell, George Bryan (known as 'Beau Brummell') (1778–1840). English wit and dandy. Educated at Eton and Oxford, he became an intimate of the Prince of Wales (later *George IV) and the leader of fashion in London. In 1813 he insulted the Prince ('Who's your fat friend?'), lost his fortune through gambling and fled to France in 1816 to escape his creditors, living in Calais, then Caen. He died in madness and poverty.

Franzero, C. M., *The Life and Times of Beau Brummell*. 1958.

Brundtland, Gro Harlem (1939–). Norwegian Labour politician. Educated at Oslo and Harvard universities, she became a physician and a medical administrator. She was Minister for the Environment 1974–79, Leader of the Labour Party 1981–92, and Prime Minister of Norway 1981, 1986–89, 1990–96. She chaired the World Commission on Environment and Development which produced *Our Common Future* (1987), an important analysis of global poverty and the widening economic gap between North and South, known as the Brundtland Report. She was Director-General of the World Health Organisation (WHO) 1998–2003.

Brunei, Sultan of *see* **Hassanal Bolkiah**

Brunel, Isambard Kingdom (1805–1859). British engineer, born in Portsmouth. Son of Sir Marc Isambard *Brunel, he studied at the Lycée-Henri IV, Paris, and the university in Caen. In 1823 he entered his father's firm, working on the Thames Tunnel project until 1828, when it was incomplete (but is still in use). His plans for the Clifton Suspension Bridge, 214 metres span, over the Avon Gorge, near Bristol, were adopted in 1831 and he directed work on it. However, owing to insufficient funds it was not completed until 1864. As chief engineer of the Great Western Railway 1833–46, he introduced the broad gauge (2.14 m) railway, constructed more than 1,900 km (1,200 miles) of track and many canals. In 1837 he designed the first transatlantic steamer, the *Great Western*, later improving on this design with the *Great Britain* (1843) and the *Great Eastern* (1858), each the world's largest at the time of launching. The *Great Britain*, the first large vessel driven by a screw propeller, is on display in Bristol. The *Great Eastern*, 211 metres long, and the first to have a double iron hull, was designed for voyages to India and Australia; it also laid the first successful transatlantic cable. Inspired by *Paxton's Crystal Palace, he designed the London Paddington railway station (1854). Brunel also carried out extensive improvements at docks, including at Bristol and Plymouth, and worked on large guns. For the Crimean War he designed a floating armoured barge and a prefabricated hospital, erected in 1855 at Renkioi. He was an FRS, and Hon. DCL of Oxford. In a BBC public poll '100 Greatest Britons' (2001), Brunel came second to Winston *Churchill. At the opening of the London Olympics in 2012, Brunel (played by Kenneth *Branagh) appeared as a central figure in the creation of modern Britain.

Rolt, L. T. C., *Isambard Kingdom Brunel*. 1974, rev. 1989; Vaughan, A., *Isambard Kingdom Brunel*. 1991; Beckett, D., *Brunel's Britain*. 2006; Buchanan, R. A., *Brunel: The life and times of Isambard Kingdom Brunel*. 2006; Gillings, A., *Brunel*. 2006.

Brunel, Sir Marc Isambard (1769–1849). British engineer, born in France. During the Revolution he took refuge in America, worked there as an engineer

and came to England in 1799. He had gained a great reputation for constructional work in dockyards etc. before embarking on his most ambitious and anxious task, the building of the Thames tunnel (1825–43). His son, Isambard Kingdom *Brunel, worked with his father on the tunnel.

Clements, P., *Marc Isambard Brunel.* 1970.

Brunelleschi, Filippo (1377–1446). Italian Renaissance architect, born in Florence. Originally a sculptor, he turned to architecture after *Ghiberti's design for the bronze doors of the Florence baptistery was preferred to his own. He studied the classical buildings still existing in Rome. His theories of perspective were influential in Renaissance art. In the Ospedale degli Innocenti (begun in 1419) he introduced the device of supporting arches on the top of columns, a practice subsequently much imitated. His most spectacular achievement was the construction of the remarkable octagonal dome surmounting the cathedral in Florence. Built as a double-shelled cupola, the dome was erected entirely without scaffolding. He also built the churches of S. Lorenzo and S. Spirito.

Manetti, A., *Brunelleschi*. Eng. trans. 1970.

Brunhilda (Brynhildr**) of Austrasia.** (d.613). Visigoth princes. She married Sigbert I, ruler of the Frankish kingdom of Austrasia in 566. As regent for her grandchildren (from 595) she exercised power until she was expelled in 599 and finally defeated and captured in 613. She was put to death by being dragged at the heels of a wild horse. She is often confused with the legendary Brünnhilde whose story is told in *Wagner's opera-cycle *The Ring*.

Brüning, Heinrich (1885–1970). German politician. An organisor of the Catholic trade union movement, he was a Reichstag member 1924–33 and leader of the Centre Party 1929–33. Chancellor April 1930–June 1932, in a coalition, he introduced stringent economies during the Depression. After the Reichstag election of September 1930, the size of the Nazi and Communist blocs made parliamentary rule impossible, forcing Brüning to rule by presidential decree, a precedent later used by *Hitler. *Hindenburg replaced Brüning with von *Papen in June 1932. Escaping murder attempts by Nazis he took refuge abroad and was a professor at Harvard 1937–52. After returning to Germany he held the chair of political science at Cologne 1952–55 but never entered politics again.

Brunner, (Heinrich) **Emil** (1889–1966). Swiss theologian. After pastoral work as a minister in the Swiss Reformed Church he eventually became (1924) professor of theology at Zürich University. His views were formed in close association with Karl *Barth, with whom, however, he was in controversy (from 1933) concerning the nature of man. His pamphlet *Nature and Grace* gives his side of the argument. Among his many other works are *Revelation and Reason* (Eng. tr. 1943) and *Communism, Capitalism and Christianity* (1949).

Kegley, C., *The Theology of Emil Brunner*. 1962.

Bruno, St (c.1030–1101). German monk, founder of the Carthusian order, born in Cologne. Educated in his birthplace, he became rector of the cathedral schools at Rheims. In 1084 he withdrew to found an austere religious order at Chartreuse (Cartusia) in the French Alps. He died in Calabria where he had founded a second monastery. London's Charterhouse on the site of a Carthusian monastery, recalls the name of St Bruno's original foundation.

Bruno, Giordano (1548–1600). Italian philosopher, born in Campania. He became a Dominican monk in 1565, but was expelled for scepticism. Put on trial, he fled and led the life of a wandering teacher until in 1581 he obtained protection from *Henri III of France. By 1586, after a vain attempt to obtain employment at Oxford, he was on the move again, and after finding temporary refuge in Wittenberg and Prague returned in 1591 to Italy, where he was handed over to the papal authorities, condemned after a seven-year trial by the Inquisition for his heretical pantheism and burned at the stake in Rome. As well as books on philosophy, he wrote poetry and a play. His philosophy had a profound effect on later thinkers, especially *Spinoza and *Leibniz.

Aquilecchia, G., *Giordano Bruno*. 1971; Rowland, I. D., *Giordano Bruno: Philosopher/Heretic*. 2008.

Brusilov, Aleksei Alekseivich (1856–1926). Russian general. In World War I his great drives through Galicia achieved spectacular if temporary success, but the last, undertaken in 1917 when he was Commander-in-Chief under the revolutionary provisional government, was halted by desertions of his troops. In 1920 he joined the Red Army in the war against Poland.

Bruton, John Gerard (1947–2024). Irish politician. Minister for Industry 1982–86, he promoted Ireland's technological revolution, becoming Leader of Fine Gael 1990–2001 and Prime Minister 1994–97. He was EU Ambassador to the US 2004–09.

Brutus, Lucius Junius (fl. 509 BCE). Roman consul. He is said to have led the revolt which after the rape of Lucrece caused the expulsion of the last king of Rome,*Tarquinius Superbus, and so was honoured as a founder of the republic. Another legend (for even his existence has been doubted) relates how he sentenced his two sons to death for trying to restore the monarchy.

Brutus, Marcus Junius (85?–2 BCE). Roman soldier and conspirator. Though his interest in philosophy had implanted a distaste for public life, he supported

*Pompey in the struggle for power which resulted in *Caesar's victory at Pharsalus (48), but was pardoned, made governor of Cisalpine Gaul in 46 and praetor of the city of Rome in 44. Persuaded that Caesar planned to make himself king, Brutus reluctantly led the conspirators who murdered him (44). Later he fled from Rome to Macedonia and committed suicide, after his army was defeated at Philippi (*Antony, *Augustus).

Bryan, William Jennings (1860–1925). American Democratic politician, born in Illinois. He became a lawyer in Nebraska, and was a Member of the House of Representatives (1891–95), identifying himself with the 'free silver' policy. A famous speech ('You shall not crucify mankind upon a cross of gold') won him the Democratic nomination for president at the Chicago convention of 1896, but in the election, as again in 1900 and 1908, he was crushingly defeated. Secretary of State under Woodrow *Wilson 1913–15, he resigned during World War I because of his pacifist views. A strong fundamentalist, in 1925 in the notorious 'Monkey Trial' in Dayton, Tennessee he led the prosecution against John T. *Scopes for teaching *Darwin's evolutionary theories, contrary to state law. He also opposed Darwinism because he considered 'natural selection' to be anti-social, justifying domination of the weak by the strong.

Koenig, L. W., *Bryan: A Political Biography*. 1971.

Bryant, Sir Arthur Wynne Morgan (1899–1985). English historian. Until 1942 he was sympathetic to *Hitler and closer ties with Germany, then wrote 30 popular books which were intensely patriotic and romanticised. These include works on the Napoléonic and Regency periods: *The Years of Endurance*, *The Years of Victory*, *The Age of Elegance*. Restoration England takes the story further back and the field is widened still further by *Makers of the Realm* and *The Age of Chivalry*. Subjects of his biographies include *Pepys, *Baldwin, *Nelson and *George V. *The Turn of the Tide* (1957) and *Triumph in the West* (1959) are based on the diaries of Lord *Alanbrooke. He received the CH in 1967.

Bryant, William Cullen (1794–1878). American poet and journalist. While practising at the bar he became editor of the *New York Evening Post* 1829–78, in which capacity he supported liberal causes. including the abolition of slavery, and helped to promote *Lincoln's election to the presidency. His poetry consists mainly of meditations on nature in the manner of *Wordsworth, but also includes translations of the *Iliad* and *Odyssey*. His best known poem is 'Thanatopsis' (1817).

McLean, A. F., *William Cullen Bryant*. 1965.

Bryce, James Bryce, 1st Viscount (1838–1922). British historian and Liberal politician. Educated at Glasgow and Oxford Universities he was Regius professor of civil law at Oxford 1870–93 and an MP 1880–1907. After having held minor offices 1886, 1892–95 he was, as a strong Home-Ruler, a popular Chief Secretary for Ireland 1905–07. His most important political role was as Ambassador to the US 1907–13. After World War I he headed a commission to inquire into German atrocities. He was a staunch supporter of the League of Nations. His many works include *The Holy Roman Empire* (1864), *The American Commonwealth* (1888, a major influence on the framers of Australia's Constitution) and *Modern Democracies* (1921). He received the OM in 1907.

Bryce, Dame Quentin Alice Louise (née Strachan) (1942–). Australian official, born in Brisbane. A law graduate, she was an active advocate for affirmative action, serving as Federal Sex Discrimination Commissioner 1988–93, Governor of Queensland 2003–08 and the first female Governor-General of Australia 2008–14.

Buber, Martin (né Mordechai) (1878–1965). Austrian-Jewish-Israeli philosopher, born in Vienna. Distantly related to Karl *Marx, he lived in Lviv as a youth, later attended German universities and became deeply influenced by *Kierkegaard and *Nietzsche. He joined the Zionist movement in 1898 and during World War I organised the Jewish National Council in Berlin. An honorary professor at the University of Frankfurt-am-Main 1930–33, he left Germany in 1935 and in 1938 became professor of social philosophy at the Hebrew University, Jerusalem.

In his most important book, *Ich und Du* (1923: published in English as *I and Thou*, 1937), he argued that human existence is an oscillation between *Ich-Du* (I-You), an unstructured dialogue between man/woman and God, between lovers, or with nature and *Ich-Es* (I-It), which is material, analytical and a monologue. Religious faith can only be subjective, a yearning form of *Ich-Du*. Ich-Es is common, Ich-Du is rare.

The history of Israel, as recorded in the Bible, can be interpreted as a dialogue between God and the nation, and here Buber found inspiration for his insistence that the aim of Zionism should be to create a society in direct relationship with God. From 1925 he worked with **Franz Rosenzweig** (1886–1929) on a German translation of the Hebrew Bible but it was only completed in 1961.

Kohn, H., *Martin Buber*. 1961; Mendes-Flohr, P., *Martin Buber: A Life of Faith and Dissent*. 2019.

Bucer (or Butzer), **Martin** (1491–1551). German religious reformer, born in Alsace. He became a Dominican friar at the age of 14, but, influenced by *Luther and *Erasmus, left the order (1521), married a former nun and settled in Strasbourg, where he became a powerful influence among those preaching reform. He took a middle course in the disputes

between Luther and *Zwingli, but found himself unable to sign the Augsburg Confession of 1530. Attempts to reach agreement between the groups of reformers continued with varying success, but Bucer finally found his position in Germany so irksome that in 1549 he accepted *Cranmer's invitation and went to England. He lectured in theology at Cambridge, where he died.

Hopf, C., *Martin Bucer and the English Reformation*. 1946.

Buchan, John, 1st Baron Tweedsmuir (1875–1940). Scottish author and politician, born in Perth. Son of a Free Church minister, educated at Oxford, he became one of Lord *Milner's assistants in South Africa, held staff and administrative posts in World War I, was a director of Thomas Nelsons, publishers, until 1929, and a Conservative MP 1927–35, receiving a CH in 1932. Governor-General of Canada 1935–40, he suffered a stroke and died in Ottawa after a brain operation by Wilder *Penfield failed. He wrote about 50 books including biographies (e.g. of Sir Walter *Scott, Julius *Caesar, and Oliver *Cromwell), and novels, of which the most famous, *The Thirty Nine Steps* (1915), *Greenmantle* (1916) and *The Three Hostages* (1924), were about the spy-hunting exploits of Captain Richard Hannay (based in part on Edmund *Ironside), with strong characterisation and a hint of anti-Semitism.

Smith, J., *John Buchan*. 1965; Lownie, A., *John Buchan: The Presbyterian Cavalier*. 2003; Buchan, U., *Beyond the Thirty-Nine Steps: A Life of John Buchan*. 2019.

Buchanan, George (1506–1582). Scottish humanist and Latin poet. Educated at Paris University, his *Franciscanus*, a religious satire on the friars, caused his arrest by Cardinal *Beaton and imprisonment at St Andrews. He escaped in 1539 and taught Latin in Bordeaux, where *Montaigne was among his pupils, and Coimbra (Portugal), where he was imprisoned for a time by the Inquisition. He returned to Scotland in 1561 and became a leading member of the Reformed Church. Though he had been for a time tutor to *Mary Queen of Scots, his *Detectio Mariae Reginae* (157l) exposed her allegedly guilty part in *Darnley's death. For the last years of his life he was tutor to *James VI. Among many other Latin works was a history of Scotland (1582).

McFarlane, I. D., *Buchanan*. 1981.

Buchanan, James (1791–1868). 15th President of the US 1857–61. Born in Pennsylvania, he was a lawyer, served as a Democratic member of Congress 1821–31, and as a minister to Russia 1832–34. Elected as US Senator 1834–45, he sought nomination for the presidency in 1844, 1848 and 1852. He served as *Polk's Secretary of State 1845–49. His absence as minister to Great Britain 1853–56 during critical debates on slavery and states' rights gave him an appearance of remote neutrality and secured him the presidential nomination at Cincinnati in 1856, defeating Franklin *Pierce, the incumbent. He was elected in November 1856, winning 19 states, over the Republican J. C. *Frémont and former President Millard *Fillmore. As President he adopted a policy of peace at any price. The first seven states left the Union, to form a Confederacy, after *Lincoln's election in 1860, while Buchanan was still in the White House. He supported the Union cause during the Civil War. 'Old Buck' was the only unmarried president, and probably the only gay. In 20 Presidential ranking lists by US historians and political scientists, Buchanan scored No. 39 in the aggregate.

Klein, P. S., *President James Buchanan, A Biography*. 1962; Baker, J. H., *James Buchanan*. 2004; Boulard, G., *The Worst President—the Story of James Buchanan*. 2015.

Buchanan, Pat(rick Joseph) (1938–). American publicist. He worked in *Nixon's White House 1969–74, revived the term 'silent majority' and devised the Republican Party's 'Southern strategy', became assistant to *Reagan 1985–87. He emerged as a spokesman for the Christian Coalition, a presidential aspirant in 1992, challenging George H. W. *Bush, and again in 1996, and was an advocate for the radical Right.

Buchman, Frank Nathan Daniel (1878–1961). American evangelist, born in Pennsburg, PA. He entered the Lutheran ministry in 1902, then worked for the YMCA, and was a missionary in China. In 1921, he visited England and set up 'A First Century Christian Fellowship', renamed (somewhat misleadingly) 'The Oxford Group' in 1931 and 'Moral Re-Armament' (MRA) in 1938. He preached a doctrine of 'world-changing through life-changing', mainly among undergraduates. One method for helping the achievement of these aims was through gatherings, such as house parties, where young men and women were encouraged publicly to confess their difficulties and misdemeanours (often sexual). However, MRA was a significant influence in elements of the anti-*Hitler resistance in Germany. MRA adopted the name 'Initiatives of Change' in 2001.

Driberg, T., *The Mystery of Moral Rearmament*. 1964.

Büchner, Eduard (1860–1917). German organic chemist. His major discovery was the reality of cell-free fermentation, which he demonstrated by obtaining supplies of cell fluid through a complicated process of pulverising yeast. This extract, he showed, would ferment sucrose to ethanol. He attributed this property to a hypothetical enzyme which he termed 'zymase'. The importance of Buchner's researches was to show that living cells are not necessary for fermentation. He thus opened up the modern field of enzyme chemistry. Büchner worked on the fermentation processes of many microorganisms e.g. citrous fermentation and acetous fermentation.

The general tendency of his work was to show that key life phenomena can be explained in terms of enzyme-catalysed chemical reactions. A strong Bismarckian patriot, he volunteered for service in World War I and died of a shrapnel wound on the front in Romania.

Delbrück, M. and Schrohe, A., *Hefe, Gärung und Fäulnis*. 1904.

Büchner, Georg (1813–1837). German dramatist, born in Godelau. Influenced by *Shakespeare and the *Sturm und Drang* movement, he wrote three plays that anticipate the Expressionist movement. *Dantons Tod (Danton's Death*, 1835) was first performed in 1902, *Leone und Lena* (1836) satirised Romanticism and *Woyzeck* (1836, published 1879) was the basis of Alban *Berg's opera *Wozzeck* (1925). A political radical, he died in exile in Zürich.

Mayer, H., *Georg Büchner und seine Zeit*. 1946.

Buck, Pearl S. (née Pearl Comfort Sydenstricker, later Buck, then Walsh) (1892–1973). American novelist and campaigner, born in West Virginia. She lived in China 1892–1911, and, after college, 1914–34. Her father was a Presbyterian missionary zealot, her mother died from exhaustion and Pearl became increasingly hostile to Christian missions. Bilingual, she wrote 38 novels, most drawing on her long experience of China. *The Good Earth* (1931), a bestseller, became a successful film in 1937. She won the Pulitzer Prize in 1932 and the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1938. She campaigned actively for feminism, wartime support for China, breaking down Cold War tensions, nuclear disarmament, orphaned children and open recognition of the problems of mental retardation.

Buck, P. S., *My Several Worlds*. 1955; Conn, P., *Pearl S. Buck: a cultural biography*. 1996; Spurling, H., *Pearl Buck in China*. 2010.

Buckingham, 1st Duke of, George Villiers (1592–1628). English courtier. Son of a Leicestershire knight, he was for many years the favourite ('Steenie': 'my sweet child and wife') of *James I, and wealth was showered upon him. When a Spanish marriage was proposed for the future *Charles I, Buckingham took the prince on the much ridiculed and unsuccessful visit to Madrid to woo the Infanta Maria in person. When Charles came to the throne (1625), Buckingham remained in power but became increasingly unpopular; after the failure of his expedition to Cadiz only Charles' dissolution of parliament (1626) saved him from the consequences of impeachment. Attempts to aid the French Huguenots proved equally futile and it was when he was about to embark at Portsmouth on a second expedition to La Rochelle that he was killed by a discontented soldier, John Felton. His son, **George Villiers, 2nd Duke of Buckingham** (1628–1687), was brought up with the royal family after his father's death and became an intimate of the future *Charles II. He attended Trinity College, Cambridge and was taught by Thomas *Hobbes. He fought with Charles at the Battle of Worcester (1651), then escaped to Rotterdam, returning in 1657. Suspected by both royalists and anti-royalists, he was imprisoned several times. After the Restoration, Charles was cool at first and *Clarendon a powerful enemy. Elected FRS (1661), he was soon back in favour at court and after Clarendon's fall became the leading minister in the powerful group known by the acronym 'cabal' (or CABAL): ***C**lifford, **A**rlington, **B**uckingham, **A**shley (later *Shaftesbury), ***L**auderdale, who were dominant 1668–74. He was Chancellor of Cambridge University 1671–74. Parliament denounced him for improper use of government funds and for his open liaison with the Countess of Shrewsbury (who had witnessed the duel in which Buckingham killed her husband), and he was out of favour with the king from 1674 until 1684, when he retired from politics. Remembered as a debauchee and wit, he was one of the most brilliant of the men of the Restoration, part-author of the celebrated satire *The Rehearsal* (1671) and the 'Zimri' of *Dryden's *Absalom and Achitophel*. The dukedom became extinct on his death.

Lockyer, R., *Buckingham*. 1981.

Buckingham and Normanby, 1st Duke of, John Sheffield (1647–1721). English nobleman. He held office under *William and *Mary, and *Anne, wrote indifferent verse and tried to improve *Shakespeare. His townhouse, Buckingham House, completed in 1703, was sold to *George III in 1761, then converted and enlarged from 1825 to become Buckingham Palace.

Buckland, William (1784–1856). English clergyman and palaeontologist. Awarded the Copley Medal in 1822 for pioneering discoveries of fossils, he found the remains of a giant reptile naming it Megalosaurus ('great lizard')—later renamed Dinosaurus ('terrible lizard') by Richard *Owen. He was Dean of Westminster 1845–56.

Buckle, Henry Thomas (1821–1862). English historian. He wrote two volumes of his *History of Civilisation in England* (1857–61) intended to be introductory to a much larger work. His new scientific method of history concentrated on mankind as a whole rather than 'great' individuals, linked the activities of man with natural conditions such as climate and soil, and had considerable influence on later historians.

Buckley, William F(rank), **Jr** (1925–2008). American conservative writer. Educated at Yale, he came from a rich Catholic family, wrote well and became a leading figure in the conservative revival in US politics, founding the *National Review* in 1955 and hosting the television program *Firing Line*

1966–99. He changed his mind on several issues—civil rights, the war in Iraq and marijuana. He wrote several spy novels.

Buddha, The (i.e. 'the enlightened one'. His personal name was **Siddharta** and his family name **Gautama**) (c.563–483 BCE). Indian religious teacher, born in Kapilavastu (Rummindei), Nepal. Son of Prince Suddhodana of Kappihavastu and a member of the Sakya clan, he was brought up in the luxury and dissipations of an eastern court but his father, already fearing that his contemplative nature might lead him to renounce the world, arranged for him to marry young. But what the father had feared took place some years later. He left his wife and son, Rahula, and became a wandering seeker after truth. Six years of extreme asceticism, which he came to regard as futile, were followed by a mystical experience known as 'the enlightenment', said to have come to him while sitting under a Bo or Bode (pipal or wild fig) tree. It was borne in upon him that sorrow and suffering resulted from the craving for life and it was only by abolishing this craving that the cycle of birth and rebirth (i.e. reincarnation) could be broken and a state of nirvana (usually understood as a complete cessation of suffering and craving) attained. Buddha, as he was henceforth called, began the task of spreading the new faith in Benares. Five men who had been his original disciples but had left him were first converted, others soon followed and formed a mendicant order of brethren. Three months each year were spent with the brethren in a monastery in contemplation and discussion, the remainder of the year in wandering about the country, begging bowl in hand, gathering adherents. To attain the cessation of craving, eight 'steps' were prescribed: (1) understanding, (2) intention, (3) speech, (4) action and rightness of morals, (5) livelihood, (6) mental control, (7) clearness of thought, (8) concentration. Buddha died after about 45 years of such missionary work. After the 4th century CE Buddhism gradually declined in India but spread as far as China, Korea and Japan. There are about 350 million Buddhists worldwide. Buddhism is the dominant religion in Thailand, Burma, Tibet, Korea, Vietnam, Laos, Cambodia and Sri Lanka. About 100 million Chinese are Buddhists and a similar number in Japan are adherents of Buddhism and Shinto.

Carrithers, M. M., *The Buddha*. 1983.

'Buffalo Bill' *see* **Cody, William Frederick**

Buffet, Bernard (1928–1999). French artist. He suffered poverty and sickness in his youth but from 1948, when he shared the Grand Prix de La Critique, he won success and fame. His pictures are often carried out in a gaunt linear style depicting human misery, but he also achieved success with murals, book illustrations and stage decor. He fell out of fashion in the 1970s. Suffering from Parkinson's disease, he committed suicide with a plastic bag.

Buffett, Warren Edward (1930–). American investor and banker, born in Omaha. His company Berkshire Hathaway became the centre of a diversified empire and Buffett was one of the world's richest people, worth $US101 billion in 2021.

Buffon, Georges Louis Leclerc, Comte de (1707–1788). French naturalist, born in Burgundy. Educated at the Jesuit college at Dijon, he spent his early manhood in travel and scientific writings. In 1739 he was appointed director of the Jardin du Roi in Paris (now the Jardin des Plantes, which houses the Zoo). From 1749 onwards he was engaged in publishing a vast *Histoire naturelle*. In some of his conjectures on the development of animal species he anticipated *Darwin's theories. His speech on admission to the Académie française included the famous phrase 'le style est l'homme'.

Fellows, O. E. and Milliken, S. F., *Buffon*. 1972.

Bugatti, Ettore Arco Isidoro (1881–1947). Italian engineer and designer. He built his first motor car in 1909, designed racing cars and the luxurious Type 41, the 'Golden Bugatti' (*La Royale*) (1920).

Buhl *see* **Boulle, André Charles**

Buick, David Dunbar (1855–1929). American automobile manufacturer, born in Scotland. His Detroit company failed and was taken over by General Motors in 1908. He became a bookkeeper and died in poverty.

Bukharin, Nikolai Ivanovich (1888–1938). Russian Communist politician and theoretician, born in Moscow. He joined the Bolsheviks in 1906, lived in Oregon and New York 1911–13, then worked with *Lenin in Germany. He returned to Russia to become editor of *Pravda* 1917–29 and was a member of the Politburo 1924–29. He was editor of *Izvestia* 1934–37 but, as a prominent member of the 'right opposition', became one of the victims of Stalin's purge and was convicted and shot. Bukharin's widow **Anna Mikhailovna Larina** (1914–1996), imprisoned and exiled 1939–59, secured his rehabilitation under *Gorbachev (February 1988). His books, including *The ABC of Communism* (1921), became freely available.

Cohen, S., *Bukharin and the Bolshevik Revolution*. 1973.

Bulfinch, Charles (1763–1844). American architect. The first professional American architect, he built the state capitols in Massachusetts, Connecticut and Maine and designed the dome for the Capitol in Washington DC.

Bulgakov, Mikhail Afanasievich (1891–1940). Russian playwright, novelist and short story writer, born in Kiev. He graduated as a doctor from the University of Kiev in 1916 but left medicine for writing. His first comedies were staged in 1919, but he did not become really successful until the publication

of his two satirical stories *Deviltry* (1923) and *The Fatal Eggs* (1924). His humour and penetrating satire are also much in evidence in the two comedies *Zoyka's Apartment* (1920) and *The Crimson Island* (1927). In 1925 he published his most successful novel *White Guards*, later dramatised as *Days of the Turbins*. Realistic and humorous, his works were extremely popular but his plea for artistic freedom expressed in later works, especially in *The Master and Margarita*, begun in 1928 but not published until 1966, led to government prohibition from publishing in 1930. This official disapproval ensured 25 years' neglect of his work after his death in relative obscurity. Publication of his works was resumed in the Soviet Union and abroad in the late 1960s.

Bulganin, Nikolai Aleksandrovich (1895–1975). Russian Communist politician and marshal. He made his reputation as Chairman of the Moscow Soviet (i.e. Mayor) 1931–37 when he directed construction of the underground Metro. He was Premier of the RSFSR 1937–38, ran the State Bank 1938–41 and became *Stalin's Deputy Commissar for Defence 1944–47 and Minister for the Armed Forces 1947–53. On Stalin's death he backed *Khrushchev against *Malenkov for CPSU leadership, becoming Minister for Defence 1953–55 and Premier of the USSR 1955–58. He visited Britain, China and India. In 1957 he joined the 'anti-party group' against Khrushchev, was soon sacked and given an obscure posting in Stavropol.

Bull, John (1562/3–1628). English composer and organist. Organist of the Chapel Royal London 1591–1607, he left England in 1613 after a mysterious scandal and was organist of Antwerp Cathedral from 1617 to the end of his life. He is highly regarded as a brilliant technical innovator and as one of the founders of the English keyboard repertory. One of his pieces for virginals may be the source of *God Save the Queen*.

Caldwell. J., *English Keyboard Music*. 1973.

Bülow, Bernhard Karl Martin, Prince von (1849–1929). German politician and diplomat. A distinguished diplomatic career culminated in his serving as foreign minister 1897–1900 and chancellor 1900–09, his wit, culture and charm winning the support and friendship of Kaiser *Wilhelm II more effectively than his political skill. His ill-judged threats (e.g. to France in the Morocco crisis of 1905) exacerbated the international situation, and his denial that he had read an indiscreet interview given in 1908 by the emperor to the *Daily Telegraph* (though it had in fact been submitted to the German foreign office) lost him his ruler's support. His *Memoirs* (published 1932) are full of interest, but are basically an attempt at justifying his policies and denying responsibility for failure.

Bülow, Hans Guido von (1830–1894). German pianist and conductor. He studied music and law, took up conducting on *Wagner's advice, then studied piano with *Liszt whose daughter Cosima he married in 1857. (She left him for Wagner in 1869.) He premiered *Tristan und Isolde* and *Die Meistersinger*, conducted the Munich Court Opera 1864–69 and the Meiningen Orchestra 1880–85. He toured the US three times and gave the premiere of *Tchaikovsky's Piano Concerto No. 1 in Boston in 1875. He had an enormous repertoire, specialising in *Beethoven, but many good judges thought his playing cold and pedantic. He was also a composer and edited keyboard works by *Bach, *Beethoven and *Chopin.

Bultmann, Rudolf Karl (1884–1976). German Lutheran theologian. Professor of New Testament studies at Marburg University (1921–51), he was the most influential pioneer of 'form criticism' applied to the Gospels. Much of his work involved 'demythologising' traditional teachings. He emphasised what he called the 'existential' elements in Christ's teaching.

Bulwer-Lytton, Edward *see* **Lytton, Edward George Earle Bulwer-**

Bunche, Ralph Johnson (1904–1971). American political scientist and diplomat, born in Detroit. Educated at Harvard and the London School of Economics, then a lecturer in political science at Howard University, Washington, he became the first African-American to be a division head at the State Department in 1945. In 1946 he became director of the UN Trusteeship Division. He succeeded Count *Bernadotte as UN mediator in Palestine in 1948 and, for his work, won the Nobel Prize for Peace in 1950. Later, he worked for the United Nations in Congo, Yemen, Kashmir and Cyprus, receiving the US Presidential Medal of Freedom in 1963.

Urquhart, B., *Ralph Bunche: An American Life*. 1993; Raustiala, K., *The Absolutely Indispensable Man*: *Ralph Bunche, the United Nations and the Fight to End Slavery*. 2022.

Bunin, Ivan Alekseivich (1870–1953). Russian writer. Born of an old but impoverished family, he first worked in an Odessa bookshop then travelled widely in Europe and the East, eventually settling down for three years with Maksim *Gorki in Capri. After the Russian revolution he lived in France. Of his novels the best known is *The Village* (1910) which gives a gloomy picture of Russian peasant life. However, his short stories *The Gentleman from San Francisco* (1915), *Mitya's Love* (1925) and *The Well of Days* (1930) provide more scope for the lyric vitality of his style. In 1933 he became the first Russian to win the Nobel Prize for Literature, a distinction which eluded *Tolstoy, *Chekhov and Gorki. Although admired in his time, Bunin's works have sunk without trace.

Bunsen, Robert Wilhelm (1811–1899). German chemist, born in Göttingen. Professor of chemistry at Heidelberg 1852–89, in collaboration with *Kirchhoff he developed the new science of spectrum analysis by which elements can be identified from the spectra they emit when heated. This led to the discovery of caesium in 1860 and rubidium in 1861. Bunsen invented several scientific instruments but is best remembered for the simple laboratory burner which bears his name.

Buñuel, Luis (1900–1983). Spanish film director. Noted for the 'black' character of his work, his films include the surrealist work *Un Chien Andalou* (1928) in which Salvador *Dali was his associate, *L'Age d'Or* (1930), *Los Olvidados* (1951), *Viridiana* (1961), *El ángel exterminador* (1962), *Belle de Jour* (1966), *La voie lactée* (1969) and *Le Charme discret de la bourgeoisie* (1972).

Buache, F., *The Cinema of Luis Buñuel*. 1973.

Bunyan, John (1628–1688). English preacher and author, born near Bedford. Son of a tinker, he became a tinker himself, and served in the parliamentary army in the Civil War. After his marriage (about 1649) he began to undergo profound spiritual experiences and a deep sense of guilt. He was converted, joined the Puritan community of John Gifford ('Evangelist' in *The Pilgrim's Progress*) in 1653 and became an active preacher. After the Restoration he was arrested for preaching without a licence, refused to give up his activities and was imprisoned at Bedford (1660–72). During his not very arduous confinement—he was even allowed to visit London—he wrote his autobiography *Grace Abounding*, and several other works. Release followed the Declaration of Indulgence in 1672 but he was again in prison for two years from 1675, during which time he wrote the first part of *The Pilgrim's Progress*, *The Life and Death of Mr Badman* and *The Holy War* followed in 1680 and 1682. Bunyan's considerable gifts as a realistic storyteller in plain but vigorous prose reveal themselves almost in spite of the narrow religious doctrines expressed. The second part of *The Pilgrim's Progress* (published 1678) is the most serene and humane of his works; it enjoyed contemporary popularity but had to await the Victorian age for universal esteem.

Sharrock, R., *John Bunyan*. 1968.

Buonaparte *see* **Bonaparte**

Buonarroti, Michelangelo *see* **Michelangelo Buonarroti**

Burbage, James (1530/5–1597). English actor, theatrical impresario and builder. In 1576 he built 'The Theatre', in Shoreditch, the first permanent theatre in London since the Romans left, and there he directed Lord *Strange's Men, later The Lord Chamberlain's Men, an acting troupe for whom *Shakespeare wrote and performed. In 1596 Burbage bought 'The Blackfriars Theatre'. His son **Richard Burbage** (c.1567–1619) became the pre-eminent actor of his time. He won early fame on the stage but his period of greatest achievement began when he inherited a share of his father's theatres. In 1598 'The Theatre' was dismantled and its building material used in the first version of 'The Globe Theatre'. In this enterprise Shakespeare was one of Burbage's partners and provided him with several of his greatest parts (e.g. Hamlet, Lear, Othello and Richard III). The Lord Chamberlain's Men became The King's Men in 1603.

Stopes, C., *Burbage and Shakespeare's Stage*. 1973.

Burbank, Luther (1849–1926). American horticulturist, born in Lancaster, Mass. Son of a farmer, he left school early, read *Darwin avidly, began experimenting with plant breeding at 21 and soon developed the Burbank potato. He moved to Santa Rosa in California in 1875. By grafting and cross-pollination he produced 800 improved varieties of plants, including plums, prunes, berries and tomatoes. He produced the nectarine (a peach-plum cross); the spineless cactus, a useful cattle food in desert areas, the Shasta daisy, many lilies and the Fire poppy. He followed *Lamarck's ideas, knew nothing of *Mendel's work and influenced *Lysenko.

Burckhardt, Jacob (Christoph) (1818–1897). Swiss historian, born in Basle. After studying history at Basle University and in Berlin under von *Ranke, he taught, became a journalist and editor, travelled extensively in Italy and was professor of history at Zürich 1855–58 and Basle 1858–97. His great interest was the Renaissance, which he interpreted in terms of political and cultural developments. His major work was *The Civilization of the Renaissance in Italy* (1860, published in English 1878). He was extremely influential, especially on his friend *Nietzsche and his disciple Heinrich Wölfflin.

Ferguson, W. K., *The Renaissance in Historical Thought*. 1948; Ferguson, W. K., *Jacob Burckhardt and the Renaissance, 100 Years After*. 1960.

Burdett-Coutts, Angela Georgina Burdett Coutts, 1st Baroness (1814–1906). English philanthropist. She was the daughter of the radical MP **Sir Francis Burdett** (1770–1844), granddaughter of the banker **Thomas Coutts** (1735–1822), and the richest woman in England. She endowed schools, Anglican churches (including St Peter's Cathedral, Adelaide), three Anglican bishoprics, and financed the establishment of the National Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Children (NSPCC) and the Royal Society for Prevention of Cruelty to Animals (RSPCA), social housing, training for women and Irish immigration to Canada. She was a close friend of *Wellington (to whom she proposed), *Disraeli, *Napoléon III, *Gladstone and *Dickens. In 1871, she became the

first woman raised to the peerage for public services and in 1881 she married her young American-born secretary.

Burger, Warren Earl (1907–1995). American judge. Educated at the University of Minnesota, he became Assistant Attorney-General 1953–56 and a judge of the US Court of Appeals 1956–69. President *Nixon appointed him as Chief Justice of the Supreme Court 1969–86. He attempted to curb the liberal tendencies established in the court by his predecessor, Earl *Warren.

Burgess and Maclean. **Guy** (Francis de Money) **Burgess** (1911–1965) and **Donald** (Duart) **Maclean** (1913–1983), British diplomats and Soviet agents. Burgess, educated at Trinity College, Cambridge joined the Communist Party in the 1930s, worked for the BBC, MI5, and the Foreign Office, serving in Washington. Maclean, educated at Trinity Hall, Cambridge, also became a Communist in the 1930s and worked for the Foreign Office in Paris, Washington and Cairo. In 1951 they defected to the USSR having been warned by a 'third man', later identified as Kim *Philby, that they faced arrest. This episode led to an intense security hunt for the 'third', 'fourth' and 'fifth' men involved in their activities. Philby revealed himself as a KGB officer in 1963 and the 'fourth man' was identified in 1979 as the art historian [Sir] Anthony *Blunt. The 'fifth man', **John Cairncross** (1913–1995), linguist, literary scholar, public servant and spy was never prosecuted.

Boyle, A., *The Climate of Treason*. 1979.

Burgess, Anthony (John Anthony Burgess Wilson) (1917–1993). British novelist and critic, born in Manchester. He taught in England and Malaya, but his work as a serious writer only began in 1959 after he was diagnosed as incurably ill. He then wrote five novels in 12 months. His books include *A Clockwork Orange* (1962—also filmed), *Shakespeare* (1971), *Napoleon Symphony* (1974), *1985* (1978), *Earthly Powers* (1980), *Enderby's Dark Lady* (1984) and *Mozart and the Wolf Gang* (1991). He was an enthusiastic composer who wrote a symphony and two ballets, translated *Cyrano de Bergerac* and *Oedipus the King*, and published much criticism. Despite the quality of his huge output, he won no awards and received no honours (in striking contrast to E. M. *Forster).

Burgess, A., *Little Wilson and Big God*. 1987; Burgess, A., *You've Had your Time*. 1990.

Burghley, William Cecil, 1st Baron (1520–1598). English statesman. Grandson of David Cecil, a favourite of *Henry VII who raised the family to prominence, he was educated at Cambridge and Gray's Inn. He held legal office under *Henry VIII. In *Edward VI's reign he became secretary to the Lord Protector *Somerset, on whose overthrow he was briefly imprisoned, but emerged to become Secretary of State 1550–53. Under *Mary he nominally conformed to Roman Catholicism but was without office. On her death, however, he drafted the proclamation of the accession of *Elizabeth, with whom he had maintained secret contact. As Secretary of State 1558–72 and Lord High Treasurer he guided the queen's affairs with prudence, loyalty, wisdom and courage for the rest of his life. He became a baron in 1571. Only when he anticipated Elizabeth's secret wishes by hastening the execution of Mary Queen of Scots, in 1587, did he suffer the full force of her venomous (but politic) rage. Burghley was incorruptible, but the various emoluments and perquisites of office enabled him to build and maintain great houses, where he proved a generous host to his many friends and clients. He was succeeded as chief advisor to the queen by his second son, Robert Cecil, later Earl of *Salisbury.

Beckinsale, B. W., *Burghley: Tudor Statesman 1520–1598*. 1967.

Burgoyne, John (1722–1797). English general and dramatist. In the American War of Independence, sent to lead an army from Canada against the rebels of the south, he was severely censured for his surrender at Saratoga (1777). He wrote several successful plays including *The Maid of the Oaks* (1775) and *The Heiress* (1786). He appears in G. B. *Shaw's *The Devil's Disciple*.

Paire, L., *Gentleman Johnny*. 1973.

Buridan, Jean (1295–1358). French philosopher. He studied at Paris University, obtained his MA soon after 1320, and became a teacher, and twice rector, there. His death was probably due to plague. Most of the works of his which survive comprise his lecture notes. His writings defend the autonomy of natural philosophy (= science) as a field of study, independent of metaphysics or theology. Buridan saw the characteristic method of science as being that of establishing empirically well-founded generalisations (rather than necessary truths). He did not believe that truths about the physical world could be shown to be rationally necessary, since thereby God's own infinite freedom would be at risk. Many of his writings about physics are a set of queries around the work of Aristotle. He gave particular attention to the problem of why projectiles continued in motion after they had ceased to be in contact with a source of motion such as a thrower. He formulated a concept that the projectile possessed 'impetus' in proportion to the quantity of matter it contained. Such an idea contains within it the seeds of the modern concept of inertia. Buridan speculated upon the possibility of the motion of the earth, believing that for the earth to move might be a simpler explanation of our observations of the heavens, than believing that all other bodies rotated round the earth.

Burke, Edmund (1729–1797). Anglo-Irish politician and political philosopher, born in Dublin. Son of a Protestant solicitor and a Catholic mother, he studied

at Trinity College, Dublin, went to London to read law at the Middle Temple, but was mainly occupied by literature. He published *A Vindication of Natural Society* (1756) and *The Sublime and Beautiful* (1757) and was an intimate of Dr *Johnson. His political career began in earnest when in 1765 he became secretary to the Whig leader Lord *Rockingham, whose government fell, however, a year later. Burke (who had been MP for Wendover from 1765, and was returned for Bristol in 1774) became the chief organiser of the Whig opposition and in 1770 produced his famous *Thoughts on the Cause of the Present Discontents*, an attack on the 'King's friends' and a defence of party government. His speeches in favour of conciliating the American colonists were also published and are among the finest examples of his oratory. In a famous speech to the electors of Bristol (1774) he insisted that a member of Parliament was a representative, not a delegate: 'Your representative owes you, not his industry only, but his judgment, and he betrays instead of serving you if he sacrifices it to your opinion.' Denunciation of discrimination against Roman Catholics and of the slave trade gave further evidence of his liberal and generous mind. Under the malign influence of Philip *Francis, Burke was persuaded that the brutality and corruption of the East India Company had been directed by Warren *Hastings, the Governor-General, and he moved for his impeachment (1788), at the onset of a long trial before the House of Lords. A turning point in Burke's political life came with the publication (1790) of his *Reflections on the Revolution in France*. Here, urging the necessity of political continuity, he found himself revolted by the excesses of violent change. Equally was he estranged from the progressive Whigs and especially Charles James *Fox, with whom he had been so closely allied. He crossed the floor of the house and sat next to his old opponent *Pitt. Thus his political life ended in sorrow and disillusion, but the inspiration of his wonderful eloquence, more effective in the written than the spoken word, survives. 'Magnanimity in politics is not seldom the truest wisdom, and a great empire and little minds go ill together.'

O'Gorman, F., *Edmund Burke: His Political Philosophy*. 1973; O'Brien, C. C., *The Great Melody: A Thematic Biography and Commentated Anthology of Edmund Burke*. 1992; Norman, J., *Edmund Burke. Philosopher, Politician, Prophet*. 2013; Bourke, R., *Empire and Revolution: The Political Life of Edmund Burke*. 2017.

Burke, Robert O'Hara (1820–1861). Irish-Australian explorer, born in Co. Galway, Ireland. Early episodes in his life included periods of service in the Austrian army and the Irish constabulary before he emigrated (1853) to Australia, where he became an inspector of police, first in Beechworth, then Castlemaine. In August 1860 he set out from Melbourne as leader of an expedition (19 men, 27 camels and 23 horses) to cross Australia from south to north. He succeeded in his purpose by reaching the estuary of the Flinders River on the Gulf of Carpentaria with **William John Wills** (1834–1861) but both men died of starvation (June 1861) at Cooper Creek, South Australia, on the way back. The expedition was elaborately equipped, but mismanagement and confusion of purpose in the rear, and Burke's impetuous character, which induced him to press forward without adequate attention to his chain of supplies, or taking advantage of Aboriginal knowledge, brought about disaster. Sidney *Nolan painted two series of works (1949–50; 1961–62) on the Burke and Wills expedition.

Moorehead, A., *Cooper's Creek*. 1963; Wilcox, D., *Explorers*. 1975; Bonyhady, T., *Burke and Wills. Melbourne to Myth*. 1991; Joyce, E. B., and McCann, D. A. (eds), *Burke & Wills: The scientific legacy of the Victorian Exploring Expedition.* 2011.

Burke, William (1792–1829). Irish labourer. With another Irishman, William Hare, he found an easy way of making a living by enticing the unwary to enter their Edinburgh lodging house, suffocating them and selling their bodies for dissection. The unsuspecting doctor, Robert Knox, had paid from £8 to £14 each for 15 corpses before inquisitive neighbours summoned the police. Hare saved himself by turning King's Evidence but Burke was hanged.

Boyle, H., *Burke and Hare: The True Story*. 1973.

Burlington, 3rd Earl of, and 4th Earl of Cork, Richard Boyle, (1694–1753). Anglo-Irish art patron. His influence was largely employed to further the use of the Palladian style in architecture, of which he had become a great admirer while travelling in Italy as a young man. He often acted as architect, e.g. for his own villa at Chiswick. Burlington House, London, the home of the Royal Academy, stands on the site of his former townhouse.

Burne-Jones (né Jones), **Sir Edward Coley, 1st Baronet** (1833–1898). Anglo-Welsh painter, designer, illustrator, born in Birmingham. Of Welsh descent, he befriended William *Morris at Exeter College, Oxford, and when they both decided to take up art, they were attracted to *Rossetti and the Pre-Raphaelites. His subjects were mainly legendary or mythological scenes such as *The Rose Bower*, *The Star of Bethlehem*, *King Cophetua and the Beggar Maid* (Tate Gallery, London) and episodes from the Arthurian cycle. Fine draughtsmanship, brilliant colours and romantic treatment are characteristics of his style. With Morris he also designed stained-glass windows, tapestries, mosaics and book illustrations. Long out of fashion, there was a revival of interest from the 1970s and he influenced symbolists in England and France.

Harrison, M. and Waters, B., *Burne-Jones*. 1973; Wildman, S., *Edward Burne-Jones*. 1998; Wood, C., *Burne-Jones*. 1999.

Burnet, Gilbert (1643–1715). Anglo-Scottish prelate and historian, born in Edinburgh. Educated at Marishal College, Aberdeen, he was professor of divinity at Glasgow 1669–74, then came to London to take up a royal chaplaincy. In 1683, having earned disfavour by his condemnation of King *Charles II's immorality and by his staunch Whiggery, he went to Holland, where he became friend and advisor of the Prince of Orange and chaplain to his wife. When the couple became *William III and *Mary II of Great Britain, he became Bishop of Salisbury. The consummation of his life work was his great *History of My Own Time*, which appeared posthumously (1724–34), and in which his tolerance, enthusiasm and innocent indiscretions were revealed.

Burnet, Sir (Frank) **Macfarlane** (1899–1985). Australian medical scientist, born in Traralgon. Educated at Geelong College and Melbourne University, he worked in London at the Lister Institute 1926–27 and the National Institute for Medical Research 1932–33 and became a world authority on Q fever, herpes simplex, influenza and diphtheria. He was assistant director of the Walter and Eliza Hall Institute for Medical Research, Melbourne 1934–44 and director 1944–65. He published 528 papers, more than 400 on his research. Burnet, essentially an old fashioned, solitary, intuitive researcher, had few collaborators, mostly women, other than Frank *Fenner, Ian Mackay, Gordon Ada and Gus *Nossal. He was rather suspicious of 'big science', heavy investment in equipment and setting up research teams, and wary of clinical or applied research. Knighted in 1951, he received the Lasker Award in 1952, the OM in 1958 and the Copley Medal in 1959.

He developed two international reputations, until 1957 as a virologist, then, as perhaps the world's most distinguished theoretician of immunology. Burnet worked with Fenner on 'acquired immunological tolerance', the capacity of organisms to distinguish between 'self' and 'not self', confirmed experimentally in England by Peter *Medawar and Rupert Billingham. Burnet and Medawar shared the 1960 Nobel Prize for Medicine for this work. (Fenner and Billingham were very unlucky not to have shared the award because Nobel Prizes can be split into two or three, but not four.) In 1957 Burnet published an important paper on 'clonal selection theory', a micro-evolutionary explanation of the adaptive nature of antibody production.

In 1961 Burnet became the first 'Australian of the Year' and was President of the Australian Academy of Science 1965–69. He had some significant near-misses: he abandoned his work on poliomyelitis although it closely paralleled John *Enders' Nobel Prize-winning discovery; he failed to explore the phenomenon of haemagglutination (clumping of red blood cells) following attacks of influenza; he demonstrated interferon in action in 1951 but its significance was only recognised by his former co-worker Alick Isaacs in 1957 and he had a notorious blind spot about molecular biology. His books include *Viruses and Man* (1953), *Changing Patterns: An Atypical Autobiography* (1968), and *Credo and Comment: A Scientist Reflects* (1979).

Fenner, F., *Frank Macfarlane Burnet 1899–1985*. 1987; Sexton, C., *Burnet: A Life*. rev. 1999.

Burnett, Frances (Eliza) (née Hodgson) (1849–1924). American writer, born in Manchester. Her family emigrated to Tennessee in 1865. She is remembered for *Little Lord Fauntleroy* (1886) and *The Secret Garden* (1911).

Thwaite, A., *Waiting for the Party: A life of Frances Hodgson Burnett*. 1974.

Burney, Fanny (Frances, later Madame d'Arblay) (1752–1840). English novelist and diarist. She married a French officer and lived in Paris (1802–15), then returned to England. Her husband died in 1818. She began to write quite early in life. *Evelina*, the story of a young girl's entry into society, had to be published under a pseudonym (1778). It was enormously popular. On her authorship being disclosed she became a friend of Samuel *Johnson. Her second novel, *Cecilia* (1782), was also a success, but her later works did not prove popular. Her *Letters and Diaries* (published posthumously) give lively accounts of Dr Johnson, *Garrick and their circle, and of her life at court.

White, E., *Fanny Burney, Novelist*. 1960.

Burnham, James (1905–1987). American political philosopher. Educated at Princeton and Oxford, he was a Trotskyist who moved steadily to the right, and became an important influence for neoconservatives. *The Managerial Revolution* (1941) accurately predicted that managerialism would displace ideology/politics in government, and influenced George *Orwell's *Nineteen Eighty-four.*

Burns, John Elliot (1858–1943). English radical politician. He left school at 10, became an engineering apprentice, and was active in the Social Democratic Federation (SDF: 1884) and a leader in the London dock strike (1889). He was imprisoned several times but acquitted of conspiracy. A 'Lib-Lab' MP 1892–1918, he caucused with the Liberals, but expressed Labour values, while refusing to join the Independent Labour Party (ILP). Burns was a puritan, hostile to drinking and gambling, pacifist, deeply opposed to the Boer War and World War I, deeply anti-Semitic and, even odder, opposed to the 'welfare state'. He served in the Liberal Cabinet as President of the Local Government Board 1905–14, but resigned as president of the Board of Trade 1914 on the outbreak of war.

Burns, Ken(neth Lauren) (1953–). American filmmaker, born in Brooklyn. He made a series of documentary films, characterised by the creative use

of still photographs, including *The Civil War* (1990), *Baseball* (1994), *Jazz* (2001), *Prohibition* (2011), *The Roosevelts* (2014) and *The Vietnam War* (2017).

Burns, Robert ('Rabbie') (1759–1796). Scottish national poet, born near Alloway, Ayrshire. His father, a self-educated tenant farmer, gave him his first lessons and inspired a love of reading encouraged later by John Murdoch, a village schoolmaster. From the age of 14 Burns wrote poems in dialect, but it was only while he and his brother were farming unsuccessfully at Mossgiel 1784–88 that, to obtain money for contemplated emigration to Jamaica, he listened to suggestions for publication. In the meantime he continued a life of hard work, varied by wide reading, and bouts of dissipation, and complicated by his many love affairs. The first edition of his poems (the Kilmarnock edition) appeared in 1786 and its immediate success caused him to be lionised in Edinburgh, where he won popularity by his modesty, intelligence and charm. But he soon tired of patronage and flattery, and having acquired £400 from a second edition he was encouraged to settle on a small farm at Ellisland and marry Jean Armour, one of his many loves. The failure of the farm caused him to accept a post as exciseman at Dumfries. His first generous sympathy with the French Revolution might have threatened this government post, but he was quickly disillusioned and, in 1794, on a patriotic impulse, joined the Dumfriesshire Volunteers. Overwork, alcohol and (probably) endocarditis induced by rheumatic fever combined to bring about his early death. The last years of his life as a writer were mainly spent in composing, collecting and adapting song lyrics. In Edinburgh he had met James Johnson, collector and publisher of Scottish songs, and it is to Burns' cooperation with him (and others) that we owe that wonderful abundance of songs that immortalise his name. They include *Auld Lang Syne*, *My love is like a red red rose*, *Comin 'Thro' the Rye*, *John Anderson my Jo*, *Ye Banks and Braes o'Bonny Doon* and many just as famous. Burns' lyrics have been set by many composers, among them *Haydn, *Beethoven ('The Lovely Lass of Inverness', 1794), *Mendelssohn, *Schumann, *Ravel ('Ye banks and braes o' Bonnie Doon…', 1909) and *Shostakovich. Burns also achieved success with such masterly satires as *Holy Willie's Prayer* and *The Holy Fair*, and long narrative poems such as *The Jolly Beggars*, *Death and Dr Hornbrook* and *Tam o'Shanter*, all except for the last named belonging to the earlier part of his life. Burns is unique among the great poets (except Shakespeare) in having universal and enduring appeal. He is much admired in Russia.

Daiches, D., *Robert Burns and His World*. 1971; Douglas, H., *Robert Burns. A Life*. 1977; McIntyre, I., *Robert Burns. A Life*. 2009; Crawford, R., *The Bard: Robert Burns*. 2010.

Burnside, Ambrose Everett (1824–1881). American soldier, politician and industrialist. Famous for having been jilted at the altar by a Confederate spy, and for his side whiskers, he was a popular but not very competent officer in the US Civil War. Commander of the Army of the Potomac 1862–63, he lost the Battle of Fredericksburg, but was given the command in Ohio. Governor of Rhode Island 1866–69, he became a US Senator 1875–81.

Burr, Aaron (1756–1836). American politician, born in Newark, New Jersey. Educated at Princeton College, he served on *Washington's staff and rose to the rank of Lieutenant Colonel in the War of Independence, became a successful lawyer in New York and was a US senator 1791–97. In the 1800 presidential election, in which *Adams was defeated, he tied with *Jefferson in the Electoral College and after 36 ballots the result was determined by the House of Representatives, where Alexander *Hamilton ensured Jefferson's victory and Burr became Vice President of the US 1801–05. In 1804 Hamilton also blocked Burr's nomination as Governor of New York State. In July 1804 Burr killed Hamilton in a duel in Weehawken, New Jersey, was indicted on a murder charge and fled. He tried to set up an independent state comprising the south-western states and part of Mexico. A small expedition was equipped and sailed down the Mississippi but Burr was arrested, tried for treason (1807) and acquitted, mainly on technical grounds. He continued his intrigues abroad (1808–12), but later resumed his law practice in New York City.

Vidal, G., *Burr.* 1973.

Burroughs, Edgar Rice (1875–1950). American author, born in Chicago. After indifferent success in business, he devoted himself to writing, including science fiction and adventure stories. Beginning with *Tarzan of the Apes* (1912), he produced 26 books about a feral white child (John Clayton III, Earl of Greystoke) brought up by apes, who became a sophisticated adult. They were bestsellers, the subject of many films, television series and comics. (Even Rudyard *Kipling read them.)

Burroughs, William Seward (1914–1997). American writer, born in St Louis. Educated at Harvard, he worked in advertising, as a detective, bartender, reporter and pest-exterminator, was a heroin addict 1944–58 and lived in France 1959–64 and Britain 1964–73. One of the gurus of the Beat generation, he developed a deliberately disjointed 'collage' style in his writing. His books include *Junkie* (1953), *The Naked Lunch* (1959, also filmed), *Nova Express* (1964), *Queer* (1985) and *The Western Lands* (1988).

Morgan, T., *Literary Outlaw.* 1988.

Burton (né Jenkins)**, Richard** (1925–1984). Welsh stage and film actor, born in Pontrhydfen. Educated at Port Talbot Secondary School and Exeter College, Oxford, he served with the RAF, then acted with the

Old Vic in London and New York and was a successful Hamlet and Henry V. His films include *Alexander the Great* (1956), *Look Back in Anger* (1959), *Cleopatra* (1963), *Becket* (1964), *The Spy Who Came in From the Cold* (1965), *Who's Afraid of Virginia Woolf* (1966), *Exorcist II* (1977), *Equus* (1977) and *The Heretic* (1977). He produced a film version of Dylan Thomas' *Under Milk Wood* (1971). He married four times, twice to the actor Elizabeth *Taylor.

Bragg, M., *Richard Burton: A Life.* 1989.

Burton, Sir Richard Francis (1821–1890). English explorer and writer. While in the Indian army (1843–49), he served with Napier in Sind. In 1853 he became the first Western European to visit the holy places of Mecca when he went on a pilgrimage there disguised as a Pathan Muslim. After exploring Somaliland he discovered Lake Tanganyika with J. H. *Speke in 1858. Speke's discovery of Lake Nyanza and his claim that it was the main source of the Nile led to a prolonged controversy with Burton, only settled when H. M. *Stanley proved Speke right. Later he was British consul at Fernando Po, Santos, Damascus and Trieste. He described his travels in a long series of vividly written books, but by far his greatest literary achievement, both in size and fame, was his translation of *The Arabian Nights* (1885–88). He is said to have mastered more than 30 languages.

Wright, T., *The Life of Sir Richard Burton*. 2 vols, 1968; McLynn, F., *Burton: Snow upon the Desert*. 1992.

Burton, Robert (1577–1640). English clergyman. Famed as the author of *The Anatomy of Melancholy*, he spent nearly all his life at Christ Church, Oxford, first as a student and then, having taken orders, as tutor. The work upon which his fame entirely rests first appeared in 1621 and was strongly influenced by *Montaigne's *Essays*. The name 'Democritus Junior' which appeared on the title page was a reference to *Democritus, 'the laughing philosopher' of the ancient Greeks. The book is a whimsical and immensely learned analysis of the various types of melancholia but contains stories of celebrated lovers and is illustrated by quotations from the classical and medieval authors then known.

Busch, Fritz (1890–1951). German conductor and pianist. He directed the Dresden State Opera 1922–33, left Germany when *Hitler took power, conducted in Copenhagen and Stockholm, then at Teatro Colón, Buenos Aires 1934–36; 1940–47, became the first director of the Glyndebourne Opera (John *Christie) 1934–39; 1950–51, and worked in New York 1945–50. His brother **Adolf Busch** (1891–1952), violinist, conductor and composer, founded the Busch String Quartet in 1919 and the Busch Chamber Players in 1935, performed in Switzerland, England and the US and made many outstanding recordings.

Bush, George Herbert Walker (1924–2018). 41st President of the US 1989–93. Son of Prescott Bush, a US senator from Connecticut, he was educated at Andover and Yale, became a very young naval carrier pilot in World War II, founded the Zapata Petroleum Corporation (1953) in Texas, and then entered politics. He served as a congressman 1967–70, Ambassador to the UN 1970–73, head of the US liaison office to Peking 1974–75, and Director of the Central Intelligence Agency 1975–76. He became Vice President of the US under Ronald *Reagan 1981–89. Elected President in 1988, defeating Michael *Dukakis, he was most comfortable in foreign affairs, claimed credit for ending the Cold War and, through the UN, he organised in 1990 an international coalition against Iraq (Saddam *Hussein), after its invasion of Kuwait. After Iraq's defeat in 'Operation Desert Storm' in February 1991, he enjoyed an approval rating of 91 per cent. However, the economy appeared to be sluggish and Bush was perceived to lack what he called 'the vision thing' in domestic policy. In November 1992 he was defeated by Bill *Clinton, largely because H. Ross *Perot's intervention took away many conservative votes. Bush was uncomfortable with the fundamentalist Right in his party but, as the inheritor of Reagan's political legacy, seemed unable or unwilling to identify or articulate moderate or liberal domestic policies. In the week he left office he resumed bombing Iraq after Saddam failed to meet UN inspection requirements. He was awarded an Hon. GCB in 1997. His sons included George W. *Bush and John Ellis ('Jeb') *Bush. He celebrated his 90th birthday with a parachute jump and was, at the time of his death, the longest-lived US President (94 years 6 months 18 days).

Bush, George W(alker) (1946–). 43rd President of the US 2001–09. Son of George Herbert Walker *Bush, he was born in New Haven, Conn., educated at Andover, Yale and Harvard (where he gained an MBA), then moved with his family to Texas. He worked in the oil business, managed the Texas Rangers baseball team and was governor of Texas 1993–2000. He defeated John *McCain to win the 2000 Republican nomination for president, and, although losing the popular vote nationally by 540,000, defeated Al *Gore narrowly in the Electoral College. (Ralph *Nader ran as a Green candidate.) This followed a fiercely disputed return in Florida, in which the US Supreme Court voted 5–4 against a hand recount of votes in certain counties. This was the first election since 1888 (Benjamin *Harrison) when the winner did not lead in the popular vote. He organised an international coalition against terrorism following the 11 September 2001 terrorist attacks attributed to Osama bin *Laden and his al-Qaeda group, but gave priority to regime change in Iraq, claiming that Saddam *Hussein's 'weapons of mass destruction' (WMD) threatened world peace. The 'coalition of the willing' invaded Iraq in March 2003, claimed victory after 28 days,

installed an occupation authority but failed to locate any WMDs and insurrection continued. In 2004, Bush won a second term, defeating Senator John *Kerry. His failure to act decisively after the impact of Hurricane Katrina (2005) and the 'global financial crisis' (2008), coupled with the continued fighting in Iraq, and increased defence spending for Afghanistan, made him deeply unpopular towards the end of his term, even in his own party. In nine Presidential rankings by US historians and political scientists, Bush scored No. 31 in the aggregate.

Smith, J. E., *Bush*. 2016.

Bush, John Ellis ('Jeb') (1953–). American businessman and Republican politician, born in Texas. Son and brother of US Presidents, educated at the University of Texas, Austin, he became a banker, consultant and real estate developer. He married Columba Garnica de Gallo, a Mexican, in 1974, became fluent in Spanish and converted to Catholicism in 1995. Governor of Florida 1999–2007, he was the preferred choice of the Republican establishment for the 2016 Presidential nomination but failed with voters.

Bush, Vannevar (1890–1974). American electrical engineer, born in Massachusetts. Educated at Tufts and the Massachusetts Institute of Technology, he taught at MIT 1919–38 and in 1925 devised the first analogue computer, used in solving differential equations. President of the Carnegie Institution, Washington 1939–56, he became Director of the US Office of Scientific Research and Development 1941–46 and Chairman of the Joint Research and Development Board 1946–47. Reporting to President Franklin *Roosevelt, he played a unique role in coordinating all major wartime scientific, technological and engineering projects, became the architect of science policy, set priorities and showed superb judgment. He took scientific responsibility for the atomic bomb project (*Oppenheimer), for the development of computing (*Eckert) and even the commercial development of penicillin (*Florey). He became an honorary KBE (1948), was Chairman of MIT 1957–59 and wrote *Science Is Not Enough* (1967).

Busoni, Ferruccio (Dante Michelangelo Benvenuto) (1866–1924). Italian composer, pianist and conductor, born in Florence. His father was a clarinet virtuoso, his German mother a pianist. He gave his piano debut in Trieste in 1874 and came to be recognised as one of the greatest performers. He made elaborate transcriptions of *Bach's organ works and the famous *Chaconne* for solo violin. He wrote the massive Piano Concerto in C major (Op.39), including a male chorus (1903–04), and the operas *Turandot* (1917, not to be confused with *Puccini's) and *Doktor Faust* (1916–24), left incomplete, rarely performed but important.

Bustamente, Sir (William) **Alexander** (1884–1977). Jamaican Labour politician. He studied in the US and worked in Havana and New York, returning to Jamaica in 1934. He established his own trade union and founded the Labour Party in 1943, having left the People's National party led by his cousin Norman *Manley. He was Chief Minister 1953–55. After the formation of the West Indian Federation in 1958 he worked for the secession of Jamaica and was supported by a referendum held in 1961 and subsequent elections. Jamaica accordingly withdrew and Bustamente became first Prime Minister 1962–67 under independence.

Bute, 3rd Earl of, John Stuart (1713–1792). Scottish aristocrat and royal favourite, born in Edinburgh. Educated at Eton and Leyden University (Netherlands), he divided his time between his Scottish estates, London, and the mansion Luton Hoo, Bedfordshire. He had a passion for botany and antiquities. He became a close friend of *Frederick, Prince of Wales, and his wife, the princess. The friendship with the family survived the prince's death in 1751. Bute gained a position in the household and became virtually the tutor of the young prince, the future *George III, whose warm affection he won. Unfortunately he instilled into him the doctrines of *Bolingbroke's Patriot King which claimed for the sovereign a much more active part than George's abilities could sustain or recent constitutional practice could allow. The test came when *George II died. Bute was brought into the government in 1761, manoeuvred *Newcastle and *Pitt out of office and became First Lord of the Treasury (i.e. Prime Minister) 1762–63. He ended the Seven Years' War, but was forced to resign due to lack of political support and personal unpopularity. He was the last royal 'favourite' in government, but for several years the influence of 'the minister behind the curtain' survived. He was a patron of Dr *Johnson, contributing up to £300 p.a., and of Robert *Adam and Tobias *Smollett.

McKelvey, J. L., *George III and Lord Bute*. 1973.

Buthelezi, Mangosuthu Gatsha (1928–2023). Zulu chief and politician. He played the role of his great-grandfather *Cetewayo in the film *Zulu* (1963) The most powerful Zulu chief, he founded the tribally based Inkatha movement, became Chief Minister of KwaZulu 1976–94, collaborated with Pretoria in return for economic concessions and was a strong critic of the African National Congress. He made the longest recorded speech, lasting for five days. He opposed creation of a unified South Africa under black rule, as this would destroy Zulu autonomy and his own power base. In 1993 he formed an alliance with white extremists against the power sharing arrangements of *de Klerk and *Mandela. He reluctantly took part in the election of April 1994 where his Inkatha Freedom Party won 10 per cent of the vote. MP 1994–2023, he became Minister for Home Affairs 1994–2004.

Butler, Josephine Elizabeth (1828–1906). English social reformer. A fervent supporter of education for women, between 1883 and 1886, working with

Florence *Nightingale, Harriet *Martineau and others, she secured the repeal of acts that discriminated against prostitutes. She also established a pioneer organisation for suppression of the white slave trade.

Bell, E. M., *Josephine Butler*. 1963.

Butler, Nicholas Murray (1862–1947). American educator. After graduating at Columbia University he studied further in Berlin and Paris. He returned to become professor of education 1890–1901 and president 1901–45 of Columbia University, New York. From 1907 he worked incessantly for international goodwill, and was President of the Carnegie Endowment for International Peace 1925–45, sharing the 1931 Nobel Peace Prize with Jane *Addams. His many books included *The Meaning of Education* (1898 and 1915), *Scholarship and Service* (1921) and *The Path to Peace* (1930).

Butler, Reg(inald Cotterell) (1910–1981). British sculptor. He made his name by his linear wrought iron sculpture, such as his *Unknown Political Prisoner*, which won first prize in an international competition held in London in 1953. He then resumed his interest in modelling. He wrote *Creative Development* (1962).

Butler, Richard Austen ('Rab'), **Baron Butler of Saffron Walden** (1902–1982). English Conservative politician, born in India. Educated at Marlborough and Pembroke College, Cambridge, he was MP for Saffron Walden 1929–65. As a progressive undersecretary for India 1932–37 and an appeasing undersecretary for Foreign Affairs 1938–41 he earned the undying suspicion of Winston *Churchill on two counts. As Minister for Education 1941–45, he initiated the famous Education Act (1944) providing for massive expansion of post-war secondary schooling. In Opposition (1945–51), Butler created the Conservative Research Department which developed new policies essential for re-election. He served as Chancellor of the Exchequer 1951–55, Lord Privy Seal 1955–57, Home Secretary 1957–62, Minister for Central Africa 1962–63 and Foreign Secretary 1963–64, all with great distinction, but was denied the prime ministership in 1957 and 1963. He declined an earldom but accepted a life peerage, with a KG and CH, became Master of Trinity College, Cambridge 1965–77 and wrote understandably waspish memoirs *The Art of Memory* (1982).

Butler, Samuel (1612–1680). English poet, born in Worcestershire. Son of a farmer, he acted as clerk to several of the land owning gentry before he became, in 1661, secretary to Lord Carbery, who appointed him steward of Ludlow Castle. He wrote the long satirical poem *Hudibras* (1663–78), much admired by *Charles II who seems to have promised him much but delivered little. (Butler later worked for the Duke of *Buckingham.) *Hudibrus* strings together into a connected whole, burlesques of hypocritical and more or less disreputable, Puritan characters of the Civil War period.

Butler, Samuel (1835–1902). English author, painter and musician, born in Nottinghamshire. Son of a clergyman, he was educated at Shrewsbury (where his grandfather had been a great headmaster) and Cambridge. He refused to enter the Church because of religious doubts, and became a successful sheep farmer at Mesopotamia, South Canterbury, New Zealand (1860–64) instead. On his return to England, he lived alone in London, devoting himself to painting, writing and music, one of his paintings hangs in the Tate Gallery. In 1872 he published the Utopian satire *Erewhon*. 'Erewhon' (an anagram of 'nowhere') is a land of' paradox where, for example, crime is regarded as an illness and illness as a crime. A sequel, *Erewhon Revisited*, appeared in 1901. *Erewhon* was followed by a number of semi-scientific works in which he examined the theories of *Darwin, accepting evolution, while giving the credit for it to Darwin's predecessors, and rejecting natural selection. In its place he offered his own creative view of evolution. In *Unconscious Memory* (1880) he anticipates the theories of C. G. *Jung. In his later years he became absorbed by *Homer. He translated the *Iliad* (1898) and the *Odyssey* (1900) while *The Humour of Homer* (1892) is a notable piece of literary criticism. *The Authoress of the Odyssey* proposes the ingenious theory that the Odyssey was written by a Sicilian woman from Trapani. Possibly his best known work, however, is *The Way of All Flesh* (published in 1903 but written 1873–85), an autobiographical novel in which, through a thinly disguised portrait of his own childhood and youth, he demonstrates the conflict of the generations and the deleterious effects of a typical Victorian upbringing.

Harkness, S. B. *The Career of Butler: A Bibliography*. 1955.

Butt, Dame Clara Ellen (1872–1936). English contralto. Dedicatee of *Elgar's *Sea Pictures*. She toured extensively, often with her husband, the baritone **Kennerly Rumford**, had a voice of great power and depth (well captured on recordings) and was 6 feet 2 inches (1.88 m) tall.

Butterfield, William (1814–1900). English architect. A leading practitioner of the revived Gothic style, he designed churches in a brilliant polychrome style, including All Saints, Margaret Street, London; Keble College, Oxford, and the more subdued St Paul's Cathedral, Melbourne and St Peter's Cathedral, Adelaide.

Thompson, P., *William Butterfield*. 1971.

Butterworth, George Sainton Kaye (1885–1916). English composer. He collected and was strongly influenced by English folk songs. He composed two song

cycles based on poems from *Housman's *A Shropshire Lad* and *The Banks of Green Willow*. He was killed on the Somme in World War I after winning an MC.

Buttigieg, Pete(r Paul Montgomery) (1982–). American Democratic politician, born in South Bend, Indiana. Of Maltese descent, his father was a professor of literature. Educated at a Catholic school, he studied at Harvard University, won a Rhodes Scholarship to Oxford, then worked as a consultant for McKinsey's. Elected Mayor of South Bend 2012–20, he served as a naval intelligence officer in Afghanistan and outed himself as gay (2015). He announced his candidature for President in 2019 but despite polling well in early Democratic Party primaries in 2020, dropped out and urged support for Joe *Biden. A moderate on economic issues, he was against the death penalty and committed to strong action on climate change. He became US Secretary of Transportation 2021– .

Buxtehude, Dietrich (or Diderik) (1637–1707). Danish musician. Organist at the Marienkirke in Lübeck from 1668, in 1703 *Händel came to hear his celebrated evening concerts and in 1705 J. S. *Bach walked more than 400 kilometres to hear him play. He was a prolific composer of organ, harpsichord and Church music. Much has been lost but 114 cantatas survive.

Buxton, Sir Thomas Fowell, 1st Baronet (1786–1845). English reformer. On election to parliament 1818–37 he instituted a private inquiry into the administration of prisons, which led to the formation of a prison reform society. He opposed the slave trade and, as leader of the abolitionist group in succession to William *Wilberforce, was instrumental in securing the passage of the 1833 act for the ending of slavery in British possessions.

Byatt, Dame Antonia Susan (née Drabble) (pen name A. S. Byatt) (1936–2023). English novelist and academic. Educated at Cambridge, Bryn Mawr and Oxford, she is a sister of Margaret *Drabble. Her novels include *Possession* (1990), which won the Booker Prize, and *Angels and Insects* (1992). She also wrote studies of George *Eliot and Iris *Murdoch.

Byng, John (1704–1757). English admiral. Son of Viscount Torrington, and MP 1751–57, at the outset of the Seven Years War (1756), he was sent to prevent French occupation of Minorca, handled his ships badly, was defeated and withdrew to Gibraltar (as he had been instructed). However, as *Voltaire aptly put it, 'pour encourager les autres', he was charged with 'neglect of duty', court-martialled and shot to death at Portsmouth, despite a strong recommendation to mercy which *George II ignored.

Pope, D., *At Twelve Mr Byng was Shot*. 1962.

Byng of Vimy, Julian Hedworth Byng, 1st Viscount (1862–1935). English field marshal. Son of the Earl of Strafford, he commanded the IX Corps at the Dardanelles 1915–16 and the Canadian Corps 1916–17, capturing Vimy Ridge in April 1917. He became GOC of the British 3rd Army 1917–19 and led the Cambrai offensive. In the final victorious operations his army captured 67,000 Germans. As Governor-General of Canada 1921–26, Byng controversially refused a dissolution of Parliament to Prime Minister Mackenzie *King in June 1926 and when King resigned appointed a Conservative, *Arthur Meighen, to take office. Promoted to viscount in 1928 and field marshal in 1932, Byng served as Commissioner of the London Metropolitan Police 1928–31.

Byrd, Richard Evelyn (1888–1957). American Arctic and Antarctic explorer. He was the first to fly over the North Pole (1926) and the South Pole (1929), the latter as leader of an expedition (1928–30) in the course of which Marie Byrd Land and other areas were discovered. He led further expeditions to the Antarctic in 1933–35, 1946–47 and 1955–56. Byrd, a naval officer, became a rear-admiral in 1930.

Montague, R., *Oceans, Poles and Airmen*. 1971.

Byrd, Robert Carlyle (1917–2010). American Democratic politician. He was a welder during World War II, and briefly joined the Ku Klux Klan, which he later repudiated. He served in the West Virginia Legislature 1947–53, the US House of Representatives 1953–59 and the US Senate 1959–2010, setting a world record for length of service as a legislator.

Byrd, William (1539/40–1623). English composer, born in Lincolnshire. A pupil of Thomas *Tallis, although a Roman Catholic he accepted positions in the Anglican Church as organist of Lincoln Cathedral 1563–75, and joint organist (with Tallis) of the Chapel Royal 1575–1623. He also shared with Tallis a monopoly for the printing and selling of music and was often engaged in litigation, much of it concerned with a disputed estate. He composed Masses and motets for the Catholic Church as well as music for the Anglican liturgy, in addition to his great output of madrigals and instrumental pieces (mainly for the virginal). The power of his music and the extraordinary skill of his contrapuntal writing gained him great fame in Europe during his lifetime.

Andrews, H. K., *The Technique of Byrd*. 1966; McCarthy, K., *Byrd*. 2013.

Byrnes, James Francis (1882–1972). American lawyer and politician, born in Charleston. He represented South Carolina as a Democratic congressman 1911–25 and US Senator 1931–41, and has been described as the most influential Southerner in the US Congress between John *Calhoun and Lyndon *Johnson. Justice of the US Supreme Court 1941–42, he resigned to take up appointment as Director of the Office of Economic Stabilization

1942–43 and War Mobilization 1943–45 and was often described as *Roosevelt's 'Assistant President'. However, his support for the New Deal had cooled and opposition by labour unions cost him the Democratic nomination for Vice President in 1944. As President *Truman's Secretary of State 1945–47, he became an architect of the Cold War and was elected as a segregationist governor of South Carolina 1951–55. He endorsed *Eisenhower, *Nixon and *Goldwater for the presidency and joined the Republicans in 1964.

Byrnes, J. F., *Speaking Frankly*. 1947.

Byron, George Gordon Noel Byron, 6th Baron (1788–1824). English poet, born in London. He spent his first 10 years in Aberdeen lodgings with his mother, whose fortune had been frittered away by her husband, 'mad Jack' Byron. Much of his childhood was made unhappy by unsuccessful attempts to cure a lame foot, of which he remained painful1y conscious. He inherited the title in 1798 and went to live in the family home, Newstead Abbey, Nottinghamshire. At Harrow and Trinity College, Cambridge, he not only read eagerly but took pride in overcoming his lameness by boxing, playing cricket and becoming a powerful swimmer. In 1807 he published *Hours of Idleness,* which was savagely criticised in the *Edinburgh Review*. He withdrew it and replied with the satire *English Bards and Scotch Reviewers*. After leaving Cambridge he travelled to Greece and Albania with his friend J. C. Hobhouse (he swam the Hellespont in May 1810), and his tour was described in the first two cantos of the semi-autobiographical *Childe Harold's Pilgrimage* (published 1812). *The Giaour* (1813), *The Bride of Abydos* (1813) and *Lara* (1814) also reflect the romantic moods inspired by his travels. He had become famous overnight, was lionised in society, made a few radical speeches in the House of Lords, and engaged in a series of love affairs, not always by his own choice. The half-mad Lady Caroline *Lamb, for example, fell in love with him and pestered him almost to distraction. In 1815, he married an heiress, Annabella Milbanke, but the marriage was unhappy from the start. Conjectures about his incestuous relationship with his half-sister Augusta Leigh, combined with his wife's complaints of his dark moods of cruelty and despair, made separation inevitable. (His daughter Ada became Countess of *Lovelace.) Ostracised by many of his former admirers, Byron left England for good in 1816 and moved to Switzerland, where he spent happy weeks with the Shelleys. From a life of dissipation and promiscuous love affairs in Venice (1817–19), Byron was rescued by Teresa, Countess Guiccioli, a woman of cultivated tastes who became his mistress. In this Italian period he finished *Childe Harold* and among other writings produced the drama *Manfre*d (1817), *Beppo* (1818) and *A Vision of Judgement* (1822). He also began *Don Juan* (1819–24), that extraordinary medley of satire, adventure and self-revelation which remained unfinished at his death. Byron's interest in the cause of freeing Greece from Turkish rule led him to join the liberation committee in 1823. He set out for Greece later in the year; the following April he died of fever at Missolonghi. For much of the 19th century he was regarded as the epitome of the romantic hero, a noble, melancholy wanderer and a passionate lover of freedom, but this judgement, based on his early poems, is largely the creation of his admirers (and in some moods of himself). The truer Byron, repressed in youth and always aware of his deformity, was much more of a satirist in the tradition of *Voltaire, an ironical realist as little blind to his own failings as to those of others, as aware of the savagery, squalor and tedium of life as of its beauty and glory.

Marchand, L. A., *Byron: A Biography*. 3 vols, 1957; *Byron. A Portrait*. 1970.

C

Caballero, Francisco Largo *see* **Largo Caballero, Francisco**

Cabot, John (Giovanni Caboto) (c.1450–c.1498). Italian navigator, probably born in Genoa. He lived in Venice from about 1461 and became a citizen in 1476. Between 1484 and 1490 he came to England and lived in Bristol. Commissioned by *Henry VII, in May 1497 he sailed westward in the *Mathew*, reached Nova Scotia in June, explored the coast of Newfoundland and returned in August, claiming to have reached China (Cathay). He began a second voyage with four ships in May 1498 and disappeared.

His son, **Sebastian Cabot** (?1476–1557), was born in Venice. He probably accompanied his father on the 1497 voyage and later became map maker to *Henry VIII and Ferdinand V of Spain. An attempt to find the Northwest Passage (1509) failed owing to a mutiny of the crew. In 1518 he was appointed pilot major by the emperor *Charles V (Carlos I of Spain). He led an expedition that explored the coast of South America (1526–30), seeking a passage to the Pacific. In 1548 he returned to England and founded a company of merchant venturers, for which he organised an expedition (1553) under Willoughby and *Chancellor to search for a northeast passage from the Arctic Ocean to the China coast. In 1544 Cabot published a map showing his own and his father's discoveries.

Williamson, J. A. (ed.), *Cabot Voyages and Bristol Discovery under Henry VII*. 1962.

Cabral, Pedro Alvares (c.1460–c.1520). Portuguese navigator. In 1500 he was made leader of an expedition to the East Indies with 13 ships, but while on the way he was forced westward by adverse currents (some say he deliberately altered course) and landed on the north east coast of Brazil, in Bahia, near Monte Pascoal, and he formally claimed possession on behalf of Portugal. During his resumed voyage to the east he lost seven ships with their crews (including the famous navigator Bartolomeo *Diaz) before reaching Mozambique and eventually Calient (near Madras) in India. Having made the first commercial treaty between India and Portugal, he returned to Lisbon in July 1501 with much booty.

Amado, J. C., *Pedro Alvares Cabral*. 1968.

Cabrini, St Frances Xavier (1850–1917). American religious, born in Lodigiano, Italy. She lived in the US from 1889 and was naturalised in 1909. She founded the Missionary Sisters of the Sacred Heart, and schools, hospitals and orphanages. She became the first saint of the US when Pope *Pius XII canonised her in 1946.

Cadbury, George (1839–1922). English manufacturer and social reformer. With his brother **Richard** (1835–1899) he assumed control of his father's Birmingham cocoa business in 1867, and when it expanded in 1879 he transferred the enterprise to Bournville. Being greatly interested in housing, he integrated the factory in a planned housing project and so organised the first modern 'model' village. A Quaker and a liberal, George Cadbury owned two London newspapers, the *Daily News* and the *Star*, which were active in all campaigns for social reform.

Cade, Jack (d.1450). English rebel. He led the Kentish rebellion of 1450 during the reign of *Henry VI. Misgovernment and financial oppression were the main causes of the rising which soon became formidable. Cade headed and managed to keep together a host which swelled to many thousands as it moved towards London, overcoming such resistance as it met on the way. Once they had reached the city the authorities induced them to disperse, partly by a show of force but mainly by concessions and promises. Cade was hunted down and killed at Heathfield in Sussex while resisting arrest.

Cadillac, Antoine de la Mothe, Sieur (1656–1730). French administrator and soldier. He settled a colony on the site of modern Detroit (1701) and later governed Louisiana 1713–16 before retiring to Gascony.

Cadogan, Sir Alexander Montague George (1884–1968). English diplomat. Son of the 8th Earl Cadogan, educated at Eton and Oxford, he joined the diplomatic service in 1908 and became Permanent Undersecretary for Foreign Affairs 1938–46. A strong opponent of appeasement, he worked closely with Winston *Churchill and wrote important diaries. British Ambassador to the United Nations 1946–50 and awarded the OM in 1951, he was Chair of the BBC 1952–57. *The Diaries of Sir Alexander Cadogan, 1938–45* (1972) are a valuable research tool.

Cadogan, William Cadogan, 1st Earl (1675–1726). Anglo-Irish general, born in Meath. The Duke of *Marlborough's most trusted subordinate in the campaigns of the War of the Spanish Succession, he was known as his 'maid of work' from the variety of tasks he undertook. At Oudenarde (1708) he commanded the Allied vanguard. He was ennobled for his success in suppressing the Jacobite rising of 1715.

Churchill, W. S., *Marlborough*. 1933–38.

Cadorna, Luigi (1850–1928). Italian soldier. Commander-in-Chief of the Italian armies in World War I from 1915 to November 1917. After the disaster at Caporetto he ordered summary executions of 750 of his own soldiers, and was replaced by Armando *Diaz. Nevertheless, Britain made him a GCB and*Mussolini promoted him to Marshal in 1924.

Cædmon (d.c.680). Anglo-Saxon poet. According to *Bede he was a herdsman who was granted a vision and received the gift of song. Of his poems, most of which were said to be metrical paraphrases of the Bible, only a single hymn ('Nu scylun hergan hefaenricaes uard / Now [we] must honour the guardian of heaven'), translated into Latin by Bede is regarded as an authentic survival. Cædmon spent the last years of his life as a lay brother in Whitby Abbey, Yorkshire.

Caesar, (Caius) **Julius** (c.100–44 BCE). Roman soldier and statesman, born in Rome. Although born into one of the oldest and noblest Roman families he supported the democratic faction of *Marius (who had married his aunt) against the senatorial oligarchy under *Sulla. Sulla's triumph in 81 threatened his life and forced him to live abroad until 78, when, Sulla having died, he returned to Rome and resumed his political career as a leader of the democratic party, greatly increasing his popularity by lavish expenditure during his year (65) as aedile (organiser of games and festivals). A new political situation was now taking shape. Caesar, back from a year's campaigning in Spain, had formed a political association with Marcus *Crassus, an ambitious intriguer and the richest man in Rome; *Pompey had returned a national hero and was seeking political support for the terms of his settlement of Asia and especially for the provision of land for his returning veterans. The possibility of a bargain was evident, and in 60 the first 'triumvirate' between the three men was formed. It was in effect an unofficial division of spoils. Caesar, as Consul in 59, was able to meet Pompey's demands and obtained what he most wanted for himself—a great military command in Gaul covering northern Italy and the conquered lands beyond the Alps. During the next eight years (58–50) Caesar in a series of brilliant campaigns raided Britain twice (55 and 54), conquered much of Gaul, defeating Vercingetorix (52) with savage killings, and advanced the Roman frontiers to the Rhine. Meanwhile a rift between Crassus and Pompey threatened not only stability in Rome but the survival of the triumvirate. Caesar made a hasty return in 56 to meet his partners at Luca; he patched up the quarrel and renewed the triumvirate on fresh terms. This time each was to have a military command. Pompey's was in Spain, but he exercised control from Rome, through deputies. Crassus commanded the east where he started a war against Parthians and was killed in battle in 53. Caesar's command in Gaul was extended and his relationship with Pompey became increasingly strained. Pompey, having few troops in Italy to oppose him, withdrew with the government to Epirus (Albania). This gave Caesar time to enforce the surrender of Pompey's troops in Spain and consolidate his own position in Rome, before crossing the Adriatic, luring Pompey out of his entrenched camp by marching into Thessaly. The issue was finally decided by his great victory at Pharsalus (48), and he was given the title of Imperator ('Supreme Commander'). He described his victory over the king of Pontus at the battle of Zela (in Anatolia), with the famous words '*Veni, vidi, vici*' ('I came, I saw, I conquered'). Pompey fled to Egypt and was murdered on landing. Caesar then landed in Egypt and in 47 confirmed *Cleopatra, on the disputed throne. She soon became his mistress and bore him a son. *Plutarch blamed Caesar for burning the library of Alexandria, but *Gibbon thought the charge was groundless. In 46 in North Africa Caesar crushed the remaining leaders of Pompey's faction at Thapsus. He returned to Rome, now dictator and tribune for life, to celebrate four triumphs and distribute gifts. In January 45 BCE he introduced a 365¼ day calendar, based on Egypt's. The Julian calendar was further modified by *Augustus in 8 CE, with the month of Caesar's birth, Quintilis, renamed 'Julius' (July), Caesar extended eligibility for citizenship and made other liberal reforms. In 44 he was at the peak of his power and appointed dictator for life. Republican senators who feared (probably wrongly) that he intended to proclaim a monarchy, organised a conspiracy against him. He was assassinated on the Ides (15th) of March 44, at the Senate, meeting temporarily in the Hall of Pompey in the Campus Martius (now lying under the via di Torre Argentina, just south of the Pantheon). The conspirators were headed by *Brutus and *Cassius, his erstwhile friends. His will left all he possessed to his grandnephew Octavian, later to become *Augustus.

Though motivated by great personal ambition, Caesar was more than a self-seeking demagogue. He succeeded in winning stability for Rome and the provinces, and his dictatorship represented the crushing of an oligarchy and paved the way for the empire. He was among the greatest generals of history, a superb military narrator and commentator (his *De bello Gallico* stands supreme), a statesman of liberal thought and instantaneous and perfectly executed action, and a man of great personal charm. He was epileptic.

Gelzer, M., *Caesar: Politician and Statesman*. 1968; Meier, C., *Caesar*. 1982; McCullough, C., *Caesar: a novel*. 1998.

Caesarion (Ptolemy XIV or XV Caesar) (47–30 BCE). Egyptian pharaoh. The son of *Cleopatra and Julius *Caesar, he was nominal co-ruler with his mother. After her death he was lured from refuge by agents of Octavian (*Augustus) and murdered.

Caesarius of Arles, St (c.470–543). Gallic prelate, born in Chalon. Bishop of Arles 502–43, when Visigoths, Ostrogoths and Franks were contending for mastery of the old Roman province, he gained a great reputation not only for his sermons and for his staunch support of orthodox doctrines but for the statesman like qualities that enabled him to safeguard the communities of monks and nuns under his care.

Cage, John (1912–1992). American composer, philosopher, poet, music theorist and print maker, born in Los Angeles. A pioneer of 'indeterminism' in music, he studied with *Schoenberg and *Varèse, and

began to experiment in composition in the late 1930s. Influenced by Zen Buddhism and I Ching, he became a pioneer of chance music (that is, with random, unexpected outcomes) and non-standard use of musical instruments. He used sounds of indeterminate notation and duration, produced by a variety of means (including, but not limited to, musical instruments). He aimed to encourage audience response to all sound; he did not intend to present a selected musical structure as a personal expression. His most discussed work was 4' 33" (1952), catalogued as 'tacet [i.e. silent] for any instrument'. His impact on other creative artists was exceptional, and he experimented with percussion, electronics and the 'prepared piano' in which extraneous objects are placed between the strings. Because no two performances were to be alike, relatively little of Cage's work is available on CD. *Roaratorio: An Irish Circus on Finnegans Wake* (1976–79) is published on the Wergo label. He had an encyclopaedic knowledge of mushrooms.

Cagliostro, Alessandro, Conte di (assumed name of Giuseppe Balsamo) (1743–1795). Italian adventurer, occultist and magician, born in Palermo. He studied chemistry in Sicily, was briefly a novice, worked in Malta and Rome, and pursued occult science. He claimed to be able to transmute base metals into gold and made a fortune in Europe selling love philtres and elixirs of youth. In 1776 he came to England. In Paris he was involved (1784–85) in the affair of the diamond necklace (*Marie Antoinette) and briefly imprisoned in the Bastille. Throughout this period his reputation as a man of mystery who could foretell the future (e.g. the execution of *Louis XVI) was immense. He was condemned by the Inquisition and died in a Roman prison while serving a life sentence for founding a Masonic lodge.

Cai Lun (Ts'ai Lun in Wade-Giles) (c. 50–121 CE). Chinese inventor, born in Leiyang. A eunuch and official at the court of the Han emperor Hodi, he is credited as the inventor of paper (about 105), and was an actual rather than legendary figure. Paper remained a Chinese monopoly until about 750 when the Arabs began manufacturing it in Baghdad and Samarkand.

Caillaux, Joseph (1863–1944). French radical politician. A deputy from 1898, he was Finance Minister 1899–1902, 1906–09, 1911, 1925, 1935 and campaigned for a progressive income tax. As Premier 1911–12 he negotiated with Germany a settlement of the Moroccan crisis, but his political life was abruptly interrupted when in 1913 his wife shot and killed Gaston Calmette, editor of *Le Figaro*, who had made various accusations against her husband (she was later acquitted of murder). Caillaux favoured the ending of World War I by a peace of negotiation, and in 1918 he was imprisoned after being convicted of corresponding with the Germans. Amnestied in 1924, he played an important part in war debt negotiations.

Caillaux J., *Mémoires*. 1942–48.

Caillebotte, Gustave (1848–1894). French painter and collector. A naval architect, he became a significant patron and collector and organised the first Impressionist exhibition in Paris in 1877. His best known work, *Paris, a Rainy Day* (1877), now in Chicago, combines Impressionist techniques with the classical tradition.

Cain, James M(allahan) (1892–1977). American author and journalist. He achieved great success with his novels *The Postman Always Rings Twice* (1934) and *Mildred Pierce* (1946), both filmed.

Cain, John (1882–1957). Australian Labor politician. With little formal education, he became a union organiser and municipal councillor, then a Member of the Victorian Legislative Assembly 1917–57 and Leader of the ALP 1937–57. In a gerrymandered parliament, Labor supported a minority Country Party Government in office 1935–43, 1943–47, 1950–52. Cain was Premier three times, for four days in 1943, in a minority government supported by Independents 1945–47, then with a massive majority in its own right 1952–55. However, a major split within the ALP over attitudes to Communism (H. V. *Evatt) began in 1954 and forced Cain from office. The Party remained in opposition until 1982. His son, **John Cain** (1931–2019), a lawyer and Law Reform Commissioner 1975–77, was MP 1976–92, and Premier of Victoria 1982–90, initiating many reforms, including freedom of information and equal opportunity legislation, development of the Melbourne Docklands, and increased investment in education and the environment.

Caine, Sir (Thomas Henry) **Hall** (1853–1931). British (Manx) novelist, journalist, dramatist, poet and critic. Secretary and companion to Dante Gabriel *Rossetti 1880–82, he wrote *Recollections of Rossetti* (1882). His romantic, quasi-religious and melodramatic plays, some successful as plays and films, were great bestsellers in their time but are unreadable now: they included *The Deemster* (1887, more than 1,000,000 sold), *The Bondman* (1890), *The Manxman* (1894), *The Prodigal Son* (1904) and *The Woman Thou Gavest Me* (1913). Detested by Thomas *Hardy, Conan *Doyle and G.K.*Chesterton, *Lloyd George created him KBE (1918) and CH (1922).

Cairns, Jim (James Ford) (1914–2003). Australian Labor politician, born in Melbourne. An athlete and policeman, he took up a late vocation as an academic economist, and was a Member of the House of Representatives 1955–77. Handsome and charismatic, he led the anti-Vietnam War campaign and challenged Gough *Whitlam for the Labor leadership in 1968. In Whitlam's Government he served as Minister for Trade 1972–74, Deputy Prime Minister and Treasurer 1974–75, and Minister for the Environment 1975. Dismissed for careless handling of sensitive overseas loans and

for misleading the House, after politics he became a prolific author, promoting non-violence and alternative life styles.

Ormonde, P., *A Foolish Passionate Man*. 1981; Strangio, P., *Keeper of the Faith*. 2002.

Caius (or Keys), **John** (1510–1573). English physician. He obtained his medical doctorate at Padua, returning in 1544 to England, where he lectured on anatomy in London. He became a fellow of the College of Physicians in 1547 and later was nine times president. He was in turn physician to *Edward VI, *Mary and *Elizabeth and in 1557 endowed and enlarged Gonville Hall, Cambridge, where he had been a student, renaming it Gonville and Caius (pronounced 'Keys') College. He published *A Boke of Counseill against the Sweating Sickness* (1552) and wrote on a range of medical, scientific and antiquarian topics.

Calasso, Roberto (1941–2021). Italian writer and publisher, born in Florence. From a privileged, strongly anti-Fascist, family, he was multi-lingual and wrote about the relationship of myth and modern consciousness. His books include *The Ruin of Kasch: The Crisis of Legitimacy* (1983) and *The Marriage of Cadmas and Harmony* (1988), and he wrote about Hinduism, *Kafka, *Baudelaire, *Tiepolo and Bruce *Chatwin's photographs.

Cajal, Santiago Ramón y (1852–1934). Spanish neurologist, pathologist and histologist, born in Navarre. Son of a surgeon and anatomist, he studied at Zarazoga University and after a year as an army surgeon in Cuba (where he contracted malaria), he decided on an academic career in anatomy. He taught himself to become an expert histologist and miscroscopist and became professor of anatomy at Valencia 1883–1887 and of histology at Barcelona 1887–92 and Madrid 1892–1922. He used the silver staining techniques of **Camillo Golgi** (1843–1926) to investigate cell structure. He devoted the creative period of his life to the study of the fine structure of the nervous system, concerned above all to discover the functional pathways of the transmission of stimuli. He was acutely aware of the problem of understanding how neural information is passed across anatomical gaps. In 1888 he identified (but did not name) the neuron as the basic unit of the nervous system. His researches were published in his massive and highly influential *Textura del Sistema Nervioso del Hombre y de los Vertebrados* (1904). For this work, he shared the Nobel Prize for Medicine (1906) with Golgi, who, ironically, completely rejected the neuron doctrine, proposing an alternative 'reticular theory' of the nervous system as a single continuous network. Cajal's later work focused more on the degeneration and regeneration of nervous structures. His researches confirmed the correctness of the 'monogenesist' school which believed that the regeneration of fibres came from the sprouting of the cylinders of the central stump. The first Spanish scientist to be awarded a Nobel Prize, Cajal devoted himself to promoting research in education and administration. His exquisite drawings of neural networks were inscribed by UNESCO in 2017.

Ehrlich, B., *The Brain in Search of Itself: Santiago Ramón y Cajal and the Story of the Neuron*. 2022.

Calas, Jean (1698–1762). French merchant. A Huguenot, victim of a notorious French miscarriage of justice exposed by *Voltaire, he was a clothier in Toulouse. He was falsely accused of hanging one of his sons, who had committed suicide, to prevent his conversion to Roman Catholicism. The father was tried, tortured and executed, but Voltaire, suspecting priestly and official prejudice, took up the case and in 1765 the verdict was reversed.

Calder, Alexander (Stirling) (1898–1976). American sculptor, born in Philadelphia. He studied engineering in New Jersey and art in New York, moved to Paris (1926) and was influenced by *Miró and (after 1930) *Mondrian. After making sculptures and models of wood and wire, in 1931 he began to design and construct 'mobiles', moving abstract shapes (originally motor driven) of metal, plastic or wood, connected by wires, depending on air currents for movement, and (from 1933) 'stabiles', which were fixtures. He also worked as a painter, lithographer and jewellery designer. His mobiles and stabiles, many of them monumental, were exhibited in open spaces in New York, Washington, Los Angeles, Paris, Madrid, Stockholm, Spoleto and Jerusalem.

Calder, A., *An Autobiography with Pictures*. 1966.

Calderón de la Barca, Pedro (1600–1681). Spanish dramatist and poet, born in Madrid. He was educated at Alcalå and Salamanca universities, and was soon writing plays so successfully that after the death of Lope de *Vega in 1635 his position as leading dramatist was undisputed. He was made a knight of the Order of Santiago in 1636. After a period of distinguished army service (1640–42) he took holy orders (1651) on the command of King Philip IV, but he continued to write religious plays. He wrote in verse and, like *Shakespeare, with whom he has been compared, wrote both comedies and tragedies. His plays were concerned with themes of marital honour and with religious and philosophical ideas. They suffer, however, from the stylised conventions of the period, and are seldom now produced outside Spain. Over 100 have survived, one of the best known, *El mågico prodigioso* (*The Prodigious Magician*), in some respects anticipating Goethe's *Faust*, others are *El alcalde de Zalamea* (*The Mayor of Zalamea*), *La vida es sueno* (*Life is A Dream*) and *El gran teatro del mundo* (*The Great Theatre of the World*). In addition there are some 70 of the so-called *autos saeramentales*, a special form of religious drama concerned with the mysteries of the Holy Eucharist.

Parker, A. A., *The Allegorical Drama of Calderón*. Repr. 1968.

Caldwell, Erskine Preston (1903–1987). American novelist and screenwriter. His *Tobacco Road* (1932) and *God's Little Acre* (1933) are the two best known of a series in which the degraded conditions of 'poor whites' in the southern states are described with humour and indignation; both were successfully filmed. He also wrote works of autobiography, criticism and travel.

Calhoun, John Caldwell (1782–1850). American politician, born in South Carolina. A lawyer, he served in the state legislature 1808–10 and in the US House of Representatives 1811–17. A 'War Hawk' (ultranationalist) during the War of 1812, he also campaigned for protective tariffs. *Madison's Secretary of War 1817–25, he was twice elected as Vice President, first with J.Q. *Adams (1824), then with Andrew *Jackson (1828), serving 1825–32, resigning (the first vice president to do so) in order to serve as a Senator. He broke with Jackson, a strong nationalist, on the issue of 'nullification', the doctrine that states could declare federal laws (e.g. on slavery or tariffs) unconstitutional where they felt themselves fundamentally threatened. Calhoun argued that slavery was 'a positive good'. As US Senator from South Carolina 1832–43; 1845–50, he developed the 'filibuster' (1841) as a method to prevent measures to which a minority were opposed from being brought to a vote. Secretary of State 1844–45, under *Tyler and Polk, he brought Texas into the Union as a slave state. He sought the Democratic nomination for president in 1844 and 1848, but failed badly. Calhoun is regarded as one of the greatest American orators.

Current, R. N., *John C. Calhoun*. 1966; Niven, J., John C. *Calhoun and the Price of Union*. 1988; Bartlett, I., *John C. Calhoun: A Biography*. 1994 .

Caligula (Gaius Julius Caesar Augustus Germanicus) (12–41 CE). Roman Emperor 37–41. Son of Germanicus Caesar and *Agrippina, he owed his nickname Caligula (Little Boots) to his popularity as a child with his father's soldiers. At first he ruled with moderation but a serious illness, possibly epilepsy, a few months after his accession is believed to have affected his sanity. Thenceforth he behaved as an increasingly bloodthirsty and vicious tyrant. The story that he made his horse 'Incitatus' a consul is typical of many anecdotes indicating his irresponsibility. After only four years' rule, and having declared himself a god, a palace conspiracy brought about his assassination.

Calixtus III *see* **Callistus III**

Callaghan, (Leonard) **James, Baron Callaghan** (1912–2005). British Labour politician, born in Portsmouth. Son of a naval chief petty officer, he joined the Inland Revenue in 1929. He served in the navy, became MP for South Cardiff 1945–87, was Parliamentary Secretary in the Ministry of Transport 1947–50 and Parliamentary and Financial Secretary to the Admiralty 1950–51. He was Chancellor of the Exchequer 1964–67 and Home Secretary 1967–70 under Harold *Wilson, and when Labour was re-elected he was Foreign and Commonwealth Secretary 1974–76. When Wilson retired, he was elected Leader of the Labour Party, defeating Michael *Foot in the third ballot, serving as Prime Minister 1976–79. His small majority depended on continuous support from the Liberals and the minority groups. After the notorious 'winter of discontent', marked by economic stagnation, strikes and a savage freeze, he lost the 1979 election to Margaret *Thatcher and the Conservatives, but continued as leader of the Labour Party until 1980. He retired with a KG and peerage (1987). He was the longest lived British Prime Minister.

Callas (née Kalogeropolous, later Kalos)**, Maria** (Anna Cecilia) (1923–1977). Greek-American dramatic soprano, born in New York. She studied in Athens and made her debut there in 1941. In 1949 she married **Giovanni Battista Meneghini**, appeared at La Scala, Milan, in 1950, at Covent Garden in 1952 and at the Metropolitan Opera, New York, in 1956. Among her most famous roles were *Bellini's *Norma*, and Amina in his *La Sonnambula*, while her magnetic stage presence and great gifts as an operatic actor yielded memorable portrayals of Violetta in *Verdi's *La Traviata* and in the title role in *Puccini's *Tosca*. From 1959 until her death she had an intense relationship with Aristotle *Onassis.

Calles, Plutarco Elias (1877–1945). Mexican soldier and politician. He took an active part in the revolution which in 1911 overthrew President *Diaz, and later served under *Carranza and *Obregón. He was President of Mexico 1924–28. He continued to control events from behind the scenes until in 1936 President *Cárdenas asserted himself and had him deported. By the vigour with which he carried out the policy of land distribution and other reforms Calles did much to benefit the peasants, and his attacks on the Church and the oil companies were in line with revolutionary tradition, but as his rule proceeded he became increasingly dictatorial and conservative. He thus alienated many of his former supporters, and his deposition was popular.

Callimachus of Cyrene (c.310–240 BCE). Greek poet and librarian, born in North Africa. Working in the Alexandrian Library at the time of *Ptolemy II, his most important work, *Aetia* (Causes), which survives in fragmentary form, tells a series of episodes purporting to reveal the origins of ancient customs. He began a systematic catalogue of the library's holdings and originated alphabetical listing.

Callisthenes (c.360–327 BCE). Greek historian. Said to have been *Aristotle's nephew, he accompanied *Alexander the Great on his campaigns but was put to death for allegedly being involved in a plot. The real

reason may have been his opposition to Alexander's assumption of divine honours. Only fragments of his writings survive.

Callistus (or Callixtus) **II**. (Gui de Bourgogne) (c.1065–1124). Pope 1119–24. Born to a powerful French noble family, and archbishop of Vienne 1088–1119, his papal bull *Sicut Judaeis* (1120) was tolerant of the Jews. The First Lateran Council (1123) prescribed a celibate clergy.

Callistus (or Callixtus) **III** (Alonso de Borja. Borgia in Italian) (1378–1458). Pope 1455–58. Born in Valencia, he was a papal lawyer and diplomat. After the fall of Constantinople (1453), he attempted to organise a crusade against the Turks, aided *Hunyadi and *Skanderbeg but had little support from France and Germany. He was deeply anti-Jewish and inclined to nepotism—Rodrigo Borgia, later *Alexander VI, being the main beneficiary. He annulled (posthumously) the sentence of excommunication passed on *Joan of Arc.

Calment, Jeanne Louise (1875–1997). French centenarian, born in Arles. She married a cousin, never worked and smoked until she was 117. In October 1995 she became the oldest person in geriatric records.

Calmette, (Léon Charles) **Albert** (1863–1933). French bacteriologist, born in Nice. Educated in Paris, he worked with Patrick *Manson, and Louis *Pasteur sent him to Saigon (1891–94). He developed the first anti-venin against snakebite and directed the Pasteur Institute in Lille 1895–1920. Between 1908 and 1921, with **Camille Guérin** (1872–1961), he developed the BCG (Bacillus Calmette-Guérin) vaccine, administered to infants to develop immunity against tuberculosis, but it was only adopted generally after Calmette's death. He received 77 nominations for the Nobel Prize for Medicine, all failed.

Calonne, Charles Alexandre de (1734–1802). French financier. An administrator of wide experience, he was one of the ablest of those who, in the hectic years of unrest before the French Revolution, were called in by *Louis XVI to try to rescue French finances from the chaos that threatened disaster. Appointed Controller General of Finance in 1783, he was at first successful in raising loans to meet immediate needs, but his proposals for taxing the privileged classes put before the Assembly of Notables in 1787 roused such indignation among those affected that Louis felt himself forced to dismiss his advisor. Calonne spent the revolutionary years in England as Finance Minister to the emigré government. He returned to France, poverty stricken, in the year of his death.

Calvé, Emma (Rosa Calvet) (1858?–1942). French operatic soprano. She performed with great success in France, England and America. Her greatest role was Carmen in *Bizet's opera.

Calvin, John (English form of Jean Cauvin) (1509–1564). French religious reformer, born at Noyon in Picardy. The son of an ecclesiastical lawyer, he went at the age of 14 to Paris University. Originally intended for the priesthood, he was attracted by the new humanism. Acting on his father's advice he began legal training at Orléans, and later at Bourges. His aptitude proving greater than his interest, so in 1531, after his father's death, he returned to Paris and devoted himself to classical scholarship, also beginning Hebrew. Already sympathetic to the attacks made on traditional theology by *Luther and *Bucer, Calvin experienced what he called 'instant conversion' about 1533. Under threat of arrest as a Protestant, he spent the next two years constantly on the move, but at last took refuge in Basle, Switzerland, where he continued his Hebrew studies and worked on *Institutes of the Christian Religion*, completed in 1536 with a prefatory letter to King *François I of France in which he foresaw the destruction of any kingdom 'not ruled by the sceptre of God'. This, his greatest work, bears the imprint of St *Augustine's teaching, especially in its emphasis on the doctrine of predestination and the supreme sovereignty of God. Calvin taught that certain souls ('the elect') are predestined for eternal life and the remainder are damned, salvation being the free gift of God and good works being the sign of salvation, not its cause. Whether Christ's death was an act of atonement for the benefit of all or only of the elect is not always clear and was a subject of much controversy in the Reformed Churches. When passing through Geneva in 1536 Calvin accepted what was virtually a challenge from Guillaume *Farel to take over his work of directing the religious and political life of the city and he used his organising ability to create a system of theocratic government. He prescribed a profession of faith, banned all public entertainment, emphasised the need for unbending puritanism in private life and even issued regulations on dress. Such austerity soon proved unpopular and Calvin was expelled from the city in 1538 after riots organised by a faction called the Libertines. The three years that elapsed before he was recalled were spent mainly at Strasbourg where he entered upon a brief but happy marriage (his wife died in 1549, their son having already died in infancy), continued his studies and renewed contact with Bucer and other reformers. Back in Geneva he resumed where he had left off and organised a Presbyterian system of government. He wanted Geneva to be a 'city of glass', and many informers helped to enforce his imposition of social discipline and puritan morality. The burning of *Servetus demonstrated his rigid intolerance in religious matters. The regime lasted during his lifetime and at least the hard work, thrift and sobriety enjoined brought trade and wealth to the city. The college which later became Geneva University was founded to provide an educated clergy. Calvinism spread before and after its founder's death and shared with Lutheranism the allegiance of the greatest part of the Protestant world. It provided a pattern for

Presbyterian Churches in Scotland and elsewhere: it was the faith of the Huguenots in France, of the Dutch Reformed Church and of several German states. The relationship (if any) of Calvinism to the rise of capitalism has been a matter of considerable historical controversy, as has the suggestion that Calvinism encouraged rebellion.

Wendel, F., Calvin: *The Origin and Development of his Religious Thought*. 1963; Parker, T. M., *Calvin*. 1976.

Calvino, Italo (1923–1985). Italian writer, born in Cuba. He began work in Turin, on the magazine *L'Unita*, and from 1959 he was co-editor of *Il Menabo di letteratura*. He began to write realistic stories of the Italian Resistance (in which he had served), but during the 1950s turned to fantasy, some of it allegorical. He gained a wide reputation with *Il visconte dimezzato* (1952), *Il barone rampante* (1957), and *Il cavaliere inesistente* (1959). All his work shows a concern with what he considers to be the dehumanising influence of contemporary society. His *If on a winter's night a traveller* … (1979) was widely acclaimed in translation.

Woodhouse, J. R., *Italo Calvino: A Reappraisal and an Appreciation of the Trilogy*. 1968.

Calwell, Arthur Augustus (1896–1973). Australian politician. As Minister of Immigration 1945–49 he initiated a scheme which brought 1,000,000 Europeans to Australia within a decade. He succeeded H. V. *Evatt as Leader of the Labor opposition 1960–67.

Camargo, Marie Anne de Cupis de (1710–1770). French dancer, born in Brussels. One of the most famous figures in the early history of ballet, she came from an influential family and received early encouragement. Her whole career from her first appearance in Paris in 1726 to her retirement in 1751 was a series of triumphs. She appeared in about 80 ballets and her fame was perpetuated by the celebrated artists and writers (including *Voltaire) of her time. She is said to have introduced the characteristic short ballet skirt. The Camargo Society was founded in London in 1930 (*Ashton, *Lambert).

Cambacérès, Jean Jacques Regis de, Duc de Parma (1753–1824). French politician. In the violent phase of the Revolution, he played a placatory role. In November 1799, he helped to organise the 'coup of 18 Brumaire' which overthrew the Directory and installed *Napoléon Bonaparte as First Consul. Cambacérès became Second Consul in 1800. His great interest was jurisprudence and he became principal architect of the Code Napoléon. Under the empire he was Archchancellor 1804–14, holding second place in the state hierarchy, receiving a dukedom in 1808. After the restoration of *Louis XVIII he was expelled but allowed to return in 1818.

Cambridge, George William Frederick Charles, 2nd Duke of (1819–1904). British prince and field marshal, born in Hanover. A grandson of *George III, and briefly (1819) heir presumptive to the throne, he married morganatically in 1847 but was also loyal to his mistress. He devoted his life to the army and served in the Crimean War. Having been mildly sympathetic to reform, as Commander-in-Chief 1856–95 he became increasingly hostile and the army became ossified until, despite loyal support from his cousin, Queen *Victoria, he was forced out by Henry *Campbell-Bannerman.

Cambyses I (Old Persian: Kabūjiya) (c.600–559 BCE). King of Persia (Ashan) 580–559 BCE. Son of Cyrus I and father of *Cyrus II, head of the Achaemenid dynasty and a Zoroastrian, he died in battle against the Medes.

Cambyses II (Kabūjiya) (d.522 BCE). Shahanshah (King of Kings) of the Achaemenid Empire 530–522, Pharoah of Egypt 525–522 BCE. Son of *Cyrus the Great, he ruled Babylon jointly with his father. He added Phoenicia, Cyprus, and Egypt to the Persian empire but his subsequent expeditions to the south (Nubia) and west were partial or total failures. *Herodotus, a hostile source, asserted that Cambyses became a cruel, drunken and capricious tyrant. He died while returning to Persia to deal with a usurper, **Gaumata**, who claimed to be his murdered brother **Bardiya**.

Olmstead, A. T., *History of the Persian Empire*. 1948.

Camden, Charles Pratt, 1st Earl (1713–1794). English judge. As Chief Justice of the Common Pleas 1762–66 he pronounced against the legality of 'general warrants' in the case of John *Wilkes and became extraordinarily popular. He became Lord Chancellor in 1766, but his support of Wilkes and opposition to the government's unyielding American policy caused him to resign in 1770. He served under *Rockingham and *Pitt as Lord President of the Council 1782–94 and was created an ear1 in 1786.

Camden, William (1551–1623). English antiquarian, historian and schoolmaster. Educated at Christ's Hospital, St Paul's School and Oxford, he became a master at Westminster in 1575 and was headmaster 1593–97. His professional occupation allowed him time to travel up and down England and collect material for his great antiquarian survey *Britannia*, the original Latin version of which appeared in 1586. His *Annals* of Queen *Elizabeth's reign were published posthumously. Most of his many works, which include an account of the trial of the Gunpowder Plotters (*Fawkes) are in Latin. His name is commemorated by the Camden professorship at Oxford.

Trevor-Roper. H., *Queen Elizabeth's First Historian*. 1971.

Cameron, David William Donald, Baron Cameron of Chipping Norton (1966–). English Conservative politician, born in London. Son of a stockbroker, descendent of *William IV, educated at Eton and Oxford, he worked in the Conservative Party's Research Department, then for a public relations firm. He was MP 2001–16, Shadow Minister for Education 2005 and Leader of the Opposition 2005–10. In May 2010 Gordon *Brown's Labour government was voted out and Cameron became Prime Minister 2010–16, first in a Conservative-Liberal Democrat coalition (Nick *Clegg), which ended when Cameron won an outright majority in May 2015 and the Coalition ended. Under pressure from anti-EU Conservatives, he imprudently called a referendum (June 2016) to decide on Britain's continued membership. The vote to leave ('Brexit') was unexpected, and Cameron, who had led the 'Remain' campaign, felt obliged to resign as Prime Minister. Theresa *May succeeded him. After mixed success as a lobbyist, he returned to government when Rishi *Sunak appointed him, unexpectedly, as Secretary of State for Foreign, Commonwealth and Development Affairs 2023–24, with a peerage.

Cameron, D., *For the Record*. 2019.

Cameron, Julia Margaret (née Pattle) (1815–1879). English photographer, born in Calcutta. Influenced by G.F. *Watts, after 1864 she made remarkable portraits of *Tennyson, *Darwin, *Herschel, *Carlyle, *Browning, *Hooker and *Eyre. A great-aunt of Virginia *Woolf, she died in Ceylon (Sri Lanka).

Cameron, Verney Lovett (1844–1894). British naval officer and explorer. Much of his service was spent in African waters in the suppression of the slave trade. Sent in 1873 to relieve *Livingstone, he met the party carrying his body to the coast. Proceeding westwards, he found some of Livingstone's papers and then surveyed Lake Tanganyika, arriving at the correct conclusion that its outlet flowed to the Congo. He eventually reached Portuguese Benguela (1875) and so was the first European to cross equatorial Africa from east to west. He wrote accounts of his travels and adventure stories for boys, including *Across Africa* (1877).

Camilleri, Andrea Calogero (1925–2019). Italian (Sicilian) novelist and director, born in Porto Empedocle. After a successful career writing and directing in film and theatre he wrote 27 crime novels about Inspector Salvo Montalbano, which were brilliantly translated, became a television series, transformed Sicily's tourism potential and, apparently, weakened Mafia influence.

Camões (or Camoens), **Luis de** (1524–1580). Portuguese poet, born in Lisbon. From a poor family of the minor nobility, he received his education at Coimbra University and gained early recognition for his gifts as a lyric poet and dramatist. After he left the university it is surmised that he had many love affairs and that he was exiled from Lisbon as a result of one of these (supposedly with Caterina de Ataide, a lady of the court). He served in the army in North Africa (1547–49) and lost his right eye there, returned to Lisbon, was again exiled and went to Goa in India, where he served with military expeditions in the Far East. After further adventures and misadventures he left Goa in 1567 for Mozambique, but it was not until 1570, after his debts and passage money had been paid by friends, that he reached home. He lived in poverty on a small pension from the king until he died in hospital of the plague. While in the East he worked on his masterpiece, As *Lusiadas* (*The Lusiads* i.e. the Portuguese), a national epic, broadly modelled on *Virgil's *Aeneid*, and largely inspired by the discoveries and heroic exploits of da *Gama and his fellow navigators and soldiers in the East. The work was published in 1572 and was an immediate success, with 36 editions published between 1580 and 1640. Camões also wrote three verse comedies, many lyric poems of great poignancy (some to a favourite Chinese slave girl) and philosophical sonnets.

Freitas, W., *Camões and his Epic*. 1963.

Campanella, Tommaso (1568–1639). Italian astronomer and philosopher, born at Stilo in Calabria. He entered the Dominican order and early intellectual influences on him included the writings of Telesio (who advanced atomistic views of nature). In 1592 he was denounced to the Inquisition for heresy. Between then and 1629 he spent much of his time in internment. He passed his last few years in safety in France. Campanella was one of the foremost champions of the Copernican view that the sun was the centre of the planetary system. He may have held such views because of his independent conviction of the truth of natural magic and astrology, which led him to see the sun as the source of great spiritual powers. Throughout his life he defended the right of philosophers and scientists to speculate freely in matters relating to the natural world. In his view, Scripture did not pronounce on such matters and the Church should not dogmatise. Of importance as a political utopian, he conceived of a perfect state (the Civitas solis, the Commonwealth of the Sun) in which work and wealth were equally shared, and men perfected themselves by coming to a spiritual understanding of God through his creation.

Campbell. Scottish noble family, the heads of which have been earls (from 1457) and dukes (from 1701) of *Argyll.

Campbell, Alexander (1788–1866). American religious leader, born in Ireland. He was a Presbyterian then a Baptist preacher, before forming his own group, which, merged with others, became the 'Disciples of Christ', a body with over 1,000,000 members in the US. Campbell, who founded Bethany College in 1840, believed that Christianity should rest solely

on biblical authority and that forms of worship should resume the simplicity of New Testament times. He produced his own translation of the New Testament and was a prolific writer.

Campbell (originally Macliver), **Colin, 1st Baron Clyde** (1792–1863). British field marshal. Son of a carpenter, he adopted his mother's family name, and as a young man served in the Peninsular War. Fame, knighthood (KCB) and experience of Indian conditions came in the second Sikh War (1848–49), followed by much frontier fighting. In the Crimea (at Alma and Balaclava) he proved himself the most effective of the British generals and when the Indian Mutiny broke out (1857) he became Commander-in-Chief 1857–60. He relieved Lucknow and suppressed the rising.

Campbell, Joseph (1904–1987). American author, born in New York. Educated at Columbia University, he taught at the Sarah Lawrence College, Bronxville 1934–72 and became a prolific (and controversial) author of books on mythology and folklore, including *The Masks of God* (4 volumes: 1959–67) and *The Historical Atlas of World Mythology* (1983–87). Television and radio programs with Bill Moyers helped to popularise his ideas.

Campbell, Kim (Avril Thaedra) (1947–). Canadian Progressive Conservative politician. Educated at the University of British Columbia, she became a lawyer and academic, was elected MP 1988–93, and served as Attorney-General 1990–92 and Minister for Defence 1992–93. She succeeded Brian *Mulroney as party leader and Prime Minister of Canada 1993. In October 1993 her Conservative Party was overwhelmingly defeated. She became Consul-General in California and also taught at Harvard.

Campbell, Sir Malcolm (1885–1948). English racing driver and journalist. He won motor cycle races 1908–10, then turned to automobiles in 1910, with a series named *Blue Bird* (from the play by *Maeterlinck), breaking world land speed records nine times between 1924 and 1935. He wrote extensively and was attracted by Fascism. In September 1935 *Blue Bird V* reached 301 mph (484 kph), on Bonneville Flats, Utah, US. In 1939 he captured the world water speed record on Coniston Water, in the English Lake District, by reaching 141.7 mph (228 kph) in his motor boat, also named *Blue Bird*. His son, **Donald Malcolm Campbell** (1921–1967), broke the world water speed record again at Coniston in 1955 by travelling at 202 mph (325 kph), a speed which he had raised to 260 mph (418 kph) by 1959. In 1964 he also established a land speed record of 403 mph (648 kph) at Lake Dumbleyung, Western Australia. His boats and cars were also named Bluebird. In an attempt to attain a water speed of 300 mph (483 kph) his boat disintegrated and he was killed.

Campbell, Mrs Patrick (née Beatrice Rose Stella Tanner) (1865–1940). English actor, born in London. Her father was English and her mother Italian. In 1884 she eloped with Patrick Campbell (d. 1900) and thereafter invariably used his name as a performer. Her stage debut in 1888 was followed by great success in the plays of *Pinero, notably in the title role of *The Second Mrs Tanqueray* (1893), *Shakespeare and *Ibsen. In 1914 she created the role of Eliza Doolittle in Bernard *Shaw's *Pygmalion*, which was written for her. She married Winston *Churchill's youthful step-father George Cornwallis-West in 1914. She appeared in six films. Her friendship with Shaw led to a fascinating correspondence, first published in 1952.

Peters, M., *Mrs Pat*. 1984.

Campbell, (Ignatius) **Roy** (Dunnachie) (1901–1957). South African poet, born in Durban. His poems have a vigorous 'outdoor' quality, often mixed with sharp satire, and reflect the interests of Campbell himself, who was accomplished at bull tossing, jousting and steer throwing. He fought for General *Franco in the Spanish Civil War. His poetic works include *The Flaming Terrapin* (1924), *Wayzgoose* (1928), *Adamaster* (1930) and *Flowering Rifle* (1939), which was inspired by his experiences in the Spanish war. *Light on a Dark Horse* (1951) is autobiographical. He was killed in a motor accident in Portugal, where he had lived since 1947.

Campbell-Bannerman, Sir Henry (1836–1908). British Liberal politician. Son of a lord provost of Glasgow, he was educated at Glasgow University and Trinity College, Cambridge and sat as MP 1868–1908. A strong supporter of *Gladstone's Irish policy, he became Chief Secretary for Ireland 1884–85. As Secretary for War 1886; 1894–95 he reformed the army and managed to remove the apparently immovable **George, Duke of Cambridge** (1819–1904) as Commander-in-Chief in 1895. He succeeded Sir William *Harcourt as party leader in 1899. He read widely, supported votes for women and had a gift for languages. Prime Minister 1905–08, his ministry was outstanding, including *Asquith, *Grey, *Haldane, *Lloyd George and *Churchill, and was one of the most brilliant in history. The Prime Minister was responsible for granting self-government to the defeated Boer republics, the Transvaal and the Orange Free State, from which stemmed the Union of South Africa. Heart disease forced his resignation and he died in 10 Downing Street 17 days later.

Wilson, J., *CB: A Life of Sir Henry Campbell-Bannerman*. 1974.

Campin, Robert (c.1378–1444). Flemish painter. Active in Tournai, he is now identified as the previously misdescribed 'Master of Flémalle', regarded as the founder of Flemish Realism and a major influence on Jan van *Eyck and Rogier van der *Weyden.

Campion, Edmund (c.1540–1581). English priest, born in London. He was educated at Christ's Hospital and Oxford, and later studied for the Roman Catholic priesthood at Douai and Rome. He joined the Jesuits (1573) and in 1580 returned to England on a mission to revive the spirit of the Roman Catholics suffering under Queen *Elizabeth's Anglican rule. With his eloquence and the qualities of a brilliant mind he was proving most successful when within a year he was captured. Despite torture he refused to recant and argued persuasively with his accusers. Nevertheless he was condemned on charges of sedition and hanged, drawn and quartered. Campion was beatified in 1886.

Waugh, E., *Edmund Campion*. 1936.

Campion, Thomas (1567–1620). English poet and musician. By profession a physician, he is best known for his books of 'ayres' containing lyrics, some set to music (for the flute) by himself, he also wrote masques for court performances and a treatise on harmony. In his *Observations in the Art of Poesie* (1602) he attacked the practice of rhyming.

Camrose, William Ewart Berry, 1st Viscount *see* **Berry, William Ewart**

Camus, Albert (1913–1960). French writer, born in Algeria. He became a journalist and an actor and managed a theatrical company (1935–38). He went to Paris in 1939. Towards the end of World War II he worked for the resistance movement and was editor of the left wing newspaper *Combat* (1944–47). For a time he belonged to the Communist Party, but became disillusioned, and after breaking with *Sartre abandoned public activities. In his later works he revealed himself as a humanist, discouraged by the failure of contemporary civilisation to cope with major moral issues, and unable to accept the existence of God, but constantly trying to find significant values in a meaningless world. Most of his thought is centred on the concept of the 'absurd'—that man's predicament in the world is absurd. He is often termed an existentialist—to which he laid no claim. Among his works are the philosophical essays in *Le Mythe de Sisyphe* (1942), *L'Homme révolté* (1951), a declaration of his own attitude to life, novels such as *L'Étranger* (1942) and *La Peste* (1947), short stories, as *L'Exil et la Royaume* (1957), and plays such as *Le Malentendu* (1944). He won the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1957. He was killed in a motor accident.

Todd, O., *Albert Camus*. 1996; Lottman, H. R., *Albert Camus*. 1996.

Canaletto (né Giovanni Antonio Canal) (1697–1768). Italian painter, born in Venice. Originally trained in Venice by his father, a scene painter, he later studied in Rome. His best pictures combine exact topographical detail with a remarkably subtle feeling for light. An English connoisseur, Joseph Smith, whose collection of over 50 Canalettos was bought by *George III, persuaded him to come to England, where he lived between 1746 and 1756, but though some of his London scenes are as skilful as the Venetian ones in reproducing detail and conveying atmosphere, it is upon the latter that his reputation finally rests.

Constable, W. G., *Canaletto*. 1962.

Canaris, Wilhelm Franz (1887–1945). German admiral and spy. After long naval service, he became head of the Abwehr (German military intelligence) 1935–44, became convinced that *Hitler might destroy Germany and was involved in plots to remove him. He was hanged, naked, at Flossenbürg, on the same day as *Bonhoeffer.

Candolle, Augustin Pyrame de (1778–1841). French botanist, born at Geneva. After working in Paris, he was professor at Montpellier from 1807–16, when he returned to Geneva. He is best known for his system for classifying plants in natural categories rather than in what he held to be the artificial ones in the system of *Linnaeus.

Canetti, Elias (1905–1994). German-Jewish writer, born in Bulgaria. From a Sephardic family, he was educated in Manchester, Vienna, Zürich and Frankfurt, and became a British subject in 1935. He was awarded the 1981 Nobel Prize for Literature for a lifetime's work, including the novel *Auto da Fé* (1935, originally *Die Blendung*), *Crowds and Power* (1960) and two volumes of autobiography.

Cannadine, Sir David (1950–). English historian, born in Birmingham. He studied at Cambridge, Oxford and Princeton, held chairs at Columbia, London and Princeton, and became editor of the *Oxford Dictionary of National Biography* 2014– . His works include *Decline and Fall of the British Aristocracy* (1990), *G. M. Trevelyan* (1992), *Orientalism* (2001), *In Churchill's Shadow* (2002), *Mellon* (2006) and *George V* (2014).

Canning, Charles John Canning, 1st Earl (1812–1862). English politician and administrator, born in London. Son of George *Canning, he was educated at Eton and Oxford, became a protégé of Robert *Peel and served as Undersecretary for Foreign Affairs 1841–46 and Postmaster General 1853–55. *Palmerston appointed him as Governor-General of India 1856–62, and his early attempts at reform coincided with the outbreak of the Indian Mutiny (1857). Exhausted by overwork, his attempts to restrain mass executions of mutineers were largely ignored; the soubriquet 'Clemency Canning' was coined by his enemies. When rule in India was taken from the East India Company and vested in the Crown, Canning became the first to use the title Viceroy of India 1858–62. His wife died of malaria in 1861 and Canning soon followed.

Canning, George (1770–1827). English Tory politician, born in London. His father, a failed businessman, died in 1771 and his mother became an

actor. Relatives saved him from destitution and paid for his education at Winchester, Eton and Oxford, where his brilliance soon attracted attention. *Pitt found him a seat in Parliament, and he was MP 1793–1827. In 1797 he founded the satirical *Anti-Jacobin*, in which Tories less extreme than himself, especially Pitt's successor, *Addington, were violently attacked. The other side of his political nature was shown when, after holding minor office, he first became foreign secretary, in the Portland administration of 1807. Expert and liberal statesmanship abroad and reactionary politics at home were characteristics of his policies. In his first term as foreign secretary his promptness in obtaining control of the Danish and Portuguese fleets after *Napoléon's reconciliation with Tsar *Aleksandr at Tilsit and his support for the Spanish insurgents against Joseph *Bonaparte's rule had decisive effects in the struggle against Napoléon. A duel with his rival *Castlereagh in 1809, in which he was shot and wounded, caused a long interruption in his political career, during which he occupied important posts (Ambassador to Portugal, 1814–16, President of the Indian Board of Control 1816–21). Appointed to be Governor-General of Bengal, he was recalled to the government after Castlereagh's suicide (1822), and became Foreign Secretary once more. It was during this second term that his recognition and support of the South American colonists in revolt against Spanish rule evoked the phrase 'I called the New World into existence, to redress the balance of the Old'. His support for the Greek independence movement also proved decisive. He succeeded *Liverpool as Prime Minister in April 1827 but died of emphysema in August, after 119 days in office, the shortest tenure of any British Prime Minister, until Liz *Truss.

Petrie, C., *George Canning*. 2nd ed. 1946; Hinde, W., *George Canning*. 1973.

Cannizzaro, Stanislao (1826–1910). Italian chemist. He was appointed to academic posts at Genoa (1855), Palermo (1861), and Rome (1870). He was the first to appreciate the importance of the hypothesis of *Avogadro as a means of introducing order into chemical classification, and brought it to general attention in his *Sketch of a Course of Chemical Philosophy* (1858). Cannizzaro also did important work in organic chemistry. The reaction of benzaldehyde with potassium hydroxide to form benzylalcohol was discovered by him and is often referred to as 'Cannizzaro's reaction'.

Canning, Stratford, 1st Viscount Stratford de Redcliffe (1786–1880). English diplomat. First cousin of George *Canning, most of his career was spent in Constantinople. He was First Secretary in the Embassy to the Ottoman Empire 1808–10 and Minister Plenipotentiary 1810–58. During his last period (from 1841), he exercised a very powerful influence over the Sultan's foreign policy. He aimed to secure Türkiye's independence of Russia without war, and though he failed to avert the Crimean War he obtained enough external support for Türkiye to ensure Russia's defeat. He was also largely responsible for many internal reforms. Throughout his career he acted as a proconsul almost entirely independently of the British Government.

Cannon, Walter Bradford (1871–1945). American physiologist, born in Wisconsin. Son of a poor railroad worker, he gained admission to Harvard, and graduated in 1896. He had already developed interests in neurology and psychology, and proceeded to study at Harvard Medical School. From 1902–42 he was in the Harvard Physiology Department. Cannon's early research was on digestion. He made pioneer use of X-rays to examine gastrointestinal action and the mechanisms of swallowing. He then directed his research to a study of the sympathetic nervous system, and developed the notion that the autonomic nervous system aims to keep the internal environment of the body in a state of constant equilibrium (homeostasis). These views he expounded in his *Wisdom of the Body* (1932). His later work on digestion shared many similarities with the researches of *Pavlov in Russia. During World War I he had made deep studies of the new phenomenon of shell shock. All the ways in which the nervous system operated to some degree autonomously from mental consciousness were of deep interest to him. Cannon had strong civic and political convictions, sympathised with the Russian Revolution and campaigned for the Republican cause in the Spanish Civil War. He was nominated 27 times for the Nobel Prize for Physiology or Medicine.

Cano, Juan Sebastian del (d.1526). Spanish navigator. He commanded one of the five ships in *Magellan's great expedition of 1519, and when Magellan was killed in the Philippines (1521) Cano took command. On returning to Spain (1522) he was acclaimed as the first man to circumnavigate the world.

Canova, Antonio (1757–1822). Italian sculptor, born near Venice. Trained as a sculptor from the age of 11, he settled in Rome at 24 and Vatican patronage soon made him prominent. He led the Italian neo-classical movement, famous for his idealised and sometimes sentimentalised representations of the human form. His monuments to popes Clement XIII and XIV belong to this period. Later he was patronised by the *Bonaparte family and especially *Napoléon's sister, Pauline, Princess Borghese, presented semi-naked on a couch. In 1815 he was sent to Paris to negotiate for the return of works of art looted by Napoléon. Among his best known classical works are several versions of *Cupid and Psyche* and the *Perseus* in the Vatican.

Munoz, A., *Canova*. 1957.

Canrobert, (François) **Certain** (1809–1895). French marshal. After long and distinguished service in Algeria he succeeded Marshal *St Arnaud as French

Commander-in-Chief in the Crimean War. In 1859 he commanded a division against the Austrians at Magenta and Solferino in the war for Italian independence. In the Franco-Prussian War of 1870 he was taken prisoner with his troops when Metz surrendered.

Cantor, Georg (Ferdinand Ludwig Philipp) (1845–1918). German mathematician, born in St Petersburg. Following studies in Berlin and Göttingen, he became a lecturer at the University of Halle in 1969 and professor in 1879. In 1874 he published a revolutionary paper explaining that there were at least two different kinds of infinities, the *countable infinity*, the common numbers of elements ('cardinal numbers') in the sets *{1, 2, 3, 4, 5 … }* and *{2, 4, 6, 8, 10, … }*, both of which go on *ad infinitum*, but can ultimately be counted to include every element, and the *uncountable infinity* of elements in sets such as all real numbers—the continuum—which cannot be counted. In later work, Cantor called the countable infinity $\aleph_0$, and defined and studied an infinity of distinct infinities $\aleph_0$, $\aleph_1$, etc. He hypothesised, but could not prove, that the cardinality of the continuum was the next largest infinity after $\aleph_0$, indeed that $\aleph_1 = 2^{\aleph_0}$. His transfinite set theory was the first careful and precise mathematical theory of the infinite. He became obsessed with the hypothesis that Francis *Bacon wrote *Shakespeare's plays. From 1884 he experienced periods of extreme depression and was often hospitalised.

Bell, E. T., *Development of Mathematics*. 1945.

Canute *see* **Cnut**

Cáo Xuěqín (originally Cáo Zhān or Mèngruǎn) (c.1715– c.1763). Chinese novelist, poet and painter, born in Nanjing. His family served the *Qing (Manchu) court, then fell from wealth and power. His novel *Dream of the Red Chamber* (or *The Story of the Stone*), circulated in manuscript from the 1760s, and first printed in 1791, is regarded as the greatest novel in the classical Chinese tradition.

Capablanca y Graupera, Jose Raúl (1888–1942). Cuban chess master. A diplomat by profession, he was the world chess champion from 1921, when he defeated Emanuel *Lasker, until he lost the title in 1927 to Aleksandr *Alekhine.

Čapek, Karel (1890–1938). Czech playwright and novelist, born in Malé Svatosnovice. He was best known as the author of the very successful satirical plays *R.U.R.* (*Rossum's Universal Robots*) (1920) which gave the word 'robot' to the languages of the world and (with his brother Joseph) *The Insect Play* (1921), a terrifying satire on a hedonistic, acquisitive and regimented society. His play *The Makropulos Case* (1922) was the basis of *Janáček's opera. His novels include the satires on misused science *Krakatit* (1924) and *War With the Newts* (1938). He also wrote books on travel, on gardening, many essays and a biography of President *Masaryk (1928).

Harkins, W. E., *Karel Čapek*. 1962.

Capet. French dynasty which ruled from 987 to 1328 when *Philippe IV died without male issue. Succeeding dynasties (*Valois, *Bourbon) were remote descendants of *Hugues Capet through the female line. In 1992 *Louis XVI was tried and executed as 'Louis Capet', a derisive name.

Capet, Hugues *see* **Hugues Capet**

Capodistrias, Ioannes, Count (1776–1831). Greek politician, born in Corfu. After service in the administration of the Ionian Islands, he went to Russia, where eventually he became Foreign Minister 1815–18. He returned to Greece in 1822 to devote himself to the national cause, and after independence from Türkiye had been won was elected first president of Greece (1827), but his autocratic measures were unpopular, and he was murdered.

Capone, Al(phonse Gabriel) (1899–1947). American criminal, born in Brooklyn. His parents migrated from Salerno to New York in 1893. He became a New York gangster, and in 1920 went to Chicago, where, during the Prohibition years, he became the head of a gang controlling the gambling, vice and supply of illegal liquor of Cook County. The gang's earnings were estimated to be in the region of $US105 million. He was responsible for numerous brutal murders, but avoided prosecution by bribery and coercion of Chicago law officers. He was eventually prosecuted by Federal authorities, but could be convicted only for tax evasion (1931). He was released in 1939 following mental and physical collapse due to syphilis.

Capote, Truman (né Truman Streckfuss Persons) (1924–1984). American novelist, born in New Orleans. He wrote much about social decay in the southern states of the US and his novels include *Other Voices, Other Rooms* (1948), *The Grass Harp* (1951) and *Breakfast at Tiffany's* (1958). He wrote the dialogue for the film *Beat the Devil* (1953). *In Cold Blood* (1966), a powerful 'non-fiction novel', described the murder of a farming family in Kansas, and the trial and hanging of two young men. It was his last major work but collected essays appeared in *Music for Chameleons* (1980). He conducted bitter and protracted literary feuds with *Mailer and *Vidal.

Clarke, G., *Capote.* 1986.

Capra, Frank (1897–1991). American film producer and director. Of Italian parentage, among his many successes were *It Happened One Night* (1934), *Mr Deeds Goes to Town* (1936) and *Lost Horizon* (1937).

Capra, F., *Frank Capra: The Name Above the Title*. 197l.

Caprivi, Georg Leo, Graf von (1831–1899). German soldier and politician, born in Berlin. A successful chief of staff in the Franco-Prussian War (1870–71), he then directed the administration of the German navy 1883–88 until *William II appointed him Chancellor and Foreign Minister 1890–94, after the dismissal of *Bismarck. He negotiated the treaty with Britain (1890) under which German claims in Zanzibar were abandoned in return for the cession of Heligoland. He was dismissed in 1894 after negotiating a commercial treaty with Russia.

Caracalla (popular name of Marcus Aurelius Severus Antoninus Augustus) (188–217). Roman Emperor 211–17. Born in Lyon, of mixed Punic and Syrian descent, son of the emperor *Septimius Severus, he was given the nickname Caracalla from the long-hooded Gaulish tunic he wore. On his father's death, he and his brother Geta became joint rulers but Caracalla seized power by murdering Geta and his supporters. He secured his popularity with the troops by a 50 per cent increase in pay. His reign was notorious for cruelty, assassination and extravagance. He pacified the German frontiers and was unsuccessfully attempting to emulate the achievements of *Alexander the Great in the East when his assassination in (modern) Türkiye was contrived by the prefect of his praetorian guards. During his reign Roman citizenship was extended to all free men in the empire (probably to increase the number of taxpaying citizens) and the colossal baths of Caracalla were constructed at Rome.

Mackenzie, D. C., *The Reign of Caracalla*. 1949.

Caratacus (known also as Caractacus/Caratācos/Caradog/Karadeg) (d.c.54 CE). British chieftain of the Catuvellauni tribe. Son of *Cunobelinus, after fighting bravely against the Romans, he was defeated and in 51 handed over by Cartismandua, queen of the Brigantes, and taken to Rome, where his bravery before the emperor *Claudius secured him honourable treatment.

Caravaggio, Michelangelo Merisi da (1573–1610). Italian painter, born in Milan. His break with the conventions of the Mannerists created a resurgence of art in the 17th century and exercised enormous influence on e.g., *Rubens, *Velázquez and *Rembrandt. A revolutionary technique was the setting of brightly lit figures against a dark background (e.g. in his St Matthew series in the church of San Luigi dei Francesi, Rome). Moreover he offended against accepted convention in his sacred pictures by depicting ordinary people in everyday surroundings. Another innovation was the introduction of 'still life' as a separate branch of painting. The dramatic nature of his painting may have reflected the violence of his own life. In 1606 he was banished from Rome after killing a man in a fight. From Naples he reached Malta, where he insulted a knight, was imprisoned but escaped to Sicily. When disembarking in Italy on his way to Naples he was arrested in error but on release found that his boat with all his belongings had sailed away. There was an attempt on his life in Naples and his death was prematurely reported three times. On his way to Rome to receive a papal amnesty, he seems to have died in Porto Ercole, Tuscany, and in 2010 remains found there were identified as Caravaggio's.

Famous in his lifetime, he was forgotten soon after and interest was revived only in the 1920s. About 80 works can be safely attributed to him. Some of his greatest masterpieces are in Rome: *Boy with a Bowl of Fruit* (1593), *St Jerome Writing* (1605–06), *David with the Head of Goliath* (1609–10) at the Borghese, *Rest on the Flight into Egypt* (1597) at the Doria Pamphilj, *Judith Beheading Holofernes* (c.1598) and *Narcissus* (c.1599) at the Barberini. Three *Martyrdoms of John the Baptist* at the Pro-Cathedral of St John, Valletta, Malta, are also outstanding. Caravaggio is now in the highest rank of Renaissance painters.

Berenson, B., *Caravaggio: His Incongruity and his Fame*. 1953; Jullian, R., *Caravage*. 1961; Robb, P., *M*. 1999; Langdon, D., *Caravaggio: A Life*. 1999.

Cardano, Geronimo (also known as Jerome Cardan or Hieronymus Cardanus) (1501–1576). Italian mathematician and physician. Although professor of medicine at Pavia 1543–59 and Bologna 1562–70, he is best known for his work in mathematics, particularly algebra. His *Ars Magna* (1545) was the first algebraic text to be printed. His academic career at Bologna ended with imprisonment for heresy (astrology was one of his interests). He spent his last years in Rome and is said to have starved himself to death to prove the accuracy of a prediction. He was a polymath who wrote prolifically in science, history and music.

Cárdenas, Lazaro (1895–1970). Mexican general and politician. Of mixed Tarascan and Spanish descent, he was a follower of *Carranza and *Calles and became Minister of War 1933–34. President of Mexico 1934–40, he expanded Calles' revolutionary policy of breaking up large estates and redistributing the land among the peasants. He was strongly anti-clerical. A temporary breach with the US and Great Britain was caused by his nationalisation of the oil fields in 1938. He served as Secretary for Defence 1943–45 and later supported *Castro's rule in Cuba.

Scott, R. E., *Mexican Government in Transition*. Rev. ed. 1964.

Cardigan, James Thomas Brudenell, 7th Earl of (1797–1868). English soldier, born in Buckinghamshire. He sat in the House of Commons 1818–29, first representing a rotten borough, and then 1832–37, after the Reform Bill, when he spent a fortune to win the seat. He was leader and survivor of the famous charge of the Light Brigade at the Battle of Balaclava (October 1854) during the Crimean War.

Woodham-Smith, C., *The Reason Why*. 1953.

Cardin, Pierre (1922–2020). French couturier, born in Italy. He worked with Christian *Dior, established his own fashion house in 1949, extending his brand name to men's and women's clothing and accessories. He bought Maxim's and established it as a worldwide restaurant chain.

Cardoso, Fernando Henrique (1931–). Brazilian sociologist and politician. He taught in France, became Minister for Foreign Affairs 1992–93, Minister for Finance 1993–94 and President of Brazil 1995–2003.

Cardozo, Benjamin Nathan (1870–1938). American judge, born in New York. From a Sephardic Jewish family, he was a judge from 1913 and Chief Justice of the New York Court of Appeals 1927–32. President *Hoover appointed him to succeed Mr Justice *Holmes on the US Supreme Court 1932–38. A liberal, he supported *Roosevelt's New Deal legislation and his views on law as a force in effecting social changes were highly influential. As well as several authoritative legal works Cardozo wrote *Law and Literature and Other Essays* (1931).

Carducci, Giosuè (1835–1907). Italian poet. Son of a physician, educated at Pisa University, he became a school teacher until appointment as professor of Italian literature at Bologna (1860). Elected to the Italian parliament as a Republican in 1876, in 1890 he became a senator. His poems, representing a reaction from Romanticism, were written in strict classical form in a style and language of great distinction. His main works include *Rime* (1857), *Nuove poesie* (1873) and *Rime e ritmi* (1898). He won the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1906.

Cardus, Sir (John Frederick) **Neville** (1888–1975). English cricket and music critic. Brought up in poverty and essentially self-educated, he wrote on music and cricket for the *Manchester Guardian*, then lived, wrote and broadcast in Australia 1940–47. He wrote many books on cricket and music and an *Autobiography* (1947).

Cardwell, Edward Cardwell, 1st Viscount (1813–1886). British politician. A Liberal MP 1842–74, he carried out important army reforms as Secretary of State for War 1869–74 under *Gladstone. These included the abolition of the purchase of commissions (1870), the reorganisation of the regiments of the line on a county basis, and the system by which one battalion of a regiment served abroad while the other remained in support and reserve at home. He also established the supremacy of the minister over the Commander-in-Chief.

Carew, Thomas (c.1594–1639). English poet. Having left Oxford without a degree, he accompanied diplomatic missions abroad. On his return his wit and pleasant manner made him a favourite of *Charles I, before whom his masque *Coelum ritannicum* was produced in 1633. A friend and admirer of *Donne and *Jonson, he also wrote short, polished lyrics in the Cavalier tradition, the well known *Elegy on the Death of Dr Donne*, and *The Rapture*.

Carey, George Leonard, Baron Carey of Clifton (1935–). English cleric. Educated at a secondary modern school, and at King's College, London University, he served in the RAF, then lectured in theology in London, Nottingham and Bristol. He was Bishop of Bath and Wells 1987–91 and Archbishop of Canterbury 1991–2002.

Carey, Peter (1943–). Australian novelist, born in Bacchus Marsh. He dropped out of Monash University and worked in advertising. His novels included *Bliss* (1981), *Illywhacker* (1985), *Oscar and Lucinda* (1988, which won the Booker Prize over Salman *Rushdie's *Satanic Verses*), *The Tax Inspector* (1991), *Jack Maggs* (1997), *True History of the Kelly Gang* (2000, which won him a second Booker Prize in 2001), *My Life as a Fake* (2003), *Theft: A Love Story* (2006) and *Parrot and Olivier in America* (2010).

Carey, William (1761–1834). English Baptist missionary and scholar. One of the first Baptist missionaries to go to India (1793), he began, almost at once, the translation of the Bible into Bengali. In 1799 he set up at Serampore not only a church and school but also an establishment for printing and publishing the Bible and other educational books in many Indian languages. In 1801 he became professor of Indian languages at Fort William College, and produced dictionaries of Sanskrit, Bengali, Marathi etc.

Carl XVI Gustaf (Carl Gustaf Folke Hubertus Bernadotte) (1946–). King of Sweden 1973– . He succeeded his grandfather *Gustaf VI Adolf, becoming the first Swedish monarch with purely symbolic duties, without Constitutional responsibilities, and the longest reigning. Deeply interested in science and the environment, he received more foreign honours than any person living or dead.

Carleton, Guy, 1st Baron Dorchester (1724–1808). Anglo-Irish soldier and administrator. He was first appointed to a command in America in 1758 where he served in the French and Indian Wars. As Governor of Québec 1766–77 he worked for the Quebec Act (1774) to better relations between English and French Canadians. He successfully defended Canada against American attacks during the American Revolution, he was briefly in command (1782) of the British forces towards the end of the fighting and was skilful in helping Loyalists to withdraw safely to Canada. He had a second term as Governor of Québec 1786–96. Many places in Canada and Britain are named 'Carleton' or 'Dorchester' after him.

Carlo Alberto (Charles Albert: Carlo Alberto Emanuele Vittorio Maria Clemente Saverio di Savoia) (1798–1849). King of Sardinia and Piedmont 1831–49. Born in Turin, son of the Prince of

Carignano, who was sympathetic to *Napoléon, and brought up in France, as a young man he supported Italian unification but was no crusader. He inherited the throne from a distant cousin. He shrank from *Mazzini's extremism and harshly punished those of his followers who had taken part in a revolt. In 1848, 'the year of revolutions', however, having given the country a liberal constitution, he marched against the Austrians then ruling much of northern Italy. Defeated at Custozza and Novara he abdicated in favour of his son, *Vittorio Emanuele II, he died in Portugal.

Carlos I (Carlos Fernando Luís Maria Victor Miguel Rafael Gabriel Gonzaga Xavier Francisco de Assis José Simão de Savoia e Bragança) (1863–1908) King of Portugal and the Argives 1889–1908. Son of **Luís I**, he travelled extensively, was deeply interested in science and exploration, an able painter and accepted constitutional restraints on his powers. After a series of economic crises, Carlos was blamed for the actions of his government, and reluctantly signed a proclamation of martial law. He was assassinated, with his eldest son, by two conspirators who were then shot dead by police. Succeeded by his younger son *Manoel II, he was known as 'the Diplomat', 'the Martyr' and 'the Obese'.

Carlos (Charles) **I.** King of Spain *see* **Charles** (Karl) **V,** Holy Roman Emperor and King of Spain.

Carlos (Carlos de Habsburgo y Austria: known as El Hechizado, 'the Bewitched') **II** (1661–1700). King of Spain 1665–1700. Son of *Felipe IV and **Maria Anna of Austria** (1634–1696), uncle and niece, and severely inbred, he was hydrocephalic and possibly a hermaphrodite, suffered from rickets and an extreme Habsburg jaw which made speaking and eating difficult. He succeeded his father at the age of four and spent years of his reign under his mother's regency. But he did not lack intelligence. Married twice, and childless, he was induced to name in his will Philippe, grandson of *Louis XIV of France, as his successor (as *Felipe). This provoked the War of the Spanish Succession (1700–13).

Carlos (Charles) **III** (Carlos Sebastián de Borbón y Farnesio) (1716–1788). King of Spain 1759–88 and of Naples and Sicily 1735–59. Son of *Felipe V by his second wife Elizabeth (Isabella) Farnese, by her intrigues he secured the throne (as Carlo IV) of Naples and Sicily (1734). When he succeeded to the Spanish throne on the death of his half-brother **Fernando** (Ferdinand) **VI**, since his eldest son (Felipe) was incompetent to rule, he proclaimed his second son (*Carlos IV) his Spanish heir, and the third (**Ferdinando**) king of Naples. Carlos III was an able administrator and is considered the most successful Bourbon ruler of Spain, and showed some interest in education and science.

Herr, R., *The Eighteenth Century Revolution in Spain*. 1958.

Carlos (Charles) **IV** (Carlos Antonio Pascual Francisco Javier Juan Nepomuceno José Januario Serafín Diego de Borbón y Sajonia) (1748–1819). King of Spain 1788–1808. Son of *Carlos III, during most of his disastrous reign he was dominated by Manuel *Godoy, lover and favourite of his queen, Maria Luisa. *Goya made unforgettable portraits of his family. Induced to abdicate (and suitably pensioned) by *Napoléon in 1808 he was replaced as king of Spain by the Emperor's brother Joseph *Bonaparte. After four years in France, Carlos spent his last years in Rome.

Carlos, Don (Carlos de Habsburgo y Aviz) (1545–1568). Spanish Prince of the Asturias. Eldest son of *Felipe II and Maria Manuela of Portugal, who died four days after his birth. He was a victim of inbreeding, with only four great grandparents and six great great grandparents, and showed early evidence of sadism and insanity. Two princesses he was betrothed to later married his father. In 1567 he planned to escape from Spain and flee to the Netherlands and establish himself as king, but, increasingly manic and violent, he was imprisoned by his father in 1568 and soon died. His death was almost certainly not murder, but it contributed to the anti-Spanish Black Legend in the Netherlands and the rising by *William the Silent. *Foxe's Book of Martyrs* treats him generously and he was the subject of a tragedy by *Schiller and an opera by *Verdi.

Carlos, Don, Count of Molina (Carlos María Isidro Benito de Borbón y Borbón-Parma) (1788–1855). Spanish prince. Son of *Carlos IV of Spain, he was deprived of the right of succession to the throne when the Salic Law was revoked in 1833 and *Isabella, the daughter of his brother *Ferdinand (Fernando) VII, became queen. The first Carlist War then broke out and lasted until 1840. A second Carlist revolt (1873–76) was equally unsuccessful and the last pretender in the direct line died in 1936.

Carlos 'the Jackal' (Ilich Ramírez Sánchez) (1949–). Venezuelan mercenary and terrorist. Believed to have executed many assassinations in the Middle East and Europe, he was arrested in 1994 and taken to France for trial. In December 1997 he was convicted of murder and sentenced to life imprisonment. In 2011 and 2017, he received two more life sentences for assassinations. He wrote *Revolutionary Islam* (2003).

Carlota (née Marie Charlotte Amélie Augustine Victoire Clémentine Léopoldine von Wettin, later Habsburg-Lothringen) (1840–1927). Empress of Mexico 1864–67. Daughter of *Leopold I of Belgium, she married the Austrian Archduke *Maximilian in 1857. When he became Mexican emperor in 1864, she accompanied him, but suffered a breakdown, and returned to Europe in 1866 seeking help from *Napoleon III and Pope *Pius IX for his doomed empire. She became paranoid (possibly compounded by psychotropic drugs) and was confined for the remainder of her life.

Carlson, Chester Floyd (1906–1968). American inventor. A patent attorney, he invented the process of dry photocopying known as xerography (1938). The first copier was not marketed until 1959.

Carlsson, Ingvar Gösta (1934–). Swedish Social Democratic politician. Educated at Lund University and in the US, he worked in the party machine and entered the Riksdag in 1964. He was a minister 1969–76, Deputy Prime Minister and Minister for Research 1982–86. On Olof *Palme's murder he succeeded as Prime Minister 1986–91 and served again 1994–96.

Carlstadt (or Karlstadt) (Andreas Rudolf Bodenstein) (c.1480–1541). German religious reformer. A professor at Wittenberg University, he became an adherent of *Luther (1517), until Luther repudiated his extreme iconoclasm. Accused of being involved in the Peasants' War, he fled to Switzerland and from 1534 preached and taught in Basle.

Carlyle, Thomas (1795–1881). Scottish essayist and historian, born in Ecclefechan, Dumfriesshire. Son of a stonemason, at the age of 15 he went to Edinburgh University, intending to be a clergyman. Religious doubts ended this ambition, and after some years as a schoolmaster and private tutor (during which time he formed a close friendship with and was much influenced by Edward Irving, later the founder of the Irvingite sect) his true vocation had become manifest. His earliest works stemmed from his interest in German literature—a *Life of Schiller* (1825), and a translation of *Goethe's *Wilhelm Meister* (1824), which won the author's praise. In 1826 he married Jane Welsh, whose wit could wound as well as delight, and whose letters still sparkle as brightly as when they were written. Her strong personality and her husband's produced one of the strangest love stories, a blend of irritation and mutual dependence, in literary history.

In 1828 the Carlyles withdrew to Craigenputtock where he set to work on *Sartor Resartus* (*The tailor retailored*), which appeared in *Fraser's Magazine* in 1833–34. It purports to reveal the philosophical speculations of a Professor Teufelsdrockh, and concludes that all institutions, political, religious etc., are in fact clothes constantly in need of repair and renewal. The life of the professor, which forms the second part, is based on that of Carlyle himself. He had already begun his most famous work, *The History of the French Revolution*, when he and his wife moved in 1834 to Cheyne Row, Chelsea, their permanent home. Disaster came when the manuscript was accidentally burnt in the flat of his friend J. S. *Mill—'we must try and hide from him how very serious this business is' was Carlyle's generous comment. He rewrote the book and it was published in 1837. It is not strictly factual history but an inspired interpretation: its rhetorical style is highly eccentric but the sheer dynamism of the work is inescapable and the character descriptions (e.g. the 'seagreen Incorruptible' *Robespierre) memorable. From the point of view of Carlyle's development it is interesting that he, who believed himself a radical and welcomed revolutionaries such as *Mazzini to his home, was beginning to feel and see history in terms of the hero or superman. In *The French Revolution* (3 vols, 1837), the chief characters, *Danton especially, are already larger than life, and in *On Heroes, Hero Worship and the Heroic in History* (1841) he expands the theme, which is implicit also in *Oliver Cromwell's Letters and Speeches* (1845) and his great biography *Frederick the Great* (1858–65). He appears to disregard the corruption of character by power. *Past and Present* (1843) contrasts the ordered society of feudalism with the unordered confusion of modern times. The death of his wife in 1865 virtually ended his creative period. His influence on contemporary thought in many fields—religious and political especially—was immense. Carlyle should be seen as more of a prophet than a historian or commentator.

Kaplan, F., *Thomas Carlyle*. 1983; Heffer, S., *Moral Desperado*. 1995.

Carmichael, Hoagy (né Hoagland Howard Carmichael) (1899–1981). American songwriter, singer and actor, born in Indiana. Originally a lawyer, his many songs include *Stardust* (1931) and he appeared in 14 films, sometimes playing himself.

Carmona, (António) **Óscar de Fragoso** (1869–1951). Portuguese soldier and politician. A general with distinguished military service, he had almost no political experience when called upon in 1926 to join the ruling triumvirate. He was Premier 1926–28 and President 1928–51, with all effective power held by Antonio *Salazar.

Carnap, Rudolf (1891–1970). German-American philosopher. A pupil of *Frege at Jena, he was an original member of the 'Vienna circle' which expounded and developed logical positivism, and he concerned himself with such problems as the structure and meaning of utterances and the nature of statements of probability. He was professor of philosophy at Chicago University 1936–52 and UCLA 1954–62.

Schilpp, P. A. (ed.), *The Philosophy of Rudolf Carnap*. 1963.

Carnarvon, George Edward Stanhope Molyneux Herbert, 5th Earl of (1866–1923). English aristocrat. An enthusiastic amateur Egyptologist, from 1906 he financed Howard *Carter's excavations in the Valley of Kings near Thebes, culminating in Carter's discovery of the tomb of *Tutankhamun (1922). He died in Cairo from the effects of a mosquito bite.

Carné, Marcel Albert (1906–1996). French film director. Trained as a technician, his 19 films include *Quai des Brumes* (*Port of Shadows*, 1938) and *Le Jour se leve* (*Daybreak*, 1939) both typical of romantic

pessimism in French cinema in the late 1930s. The latter had a strong influence on Hollywood direction in the 1940s. His masterpiece was *Les Enfants du Paradis* (*Children of the Gods*, 1943–44) starring Jean-Louis *Barrault and Arletty, shot during the German occupation. He was elected to the Académie française in 1980.

Carnegie, Andrew (1835–1918). American industrialist and philanthropist, born in Dunfermline, Scotland. The family emigrated to Pittsburgh in 1848 and Andrew then began work as a bobbin-boy in a cotton mill, was a messenger for Ohio Telegraph from 1850 and in 1853 a secretary/telegrapher for the Pennsylvania Railway. He started to invest in oil in 1864 and a year later entered the iron and steel industry. By the judicious merging of companies, he gradually built up a chain of interests not as a financier but as an industrialist mainly concerned with steel (but also with coal and iron fields, rail and steamship lines). Carnegie Hall in New York (1891) remains an outstanding monument to his philanthropy and music. In 1901 he sold his vast interests to the US Steel Corporation for $250 million. He asserted, 'To die rich is to die disgraced.' His remaining years, most of which were spent in Scotland in retirement, he devoted to philanthropic ends to which he gave more than $300 million, e.g. the Carnegie Endowment for International Peace, the endowment of libraries in Britain and the US, and gifts to Scottish and American universities. His *Autobiography* appeared in 1920.

Wall, J. F., *Andrew Carnegie*. 1971; Nasov, D., *Andrew Carnegie*. 2007.

Carnot, Lazare Nicolas Marguerite (1753–1823). French military engineer and politician, born in Burgundy. An army captain in 1789, he was elected to the Legislative Assembly 1791–92 and the National Convention 1792–95, becoming one of the 12 members of the Committee of Public Safety 1793–95. As de facto minister of war 1793–95 he received the title 'Organiser of Victories' for his achievement in raising, clothing, feeding, and training 14 armies—more than 1,100,000 men—to defend revolutionary France against intervention by foreign troops, also proving a resourceful and original strategist. (Claude Antoine *Prieur de la Cote d'Or shares credit for producing the armaments.) He served on the Directory 1795–97 after *Robespierre's overthrow, fleeing to Nuremberg in 1797 under an accusation of royalist sympathies. He returned after *Bonaparte's seizure of power and as Minister of War 1799–1800 provided the organisational skill necessary for the success of the Italian and Rhineland campaigns. He remained, however, a sincere republican, and retired when he understood *Napoléon's aims. The disasters that followed the retreat from Moscow induced him to offer his services once more. Napoléon made him Governor of Antwerp in 1814 and he defended it bravely against Allied attack. He was Minister of the Interior during the Hundred Days. He ended his days in exile and died at Magdeburg. He wrote mathematical treatises as well as *The Defence of Fortified Places* (1810).

His son (Nicolas Leonard) **Sadi Carnot** (1796–1832), named in honour of the Persian poet, was born and educated in Paris, became an army officer and after 1819 devoted himself to the study of the steam engine. Regarded as the founder of thermodynamics, his book *Reflections on the Motive Power of Fire* (1824) first stated the principle that the efficiency of a heat-engine in operating a thermal cycle depended on the relative temperature of its hottest and coldest parts. This led to the formulation of the Second Law of Thermodynamics by *Clausius and *Kelvin nearly 20 years after he died of cholera. **Lazare Hippolyte Carnot** (1801–1888), his brother, was a journalist and radical politician, a consistent opponent of *Napoléon III, his son (grandson of the Revolutionary leader), (Marie François) **Sadi Carnot** (1837–1894), was an engineer and local administrator before being elected deputy in 1871. Minister of Public Works 1880 and Finance 1880–81, 1885–86, regarded as notably free from corruption, he was elected as President of the Republic 1887–94. An Italian anarchist, Sante Caserio, stabbed him to death in Lyon.

Caro, Sir Anthony (1924–2013). English sculptor, born in London. Educated at Charterhouse, Cambridge, the Regent St Polytechnic and the Royal Academy School, he worked with Henry *Moore 1951–53 but was heavily influenced by the American David *Smith. He lectured at St Martin's College 1953–79 and in Vermont 1963–65. His large, ground-based metal sculptures, often using prefabricated materials, then painted, were intended to create a new aesthetic and he was recognised as the most important sculptor of his generation. He won prizes at the Biennales in Paris 1959, Venice 1967 and São Paulo 1969. He received the OM in 2000.

Carol I (Karl Eitel Friedrich von Hohenzollern-Sigmaringen) (1839–1914). First king of Romania 1866–1914. A minor German prince, he was invited by the major European powers in 1866 to become ruler of the United Principalities of Moldavia and Wallachia, still under the nominal suzerainty of Türkiye. The Congress of Berlin (1878) made these territories independent (1881) under the name of Romania. In 1869 he married Princess Elizabeth of Wied (1843–1916), a well-known novelist and poet under the pen name Carmen Sylva. He was succeeded by his nephew *Ferdinand II.

Carol II (Karl von Hohenzollern-Sigmaringen) (1893–1953). King of Romania 1930–40. Son of *Ferdinand I, after divorcing Zizi Lambrino, he married (1921) Princess Helen of Greece, mother of his son *Michael. His association with Magda *Lupescu created a scandal which forced his renunciation of the throne and when Ferdinand

died in 1927, Michael succeeded. In 1930 Carol supplanted his son and became king. In 1938, he was torn between Romania's long-standing alliance with France and the prospect of economic support from Germany, and he faced the rising power of the authoritarian, xenophobic and populist 'Iron Guard' led by Ion *Antonescu. Carol proclaimed Romania's neutrality in World War II, then signed a treaty with *Hitler, after the USSR occupied Bessarabia. Antonescu forced his abdication in September 1940. He went into exile in Mexico, then Brazil, where he married Lupescu in 1947, and, finally, to Estoril, Portugal, where he died.

Caroline of Anspach (1683–1737). British queen consort 1727–37. Daughter of the Margrave of Brandenburg-Anspach, she married the future *George II of Britain in 1705. Her skill in managing an often obstinate king was a factor in maintaining Sir Robert *Walpole in power. She befriended *Pope, *Gay, and *Chesterfield, was a patron of *Händel, took a keen interest in ecclesiastical patronage and was an amateur botanist and gardener.

Caroline of Brunswick (1768–1821). British queen consort 1820–21. Daughter of the Duke of Brunswick, she married the future *George IV of Britain in 1795. After the birth of Princess Charlotte (1796) he deserted her and went to live with Mrs Maria *Fitzherbert. Caroline's indiscretions and eccentricities in Italy provided George with an excuse to seek divorce as soon as he became king, but when, in 1820, a bill was introduced into the House of Lords, a brilliant defence by the queen's counsel Henry (later Lord) *Brougham caused the bill to be dropped. Her forcible exclusion from Westminster Abbey at the coronation (1821) caused much resentment among the populace of London, and when she died a month later her funeral procession was accompanied by rioting in the London streets.

Carothers, Wallace Hume (1896–1937). American polymer chemist. Educated at the University of Illinois, he worked for Du Pont, and in 1930 developed a synthetic rubber, patented as Neoprene. In 1935 he found that adipic acid and hexamethylene diamine would condense together to form a tough polymer that could be drawn into a fibre. This plastic, which was called nylon, could be made into tough fabrics, cords and mouldings. There is now a family of nylons derived from slightly different starting materials. A depressive (and heavy drinker), he committed suicide.

Carpaccio, Vittore (c.1460–1526). Italian painter, born in Venice. A follower of Gentile *Bellini, his subtle treatment of light and the warm humanity of his interpretations anticipate the work of the major painters of the Venetian High Renaissance. He is a painter of pageantry, of architectural vistas and of details of contemporary life. His major achievement is the illustration of the story of St Ursula in a series of large, teeming and charmingly decorative compositions. Another cycle illustrates the lives of St George and St Jerome. *The Presentation in the Temple* is his outstanding altar-piece. All the above are in Venice. He was much admired by *Proust.

Carpenter, Edward (1844–1929). English writer. He gave up Anglican orders in 1874 to become a socialist follower of William *Morris and a literary disciple of Walt *Whitman. He rejected all existing norms of Victorian, Edwardian and Georgian society, lived by writing and craft work and deeply influenced E. M. *Forster.

Carpentier y Valmont, Alejo (1904–1980). Cuban novelist. Of French descent, he was an architect, journalist, professor of literature and composer, whose passionate novels include *The Lost Steps* (1953), *Explosion in a Cathedral* (1962) and *Reasons of State* (1974).

Carpentier, Georges (1894–1975). French boxer. He was light heavyweight champion of the world (1919–22), and in 1921 an unsuccessful contender with Jack *Dempsey for the world heavyweight title.

Carpini, Giovanni de Piano (c.1182?–1252). Italian friar, born in Perugia. He entered the Franciscan order, taught in Germany for many years and was sent by Pope Innocent IV as missionary and explorer to the Mongols. He set out from Lyon in April 1245, reaching Karakoram in July 1246. On his return, he wrote an account of the journey, *Liber Tartarorum*.

Carr, Bob (Robert John) (1947–). Australian Labor politician, born in Sydney. After graduating in history, he became a journalist, with a passionate interest in political science, foreign affairs and the environment, reluctantly entering the New South Wales Parliament in 1983, serving as Premier 1985–95. A Senator 2012–13, he was Minister for Foreign Affairs. He wrote several books, including *Thoughtlines* (2002), *My Reading Life* (2008) and *Diary of a Foreign Minister* (2014).

West, A., and R. Morris. *Bob Carr: A Self-Made Man*. 2003.

Carracci, Annibale (1560–1609). Italian painter, born in Bologna. With his brother **Agostino** (1557–1602) and cousin **Ludovico** (1555–1619), Annibale led a reaction against the prevailing exaggerated Mannerism and worked in the style of the High Renaissance masters *Michelangelo, *Raphael and *Titian. In Bologna they decorated the Palazzo Fava and founded an academy of fine arts: pupils included *Domenichino and Guido *Reni. From 1595 Annibale worked in Rome, painting frescos for the Farnese Palace. The ceiling of the great gallery, with its mythological scenes in settings painted to imitate architectural or sculptured work, became famous throughout Europe and greatly influenced the development of the Baroque decorative style. His most famous paintings include *The Butcher's Shop*

(1583), *Domine, Quo Vadis?* (1601), *Flight into Egypt* (1604) and *Pietà* (1607). Annibale was buried near *Raphael and became a major influence on *Poussin and *Claude.

Agostino was a masterly engraver, famous for his anatomical studies and portraits. Ludovico anticipated the Expressionists. *Ruskin deeply disliked the work of the Carraccis.

Carranza, Venustiano (1859–1920). Mexican politician. As Governor of Coahuila 1910–15, he supported Francisco *Madera's overthrow of Porfirio *Diaz's long dictatorship (1911), and opposed Victoriano de la *Huerta who murdered Madera and seized power himself. Carranza led the 'Constitutionalists' who favoured political but not economic reform. In 1915 he became provisional president. As President under the Constitution 1917–20, he accepted some measures of land and labour reform, was anti-American and kept Mexico out of World War I. In 1923 Alvaro *Obregón led a revolt and Carranza was murdered while escaping to Vera Cruz.

Carrel, Alexis (1873–1944). French biologist and surgeon, born in Lyon. From 1904 he worked in Montréal, Chicago and New York (at the Rockefeller Institute for Medical Research 1912–14, 1919–39) and was an army surgeon in France during World War I. He won the 1912 Nobel Prize for Medicine for his work on the surgery of blood vessels and his techniques for transplanting arteries and suturing (i.e. joining) veins which during World War I reduced the number of amputations. Carrel devised equipment for keeping animal organs alive outside the body and he was able to keep a chicken heart alive for 32 years. Later he devoted himself to cancer research. He wrote *Man the Unknown* (1935), *The Culture of Organs* (1938) with Charles A. *Lindbergh, a close friend, and *Reflections of Life* (1943). He returned to France in 1939, had links to Jacques *Doriot, and worked for the Vichy regime. He supported eugenics, proposed gassing of the criminally insane, and was successively Catholic > agnostic > Catholic. He won awards from the USSR but not Britain.

Carreño (García de Sena), (Maria) **Teresa** (1853–1917). Venezuelan pianist, singer, composer and conductor, born in Caracas. Her family migrated to New York in 1862. She had a phenomenal technique and declined an offer of tuition from *Liszt. She recorded player piano rolls in 1905 and toured Australia and New Zealand 1907–08. A crater on Venus is named for her.

Carreras, José (1947–). Spanish tenor, born in Barcelona. He made his operatic debut in Spain in 1970 and in the US in 1972. He sang all the great *Verdi and *Puccini tenor roles and appeared in the films *Don Carlos* (1980) and *West Side Story* (1985). He founded a leukaemia research foundation in Melbourne (1992).

Carrier, Willis Haviland (1876–1950). American engineer, born in Angola, New York. He designed the first air-conditioning system in 1902, published an important paper on internal climate control in 1911 and founded the Carrier Corporation (1915).

Carrington, 6th Baron, Peter Alexander Rupert Carington, Baron Carington of Upton (1919–2018). English Conservative politician. Educated at Eton and Sandhurst, he served as High Commissioner to Australia 1956–59, First Lord of the Admiralty 1959–63, Secretary of State for Defence 1970–74 and Foreign Secretary 1979–82, resigning over criticism that the Foreign Office had not anticipated the invasion of the Falkland Islands by Argentina. He was chairman of General Electric 1983–84, Secretary-General of NATO 1984–88 and received a KG and CH. He was created a life peer in 1999.

Carroll, Lewis (pen name of Charles Lutwidge Dodgson) (1832–1898). English author and mathematician, born in Daresbury, Cheshire. The son of a clergyman, he was educated at Rugby and Oxford, and lectured in mathematics at Oxford 1855–81. His life was generally uneventful and he never married. His most famous children's books *Alice's Adventures In Wonderland* (1865) and *Through the Looking Class* (1872) both written for Alice Liddell, the daughter of Carroll's friend, the Dean of Christ Church, are full of subtle and almost surrealist humour, and the many fantastic characters have become familiar to millions of readers. Both books were illustrated by *Tenniel. Other favourites were *The Hunting of the Snark* (1876) and *Sylvie and Bruno* (1889 and 1893). Among his mathematical studies (written under his real name) was *Euclid* and *His Modern Rivals* (1879). He was also a skilful photographer.

Cohen, M. N., *Lewis Carroll.* 1995.

Carson, Ben(jamin Solomon) (1951–). American neurosurgeon and Republican activist, born in Michigan. An African-American, educated at Yale, he became a surgeon at Johns Hopkins Hospital, Baltimore, and in 1987 was the first to successfully separate twins joined at the back of the head. After initial strong support from evangelicals and conservatives in the Republican contest for the 2016 Presidential nomination, his campaign collapsed. He was *Trump's Secretary of Housing and Urban Development 2017–21.

Carson, Edward Henry Carson, 1st Baron (1854–1935). Anglo-Irish lawyer and Conservative politician. Educated in Dublin, he became a barrister and won fame as the defender of the Marquess of *Queensberry in the action for criminal libel brought by Oscar *Wilde. In parliament, where he sat as Unionist MP 1892–1918 he bitterly fought Liberal proposals to grant Irish Home Rule and organised the Ulster Volunteers, a military group which planned to oppose home rule by force and was diverted from this by the outbreak of World War I during which Carson

was Attorney-General in the first coalition and in *Lloyd George's war cabinet was First Lord of the Admiralty 1916–17 and Minister without Portfolio 1917–18. He was a Lord of Appeal in Ordinary 1921–29.

Carson, Kit (Christopher) (1809–1868). American trapper, guide and scout, born in Kentucky. He acted as a guide for J. C. *Fremont 1842–44 and helped to settle and explore California 1845–46. Although almost illiterate, he became a prominent and effective Indian agent 1853–61 and served as a brigadier of volunteers in the American Civil War.

Carson, Rachel Louise (1907–1964). American biologist, writer and environmental activist. Working for the US Fish and Wildlife Service, she wrote *Silent Spring* (1962), an apocalyptic warning about the contamination of the environment by fertiliser, pesticides and insecticides, especially DDT. The book was extremely influential.

Carte, Richard *see* **D'Oyly Carte, Richard**

Carter, Elliott Cook (1908–2012). American composer, born in New York. Educated at Harvard and in Paris with Nadia *Boulanger, he worked with Charles *Ives and taught at Columbia, Yale, the Juilliard School and Cornell. His works include concertos for piano, violin, oboe, cello, horn, clarinet and flute, *Concerto for Orchestra* (1969), *Symphony for Three Orchestras* (1977), quintets for brass and woodwind and five string quartets. He was the longest-lived major composer in musical history.

Schiff, D., *Carter*. 2019.

Carter, Howard (1873–1939). English Egyptologist. A pupil of Sir Flinders *Petrie, he worked in Egypt for many years, and in 1922, when working with Lord *Carnarvon, found the tomb of *Tutankhamen in the Valley of the Kings, near Luxor.

Carter, Jimmy (James Earl Carter, Jr) (1924–). 39th President of the US 1977–81. He was born in Plains, Georgia, and educated at public schools and Georgia Southwestern College. He graduated from the US Naval Academy in Annapolis (1946) and served as an electronics instructor and engineering officer in Hyman *Rickover's atomic submarine project. In 1953 he left the navy and returned home to manage the family peanut business. He became involved in community and church affairs and was elected to the Georgia State Senate 1963–67. In 1970 he won the Democratic primary for Governor as a moderate conservative by defeating the liberal ex-governor Carl Sanders. As Governor of Georgia 1971–75 Carter introduced 'zero base budgeting', urged reforms in environmental controls, schools and prisons and tried to ease racial tensions. In July 1976 he won the Democratic presidential nomination and was elected President in November. During his term of office he failed to work with his Democratic Congress and his only significant success was in negotiating the Egyptian-Israeli accord between *Sadat and *Begin. The continued captivity of 52 hostages in the US Embassy in Teheran (kept for 444 days and not released until he had left office) was politically very damaging, because Carter's extraordinary restraint was attacked as weakness by his opponents and he lost heavily in 1980 to Ronald *Reagan. Out of office, he devoted himself to the problems of urban poverty and housing, world peace and observing elections in the Third World. In 1994 he was a peace negotiator in Korea, Haiti and Bosnia-Herzegovina. He received the Nobel Prize for Peace in 2002 and became the longest-lived US President. His wife (Eleanor) **Rosalynn Carter** (née Smith) (1927–2023) was a powerful advocate for mental health research.

Carteret, John *see* **Granville, John Carteret, 2nd Earl**

Cartier, Jacques (1491–1557). French explorer, born at St Malo, Brittany. He made three voyages to North America in search of a northwest passage linking the Atlantic to the Pacific. On his first voyage (1534) he explored and claimed for France the coasts of Newfoundland and Labrador and the gulf of the St Lawrence, on his second (1535) he ascended that river (hoping it was a passage to China) and reached the site of Montréal. The third voyage (1541), also to the St Lawrence, provided much information but brought no new discoveries.

Cartier-Bresson, Henri (1908–2004). French photographer. He worked as an assistant to the film director Jean *Renoir, was a prisoner of war, escaped to the US and founded Magnum Photos. His evocative compositions, loaded with context and history, were exhibited internationally and he published books of photographs, including *The Decisive Moment* (1952), and studies of China, Russia, France and the US.

Cartland, Dame (Mary) **Barbara Hamilton** (1901–2000). English author. She wrote popular romantic fiction, and according to *The Guinness Book of Records* her 723 books had global sales of 600 million, translated into 25 languages. Her books also include poetry, biography and an autobiography.

Cartwright, Edmund (1743–1823). English inventor. Educated at Wakefield Grammar School and Oxford, he became a clergyman but having married a rich woman was able to give time and money to his inventions. In 1785 he invented a power loom which became the parent of the modern loom. He also invented rope-making and wool-combing machinery. In 1793, having been forced by debt to sell a mill he had set up in Doncaster, he went to London and worked with Robert *Fulton on steam engines. His money troubles were eased when in 1809, in response to a petition to Parliament from 50 firms which had benefited by his inventions, he was awarded £10,000. He was elected FRS in 1821.

Caruso, Enrico (1873–1921). Italian operatic tenor, born in Naples. He came from a poor family, sang in church choirs and had a relatively late debut in Naples in 1894, appearing in Milan (1898), Buenos Aires (1899), Rome (1899), London (1902) and New York (1903). His voice had unusual range, power and flexibility, he became a pioneer recording artist and was acclaimed as the greatest tenor of his time. Leading tenor at the Metropolitan Opera, New York 1903–20, he retired after bursting a blood vessel in a performance of Halévy's *La Juive*.

Carver, George Washington (1864–1943). American agricultural chemist, born in Missouri. Son of slaves, he was kidnapped with his mother by slave raiders and redeemed with the exchange of a racehorse by his owner, Moses Carver, who then adopted him. He became the first black student at Simpson College, Iowa (1889) and from 1896 taught at the Tuskegee Institute, Alabama, where he gained a PhD and directed agricultural research. He promoted the planting of sweet potatoes and peanuts to replenish the soil, denuded of minerals by cotton and tobacco farming, developing 300 new products from peanuts, including fibres, dyes and soap. He declined offers to work for *Edison and *Ford.

Holt, R., *George Washington Carver: An American Biography*. Rev. ed. 1963.

Carver, John (c.1576–1621). English merchant, born in Nottinghamshire. Organiser of the London contingent of the Pilgrim Fathers, he emigrated to Holland in 1609. His preparations for the voyage to America included the hiring of the *Mayflower*, on which he sailed in 1620 with his wife and members of his household. He was chosen as governor of the Plymouth plantation but died the following year.

Carver, (Richard) **Michael Power, Baron Carver** (1915–2001). English field marshal. Educated at Winchester and Sandhurst, he was Chief of the General Staff 1971–73 and Chief of Defence Staff 1973–76 and achieved a new reputation as an incisive writer on military and geopolitical affairs.

Carver, Raymond (1938–1988). American writer, born in Oregon. He fought alcoholism, poverty and cancer, producing magnificent short stories, in the Chekhovian vein, including *Cathedral* (1984) and *Where I'm Calling From* (1988).

Cary, (Arthur) **Joyce** (Lunel) (1888–1957). British novelist, born in Ireland. Educated at Oxford, he fought in the Balkan Wars (1912–13) and World War I and was for a time in the colonial service in Africa, where he found inspiration for *Mr Johnson* (1939). His best-known novel, *The Horse's Mouth* (1944), successfully filmed in 1958, is part of a trilogy with *Herself Surprised* (1941) and *To be a Pilgrim* (1942). Rich characterisation and feeling for the complexities of human emotions distinguish his work.

Wright, A., *Joyce Cary*. 1958.

Casabianca, Louis (1762–1798). Corsican French sailor. As commander of the French ship *Orient*, he was burnt to death when his ship was destroyed at the Battle of the Nile. The heroism of his young son, who perished with him, is the theme of a poem by Mrs Felicia Hemans ('Casabianca').

Casadesus, Robert (Marcel) (1899–1972). French pianist, born in Paris. Of Catalan descent, he was a great *Mozart, *Chopin and *Ravel interpreter, often appearing in concerts with his wife **Gaby** and son **Jean**.

Casals, Pablo (or Pau) (1876–1973). Spanish (Catalan) cellist and conductor, born in Vedrell. Son of an organist, he studied music at Barcelona and Madrid, and made his concert debut as a cellist in Paris in 1899. He revived interest in *Bach's works for unaccompanied cello, and developed improved cello techniques, gaining great popularity for this instrument with concert audiences. Active in his support of the government in the Spanish Civil War, he left Spain after *Franco's victory (1939). From 1950 he organised a series of music festivals at Prades, in the French Pyrenees, and he continued these from 1956 at San Juan in Puerto Rico.

Casanova de Seingalt, Giovanni Giacomo (1725–1798). Italian adventurer, born in Venice. He spent most of his life travelling through Europe in the varying capacities of preacher, gambler, journalist, violinist, lottery director, police spy, alchemist and cabbalist and met most of the famous men and women of his time. He was a man of intelligence and learning, his famous *Memoirs*—12 volumes written in the last years of his life, when (from 1785) he was secretary and librarian to Count Waldstein in Bohemia, though largely concerned with his love affairs, throw much light on the manners and morals of the time.

Casaubon, Isaac (1559–1614). French-Swiss scholar, born in Geneva. He became professor of Greek at Geneva (1581), at Montpellier (1596) and royal librarian in Paris (1604). As a Protestant he felt unsafe after the death of *Henri IV and came to England, where he found himself in sympathy with the middle position of the established Church and able to be of help in matters both of religion and scholarship. His religious writings display his tolerance, and his gifts as a classical commentator are shown by his editions of *Aristotle, *Theophrastus, *Suetonius etc. His son, **Méric Casaubon** (1599–1671), also a classical scholar and controversialist, settled into a living in the Church of England.

Casella, Alfredo (1883–1947). Italian composer, conductor and music critic, born in Turin. A pupil of *Fauré in Paris, he worked there until World War I when he went to Rome. In 1924 he joined *D'Annunzio and others in founding a society to encourage contemporary Italian music, but he was a notable experimenter and retained an international

outlook. His range of composition was wide and included two symphonies, concertos, songs, chamber music and lesser pieces.

Casement, [Sir] **Roger David** (1864–1916). Irish nationalist and diplomat, born in Dublin. He worked for H. M. *Stanley in the Congo, joined the British foreign service in 1901, exposed the exploitation of indigenous people in the Congo and Brazil, and was knighted (1911) for his investigation on slavery in Peru. He retired in 1913 and became active in promoting Irish nationalism and culture. In Germany during World War I he attempted to form an 'Irish Brigade' of Irish prisoners of war which he hoped would invade Ireland and free it from British rule. On his return to Ireland by submarine (1916) he was captured by the British and tried for treason. He was convicted, deprived of his knighthood, and hanged at Pentonville. In 1960 his 'black diaries' revealing homosexual practices were made available for study in the Public Records Office in London. Casement's remains were restored to Ireland in 1965.

MacColl, R., *Roger Casement*. 1956; Lacey, B., *Terrible Queer Creatures*. 2008; Mitchell, A., *Roger Casement*. 2013; Dudgeon, J., *Roger Casement's German Diary*. 2016.

Casey, Richard (Gavin) **Gardiner, Baron Casey of Berwick** (1890–1976). Australian Liberal politician, born in Brisbane. Son of a mining magnate, educated at Melbourne University and Trinity College, Cambridge, he served in World War I, winning a DSO and MC. His wife **Maie Casey** (Ethel Marian Sumner; 1892–1983) was a poet, librettist, aviator and patron of the arts. Casey was a Member of the Australian House of Representatives 1931–40 and 1949–60, was Commonwealth Treasurer 1935–39, a strong supporter of appeasement, and first Australian minister to the US 1940–42. Winston *Churchill appointed him Minister of State in the Middle East 1942–43, with a seat in the War Cabinet, and Governor of Bengal 1944–46, at a time of famine. In Australia after the war, under *Menzies, he was Minister of National Development 1949–51, Minister in charge of CSIRO 1950–60 and Minister for External Affairs 1951–60. Patronised by Menzies (and disparaged by *Hasluck), he became the first Australian life peer (1960), was Governor-General 1965–69 and the first Australian Knight of the Garter (KG) in 1969.

Hudson, W. J., *Casey.* 1986.

Casimir III (Kazimierz) (the Great) (c.1310–1370). King of Poland 1333–70. Knowing that his first task would be to unify Poland he learned western politics and secured help from his brother-in-law, Charles Robert, the Angevin King of Hungary, to whose son, Louis, he promised the Polish throne. He also came to terms with Bohemia and the Teutonic Knights. Later he enlarged his kingdom in the east and, thus secured, could concentrate upon internal reforms. Brigandage was suppressed, the liberty of the peasants protected and the nobles curbed. Jews were tolerated and encouraged to settle. In 1364, he founded the University of Kraków (later renamed Jagiellonian), which made the city not only an administrative and commercial centre but one of the great cultural centres of Europe.

Casimir (Kazimierz) **IV Jagiełłon** (1427–1492). Grand Duke of Lithuania 1440–92, King of Poland 1447–92. Son of *Władysław II, he belonged to the Lithuanian *Jagiellon dynasty which, linked by marriage with the Polish royal family, had brought the two countries under one ruler. He reigned during one of Poland's greatest periods. After failure against Türkiye he turned against the old enemy, the Teutonic Knights in the north. After 13 years of war he destroyed their power and in 1466 by the peace of Thorn (or Torun) he annexed Pomerania with Danzig and much of south and west Prussia. To achieve these successes Casimir conceded representative government to the lesser gentry and so a parliament (Sejm) was created. He encouraged the growth and influence of the Jagellonian University in Kraków and was made a KG in 1450. In 1973, his tomb was opened by 12 researchers, of whom 10 died prematurely due to exposure to fungi, which produced deadly aflatoxins.

Casimir-Périer, Jean-Paul-Pierre (1847–1907). French politician. He served as a deputy 1876–83; 1885–94, was President of the Chamber 1893 and 1894, and, briefly, Premier and Foreign Minister December 1893–May 1894. After the assassination of Sadi *Carnot, he was elected as President of the Third Republic in June 1894 but resigned in January 1895, after a breakdown in relations with the Ministry; his six months as head of state is the shortest in French history. Alfred *Dreyfus was convicted in December 1894 and although Casimir-Périer was sceptical of his guilt, he remained passive. He left politics to become chair of the Anzin Mining Company, Europe's largest mine.

Caslon, William (1692–1766). English type founder. A broadsheet of 1734 gave examples of 12 different sizes of his roman and italic types, which at the time were recognised as the best in Europe. Caslon Old Face (1726), revived in 1840 after a temporary decline in fashion, remained among the most popular types in the first half of the 20th century, being favoured by printers because of its simplicity and legibility.

Cass, Lewis (1782–1866). American Democratic politician, born in New Hampshire. He became a lawyer, served in the 1812 war and as Governor of Michigan Territory 1813–31 opened new territories in the west for settlement. He was US Secretary of War under President *Jackson 1831–36, US Minister to France 1836–42, and a US senator 1845–48, 1849–57. Democratic candidate for the presidency in 1848, he was defeated by Zachary *Taylor when he lost the support of the Free-Soil wing of his party. He

resumed his work in the Senate, but was too old to be effective when Secretary of State under President *Buchanan 1857–60.

Cassatt, Mary (1844–1926). American artist. Whilst young she went to Paris, and under the influence of Camille *Pissarro, her teacher, *Degas and *Manet, joined the Impressionists. Neglected at first in America, her pictures, which show the Impressionist techniques applied to domestic subjects such as mothers with children or ladies at the tea table, have won her posthumous fame. She was an ardent campaigner for women's rights.

Watson, F., *Mary Cassatt*. 1932; Matthews, N. M. *Mary Cassatt*. 1998.

Cassel, Sir Ernest Joseph (1852–1921). Anglo-German financier, born in Cologne. He lived in London from 1870, and raised state loans for China, Egypt and South American governments. From an immense fortune he gave away about £2 million to hospitals, educational institutions etc. He became a friend of *Edward VII, and his granddaughter, Edwina Ashley, married Lord Louis *Mountbatten.

Cassin, René Samuel (1887–1976). French jurist, born in Bayonne. Educated in Aix and Paris, he became a law professor and French delegate to the League of Nations. He escaped to London to work with *de Gaulle and in 1942 was sentenced to death in absentia by the Vichy regime. He drafted the UN Universal Declaration of Human Rights (adopted in 1948), became President of the European Court of Human Rights 1965–68 and received the 1968 Nobel Peace Prize. He was an active Zionist.

Cassiodorus, Flavius Magnus Aurelius (c.477–570). Roman writer and administrator. Only about 20 years old when he joined the secretariat of the emperor *Theodoric, he rose to high office, in which he continued after Theodoric's death. In 540 he retired from the Ravenna court to a monastery he had built on the Calabrian coast, and there set himself the task of creating a compendium of learning, pagan and Christian alike, almost encyclopaedic in its scope. This he achieved by getting his monks to copy and amend ancient manuscripts and by his own voluminous works on history, theology and grammar. His *Variae*, collections of edicts, documents, etc., issued during his period of office, are of great importance for the study of the history of the Ostrogothic empire.

Cassius (Gaius Cassius Longinus) (d.42 BCE). Roman soldier and politician. An adherent of *Pompey, he became reconciled to *Caesar but was a principal in the conspiracy to assassinate him. He left Italy with *Brutus and after their defeat by Mark *Antony at Philippi ordered one of his freedmen to kill him.

Cassivellaunus (fl. 54 BCE). British ruler. As chief of the Catuvellauni he offered strong resistance to *Caesar's advance across the Thames during his second invasion (54). The loss of his capital (now Wheathampstead, Herts.), forced him to make peace. His later history is unknown.

Casson, Sir Hugh Maxwell (1914–1999). English architect. One of the leading exponents in Britain of the contemporary style, he was chief designer (1951) for the Festival of Britain exhibition buildings on the south bank of the Thames in London and knighted in 1952. He wrote *Homes by the Million* (1947). He was President of the Royal Academy 1976–84 and made a CH (1984).

Castiglione, Baldassare, Conte (1478–1529). Italian humanist writer, born near Mantua. The son of a nobleman, he served more than one Italian duke, but it was the court of Urbino that provided the background for his great book, the *Libro del cortegiano* (*The Courtier*, 1518), a prose dialogue defining the attributes of the 'perfect gentleman', and discussing etiquette, hunting, social problems, the significance of the arts and Platonic love. It was translated into English in 1561 and widely read in Europe.

Castle, Barbara Anne (née Betts), **Baroness Castle** (1910–2002). English Labour politician. Married to a journalist, she was MP for Blackburn 1945–79 and a member of the Labour Party's National Executive 1950–79. She was Minister of Overseas Development 1964–65, of Transport 1965–68, Secretary of State for Employment and Productivity 1968–70, and for Social Services 1974–76. She was a member of the European Parliament 1979–89.

Castlemaine, Countess of *see* **Cleveland, Barbara Villiers, 1st Duchess of**

Castlereagh, Robert Stewart, Viscount (afterwards 2nd Marquess of Londonderry) (1769–1822). Anglo-Irish politician, born in Dublin. Son of a landowner, he entered the Irish parliament (then separate) as a Whig (1790), but turned Tory in 1795. As Chief Secretary for Ireland 1799–1801, he was instrumental in securing the passage of the Act of Union of Ireland with England, which, as he realised, was likely to fail unless Catholic emancipation was granted. *George III's veto on such concessions was crippling. He became Secretary of State for War and the Colonies 1805–06, 1807–09, being responsible for choosing Sir Arthur Wellesley, the future Duke of *Wellington, for the peninsular command. But equally he must take some responsibility for the selection of the incompetent Earl of Chatham for the disastrous Walcheren campaign. In 1809 Castlereagh fought a duel with and slightly wounded his political rival George *Canning, who had been intriguing against him. He left office but returned in 1812 to begin his great period as Foreign Secretary 1812–22, when he was responsible for forming and holding together the anti-French alliance in the late stages of the Napoléonic Wars. After the French defeat he represented England at the Congress of Vienna and

the signing of the Treaty of Paris (1815). He opposed vindictive peace terms and was instrumental in keeping Alsace-Lorraine French. Later he was opposed to the Holy Alliance being exploited as a means of suppressing all liberal movements in Europe. Little interested in domestic politics, he had to defend and bear censure for the government's repressive policies. This, combined with strain and overwork, and threats of blackmail about his homosexuality caused him to cut his throat. One of the ablest statesmen of his time and a man of character, he did not deserve the great unpopularity of his last years, expressed in the cheering which broke out at his burial in Westminster Abbey.

Bew, J., *Castlereagh*. 2013.

Castro Ruz, Fidel (1926–2016). Cuban politician. The son of a rich sugar planter, he studied law at Havana University and became a violent opponent of the repressive and dictatorial *Batista regime. Sentenced to five years' imprisonment for an attack on an army barracks in 1953 he was released under an amnesty two years later and went into exile. He returned in 1956, landing secretly in the Oriente province, where he gradually built up a guerrilla force which, by January 1959, proved strong enough to overthrow Batista. He was Prime Minister 1959–76. The US refused to recognise his government and supported the abortive 'Bay of Pigs' invasion by Cuban exiles (April 1961). Construction of a Russian missile base in Cuba led to a confrontation between *Kennedy and *Khrushchev in October 1962 and the base was dismantled. He was First Secretary of the Communist Party (based on his United Revolutionary Socialist Party) 1965–2011 and President of Cuba 1976–2008, President 2008–18 and First Secretary of the Communist Party 2011–21. Cuba became increasingly dependent on Soviet aid which declined under *Gorbachev. Castro's regime actively intervened in Angola and Central America. He maintained his ideology despite the collapse of the USSR without making any concessions to political freedom or democratic practice. Pope *John Paul II visited Castro in January 1998. His brother, **Raúl Modesto Castro Ruz** (1931–) was first vice president of Cuba 1976–2008 and President 2008–18, and First Secretary of the Communist Party 2011–21.

Matthews, H. L., *Castro: A Political Biography*. 1969.

Catalani, Alfredo (1854–1893). Italian operatic composer. Born in Lucca, like *Puccini, he composed five operas, the most performed being *La Wally* (1892).

Catesby, Robert (1573–1605). English conspirator. A Roman Catholic gentleman, embittered by a fine imposed for joining the rebellion by the 2nd Earl of *Essex, he took a leading part in the gun powder plot. After the arrest of Guy *Fawkes he fled to Warwickshire but was pursued and killed.

Cather, Willa Sibert (1876–1947). American novelist, born in Virginia. She grew up in Nebraska, where she was taken at the age of nine, and whose pioneering history is the subject of some of her best books. After graduating at the University of Nebraska, she went to Pittsburgh as a teacher and journalist. In 1904 she moved to New York, where her career as a professional writer began. Her first major success was *O Pioneers* (1913). Other major works include *One of Ours* (Pulitzer Prize, 1922), *Death comes for the Archbishop* (1927) and *Shadows on the Rock* (1933).

Catherine (Yekaterina) **I** (1684–1727). Tsarina (Empress) of Russia 1725–27. Marta Skowronska was born in Poland to a Lithuanian peasant family, became a servant and the mistress first of Prince *Menshikov, then of *Peter the Great. She married Peter in 1712, became Empress Consort in 1724 and succeeded to the throne on his death.

Catherine (Yekaterina) **II** (known as '**the Great**') (née Sophie Friederike Auguste von Anhalt-Zerbst-Dornburg, later Yekaterina Aleksayevna Romanova) (1729–1796). Tsarina of Russia 1762–96. Born in Stettin (now Szczecin, Poland), daughter of Prince Christian of Anhalt-Zerbst, and a cousin of two Swedish kings, *Gustav III and Karl XIII, her family life was relatively frugal but she was lively and curious, encouraged by a French governess. In 1744 she joined the Orthodox Church and in 1745 married a distant cousin, the future Tsar *Peter (Pyotr) III. Their only child, later *Paul (Pavel) I was born in 1754. Catherine hated her degenerate and feeble-minded husband but realised that marriage could be a path to power. Peter became tsar in 1762 but six months later a military coup led by two of Catherine's many lovers, Count Grigori *Orlov and Prince Grigori *Potemkin, deposed him, and he was murdered some days later. In taking the throne Catherine supplanted her own son. Though in her zeal for self-education she read and corresponded with *Voltaire and others and practised and patronised art and literature, she ruled as an autocrat. She appointed *Diderot as her (absentee) librarian in 1766 and he visited her in St Petersburg in 1773–74. She was variolated against smallpox in 1769, together with her family, and encouraged the practice. Catherine bought most of Robert *Walpole's collection of paintings for the Hermitage Museum in 1779. An enlightened despot she may have been, but a despot none the less, and she never forgot her political dependence on the nobility and gentry who had set her on the throne. Although she abolished capital punishment (except for political crimes), and prepared comprehensive schemes of educational, legal and administrative reform, little was actually accomplished. The number of serfs increased and the military and economic burdens on the peasantry grew worse. Following the revolt (1773–75) led by Emelian *Pugachev, a pretender who claimed to be her dead husband, her domestic policy became increasingly repressive. She pursued an imperialist foreign policy and in two wars

with Türkiye (1768–72 and 1787–92) expanded her territories near the Black Sea and annexed the Crimea. The Ukraine was fully absorbed and when Poland was obliterated by the three partitions of 1772, 1793 and 1795 Russia took the largest share.

Grey, I., *Catherine the Great: Autocrat and Empress of all Russia*. 1961; Troyat, H., *Catherine the Great*. 1977; Massie, R.K., *Catherine the Great: Portrait of a Woman*. 2012.

Catherine de'Medici (de Medicis) (1519–1589). French queen consort 1547–59. Born in Florence, daughter of Lorenzo de'*Medici, she married *Henri II of France in 1533 and was the mother of three kings *François II (first husband of *Mary, Queen of Scots), *Charles IX and *Henri III. She became regent in the reign of Charles IX, her aim was to increase the independence and power of the crown by maintaining a balance between the Roman Catholic extremists (under the Guises) and the Huguenots (Protestants). It was because the balance appeared to be endangered by the marriage of her daughter, Marguerite de Valois, to the Protestant leader *Henri of Navarre that she obtained the agreement of Charles IX to the 'massacre of St Bartholomew' of the Huguenot guests gathered in Paris for the wedding. Under Henri III, Catherine's influence waned. She was much hated and traduced, but stood for a policy of moderation in general, in the interests of the survival of the monarchy which she saw as the basis of French stability.

Sutherland, N. M., *Catherine de'Medici and the Ancien Regime*. 1986.

Catherine (Catalina) **of Aragon** *see* **Katherine of Aragon**

Catherine of Braganza (Catarina de Bragança) (1638–1705). Queen consort of England, Scotland and Ireland 1660–85. Daughter of *João IV of Portugal, she married *Charles II in 1662. She brought Bombay and Tangier to England as her dowry. No children survived, but, though he was notoriously unfaithful, Charles treated her with dignity and kindness. She finally returned to Portugal in 1692.

Catherine (or **Katherine)** (Howard) (1521–1542). Queen consort of England and Ireland 1540–42. A granddaughter of the 2nd Duke of Norfolk and related to Anne *Boleyn, she married *Henry VIII as his fifth wife in 1540. Less than two years later she was beheaded for adultery with Thomas Culpeper and a young kinsman, Francis Dereham.

Catherine (or **Katherine)** (Parr) (1512–1548). Queen consort of England and Ireland 1544–47. Sixth and last wife of *Henry VIII, and daughter of a controller of the royal household, she had been widowed twice before marrying the king in 1544. After his death in 1547 she soon married Lord Thomas Seymour, a brother of *Jane Seymour, the mother of *Edward VI. The young Princess *Elizabeth lived briefly with Catherine, but Thomas' attentions were unwelcome. She died in childbirth and her funeral was the first conducted in Protestant forms.

Catherine of Siena, St (Caterina Benincasa) (c.1347–1380). Italian nun and mystic, born in Siena. Daughter of a dyer, she became a Dominican tertiary and attracted a group of followers, nursing and healing the sick. Although illiterate, she dictated hundreds of letters and the famous *Dialogue or Treatise on Divine Providence*. She helped to persuade Pope Gregory XI to return from Avignon to Rome in 1376. She negotiated peace between Florence and the papacy and supported Rome in the Great Schism. A stigmatic, she was canonised in 1461, became patron saint of Italy in 1939 and a doctor of the Church in 1970.

Catherine of Valois (1401–1437). Queen consort of England 1420–22. Daughter of *Charles VI of France, and younger sister of Isabella, *Richard II's queen, in 1420 she married *Henry V of England. After his death (1422) and the accession of their baby son *Henry VI, she married Owen *Tudor, a Welsh landowner. Her grandson, Henry Tudor, became King *Henry VII in 1485.

Catherine Swynford *see* **Swynford, Catherine**

Catiline (Lucius Sergius Catilina) (c.108–62 BCE). Roman conspirator. A supporter of *Sulla as a young man, he later professed extreme democratic opinions to further his interests. The events that brought about his ruin originated from his belief that he was being unfairly deprived of the consulship, which he felt was his due. Thus his first conspiracy (65) was intended to help his own candidacy for 64. The plot was mismanaged and Catiline escaped conviction, but when he again sought election in 63, it was *Cicero, a man of lower rank than himself but with conservative backing, who was preferred. A second plot was then contrived to bring about the death of Cicero and other hostile senators. News of it had reached Cicero, who took emergency measures and in one of his most famous orations denounced Catiline in the Senate. Catiline himself gained a short respite by flight, but in January 62, he was hunted down and killed, with many of his followers, at Pistoia, while those conspirators who had stayed in Rome were arrested and executed.

Cato, Marcus Porcius (known as Cato the Elder) (234–149 BCE). Roman politician. As a young man he served against the Carthaginians in the second Punic War. As Consul (195) he fought in Spain, but it was as 'censor' (184) that he showed the zeal for moral reform by which he is best remembered. He denounced extravagance, tried to restore a sense of high moral values in public life, and strongly resisted Greek cultural influences, which he regarded as corrupting. His visit to Africa in 153 convinced

him that Carthage could still be dangerous and for many years he ended every speech in the Senate with the words 'Carthage must be destroyed'. He wrote books on the history of Roman towns (*Origines*) and on farming. His great-grandson, also named **Marcus Porcius Cato** (Cato the Younger) (95–46 BCE), supported *Pompey against Julius *Caesar in the Civil Wars, and after Pompey's defeat at Pharsalus (48) escaped to Africa, where he defended Utica. When news of Caesar's victory at Thapsus (46) reached him he committed suicide. His daughter, Portia, married *Brutus. As a patron of the Stoic school of philosophers Cato was famed for his unbending rectitude. He was seen by his enemies as an obstructive, old fashioned and inflexibly doctrinaire politician; his admirers saw him as upholding the ancient Roman virtues in a corrupt age.

Catullus, Gaius Valerius (c.84–c.54 BCE). Roman lyric poet, born in Verona. He lived mainly at Rome and at his villas at Tibur and Sirmio. His surviving works consist mainly of love poems, some passionate, some playful, and scurrilous, witty or satirical verses written probably in the last years of his short life. They show his command of lyric metres and ability to express the tenderest and most personal emotions. His poems were lost until an early manuscript was found in Verona in 1305.

Wiseman, T. P., *Catullan Questions*. 1969; Quinn, K., *Catullus: The Poems, edited with Commentary*. 1970.

Cavafy, C. P. (Constantinos Petrou Kavaphes) (1863–1933). Greek poet, born in Alexandria. He lived in Liverpool 1870–77, then his family returned to Egypt where he worked as a minor civil servant and journalist in Alexandria, rarely visited Greece and wrote 154 poems, terse, ironic and pessimistic, skilfully evoking the past. The first publication in book form (1935) was posthumous. An English translation by John Mavrogordata (1951) led to international critical acclaim, aided by the advocacy of his friend E. M. *Forster, and he was admired by W. H. *Auden, Leonard *Cohen and Marguerite *Yourcenar. Among his greatest poems are 'Waiting for the Barbarians' (1904) and 'Ithaca' (1911). The translations by George Barbanis are particularly effective.

Cavaignac, Louis-Eugène (1802–1857). French soldier and politician. Son of a revolutionary lawyer, when *Louis Philippe was deposed (1848) he became Minister of War in the provisional government, and armed with dictatorial powers suppressed a rising by Parisian workers, protesting against the closure of 'national workshops'. 3,000 workers were killed and 4,000 were transported. However, Cavaignac was a committed republican and introduced some reforms as Chief of the Executive Power May-December 1848. A new constitution was promulgated under which Louis-Napoléon Bonaparte (later *Napoléon III) was elected president with about 5,500,000 votes, against less than 1,500,000 for Cavaignac. A member of the National Assembly 1848–51, he was arrested when Bonaparte staged a coup-d'etat, and although re-elected in 1852 and 1857 refused to take an oath to the Second Empire.

Cavaillé-Coll, Aristide (1811–1899). French organ builder. He belonged to a dynasty of organ builders in France and Spain, and his company made nearly 500, noted for their astringent but exhilarating timbre, including Notre Dame, La Madeleine, La Trinité, St Sulpice and Ste Clotilde in Paris, the basilica of St Denis and cathedrals in Caen, Rouen, Bayeux and Toulouse. *Franck, *Saint-Saëns, *Fauré, *Widor and *Messaien wrote specifically for Cavaillé-Coll organs. Asteroid 5184 Cavaillé-Coll was named for him.

Cavalcanti, Guido (c.1255–1300). Florentine poet. A friend of *Dante, his sonnets and other poems reveal a philosophic and introspective temperament. His active support of the Ghibelline (imperial) cause led to his exile in the last year of his life. English translations were made by *Rossetti and Ezra *Pound.

Cavalli, Francesco (Pietro Francesco Caletti di Bruno) (1602–1676). Italian operatic composer, born at Crema. Son of Gian Battista Calettidi Bruno, he later took the name of his Venetian patron Federico Cavalli. At 15 he became a singer in the choir of St Mark's, Venice, where he was trained by Claudio *Monteverdi. He became *maestro di cappella* at St Mark's in 1668. He wrote 42 musical dramas, of which 27 survive. They use a small orchestra and show the beginnings of the use of recitative and aria, the music complemented extravagant sets and costumes.

Worsthorne, S. T., *Venetian Opera in the Seventeenth Century*. 1954.

Cavallini, Pietro (c.1250–c.1330). Italian fresco painter and mosaic artist. Working mainly in Rome, his first authenticated work is known to have been painted over a fifth century Christian fresco in which the Roman classical tradition had survived. It is this tradition which seems to have influenced him in his departures from the contemporary Byzantine style. His paintings reject the stiffness of Byzantine art, and they re-introduce sculptural modelling of figures and drapery, assisted by directed light. His best known works are probably *The Last Judgment* (fresco) in Sta. Cecilia in Trastevere, Rome, and *Six Scenes from the Life of Mary* (mosaics) at Sta Maria in Trastevere. He strongly influenced *Giotto.

Toesca, P., *Pietro Cavallini*. 1960.

Cavell, Edith Louisa (1865–1915). English nurse, born near Norwich. A clergyman's daughter, she was a governess, then had a late vocation for nursing. She worked in Brussels from 1907. When Belgium was overrun by the Germans during World War I, she remained in Brussels to nurse the wounded of both sides and assisted over 200 Allied soldiers to

escape into neutral Holland, an act of treason in the German military code, for which she was condemned and shot. Her execution caused widespread outrage, especially in Britain, the US, Canada and Australia. She was widely memorialised, with statues, coins, a mountain in Canada and in plays, early films and music. She was reburied at Norwich Cathedral. Her statue in St Martin's Lane, London, carries her words: 'Patriotism is not enough. I must have no hatred or bitterness towards anyone.'

Hochling, A. A., *Edith Cavell*. 1958; Souhami, D., *Edith Cavell*. 2010.

Cavendish, Henry (1731–1810). English scientist, born in Nice. Son of Lord Charles Cavendish, an able experimenter, Henry's elder brother became 3rd Duke of Devonshire, and he inherited two large fortunes, making him one of England's richest men. Educated at Peterhouse, Cambridge, unmarried, and devoid of any passion but science, he lived in London, either in Bloomsbury or at a villa at Clapham, in eccentric seclusion. His waking hours were devoted to scientific research. In 1766 he isolated hydrogen, realised that it was an element, and investigated many of its properties and received the Copley Medal of the Royal Society. He was the first to determine accurately the chemical composition of water and air. Like *Priestley, he supported the phlogiston theory later disproved by *Lavoisier. He also conducted many experiments in heat and electricity, and measured the constant of gravitation, from which he estimated the mean density of the earth (accurate to within 1 per cent). The Cavendish Laboratory at Cambridge is named after him.

Berry, A. J., *Henry Cavendish: His Life and Scientific Work*. 1960; Jungnickel, C. and McCormmach, R., *Cavendish. The Experimental Life*. 2016.

Cavour, Camillo Benso di, Conte (1810–1861). Italian politician, born in Turin. The main architect of Italian unity and independence, he was the son of a nobleman. He found army life alien to his liberal ideas and turned to scientific agriculture as a means of showing that, to prepare a country for freedom, practical improvements were more important than political agitation. His search for the newest techniques, which eventually brought him a fortune, took him abroad and introduced him to many influential people who shared his liberal views and moderate approach. In 1847 he founded *Il Risorgimento*, a liberal journal aimed at securing the political unification of Italy but at the same time advocating such steps as the construction of railways, free trade, and democratic constitutions, which would tend to bring unity naturally about. Meanwhile, political events were helping him. In 1848 *Carlo Alberto, the king of Sardinia (and ruler of Piedmont) went to war with Austria (which then held the rest of northern Italy), and, though defeated, he was prepared to grant a democratic constitution, which provided a means by which Cavour could bring about his aims. In 1852 under the new king, *Vittorio Emanuele, he became Premier of Piedmont-Sardinia. By reforms of the army and administration, expanding the economy and strengthening the financial situation by reducing debt, he steadily built up the idea in Europe that the supporters of Italian unification were no longer reckless revolutionaries but sober serious politicians. He gained further goodwill by sending Sardinian troops to aid the British and French in the Crimea. Finally in 1858, accord with *Garibaldi having already been reached, came the secret deal with *Napoléon III by which Nice and the Savoy duchy were promised to France in return for French aid. When war broke out with Austria in 1859 the French victories at Magenta and Solferino secured northern Italy (except Venice). Garibaldi landed in Sicily in May 1860 and a few weeks later he and Vittorio Emanuele rode through Naples together. In March 1861 Cavour became first Prime Minister of the almost united Italy. He died in June.

Mack Smith, D., *Cavour*. 1985.

Caxton, William (c.1422–1491). English printer, born in Kent. He became a prosperous silk merchant, and was a prominent member of the English commercial community at Bruges (1463–69). From 1471 to 1476 he was attached to the court of Margaret, Duchess of Burgundy, sister of England's *Edward IV. During this time he learned the art of printing, probably at Cologne, and began printing at Bruges, where he published the *Recuyell of the Historyes of Troye*, which he had translated from the French. This is the first known book to have been printed in the English language. In 1476 he set up the first English press, at Westminster. His first publication there was *The Dictes or Sayengis of the Philosophers* (1477), a translation from the French by the 2nd Earl Rivers. He also printed the works of *Chaucer, *Malory and *Gower and was active until his death as translator and editor. His first illustrated work was the *Myrrour of the World* (1481) and his most elaborate the *Golden Legend*, lives of the saints illustrated with woodcuts. In all he published about 100 volumes, of which roughly one third survive.

Cayley, Arthur (1821–1895). English mathematician. Educated at Trinity College, Cambridge, he supported his research by practising as a barrister for 14 years. Elected FRS at the age of 31, he became first Sadleiran professor of mathematics at Cambridge 1863–95. He published 300 papers, received the Copley Medal in 1882 and became President of the British Association 1883. He made important contributions to abstract geometry and theoretical dynamics, his best known book (his collected papers alone fill 13 volumes) being *Elementary Treatise on Elliptic Functions* (1876).

Bell, E. T., *Men of Mathematics*. Repr. 1961.

Cayley, Sir George, 6th Baronet (1773–1857). English engineer, inventor and aviation pioneer, born in Scarborough, Yorkshire. Privately educated, as early as 1799 he proposed an aircraft with a fuselage, fixed cambered (i.e. asymmetrical) wings, a rudder and separate power source. He experimented with model balloons, then built a series of large gliders, and in 1810 published a paper identifying the four aerodynamic forces in flight: weight, lift, drag and thrust, rejecting *Leonardo da Vinci's concept of bird-like flight for humans. Now often described as 'the Father of Aviation', he was the first to explain the problems of flight mathematically. He invented a hot air engine in 1807, forerunner of the internal combustion engine, improving it in 1837. He also invented an artificial limb, a tension spoke wheel, safety belts and self-righting lifeboats. He was a Whig MP 1832–34 and was elected FRS. In 1853 he built a large glider, claiming 'steadiness, safety and steerage', which carried a passenger.

Fairlie, G. and Cayley, E., *The Life of a Genius*. 1965; Dee, R., *The Man who Invented Flight*. 2007.

Ceauşescu, Nicolae (1918–1989). Romanian Communist politician. He was imprisoned for political offences 1936–38, 1940–44, and became Minister of Agriculture 1947–50 in the first Communist Government, Deputy Minister of the Armed Forces 1950–54 and a Politburo member 1955–89. On the death of his patron **Gheorge Gheorghiu-Dej** (1901–1965), he succeeded as Secretary-General of the Romanian Communist Party 1965–89. With his wife **Elena Petrescu** (1919–1989), he built up a powerful family network and was President of the Romanian State Council 1967–74 and President of the Socialist Republic of Romania 1974–89. While pursuing a repressive policy at home, marked by extravagant expenditure on public buildings, he won international support by pursuing a foreign policy independent of Moscow, cultivating good relations with China, Israel, Britain (where he received an honorary GCB) and the US. With the collapse of Communism in eastern Europe, Ceauşescu's use of force in Timisoara led to an army revolt and in December he was overthrown and executed with his wife.

Cecchetti, Enrico (1850–1928). Italian ballet dancer and trainer. One of the strongest influences in the development of modern ballet, both his father and his mother were dancers, and he, by a blend of vigour and precision with French grace, produced the style of male dancing which came to be known as Russian. In 1902 he became Director of the Imperial School at Warsaw, but later took *Pavlova, at her special request, as his sole pupil. A long association with *Diaghilev followed, and in 1919 he started his own school in London, where Ninette *de Valois and Marie *Rambert were among his pupils.

Cecil. For members of this family other than those below, *see* **Burghley, 1st Baron**, **Salisbury, 3rd Marquess of**, and **Salisbury, 1st Earl of**

Cecil, Lord (Edward Christian) **David** (Gascoyne) (1902–1986). English literary critic and biographer. Son of the 4th Marquess of Salisbury, he was professor of English literature at Oxford University 1948–69. He wrote biographies and studies of Walter *Scott, Lord *Melbourne, Jane *Austen, William *Cowper and Thomas *Hardy, and a critical study, *Early Victorian Novelists* (1964).

Cecil of Chelwood, 1st Viscount, (Edgar Algernon) Robert Gascoyne Cecil (1864–1958). British politician. A son of the 3rd Marquess of *Salisbury, educated at Eton and Oxford, he became a barrister and QC (1889). After World War I, although a minister in *Baldwin's Government 1923–24, 1924–27, his main preoccupation was the League of Nations, where he represented Britain 1919–32 and at its last session in 1946. He served as President of the League of Nations Union 1923–45 and later of the United Nations Association. He was awarded the Nobel Peace Prize in 1937 and a CH in 1956.

Celan, Paul (né Pavel Antschel) (1920–1970). Romanian-Jewish -French poet and translator, born Czernowitz (now in Ukraine). His parents died in the Holocaust, and Celan survived a labour camp in Romania. He translated *Shakespeare's Sonnets into German and wrote 'Todesfuge' ('Death Tango') in 1944–45. He lived in Paris from 1948, and translated poetry by *Donne, *Dickinson, *Baudelaire, *Rimbaud, *Valery, *Frost and *Yevtushenko. He drowned himself in the Seine on *Hitler's birthday. His poems are short and compressed ('microliths') and have been compared to the music of *Webern. Neglected in his lifetime, Celan is now regarded as being in the front rank of modern German poets. There are eight English translations of his poems and an extensive bibliography.

Chalfen, I., *Paul Celan*. 1991; Felstiner, J., *Paul Celan*. 1995.

Celestine I, St (d.432). Pope (from 422). A Roman deacon, as Pope he attacked the teachings of *Nestorius, which argued that the human and divine natures of Jesus were independent, and of *Pehagius, who rejected predestination and the doctrine of original sin. He sent Palladius (431) as the first bishop to Ireland.

Celestine III (Giacinto Bobo-Orsini) (c.1106–1198). Pope 1191–98. A student and friend of *Abelard, sympathetic to *Becket, he was a diplomat until election to the papacy at the age of 85. His attempts to restore papal influence were thwarted by the emperor *Henry VI.

Celestine V, St (Pietro di Morrone) (c.1215–1296). Pope 1294. He lived for many years as a hermit in the Abruzzi and gathered round him an ascetic group, later known as the Celestines. After the death of Nicholas IV in 1292 the cardinals were unable to agree on a new pope, and after a two-year delay Celestine, now

old and incompetent, was elected. Finding himself a political pawn he abdicated after five months, but was kept in captivity by his successor, *Boniface VIII, to prevent him becoming a centre of faction. He was canonised in 1313, though *Dante sets him at the gateway of Hell.

Celibidache, Sergiu (1912–1996). Romanian conductor. He studied in Paris and Berlin and was Chief Conductor of the Berlin Philharmonic Orchestra 1948–52 during its post-war rebirth. He made a few recordings 1945–50, but his international reputation depended exclusively on concerts. Like the pianist *Michelangeli, he remained an intensely controversial figure. He was musical director of the Munich Philharmonic Orchestra 1979–96.

Céline, Louis-Ferdinand (né Louis Ferdinand Destouches) (1894–1961). French novelist. His major novels, *Journey to the End of the Night* (1932) and *Death on the Instalment Plan* (1936), are autobiographical, describing his experiences during World War I, his work as a doctor in Paris slums, and his childhood and youth. Born a petit bourgeois, his writings reveal a pathological loathing for capitalist society and its products. Céline, assumed to be a leftist, was invited to the USSR in 1936 but hated what he saw. His visit made him first an anarchist and soon after a fascist. From 1937 his anti-Semitism became so virulent that even the French fascist press rejected his writings. To Germany in 1944, he fled to Denmark (1945), was briefly imprisoned, then began writing again. Tried in absentia in February 1951 and sentenced to a year in prison, he was soon amnestied and returned to France, broken in health.

Cellini, Benvenuto (1500–1571). Italian artist, born in Florence. His life, according to himself, was as colourful as his work. His father was a musician and he studied music until the age of 15. Later he was apprenticed to a goldsmith, and it was during his apprenticeship that he was banished after fighting a duel. Making his way to Rome, he was employed by Pope *Clement VII as a musician, but soon attracted notice by his gold and silver craftsmanship. He claimed, too, to have killed the Constable of Bourbon and the Prince of Orange during the sack of Rome by the imperial forces in 1527. After a short absence he was back in Rome in 1529, designing coins for the papal mint. Pardoned by Pope *Paul III for the murder of a rival goldsmith, he was again in trouble in 1538 when he was charged (falsely, it is said) with having stolen papal jewels during the sack. After escaping from prison, he served *Francois I of France until 1545, when he returned to Florence, where he enjoyed the patronage of Duke Cosimo de'*Medici for the rest of his life. Cellini's *Autobiography* (1558–62), a lively and boastful account of his adventurous life, also gives much valuable information about the goldsmith's craft. It is indeed for their intricate and ingenious craftsmanship rather than for their artistic sensibility that his works, such as his statue of Perseus in Florence, are most praised.

Parker, D., *Cellini.* 2004.

Celsius, Anders (1701–1744). Swedish astronomer. Nephew of **Olaf Celsius** (1670–1756), the botanist and patron of *Linnaeus, and grandson of **Magnus Celsius** who deciphered the Helsing runes, he was professor of astronomy at the University of Uppsala 1730–44 and was a member of the expedition which, in 1736, visited Lapland to measure an arc of the meridian and investigate the Aurora Borealis. In 1742 he introduced the Celsius, or centigrade, temperature scale.

Cenci, Beatrice (1577–1599). Italian noblewoman. To escape the cruelty and the incestuous attentions of her father, she arranged with her stepmother and brother to have him assassinated. Put on trial with her accomplices, she confessed under torture and was beheaded. Her story was the basis of *Shelley's verse tragedy *The Cenci*.

Cerdic (Ceretic?/Caraticos?) (d.c.534). King of the West Saxons (Wessex) 519–34. Everything about his antecedents is contested, and his claimed descent from Wotan is unlikely. *The Anglo-Saxon Chronicle* describes him as a Saxon adventurer who defeated the Britons, but the name is not Germanic, and he may have been a Roman-Briton. He established a line that included *Egbert and *Alfred (the Great).

Cernuda (y Bidón), Luis (1902–1963). Spanish poet, born in Seville. A member of the 'Generation of 1927', he was a friend of *Lorca. He left Spain in 1938 during the Civil War and remained an exile until his death in Mexico City. His reputation has grown since his death with two collections of translations in English, *The Poetry of Luis Cernuda* (1977) and *Selected Poems of Luis Cernuda* (1999).

Cervantes Saavedra, Miguel de (1547–1616). Spanish novelist, born in Alcalá de Hernares, near Madrid. Fourth child of Rodrigo Cervantes, a barber-surgeon from Córdoba, and Leonor Cortinas, little is known of his childhood or education but he was an avid reader and a lover of the theatre. He borrowed the name of Saavedra from a relative.

He may have fled after wounding a man in a duel, and in Rome became chamber assistant in the household of Giulio Acquaviva, later cardinal, 1569–70.

In 1571 he served at the Battle of Lepanto, suffering three gunshot wounds, one of which crippled his left hand. Later he rejoined his regiment and served in Corfu and Tunis. While returning to Spain with his brother Rodrigo, Moorish pirates captured his ship and he was imprisoned as a slave in Algiers (1575–80), finally ransomed after several abortive attempts to escape. In Madrid he tried to support himself by writing plays, poems, and a pastoral novel, *La Galatea*

(1585). In 1584 he married **Catalina de Palacios Salazar y Vozmediano** (1565–1626). The marriage was unhappy and they had no children, though Cervantes had a daughter, Isabel, from an earlier liaison. Employed (1587) in raising provisions for the Armada, he was confirmed as a civil servant (1588), but was finally dismissed (1597) and imprisoned for three months because of discrepancies in his accounts.

He lived in Seville, in great poverty, from 1595 to 1603, and occupied himself with poetry, unsuccessful plays and writing the first part of his masterpiece, *Don Quixote*, in full *El ingenioso hidalgo Don Quixote de la Mancha* (*The Ingenious Gentleman Don Quixote of La Mancha*). A satire on medieval romances of chivalry, *Don Quixote* recounts the adventures of an elderly and confused hidalgo, Alonso Quixano, who reinvents himself as Don Quixote, a knight ('The knight of the doleful countenance'), who tours the countryside on his steed Rocinante (just a nag), with his princess Dulcinea del Toboso (in reality a peasant girl) in his heart and his faithful squire Sancho Panza (a peasant) in his wake, 'to defend the oppressed and to undo wrongs'. Part I of *Don Quixote* was published in 1605 and won immediate success, being reprinted four times in the same year.

Translated into English by John Shelton in 1612, there were early versions in French, German and Italian.

Don Quixote is built around a long-running joke—the absurd obsolescence of romantic fiction with its implausible events, exaggerated emotions and self-delusion, and also has the characteristics of the 'buddy' story, very familiar in modern novels and films. Simon *Leys (Pierre Ryckmans) wrote: 'It is bizarre to observe how a literary masterpiece which was to exert such universal appeal—transcending all barriers of language, culture and time—could, from the start, have been entirely predicated upon such a narrow, tedious and pointless literary quarrel.'

In 1605, Cervantes was arrested on suspicion of conspiracy to murder, when the body of a notorious rake, believed to be a lover of his daughter, Isabel, was found in his house; the charge was, however, dropped. Isabel was again mixed up in some sort of mysterious imbroglio (1608–12). Fame seems, however, to have brought him some happiness, though he remained poor. Among Cervantes' last works were some short plays, a collection of *Exemplary Novels* (1613) in the manner of *Boccaccio, and *The Trials and Peregrinations of Persiles and Sigismunda*, a linked series of about 20 short novels, published posthumously.

In 1614, a spurious Part II was published over the name of Alonso Fernández de Avellaneda—the author has never been identified but the successful playwright Lope de *Vega may have organised the deception. The effect was catalytic and provoked Cervantes to complete an authentic Part II in 1615.

Cervantes became a member of the Order of San Francisco in 1613 and died, aged 68, probably of dropsy (edema, leading to chronic heart failure) in Madrid on 23 April 1616, the same date as *Shakespeare (but 10 days earlier in the Gregorian calendar). In March 2015, it was claimed that his remains, long lost, were found at the Convent of the Barefoot Trinitarians, Madrid.

Don Quixote is repeatedly listed as one of the world's greatest novels; many critics place it first. The lost play *Cardenio* (1613?) by *Shakespeare and *Fletcher is based on a character in Part I of *Don Quixote*. *Telemann wrote an opera (1761), as did *Salieri (1771), *Mendelssohn (1825), *Massenet (1910) and de *Falla (1923). Several ballets have been based on *Don Quixote*, the first in 1719, the most performed version (1869) to music composed by Ludwig Minkus; but at least four more are in the repertoire. Richard *Strauss wrote a memorable tone-poem *Don Quixote* (1898), for cello and orchestra. The novel has been dramatised many times. There have been 24 films or television series based on *Don Quixote:* the Russian version (1957) directed by Grigori *Kozintsev is the best. Orson *Welles tried and only partly succeeded. Terry Gilliam's attempt in 2000 was a magnificent failure, as recorded in the documentary *Lost in La Mancha* (2002), available online. From 1965 the musical *Man of La Mancha* was immensely successful internationally.

Grismer, R. L., *Cervantes: A Bibliography*. 1946–63; Byron, W., *Cervantes, a biography*. 1978; Canavaggio, J., *Cervantes.* 1991; McCrory, D. P., *No Ordinary Man*. 2006.

Cetewayo (Cetshwayo) (c.1836–1884). Zulu king. After he had gained the throne by killing his brother his hostile attitude to the British settlers in Natal brought on the Zulu War of 1879. The results of early successes, including the victory of Isandllwana, were wiped out by the decisive defeat of Ulundi. After imprisonment he was restored to part of his kingdom in 1883 but failed to secure the allegiance of his subjects, and was driven out.

Cézanne, Paul (1839–1906). French post impressionist painter, born in Aix-en-Provence. Son of a rich banker, he wrote poetry, and had as one of his boyhood friends Émile *Zola, who persuaded him, against his father's wishes, to take up art in Paris. From 1863 he joined the group round *Manet, and his earliest works, influenced by *Delacroix, were often erotic or mythological scenes executed with violent strokes of the palette knife. The Franco-Prussian War having broken up the group, Cézanne became more closely associated with the Impressionists, and through Camille *Pissarro (1872–73) became friendly with *Monet and *Renoir. He soon developed an original and personal style. He saw natural objects as made up of basic geometrical forms, such as the cylinder, sphere or cone, and his

aim was to represent them by colour alone without shadows or perspective, space being suggested by a series of receding planes. Cézanne achieved his effects with a limited colour range: blue, green and tan predominantly, and brush-work as distinctive as it is difficult to describe. From about 1876 he gave up small brush strokes and painted in masses. His subjects, repeated over and over again, were few: landscapes, still life (mainly fruit and flowers), a few local portraits (and some of himself) and groups of card players and bathers. The enormous prices now paid for his works make it hard to credit that, until he was over 50, Cézanne's talent went almost unrecognised. He became embittered and eccentric, withdrew to Provence in 1878 and except for short intervals lived there in seclusion for the rest of his life. When his father died (1886), leaving him enough to live in comfort, he married Hortense Figuet, a model with whom he had previously lived, and his work of the next 10 years is his most serene and assured. His last works are more violent and lyrical, e.g. the wonderful variants of *Le Chateatu noir* and *Mont St Victoire*. In 1895 **Ambroise Vollard** (1865–1939), a leading art dealer in Paris, mounted his first exhibition and thereafter Cézanne enjoyed at least moderate fame. A diabetic, he died from exposure after a fall. He had a profound influence on *Matisse, *Picasso and *Braque. Cubism was the obvious development of his geometrical theories but his influence extended far more widely and his works led from the traditional schools to the revolutionary theories and techniques of today. *The Card Players* (1893) was bought by the royal family of Qatar in 2011 for $US250 million, making it, at that time, the most expensive painting in the history of art.

Rewald, J., *Cézanne.* 1986; Callow, P., *Lost Earth: A Life of Cézanne*. 1995; Danchev, A., *Cézanne*. 2012.

Chabrier, (Alexis) **Emmanuel** (1841–1894). French composer. He was largely self-taught. At first a civil servant, he did not become a professional musician until 1880. His first successful work, the orchestral rhapsody *Espana* (1883), shows the gaiety and orchestral flair that characterise his music: other examples are the *Marche slave* and *Marche joyeuse*. He also wrote the light operas *Gwendoline* (1886) and *Le Roi malgré lui* (1887). His influence on later French composers was notable, and his songs, piano music and the orchestral *Suite pastorale* were much admired by Ravel and Debussy.

Chabrol, Claude (1930–2010). French film director. Educated at the University of Paris, he became a critic, coauthored a book on Alfred *Hitchcock, and directed a series of films, many featuring his wife Stephane Audran, about crime, passion and family life among the bourgeoisie.

Chad (Ceadda), **St** (d.672). Anglo-Saxon missionary, born in Northumbria. Educated at Lindisfarne, he succeeded his brother, Saint Cedd, as abbot of their joint foundation at Lastingham in 664. He was consecrated Bishop of the Northumbrians with York as his see, but the appointment gave rise to a dispute and he resigned in 669 in favour of St Wilfrid. He was then made bishop of Mercia, with his see at Lichfield, and is credited with the conversion of the Kingdom of Mercia. He died of the plague. His remains are in St Chad's Cathedral, Birmingham.

Chadwick, Sir Edwin (1801–1890). English social reformer. Originally a lawyer, he became a friend and disciple of Jeremy *Bentham. He worked (1832–46) for the Poor Law Commission and played an important part in the drafting of the Factory Act (1833) and the Poor Law Amendment Act (1834). He was the leading public-health reformer of the 19th century. He wrote *The Sanitary Condition of the Labouring Population* (1842) and advocated the introduction of comprehensive drainage and sewerage systems in English cities. This and other reports, e.g. that on *The Practice of Interment in Towns*, led to important reforms.

Chadwick, Sir James (1891–1974). English physicist. He studied at Manchester, and under *Rutherford at Cambridge, and was appointed professor of physics at Liverpool in 1935. Chadwick investigated highly penetrating radiation which in 1930 had been observed by Bothe and Becker when certain light atoms, such as those of beryllium, were bombarded with alpha-particles. By analysing the masses and speeds of the particles involved, he showed in 1932 that neutrons, uncharged sub-atomic particles whose existence had been predicted by Rutherford, were being produced. Chadwick is thus generally credited with the discovery of the neutron, and was awarded the Nobel Prize for Physics in 1935. He worked on atomic energy research during World War II, was knighted in 1945 and became Master of Gonville and Caius College, Cambridge 1948–58.

Chadwick, (William) **Owen** (1916–2015). English historian. Educated at St John's College, Cambridge, he was ordained as an Anglican priest and at Cambridge became Master of Selwyn College 1956–83, Regius Professor of Modern History 1968–83 and Vice Chancellor 1969–71. His books included *The Reformation* (1964), *The Victorian Church* (1966–70), *The Secularization of the European Mind* (1976), *Michael Ramsey: A Life* (1990), *A History of Christianity* (1995) and *A History of the Popes 1830–1914* (1998). He received the OM in 1983.

Chagall, Marc (1887–1985). Russian-Jewish artist, born in Vitebsk. He worked as a stage designer under *Bakst, lived in Paris (1910–14) and was there influenced by the Cubists. He returned to Russia, served in World War I and became a commissar of fine arts after the revolution. In 1922 he returned to Paris. He lived in the US 1941–47, returning to France in 1948. His style, though it links up with that of the Surrealists, is highly personal. His dreamlike pictures

are made up of Jewish and Russian folk fantasies and symbols and childhood memories. His first wife, Bella, appears in many of them. He also designed stained glass, sets for ballet, e.g. *Firebird* (1945) and *Daphnis and Chloe* (1958) and opera, e.g. *Magic Flute* (1967), illustrated books, e.g. La Fontaine's *Fables*, and painted the ceiling of the Paris Opera (1964).

Alexander, S., *Marc Chagall*. 1979.

Chailly, Riccardo (1953–). Italian conductor, born in Milan. He was principal conductor of the Berlin Radio Symphony Orchestra 1982–88, the Royal Concertgebouw Orchestra, Amsterdam 1988–2004 and the Gewandhaus Orchestra, Leipzig 2005–16. He made powerful recordings of *Mahler. He was appointed director of La Scala, Milan 2015– .

Chain, Sir Ernst Boris (1906–1979). Anglo-German biochemist, born in Berlin. He lectured at Oxford from 1935 and with *Florey devised methods of producing penicillin in commercial quantities. He shared the 1945 Nobel Prize for Medicine with Florey and *Fleming.

Chaitanya Mahaprabu (né Visambhar Mishra) (1485–1533). Bengali Hindu mystic, also called Gauranga. His worship of Krishna in ecstatic dancing and singing inspired a form of Hinduism named after him. In 1510 he was initiated as an ascetic and afterwards settled in Puri, where a school of disciples grew up around him. His ecstatic trances and frenzies are thought to have undermined his health and hastened his death. His followers continued to follow his practices until the present day. They held that pure religious ecstasy was superior to all other forms of worship. An articulate theology, never established by Caitanya himself, who was not a teacher and did not intentionally establish an organised sect, was worked out by six of his disciples.

Chaka *see* **Shaka**

Chaliapin (Shalyapin), **Fyodor Ivanovich** (1873–1938). Russian singer, born in Kazan. His family was desperately poor and he had little formal education, but after working at a variety of odd jobs he joined a touring opera company at the age of 17. His powerful bass voice and his great dramatic gifts soon brought him to St Petersburg and fame. He appeared at La Scala in 1901, New York 1907 and London in 1913. He left Russia in 1921. The title roles in the operas *Boris Godunov* and *Prince Igor* provided ideal opportunities for his talents. He acted in the silent film *Ivan the Terrible* (1915), and acted and sang in the film *Don Quixote* (1932). He made 200 recordings and toured Australia in 1926.

Challoner, Richard (1691–1781). English Roman Catholic bishop. Leader of the English Catholics, he was made apostolic vicar of the London Catholics in 1758, increased their numbers, strengthened their resistance to hostility and founded a charitable institution for the poor and aged. He revised the *Reims Douai Bible* (an English translation of the Vulgate for Roman Catholic use) and wrote many devotional works.

Chamberlain, Sir (Joseph) **Austen** (1863–1937). English Conservative politician, born in Birmingham. Son of Joseph *Chamberlain by his first wife, and educated at Rugby and Cambridge, he was a Conservative MP 1892–1937 and a junior minister from 1895, becoming Chancellor of the Exchequer 1903–05 under *Balfour, and again 1919–21 under *Lloyd George. He led the Conservative party 1921–22, but his adherence to Lloyd George and the coalition deprived him of the opportunity to become Prime Minister himself. Under *Baldwin he was Foreign Minister 1924–29, and crowned his work for European conciliation by negotiating and signing the Locarno Pact (1925) on which high and vain hopes were set, and for which he shared a Nobel Peace Prize with Charles Gates *Dawes and received the KG. After *Hitler took power, he opposed his half-brother and supported *Churchill.

Chamberlain, Houston Stewart (1855–1927). Anglo-German racial theorist, born in Portsmouth. Educated in Paris, Geneva and Vienna, he eventually (1908) settled in Bayreuth and married Richard *Wagner's daughter Eva. He remained in Germany when World War I broke out and in 1916 became a German citizen. He wrote on Wagner and on aesthetic and philosophic themes, but the main work of his life, *The Foundations of the Nineteenth Century* (1899), was based on *Gobineau and expounded a racial theory of history which provided arguments for Aryan and German racial supremacy repeated by Hitler to justify anti-Semitism.

Chamberlain, Joseph ('Joe') (1836–1914). English politician, born in London. Son of a screw manufacturer, he studied at University College School, London, then, to further his father's interests, entered a firm of screw manufacturers at Birmingham and remained closely identified with the city. He retired from business in 1874, with a fortune of £100,000, was a reforming mayor of Birmingham 1873–76 and MP 1876–1914. During his first years in parliament he was an advanced radical and even a republican, but after serving under *Gladstone as President of the Board of Trade 1880–85 and President of the Local Government Board 1886, he disagreed with the proposal to grant Home Rule to Ireland and resigned to become a Liberal Unionist in alliance with the Conservatives. Always a staunch imperialist, he was Colonial Secretary 1895–1903 in the ministries of *Salisbury and *Balfour. He was a strong supporter of the Workmen's Compensation Act (1897). He encouraged *Rhodes in his anti-Boer policies and was partly responsible for the South African War (1899–1902). The draft Constitution of the Commonwealth of Australia had to be negotiated with Chamberlain who then secured passage through the UK Parliament

(1900). In 1903 he resigned as a minister to promote 'imperial preference', in opposition to free trade. He became first chancellor of Birmingham University 1901–14 and actively promoted its development. Crippled by a stroke in 1906, he remained MP until his death.

Amery, J., and Garvin, J. L., *The Life of Joseph Chamberlain*. 6 vols, 1932–69.

Chamberlain, (Arthur) **Neville** (1869–1940). English Conservative politician, born in Birmingham. Son of Joseph *Chamberlain by his second wife and half-brother of Austen, he was educated at Rugby and Birmingham, ran the family's banana and sisal plantation in the Bahamas 1890–97, then returned to Birmingham where he became a leading industrialist and a reforming lord mayor 1915–16. It was not until he was appointed Director of National Service 1916–17 during World War I that he became closely associated with national politics. Elected Conservative MP for the Ladywood division of Birmingham in 1918, he rose rapidly to become Minister for Health 1923, 1924–29 and Chancellor of the Exchequer 1923–24, 1931–37. His energy, despite an abrasive vanity, made him the natural successor to *Baldwin as Prime Minister in 1937. His government followed a policy of appeasement towards Hitler, for which he must bear the main responsibility, although the policy had wide political and popular support as the reception of the Munich Agreement of 1938 indicated. After Munich, Chamberlain turned to preparations for war, but lacked the powers of inspiration required of a political leader in time of war. Labour refused to join a Coalition government under Chamberlain and in a no-confidence motion in the House of Commons, the Conservative nominal majority of 200 shrank to 81. Chamberlain resigned (10 May 1940), *Halifax took himself out of contention and Winston *Churchill became Prime Minister. Chamberlain served as Lord President of the Council in the War Cabinet and supported Churchill in rejecting *Halifax's proposal to involve Italy in pursuing a negotiated peace with Germany. Diagnosed with terminal cancer in October, he declined an earldom and a KG on his resignation and died in November. Historians have judged him harshly, but Chamberlain was an extremely able man, widely read, a gifted naturalist and amateur musician.

Dilkes, D., *Neville Chamberlain*. Vols 1 & 2. 1984–86; Smart, N., *Neville Chamberlain*. 2010.

Chambers, Ephraim (c.1680–1740). English editor. His two-volume *Cyclopaedia* (1728) was translated into French and provided the foundations for *Diderot's famous *Encyclopédie* (1751–80).

Chambers, (Jay David) **Whittaker** (1901–1961). American journalist. A member of the Communist Party 1925–38, he later worked for *Time* magazine and in evidence before the House Un-American Activities Committee (HUAC) identified Alger *Hiss and other officials within *Roosevelt's administration as having been part of a Communist spy ring. This led to furious debate (in which Chambers' main supporter was Richard *Nixon) and strenuous denial. After two trials Hiss was convicted (1950) of perjury. Chambers wrote an autobiography, *Witness* (1952). He was posthumously awarded the Presidential Medal of Freedom in 1984.

Tanenhaus, S., *Whittaker Chambers; A Biography*. 1997.

Chambers, Sir William (1726–1796). British architect, born in Gothenberg. A voyage to China in his youth inspired his book *Designs of Chinese Buildings* (1757) and the pagoda at Kew Gardens. He designed Somerset House, London, in which he most successfully used and modified the English Palladian style. Chambers played an important part in the founding of the Royal Academy (1768) and helped to raise the status of the architectural profession.

Chambers, William (1800–1883) and **Robert** (1802–1871). Scottish publishers. The brothers founded the Edinburgh firm of W. and R. Chambers. William Chambers started *Chambers's Journal* in 1832, and the well known *Chambers's Encyclopaedia* (1859–68). Robert also wrote a number of books, including *Traditions of Edinburgh* (1823) and *Vestiges of the Natural History of Creation* (1844), published anonymously, an ambitious and influential speculation about evolutionary theory, applying it to biology, geology and cosmology.

Chambord, Comte de, **Henri** *see* **Berry, Charles Ferdinand, Duc de**

Chamfort, (Sebastien-Roch) **Nicolas** (1740–1794). French playwright and cynic. He won an early reputation for his plays and for conversation and was elected to the Académie française. During the Revolution he worked with *Mirabeau and as a secretary to the Jacobin Club. He became a moderate during the Terror, was imprisoned, attempted suicide and died of his wounds. Among his famous remarks were: 'Be my brother or I'll kill you' [said of the Jacobins] and 'One would have to eat a toad every morning to be certain of doing nothing more disgusting for the rest of the day'.

Chamisso, Adelbert von (1781–1838). Franco-German writer and botanist, born in Champagne. His parents fled to Germany during the French Revolution and he worked as a botanist and editor. His novella *Peter Schlemihils wundersame Geschichte* (*Peter Schlemihil's Magic Story*, 1814) about a man who sells his shadow to the Devil, became famous. His poems *Frauen-Liebe und Leben* (*A Woman's Love and Life*, 1830) were set by *Schumann. He took part in a Russian round-the-world expedition and became keeper of the Berlin Botanical Gardens.

Champaigne, Philippe de (1602–1674). French painter, born in Brussels. An outstanding portraitist, e.g. of *Richelieu, he modified the style of *Rubens with classical restraint, was influenced by Jansenism and devoted himself to religious subjects.

Champlain, Samuel de (1567–1635). French explorer. After an expedition to the West Indies (1599) he made three voyages (1603–08) to Canada and founded Québec (1608). He was prime mover for the founding of New France (i.e. Canada) and became its Lieutenant-Governor 1613–29. In 1615 he discovered and explored the Great Lakes, repelled lroquois Indians and opened up the fur trade. In 1629 he was captured and taken to England but returned to Canada in 1613.

Bishop, M., *Champlain: the Life of Fortitude*. 1948.

Champollion, Jean François (1790–1832). French scholar. In 1822, he found the key to Egyptian hieroglyphics by deciphering the inscriptions on the Rosetta stone, a basalt slab discovered in 1799 during *Napoléon's Egyptian expedition. Champollion was educated at Grenoble, where he was professor of history (1809–16), and was attracted to Egyptology at a very early age. He was still only 21 when he began publication of his *Egypt Under the Pharaohs*. In 1826 he became Director of Egyptian Antiquities at the Louvre, and a chair of Egyptology was founded for him at the College de France four years later.

Chancellor, Richard (c.1521–1556). English navigator, born in Bristol. In 1553 he commanded the *Edward Bonaventure* on the expedition of Sir Hugh Willoughby to find a northeast sea passage to China. Separated from his leader in a storm off the Lofoten Islands, he went alone into the White Sea, and travelled overland to Moscow, where he negotiated a trade with the tsar Ivan the Terrible. On his return to England his reports encouraged the foundation (1554) of the Muscovy Company. He went to Moscow again (1555–56) and lost his life in a shipwreck on the way home.

Chandler, Raymond Thornton (1888–1959). American detective story writer. Educated in England at Dulwich College, he followed a variety of occupations before winning fame as an author. He brought to the 'tough' school of thriller-writing a more sophisticated technique. His novels introduced the cynical, laconic private detective with moral standards, Philip Marlowe. Some of the best known were filmed, e.g. *The Big Sleep* (1939), *The Lady in the Lake* (1943) and *The Long Goodbye* (1953).

Chandragupta Maurya (d.c.298 BCE). Indian King c.320–297 BCE. He conquered the Magadha kingdom, and in 305 defeated *Seleucus' attempt to regain the Indian territories conquered by *Alexander the Great. His spacious capital, Patahiptura (Patna), was linked to the northwest frontier by a good road with rest houses. He abdicated, became a Jain monk and fasted to death. *Asoka was his grandson.

Nilakanta Sastri, K. A. (ed.), *The Age of Nandas and Mauryas*. 1952.

Chandrasekhar, Subrahmanyan (1910–1995). Indian-American astrophysicist, born in Lahore. He studied at Cambridge, had a tense relationship with *Eddington but admired *Dirac, lived in the US from 1936 and taught at Chicago from 1937. He was the greatest theoretician of black holes and white dwarf stars. He determined 'Chandrasekhar's limit', i.e. that stars with a mass more than 1.5 times that of the sun will collapse. He shared the 1983 Nobel Prize for Physics with **William Alfred Fowler** (1911–1995) and received the Copley Medal in 1984.

Miller, A. I., *Empire of the Stars*. 2005.

Chanel, Coco (née Gabrielle Bonheur-Chanel) (1883–1971). French fashion designer. She was a dominant influence in world fashion 1925–38, and her loose, comfortable designs were widely copied, making *haute couture* accessible to women generally. She introduced the perfume Chanel No. 5 in 1922, and designed jewellery and hair styles. For a decade she was the mistress of the Duke of *Westminster. She collaborated with the Nazi occupation in France and left for Switzerland in 1944. The musical *Coco* (1969), later filmed, was based on her life.

Chaney, Lon (Leonidas Frank) (1883–1930). American film actor. Well known for his horror roles, (e.g. in *The Hunchback of Notre Dame*), it is said that his skill in miming originated with attempts to communicate with deaf-mute parents. His son, **Lon Chaney Jr** (1906–1973) played Lennie in *Of Mice and Men* (1940).

Chang Tsolin and **Chang Xuehliang** *see* **Zhang Zuolin** and **Zhang Xueliang**

Channon, Sir Henry ('**Chips**') (1897–1958). Anglo-American politician and diarist, born in Chicago. In 1933 he married into the *Guinness family, became a Conservative MP 1935–58, was an assiduous social climber and wrote sharp and malicious diaries, published, in bowdlerised form, as *Chips: The Diaries of Sir Henry Channon* (1967). The unexpurgated version, edited by Simon Heffer, *Henry 'Chips' Channon: The Diaries*, runs to three volumes, the first (1918–38), published in 2021, the second (1938–43) and third (1943–57), in 2022.

Chaplin, Sir Charles Spencer (better known as **Charlie Chaplin**) (1889–1977). English film actor, director and composer, born in London. His absentee father, also **Charles Chaplin** (1863–1901), was a musical hall singer and alcoholic: his mother had fragile mental health. Charles Jr. went on the stage aged 8 and from 1906 acted with his half-brother

Sydney Chaplin (1885–1965), touring the US in 1910 and 1912 in one of Fred Karno's troupes. In 1913 he joined Mack *Sennett's Keystone Company in Los Angeles and in 1914 appeared in 35 films, mostly short slapsticks. Chaplin gradually evolved his character of the tramp or 'little man', with the costume, make-up and shuffling walk becoming universally recognisable after *The Tramp* (1915) which he wrote and directed for Essanay. He took artistic control of all his films from 1915, rejected slapstick, using the magnifying power of cinema to develop an individual style as a mime, mixing pathos and satire. By 1917 he had a salary of more than $US1 million and was an international cult figure. With D. W. *Griffith, Mary *Pickford and Douglas *Fairbanks he formed the United Artists Corporation in 1919. His best films were silent and include *The Immigrant* (1917), *Shoulder Arms* (1918), *The Kid* (1921), *The Gold Rush* (1925), *The Circus* (1928), *City Lights* (1931) and *Modern Times* (1936), defiantly rejected speech but used Chaplin's own music. His first talking film was *The Great Dictator* (1940), a satire on *Hitler, his exact contemporary. (They were born in the same week and Hitler resembled Chaplin's 'little man'.) After World War II Chaplin's radical views came under increasing political attack and in 1952 he left the US, living mainly in Switzerland. The last of his 82 films were *Monsieur Verdoux* (1947), *Limelight* (1952), *A King in New York* (1957) and *The Countess from Hong Kong* (1967). He married four times: his second wife was the actor **Paulette Goddard**, his fourth Oona O'Neill (the playwright's daughter), by whom he had eight children, including the actor **Geraldine Chaplin** (1944–).

Robinson, D., *Chaplin: His Life and Art*. 1985; Eyman, S., *Charlie Chaplin v. America*. 2023.

Chapman, George (1559–1634). English poet and translator. A prolific and popular playwright, he was admired by *Webster and *Jonson, his best known plays being the comedy, written with Jonson and *Marston, *Eastward Ho!* (1605), and the tragedy *Bussy d'Ambois* (1607), the story of a swashbuckling swordsman at the French court. But it is his translations of *Homer that have ensured his immortality (reinforced by John *Keats' famous sonnet). *The Iliad* began to appear in 1598 and was continued under the patronage of Henry, Prince of Wales (1609–11). *The Odyssey* was completed in 1614, and *The Whole Works of Homer* (1616) comprised both works. Though often inaccurate as a translation, since Chapman tended to expand the text to stress a moral issue, the work introduced Homer to many generations and so exercised enormous influence.

Spivack, C. K., *George Chapman*. 1967.

Char, René (1907–1988) French poet. Originally a Surrealist, and friend of *Camus and of *Picasso, *Braque and *Miró who illustrated his work, he wrote *Le Marteau sans maître* (1934), later set to music by *Boulez. He served in the Resistance 1942–45 and his *Oeuvres completes* appeared in 1983.

Charcot, Jean-Martin (1825–1893). French neurologist. He studied medicine in Paris, and became an intern at the Salpêtrière, Paris' largest hospital, in 1848. He became interested in the diseases of long-stay patients, such as arthritis, sclerosis, and other chronic nervous conditions. His medical interests ranged widely. He studied poliomyelitis and investigated liver and thyroid diseases. Later in his career he became more interested in the physiological roots of psychic behaviour. He supported the ideas of Hughlings *Jackson who believed that specific aspects of behaviour were controlled from particular local centres of the brain. His lectures on hysteria attracted wide attention, since, partly through the use of hypnosis, he was able to control the behaviour of hysterics by gesture and suggestion. *Freud was one of many who were highly impressed by Charcot's demonstrations of hysteria, for they suggested a world of the unconscious beyond the rational control of the subject. His son **Jean Baptiste Charcot** (1867–1936) led two major explorations of Antarctica.

Guillain, G., *J. M. Charcot.* 1959.

Chardin, Jean Baptiste Simeon (1699–1779). French painter. His still life pictures and domestic scenes follow the Dutch tradition and are notable for detail and simplicity and for the skill with which the natural appearance and texture of familiar objects, bread, fruit, an apron etc. are portrayed.

Rosenberg, P., *Chardin 1699–1779*. 1979.

Chardonnet, Hilaire Bernigaud, Comte de (1839–1924). French industrial chemist. He patented a cellulose nitrate-based fibre in 1884, and first exhibited rayon at the Paris Exposition of 1889.

Charlemagne (Karl der Grosse, Carolus Magnus, Charles the Great) (c.742–814). King of the Franks 768–814, King of the Lombards 781–814 and Emperor of the Romans 800–14. Grandson of *Charles Martel, probably born in Aachen, he and his brother, Carloman, jointly succeeded their father, *Pepin III ('the Short'). On his brother's death in 771, Charlemagne became sole ruler of the Franks and launched a vast expansion. He is regarded as the founder of the Carolingian dynasty. Germany, Bavaria and Saxony had been conquered by 808 and Christianity forced upon the people. At the request of Pope *Adrian I he took his army over the Alps to Italy, conquered Lombardy (773–74) and his son **Pepin** (777–810) was crowned as 'King of Italy' in 781. His first expedition to Spain, however, ended in failure and the death of his commander *Roland (the hero of romantic legend). But from 785 he systematically subdued north east Spain and in 801 captured Barcelona. He accomplished the conquest and forced conversion (791–96) of Pannonia and the kingdom

of the Avars (barbarian tribes in Hungary). By 800, Charlemagne was the supreme power in western Europe, and he and his counsellors, such as the English *Alcuin, wishing to emphasise an imaginary continuity between Charles, his empire and that of Rome, argued that the imperial throne was vacant owing to the crimes of the Byzantine empress *Irene. Having obtained the assent of Pope *Leo III he went to Rome, and on Christmas Day 800, was crowned as Emperor of the Romans (Imperator Romanorum) in the old St Peter's basilica. This definition linked the Roman empire of antiquity with a Christian community, but while it thus created a focus of loyalty it soon led to a struggle between empire and papacy as well as conflicts between imperial claims and feudal states and thus eventually impeded the national development of Germany and Italy such as was gradually taking place elsewhere. To rule his vast empire Charlemagne retained the old system of local government 'counties' governed by counts (comtes) but exercised control and secured a degree of uniformity through the famous 'Missi Dominici', palace officials sent on circuit, a system which became a feature of later medieval administration. Many legal reforms were effected by the issuing of ordinances, while the use of writing was encouraged to secure uniformity of administration. Although Charlemagne read little and never learned to write, he encouraged the foundation of monastic and episcopal schools, and from his court at Aachen (Aix-la-Chapelle) he stimulated the revival of arts and of letters known as the Carolingian Renaissance. His octagonal Palatinate Chapel in Aachen Cathedral, built in Byzantine style 796–805, became his burial place. His biographer, Einhard, gives a picture of a large, robust man, of great industry and natural talent. Though he lived simply he fully enjoyed the pleasures of the senses with a succession of three wives and many mistresses. His empire fell apart soon after his death and with it his dream of a united Europe.

The name 'Holy Roman Empire of the German Nation' was first used in 1254 but only formally adopted in 1512. Nevertheless, Charlemagne is usually listed as the first 'Holy Roman Emperor', although he never used the title and preferred to style himself 'most serene Augustus'. The word for 'king' in a number of languages (including Hungarian, Polish, Czech, Lithuanian, and Bulgarian) is derived from the name Karl.

Bullough, D. A., *The Age of Charlemagne*. 1965; Fried, J., *Charlemagne*. 2016; Nelson, J. L., *King and Emperor. A New Life of Charlemagne*. 2019.

Charles (1226–1285). Count of Anjou, and King of Sicily 1265–83. This ambitious ruler, the youngest son of *Louis VIII of France, became Count of Anjou in 1246, acquired Provence by marriage, supported the papal party in Italy against the imperialists and by his victories was able to accept the throne of Sicily (1265). He was planning to invade the Balkan peninsula, with a view to reviving the Latin empire of Constantinople, when in 1282 his Sicilian subjects signalled their revolt by the massacre of Frenchmen known as the Sicilian Vespers and by offering the throne to Peter of Aragon. Charles failed to re-establish himself though his descendants remained kings of Naples until 1435.

Charles (known as 'the Bold' or 'le Téméraire') (1433–1477). Duke of Burgundy. Son of *Philippe 'the Good', on his succession in 1467 he ruled extensive but scattered territories in France and the Low Countries and set out to unite them under a single form of rule. This brought him into collision with *Louis XI, King of France, the feudal overlord of his French lands. Charles, having supported a baronial revolt against Louis, induced him (1468) to come to an interview, imprisoned him at Peronne and exacted a crippling treaty. He then annexed the prince bishopric of Liege, and by peaceful or warlike means extended his power in Guelders, Alsace and elsewhere. Meanwhile by subsidy and subtle diplomacy Louis XI continued to oppose him, especially by inflaming Swiss fears. War followed and in 1476 Charles was totally defeated at Granson on Lake Neuchâtel. In the following year the Burgundians were again defeated by the Swiss outside Nancy and Charles was killed. He left no male heir and the bulk of the Burgundian inheritance passed, through his daughter Mary, who had married the emperor Maximilian, to the Habsburgs.

Charles (Carlos) **I** King of Spain *see* **Charles V**

Charles I (Charles Stuart) (1600–1649). King of England, Scotland and Ireland 1625–49. Born in Dumferline, Fife, son of James VI of Scotland (later *James I of England) and Anne of Denmark, in 1616, on the death of his elder brother, Henry, he became Prince of Wales and heir to the throne. Charles, like his father, was firmly under the influence of the Duke of *Buckingham, with whom in 1623 he made an undignified and futile expedition to Madrid to woo a Spanish princess. After his accession he married *Henrietta Maria, daughter of *Henri IV of France, a union which introduced a Roman Catholic influence at court, deeply alienating the growing body of Puritans. Buckingham's influence ended with his murder in 1628, but his last venture, an attempt to relieve the French Protestants in La Rochelle, was a fiasco that further discredited the king. Thus antagonised, Charles' first three parliaments failed to vote him adequate revenues and he attempted to raise money by an intensive and dubious use of the royal prerogative. In 1628, however, in return for a promise of funds, he assented to parliament's 'Petition of Right', which denounced the levying of forced loans and illegal taxes.

The greatest of royal art collectors and connoisseurs, he bought about 1500 pictures, including the Gonzaga collection from Mantua (1628–29) and was a patron of *Rubens and *Van Dyck. His

collection, sold after his execution, included paintings by *Leonardo, *Raphael, *Titian, *Mantegna and *Rembrandt. In 1629 Charles, still unable to work with parliament, dissolved it, and until 1640, ruled England with the help of Thomas Wentworth, Earl of *Strafford, an efficient but stern administrator, and William *Laud, Archbishop of Canterbury, whose attempt to impose a uniform liturgy roused even greater hostility than the forced exactions of the civil government. Indeed, it was the need to finance an unsuccessful war undertaken to impose a uniform prayer book on Presbyterian Scotland that forced Charles in 1640 to summon first the 'Short' and then the 'Long' parliaments. In an attempt at conciliation he even allowed the impeachment and execution of his loyal minister Strafford (1641), an act of treachery which brought him no respite. In January 1642, now desperate, he tried to arrest five of the leading opposition members in the House of Commons (*Pym, *Hampden, Holles, Strode and Haselrig). This act contributed to a complex situation which produced, in August 1642, a civil war. In the beginning the royalists (Cavaliers) had some successes but the possession of London by the parliamentarians (Roundheads) and the training of a New Model Army by *Cromwell turned the scales. After his last crushing defeat at Naseby, Charles surrendered to the Scots (1646) and in the following January was handed over by them to the English parliament, soon to fall into the lands of the army leaders. At first his captivity was not strict and he was able to communicate with his friends abroad and even to negotiate a treaty with the Scots, which brought about the second Civil War. But the royalists' defeat strengthened the extremists. Charged with 'high treason and other high crimes', he was tried in Westminster Hall (20 January) before a specially constituted court, refusing to recognise its jurisdiction or defend himself. Beheaded in Whitehall (30 January), he was remembered for his courage as 'the martyr king'.

Hibbert, C., *Charles I*. 1968; Reeve, L. J., *Charles I and the Road to Personal Rule*. 1989.

Charles I. Emperor of Austria-Hungary *see* **Karl I**

Charles I and II. Kings of Romania *see* **Carol I and II**

Charles I, II, III and **IV**. Spanish Kings *see* **Carlos I, II, III** and **IV**

Charles II (known as 'the Bald') (823–877). King of the west Franks (Francia, later France) and Emperor 875–877. The death of his father, *Louis I ('the Pious'), son and successor of *Charlemagne, was followed by a prolonged struggle for power with Charles' elder brother, *Lothair, ended by the Treaty of Verdun (843), by which Charles became the ruler of the western part of the empire. On the death (875) of his nephew Louis II he invaded Italy and was crowned king and emperor by Pope John VIII. The disorders of his reign were increased by the Normans, who sacked Paris and Bordeaux.

Charles II (Charles Stuart) (1630–1685). King of England, Scotland and Ireland 1660–85. Son of *Charles I, born in London, he took some part in the Civil War but in 1646 made an adventurous escape first to Jersey and then to France. After his father's execution he came to terms with the Scots and was crowned at Scone in 1651, but his invasion of England, with Scottish troops, was routed at Worcester by *Cromwell (1651). Charles, after hiding in an oak tree at Boscobel, escaped to the Continent, and established a makeshift court first in France and then in Cologne, Bruges, Antwerp and Brussels. In 1658 Cromwell died and the protectorate soon collapsed. Early in 1660 General George *Monck intervened from Scotland and eventually a convention parliament, called under his auspices, invited Charles to return to England on the basis of his Declaration of Breda. This offered assurances of a settlement generally acceptable to 'the political nation'. In May 1660 Charles landed at Dover and, to the joy of almost all, the monarchy was restored. Charles' main preoccupation was to retain the throne and 'never go on his travels again'. He never therefore pressed a point at issue to extremes and used his very considerable intelligence to evade a direct challenge. Thus he tried to thwart the 'Clarendon Code' (named for his chief minister Edward Hyde, Earl of *Clarendon), which imposed restrictions on dissenters and Protestants and was opposed to his natural tolerance, by a Declaration of Indulgence; this, however, he had to withdraw. But he welcomed the war with the Dutch (whom he disliked) by which the English acquired New Holland, including New York, and much trade. The plan of his next ministry, the Cabal (*Clifford, *Arlington, *Buckingham, Ashley—*see* *Shaftesbury, *Lauderdale), to create a Protestant alliance in northern Europe against the French, he evaded by a secret treaty (1670) with *Louis XIV. In return for subsidies Charles helped France against Holland but failed to fulfil a clause that he should declare himself a Roman Catholic. This discretion was the more necessary because alarm was caused in the late 1670s by the 'discovery' by Titus *Oates of an alleged Roman Catholic plot. Having with patience and ingenuity discredited Oates, and defeating an attempt to have his Catholic brother and heir James, Duke of York (*James II) excluded from the throne, Charles came into calmer waters. The French subsidies had eased his financial necessities, but the proceeds of customs and excise granted by parliament and swollen by increasing trade enabled him to rule without summoning parliament, which he had dissolved in 1681. Thus by tortuous methods Charles contrived to guide the country in the way he thought it should go, also encouraging science (the Royal Society dates from 1662) and interesting himself in the navy, the growth of the colonies and cultural activities. His main pursuit, however, was pleasure. His wife *Catherine of Braganza, brought him as a dowry Tangier and Bombay, but none of her children survived. In his gay and licentious court

there were at least 12 children by eight colourful mistresses, including Lucy Walters, mother of the Duke of *Monmouth; Barbara Villiers, who became Lady Castlemaine and Duchess of *Cleveland; Nell *Gwyn the actor; and the fascinating intriguer Louise de Keroualle, Duchess of *Portsmouth. His intelligence, wit and amoral nature set the tone of the Restoration period as a whole. After an apoplectic fit, probably due to uraemia, he became a Catholic, although his fervour may be doubted, urged his successor to look after his mistresses ('Let not poor Nelly starve') and died.

Kenyon, J. P., *The Stuarts: A Study in English Kingship*. 2nd ed. 1967; Fraser, A., *King Charles II*. 1979.

Charles III ('le Gros' or 'the Fat') (839–888). Emperor of the West 881–87, King of the Franks 881–88. Great-grandson of *Charlemagne, an epileptic, thought to be subject to demonic possession, he ruled, in theory, much of France, Germany and northern Italy. Deposed, his empire was broken up, never to be restored and he soon died.

Herr, R., *The Eighteenth Century Revolution in Spain*. 1958.

Charles III (Charles Philip Arthur George Mountbatten-Windsor) (1948–). King of the United Kingdom and Head of the Commonwealth 2022– . Born in London and the eldest son of Queen *Elizabeth II of Great Britain and the Duke of *Edinburgh, he was educated at Cheam School, Gordonstoun, Geelong Grammar ('Timbertop') and Trinity College, Cambridge (MA), being the first British royal with a degree. Prince of Wales 1958–2022, he served briefly in the Royal Navy, then pursued active and controversial views on the environment, climate change, farming, architecture and urban planning. In July 1981 he married Lady Diana Spencer (*Diana) and the couple had two sons, *William (1982–) and *Harry (1984–). They separated in December 1992 and after an increasingly public, and bitter, controversy agreed on a divorce (1996). The situation was complicated by Diana's sudden death in an accident in Paris (1997). In her Jubilee year (2002), his mother awarded him the OM. In April 2005 he married Camilla Rosemary Parker-Bowles (née Shand) (1947–) who took the title of Duchess of Cornwall, became LG in January 2022, and **Camilla**, Queen consort, in September 2022. Charles, at 73, was the oldest British sovereign to succeed.

Dimbleby, J. *The Prince of Wales.* 1994; Holden, A., *Prince Charles*. 1999; Bower, T., *Rebel Prince: The Power, Passion and Defiance of Prince Charles*. 2018.

Charles V (known as 'the Wise') (1338–1380). King of France 1364–80. He was regent from 1356 during the English captivity of his father, John II, and in 1358 suppressed the Jacquerie, a peasant revolt. By the reorganisation of the army, the administration and finances, he was able to achieve his ambition of restoring his kingdom after its defeats by the English under *Edward III. So successful were his military efforts that by the end of his reign the English had been driven out of all but a few fortresses and their ancient patrimony Guienne, around Bordeaux.

Charles V (Karl von Habsburg y Trastámara, **Carlos** in Spain) (1500–1558). King of Spain (as Carlos I) 1516–56 and Holy Roman Emperor (as Karl V) 1519–56. Son of the Austrian archduke *Felipe (Philipp), later king of Castile, and Juana, daughter of *Ferdinand and *Isabella, he was born in Ghent and brought up in Flanders by his aunt Margaret of Savoy, daughter of his grandfather, the emperor *Maximilian (*Katherine of Aragon was his aunt). His happy boyhood owed much to his tutor, Adriaan Boeyens, later Pope *Adrian VI. Charles was declared of age in 1515, and on the death of Maximilian (1519), elected emperor, defeating *François I of France, after heavy bribes (largely financed by the *Fuggers) which included the Spanish conquests in the New World and the Aragonese possessions in southern Italy. He kept his mother, nominally Queen of Castile and Leon, confined until her death in 1555. At the Battle of Pavia (1525), imperial forces decisively defeated a French army and François was taken prisoner. Charles was a constant traveller, visiting England twice, France four times, but spent most time in the Low Countries. In 1526 he married Isabella of Portugal. In his wars with France, although Charles was on the whole victorious, the final result (by the Treaty of Crepy, 1544, Burgundy remained in French lands while France relinquished its claims in Italy) was hardly worth nearly 25 years of struggle. A more vital matter with which Charles had to contend was the Reformation in Germany. Charles was a devout Catholic but in this matter his aim and interest was to come to some sort of terms with *Luther's movement to prevent the weakening of the empire by a prolonged religious struggle. The Peace of Augsburg (1555), though it satisfied neither side, was probably the best that could be obtained: it adopted the compromise formula *cuius regio eius religio* (i.e. each state was to adopt the religion of its ruler). Charles was a patron of *Titian and the father of Don *Juan (John) of Austria. After early difficulties Charles consolidated his rule in Spain and the conquests in the New World were among the many signs of the country's advance to greatness. To him in his last years it proved a place of refuge. He spent only 18 years of his life in Spain and never mastered the language. In the autumn of 1555 he astonished all by announcing the abdication of his powers. The imperial crown and the Habsburg lands in east Europe were to pass to his brother *Ferdinand, and the Netherlands and the Spanish throne to his son *Felipe, the husband of Queen *Mary of England. Crippled by gout, he retired to a monastery at Yuste in the north of Spain.

Parker, G., *Emperor: A New Life of Charles V*. 2019.

Charles VI (Charles de Valois) (1368–1422). King of France 1380–1422. Son of *Charles V 'the Wise', he suffered from long periods of insanity. In 1392 he killed five of his own men in a psychotic episode at Le Mans. He suffered from the 'glass delusion' and wore clothing reinforced with iron rods to prevent himself from shattering. His reign saw a continuous struggle for power, at first in council and (from 1411) in the field, between factions (Burgundians and Annagnacs) headed by the royal dukes of Burgundy and Orléans. *Henry V of England seized the opportunity to resume the Hundred Years War, won the Battle of Agincourt (1415), and in 1420 was able to secure the Treaty of Troyes, by which Charles' daughter *Catherine was to marry Henry V and their son was to succeed to the French throne. Meanwhile Henry was the virtual ruler of France.

Charles (Karl) **VI** *see* **Karl** (Charles) **VI**

Charles VII (Karl Albrecht) (1697–1745). Holy Roman Emperor 1742–45. Head of the Wittelsbach dynasty, he was Duke of Bavaria 1720–45. When *Charles VI died without male heirs he claimed the Habsburg lands, provoking the War of the Austrian Succession (1740–48). He was elected Emperor as a puppet of France and Prussia.

Charles VII (Charles de Valois) (1403–1461). King of France 1422–61. On the death of his father, *Charles VI, he had to contest the right to the throne with his nephew *Henry VI of England, the legal successor under the Treaty of Troyes. He fought half-heartedly against the English in France from his own limited territory in the centre and south until the heroic efforts of *Joan of Arc stirred him to greater action. After her capture of Orléans (1429) he was crowned at Reims and secured recognition as national leader. After the Burgundians joined Charles' cause in 1435, Paris was recaptured. By 1450 the English had been driven out of Normandy, and by 1453 nothing but Calais remained of their vast possessions in France. Charles was not a heroic figure but should be credited for the thorough administrative organisation which enabled these successes.

Charles VIII (1470–1498). King of France 1483–98. Son of *Louis XI, the reign began with the regency of his sister Anne of Beaujeu, who secured his marriage (1491) to *Anne of Brittany to ensure the acquisition of that duchy. Charles revived the Anjou claim to Naples (*Charles, Count of Anjou) and, allied with the Sforzas of Milan, invaded Italy. Although he captured Naples easily (1495) he was forced to retreat to France after a few weeks by the forces of the League of Venice (the papacy, Venice, Spain and the Empire). He died at Amboise after striking his head on a beam.

Charles IX (1550–1574). King of France 1560–74. The weak and indecisive son of *Henri II and *Catherine de'Medici, the effective ruler throughout, his reign was marked by a fierce religious struggle between the Roman Catholics and Huguenots that culminated in the massacre of St Bartholomew's Day, 1572.

Charles X (Charles Philippe de Bourbon) (1757–1836). King of France 1824–30. Younger brother of *Louis XVI and *Louis XVIII, he was known as the Comte d'Artois, left France in 1789 on the outbreak of the Revolution, living in Savoy, Turin, Trier, then Koblenz. He escaped to Great Britain in 1792 and lived in Edinburgh and London with his mistress until *Napoléon's first abdication in 1814. After the Bourbon restoration he led the ultra-royalists and, becoming king on the death of Louis XVIII, tried to revive absolutism. The result was the Revolution of 1830 after which he came once more to England, his cousin *Louis Philippe displaced him, with the new title of 'King of the French'. Charles then lived in exile in Dorset, Edinburgh and Prague. He died of cholera in Gorizia (then in Austria-Hungary, now in Italy) and was buried there. His son, **Louis Antoine, Duc d'Angouleme** (1775–1844) married Marie Therese, daughter of *Louis XVI and claimed the throne himself as Louis XIX.

Charles IX, X, XI and **XII, Kings of Sweden** *see* **Karl IX, X, XI** and **XII**

Charles XIV John (Karl Johan) (King of Sweden) *see* **Bernadotte, Jean Baptiste Jules**

Charles, Jacques Alexandre César (1746–1823). French physicist. He gave public demonstrations of *Franklin's electrical experiments and eventually became professor of physics at the Conservatoire des Arts et Metiers, Paris. Data obtained by him on the expansion of gases were added to by *Gay Lussac, who devised the law (called Charles' Law) which states that the volume of gas at constant pressure is directly proportional to its absolute temperature. Charles was also the first to use hydrogen instead of hot air to lift balloons.

Charles Albert *see* **Carlo Alberto**

Charles Edward Stuart *see* **Stuart**

Charles Martel (c.688–741). Frankish soldier and administrator. As 'mayor of the palace' under the decadent Merovingian kings of Austrasia (Rhineland) and Neustria (northern France), he became de facto ruler of the Franks. He extended his authority over lands now France, the Netherlands and the Rhineland and intervened in Bavaria. He gained his nickname Martel ('the hammer') by his great victory at Poitiers (732), the first decisive check to the Muslim advance into Europe. His rule marked the beginning of Carolingian power: his grandson was *Charlemagne.

Charles ('the Young Pretender') *see* **Stuart, Charles Edward**

Charlotte Augusta (1796–1817). British princess. Only child of the future *George IV, she married in 1816 *Leopold of Saxe-Coburg, later king of the Belgians. Her death in childbirth re-opened the question of succession to the English throne and her unmarried uncles were persuaded to marry. Her uncle Edward, Duke of *Kent became the father of the future Queen *Victoria.

Charlotte (Sophia) (1744–1818). British queen consort 1761–1818. Daughter of the Duke of Mecklenburg-Strelitz, she arrived in London on 8 September 1761, met *George III for the first time and married him six hours later. She gave birth to 15 children, 13 of them surviving into adulthood, including *George IV, *William IV and Edward, Duke of *Kent (whose daughter became Queen Victoria). She was a devoted, but reclusive, consort, passive about things she could not change, but widely read, an enthusiast for gardens and a pupil of J. C. *Bach.

Charpentier, Gustave (1860–1956). French composer. Encouraged by *Massenet to take up composition he won the *Prix de Rome* in 1887. He is best known for his opera *Louise* (1900), for which he also wrote the libretto, and the orchestral work *Impressions of Italy*.

Charteris, Leslie (Leslie Bowyer Yin) (1907–1993). American thriller writer, born in Singapore, resident in Britain. He created 'the Saint', a charmingly ruthless detective called Simon Templar, the hero of most of his books and of film, television, radio and comic strip series based on them.

Chase, Salmon Portland (1808–1873). American lawyer and politician. He gained his reputation as an attorney for fugitive slaves, was US senator from Ohio 1849–55 and 1861 and Governor of Ohio 1855–59. He sought the 1860 Republican nomination for president, but was regarded as too extreme on the slavery issue and lost to *Lincoln. As US Secretary of the Treasury 1861–64 he raised unprecedented taxes and established a national banking system. He resigned to pursue the presidency again, failed, and Lincoln made him Chief Justice of the US Supreme Court 1864–73. He presided with notable fairness at Andrew *Johnson's impeachment (March–May 1868).

Chase, Stuart (1888–1985). American social scientist. Educated at the Massachusetts Institute of Technology and at Harvard, he worked as a research economist in the *Wilson and *Roosevelt administrations. He wrote many books and articles on the 'economics of plenty' and was in a sense a precursor to *Galbraith. Among his works are *The Economy of Abundance* (1934), *Live and Let Live* (1960) and *The Most Probable World* (1968).

Chastelard, Pierre de Boscosel de (1540–1564). French poet. Grandson of the Chevalier *Bayard, at the French court of *François II he fell romantically in love with *Mary, the future Queen of Scots, and accompanied her to Scotland. Many of his poems were addressed to her. Found once hiding in her bedchamber he was forgiven, but later he repeated the offence and was hanged. The story was dramatised by *Swinburne.

Chateaubriand, François René, Vicomte de (1768–1848). French author, soldier and diplomat, born at St Malo. He spent most of his lonely childhood in Brittany, was a cavalry officer at the age of 18 and in 1791 went to North America which he described in his *Voyage en Amerique* (1827). Opposed to the Revolution he joined the emigrant army on the frontier, was wounded and lived in poverty in England (1794–99). He returned to France to hold minor diplomatic posts under *Napoléon but soon became anti-Bonapartist. After the restoration of *Louis XVIII he held ambassadorial posts in Berlin (1821) and London (1822) and was Foreign Minister 1823–24. After the revolution of 1830, which replaced *Charles X by *Louis Philippe, he played little part in public life. About the time of his return to France he abandoned his scepticism and wrote his great apologia *Le Cenie du Christianisme* (1802), which not only defended the religious aspects of Christianity but also its effects on art and architecture, literature and institutions. In advance he published with great success an episode intended for the book *Atala* (1801), a highly coloured story of a Native American girl convert and her tragic love. *René*, extracted from the great work and published separately (1805), presents a passionate, disillusioned, egotistical Byronic young man (in fact Chateaubriand himself), irresistible to those who initiated the French Romantic movement. Perhaps his greatest work was the autobiographical *Memoires d 'Outre Tombe* (published in six volumes between 1848 and 1902). Madame *Récamier was the best known of his many mistresses.

Châtelet-Lomont, Gabrielle Émilie (née Le Tonnelier de Breteuil), **Marquise de** (1706–1749). French mathematician, philosopher and translator. Educated at home, possibly by *Fontenelle, she translated *Newton's *Principia*, corresponded with *Leibniz, *Euler and *Bernoulli. *Voltaire lived with her 1733–38. She proposed the hypothesis of the conservation of total energy.

Chatham, 1st Earl of *see* **Pitt, William** ('the Elder')

Chatterji, Bambin Chandza (1838–1894). Indian author. He revolutionised Indian literature by being the first to write novels following the European pattern devoted to Indian themes and in a native language (Bengali). The song *Bande Mataram* originally a poem in his novel *Amanda Math* (1882) was adopted as the national anthem of the Republic of India.

Chatterton, Thomas (1752–1770). English poet, born in Bristol. Posthumous son of a schoolmaster, he read voraciously as a boy and began concocting

pseudo-antique poetry. At the age of 17 he sent to Horace *Walpole manuscripts purported to be the work of a 15th-century monk, Thomas Rowley. Walpole accepted them as genuine at first but later rejected them, and they are now known to have been invented by Chatterton. In 1770 he went to London and in a few months produced an amazing amount of work, including satires, political essays, and the *Ballade of Charatie*. The death of his patron, the Lord Mayor William Beckford, and the increasingly frequent rejection of his manuscripts brought him to despair. At last, penniless and starving, he poisoned himself in his lodgings. The mock antique was regarded in that age not as forgery but as a semi-legitimate literary form (cf. *Macpherson's Ossianic poems) and his rhythms and general approach to poetry were remarkably modern. The tragic boy poet became a literary hero romanticised by *Keats, *Wordsworth, *Coleridge, *Shelley and *Rossetti, and controversy about the genuineness of the Rowley poems continued well into the 19th century.

Chatwin, (Charles) **Bruce** (1940–1989). British travel writer, novelist and photographer. He worked for Sotheby's in London until 1966, then studied archaeology in Edinburgh and joined the *Sunday Times* as a travel writer. His travel books were *In Patagonia* (1977), *The Songlines* (1987), a study of Australian Indigenous creation myths, and a posthumous collection *What Am I Doing Here?* (1990). His novels include *On the Black Hill* (1982, later filmed) and *Utz* (1988). He died of AIDS.

Chaucer, Geoffrey (c.1340–c.1400). English poet, courtier, bureaucrat, diplomat and scrap metal collector, probably born in London. Son of a rich vintner, the Black Death occurred during his early childhood. About 1356 he became a page in the household of Lionel, Duke of Clarence. He fought in what became known as 'the Hundred Years' War' in France (1359–60), in which he was captured in Rheims and ransomed for £16. In 1366 he married Philippa de Roet, a lady-in-waiting to Philippa of Hainault, King *Edward III's queen, and sister of Catherine Swynford who became *John of Gaunt's third wife. He entered the king's household in 1367.

After Edward's death in 1377, Chaucer served in the court of *Richard II until the king's deposition in 1399 (and, later, murder) by Bolingbroke (*Henry IV), John of Gaunt's son. His wife had died in 1387. He travelled to France and Italy on seven diplomatic or commercial missions, may have met *Boccaccio and *Petrarch, and also visited Spain and Flanders. He was comptroller of customs in London (1374–86), a knight of the shire (that is, Member of Parliament) for Kent (1386) and clerk of works at the royal palaces (1389–91). On the accession of Henry IV, after some delay, his pension was renewed and he spent the remaining months of his life in comparative comfort. He had a deep interest in science, especially astronomy.

It is assumed that Chaucer died suddenly because the final editing of *The Canterbury Tales* is incomplete, the text is sometimes inconsistent and no contemporary record of his death has survived. Claimed to have been originally buried in Westminster Abbey because he lived in the close, in 1556 his remains were said to have been transferred to a larger tomb in the centre of what is now called 'Poet's Corner' and the new gravestone is the earliest record of a date of death. Its cause is unknown and murder has been suggested. He left no will and there is no evidence of what happened to his estate. However, his son **Thomas Chaucer** (c.1367–1434) was appointed Chief Butler by Henry IV, sat in 14 Parliaments, was five times Speaker of the House of Commons and died rich.

Chaucer is regarded as one of the greatest English poets.

His works may be divided into three periods. In the first, contemporary French influence was strong: *The Book of the Duchess*, and his part of the translation entitled *The Romaunt of the Rose.* In the second (c.1372–86), the Italian influence of *Dante and Boccaccio was apparent: *Troilus and Criseyde*, *The Parlement of Foules*, *The Legend of Good Women* and *The House of Fame*. To the final period belongs his last and greatest work *The Canterbury Tales*, stories told by a party of 30 pilgrims, of all social classes—knight, miller, cook, wife of Bath, friar, merchant, doctor etc.—journeying to the tomb of Thomas *Becket at Canterbury. 'Here is God's plenty', *Dryden wrote of the work. Written in rhyming couplets, 17,000 lines in total, the stories present a vivid picture of life in the Middle Ages. A masterpiece by any standard, though incomplete, *The Canterbury Tales* is also the first major work written in the vernacular (Middle English), and one of the first to be printed, by William *Caxton, in 1478 and 1483.

While other contemporaries (*Langland, *Gower) wrote major works in English, Chaucer's influence was far greater and he made the first recorded use of about 2,000 words, including 'significant', 'session', 'superstitious', 'universe', 'galaxy', 'funeral', 'humiliation', 'moral', 'outrageous' and 'householder.'

Robinson, F. N. (ed.), *Chaucer: Complete Works*. 2nd ed. 1959; Rowland, B. (ed.), *Companion to Chaucer Studies*. 1968; Jones, T. et al., *Who Murdered Chaucer?: A Medieval Mystery*. 2003; Turner, M., *Chaucer: A European Life*. 2019.

Chausson, (Amédée) **Ernest** (1855–1899). French composer. Trained as a lawyer, he became a pupil of *Franck and *Massenet. His romantic but melancholy works include a symphony (1890), *Poème* for violin and orchestra (1896), chamber works and songs. He was killed in a bicycle accident.

Chauvel, Sir Harry (Henry George) (1865–1945). Australian soldier, born in New South Wales. In World War I, he served in Egypt, Gallipoli, and his Light Horse Brigade defeated the Turks at Beersheba

(October 1917) in the last great cavalry charge in history. Chief of the General Staff 1923–30, he was promoted to full general, together with John *Monash, in November 1929.

Hill, A., *Chauvel of the Light Horse*. 1978.

Chauvin, Nicholas (c.1770–1820?). French soldier. His exaggerated expressions of loyalty to *Napoléon and vain-glorious patriotism resulted in the coining of the word 'chauvinism'.

Chávez (y Ramírez), **Carlos** (Antonio de Padua) (1899–1978). Mexican composer, conductor and teacher. Founder of the Mexican Symphony Orchestra (1928), his works include five symphonies and several operas. He was much influenced by Mexican folk music but also followed contemporary trends, e.g. abstract music. He was Norton Professor of Poetics at Harvard 1958–59.

Chávez Frias, Hugo Rafael (1954–2013). Venezuelan politician. He served as an army officer and was imprisoned 1992–94 for leading an armed coup. He founded the United Socialist Party and was President of Venezuela 1999–2013, working closely with Cuba and attracting US suspicion for his radical measures, including land reform. In 2012 he had eight months' treatment for cancer in Cuba.

Cheever, John (1912–1982). American novelist and short-story writer. Many of his stories appeared in the *New Yorker*, and his highly praised novels include *The Wapshot Chronicle* (1958), *Bullet Park* (1969) and *Falconer* (1977).

Chekhov, Anton Pavlovich (1860–1904). Russian dramatist and short-story writer, born in Taganrog. Grandson of a liberated serf and son of a shopkeeper, he studied medicine at Moscow University (supporting himself by writing about 600 comic sketches), but later he practised little. Through the help of the publisher Aleksei Suvorin, with whom he travelled in Italy, he achieved early success with his stories and in 1887 his first play *Ivanov* was produced. In 1892 he went to live with his family at Malikhovo near Moscow and helped in the cholera outbreak of 1892–93. In 1897, threatened by tuberculosis, he went to the Crimea, and from 1900 lived mostly at Yalta, where he became friends with *Tolstoy and *Gorki. After several false starts as a dramatist, he achieved great success with *Stanislavsky's revival (1898) of *The Seagull* (1895), which had previously failed. His masterpieces *Uncle Vanya* (1901), *The Three Sisters* (1901) and *The Cherry Orchard* (1904) followed. In the last two, leading parts were played by **Olga Knipper** (1868–1959), whom he married in 1901. In his plays, as in his short stories, he used an impressionistic technique, eschewing the dramatic and the obvious and, while portraying the lives of ordinary people, hinting always at the absurdity, beauty and tragedy of life. He died in Badenweiler, Germany. His funeral was Chekhovian: the coffin was taken to Moscow by train in a refrigerated car intended for oysters, and the funeral procession was confused with a general's, accompanied by a military band. His heroes are almost always the gentle and the sensitive, at the mercy of forces which are too strong for them. His influence on European short-story writers has been immense.

Troyat, H., *Chekhov*. 1986; Rayfield, D., *Anton Chekhov: A Life*. 2000; Malcolm, J., *Reading Chekhov. A Critical Journey*. 2002; Bartlett, R., *Chekhov. Scenes from a Life*. 2004.

Chelmsford, 1st Viscount, Frederic John Napier Thesiger (1868–1933). English administrator. Educated at Oxford, he became a barrister, inherited a barony in 1905 and served as Governor of Queensland 1905–09 and New South Wales 1909–13. A captain in his regiment in India when unexpectedly appointed as Viceroy 1916–21, he was identified with the 'Montagu-Chelmsford' reforms (1918), under which dyarchy (i.e. a division of the functions and instruments of government between the centre and the provinces) was adopted as a limited constitutional reform for India, but opposed by *Gandhi. In April 1919, British troops under R. E. H. *Dyer massacred civilians at Amritsar (Jallianwala Bagh) but Chelmsford was slow to respond. In 1924, although a Conservative, he accepted appointment as First Lord of the Admiralty in the first Labour Government. He was Warden of All Souls, Oxford 1932–33.

Chen Duxiu (Ch'en Tu-hsiu) (1879–1942). Chinese Communist politician. In 1915 he became first editor of the periodical *New Youth* which launched a violent attack on traditional Chinese government and society, and promoted Western philosophies. He is regarded as the main inspiration of the May Fourth Movement, a social and intellectual revolution sparked off by a students' rising on 4 May 1919, resulting in his imprisonment. On his release, greatly impressed by the Soviet revolution in Russia he became a Marxist. He founded the Chinese Communist Party in Shanghai in July 1921 and became its first Secretary-General. He was dismissed at the instigation of the international Comintern in 1927 because he opposed its insistence that the CCP cooperate with the Nationalist Guomintang. Expelled from the CCP in 1927, his direct influence came to an end, but he continued to teach a highly individual version of Marxism which incorporated some democratic ideas. The Nationalists jailed him 1932–37.

Chow Tse-tsung, D., *The May Fourth Movement. Intellectual Revolution in Modern China*. 1960; Feigon, L., *Chen Duxiu, Founder of the Chinese Communist Party*. 1983.

Cheney, Dick (Richard Bruce) (1941–). American Republican politician, born in Nebraska. A Congressman from Wyoming 1978–89, he served as US Secretary of Defense 1989–93 under George H. W. *Bush and Vice President of the US 2001–09

under George W. *Bush. His daughter **Liz** (Elizabeth Lynne) **Cheney** (1966–), was a Member of the US Congress 2017–23 and chaired the House Republican Conference 2019–21. Vice chair of the Congressional committee to investigate the 6 January 2021 attack on the Capitol, she voted for *Trump's second impeachment, and lost Republican re-endorsement in August 2022.

Gellman, B., *Angler: The Cheney Vice Presidency*. 2014.

Chénier, André Marie de (1762–1794). French poet, born in Constantinople. The son of a diplomat, he hailed the French Revolution on its outbreak, but became disgusted with its excesses and in one ode extolled Charlotte *Corday. He was arrested in 1794 and guillotined on *Robespierre's order only two days before the Terror ended. His poems, *Élégies*, *Bucoliques*, *Odes*, *Hymnes* and *Iambes*, all follow classical models. Umberto Giordano wrote an opera based on his life. His brother, **Marie Joseph Chénier** (1764–1811), was a poet and dramatist. Fully committed to the Revolution he obtained fame for his revolutionary poetry, especially the *Chant du départ*.

Cheops *see* **Khufu**

Cherenkov, Pavel Alekseivich (1904–1990). Russian physicist. In 1958 he shared the Nobel Prize for Physics (with Tamm and Frank) for the discovery that light waves radiate from a charged particle passing through a transparent material at speeds greater than the speed of light through such material. This 'Cherenkov radiation' is used to detect charged particles and plot their course and speed.

Chernenko, Konstantin Ustinovich (1911–1985). Russian Communist politician. Son of a peasant, he joined the CPSU in 1931, became an official in Moldavia, worked for the Central Committee 1956–65 and for the presidium 1965–84. He was a Central Committee member 1971–85, joining the Politburo in 1978. On the death of Yuri *Andropov (Jan. 1984) he was elected to succeed him as nominee of the Brehzhnevite anti-reform group, defeating M.S. *Gorbachev. He died after 13 months as First Secretary of the CPSU and President of the USSR.

Chernomyrdin, Viktor Stepanovich (1938–2010). Russian politician. He worked in the oil and gas industry until 1985, became a minister 1985–92, Deputy Prime Minister 1992, and Prime Minister 1992–98.

Chernyshevsky, Nikolai Gavrilovich (1828–1889). Russian political philosopher and utopian socialist, born in Saratov. Son of a priest and educated in St Petersburg, he was influenced by *Herzen, *Belinsky and *Feuerbach, and in turn influenced *Lenin, especially with his novel *What Is To Be Done?* (1863). He spent years in prison and Siberian exile and inspired the Russian populist (*Narodnik*) movement. *Dostoevsky attacked him.

Cherubini, (Maria) **Luigi Carlo Zenobio Salvatore** (1760–1842). Italian composer, born in Florence. He lived in Paris from 1788, wrote much religious music in his early life and this, with chamber music, occupied him almost exclusively during his later years. His reputation rests upon his operatic work, and *Beethoven (oddly) thought him the greatest of his contemporaries in this field. He wrote 29 operas including *Medée* (1797) and *Anacreon* (1803). To the opera comique he introduced a romantic interest and an exciting plot, though the music itself remained classical in form and rather austere. Cherubini directed the Paris Conservatoire 1821–42, and influenced many French composers, although infuriating *Berlioz. His friend *Ingres painted an outstanding portrait (1841).

Deane, B., *Cherubini*. 1965.

Cherwell, Frederick Alexander Lindemann, 1st Viscount (1886–1957). British physicist and scientific advisor, born in Baden-Baden. His father was German (naturalised as British), his mother American. He studied in Germany and worked on low temperature physics with *Nernst. In World War I, as director of the experimental laboratory at Farnborough, he made a personal and practical test in the air of his theory of how to bring an aeroplane out of a spin. Professor of experimental philosophy at Oxford 1919–57, he upgraded the Clarendon Laboratory. The close friend and scientific advisor of Winston *Churchill, he was reactionary on social policy, strongly supporting eugenics, but acute on German rearmament. Churchill loaded him with honours: baron (1941), PC (1943), CH (1953), viscount (1956) and he served in government as Paymaster-General 1942–45 and 1951–53. He advocated mass bombings of German working class houses, asserting that it would destroy morale, and was central to failure to relieve the 1943 famine in Bengal. Sceptical about radar and German V1 and V2 rockets, he was loathed by his scientific contemporaries.

Hastings, M., *Bomber Command*. 1999.

Cheshire, (Geoffrey) **Leonard, Baron Cheshire** (1917–1992). British airman and social worker. The son of an Oxford don, he joined the RAF in World War II, flew bombers in over 100 missions, was promoted to group captain and awarded the VC, DSO (2 bars) and DFC. In August 1945 he was an official observer when the US Air Force dropped an atomic bomb on Nagasaki. After retiring from the RAF in 1946 he devoted himself to establishing the Leonard Cheshire Foundation homes for the sick and incurable, aided by his wife **Sue Ryder** (1923–2000), later **Baroness Ryder of Warsaw**. By 1990 there were 270 homes in 50 countries. He received the OM in 1981 and a peerage in 1991.

Braddon, R. *Cheshire VC*. 1954.

Chesterfield, Philip Dormer Stanhope, 4th Earl of (1694–1773). English statesman and man of letters. As Lord Stanhope he was an MP 1715–23. After inheriting the earldom (1726) he was Ambassador to the Netherlands 1728–32 and later held a succession of high offices. A friend of *Pope, *Swift, *Bolingbroke and *Voltaire, he took an active interest in scientific matters, but is best remembered for his letters to his illegitimate son **Philip Stanhope** (1732–1768). They are witty, elegant and cynical, and are marked by great shrewdness of observation—women, manners and education being the constantly recurring themes.

Chesterton, G(ilbert) **K**(eith) (1874–1936). English author, critic, polemicist and broadcaster, born in London. Educated at St Paul's School he then studied art at the Slade. But art was always secondary to letters and he wrote regular articles for many newspapers and magazines. In 1901 he married Frances Blogg and they were mutually supportive, but sexless, ever after. He is best remembered as the creator of the detective priest Father Brown, who figured in several collections of semi-philosophical detective stories beginning with *The Innocence of Father Brown* (1911) and became a popular television series. His novels, *The Napoleon of Notting Hill* (1904), *The Man Who Was Thursday* (1908) and *The Flying Inn* (1914), combine fantasy with social comment. He also wrote biographies of *St Francis of Assisi, *St Thomas Aquinas, *Browning, *Dickens and G. B. *Shaw.

He had a strong antipathy for the squalor of industrialism and disliked both capitalism and socialism, yearning, like his great friend Hilaire *Belloc (whose books he amusingly illustrated), for a return to the distributivist economics of the Middle Ages. He also adopted some of Belloc's anti-Semitism, but was not an extremist like his appalling brother **Cecil Chesterton** and his wife **Ada** (even worse). After Cecil died in 1918 he allowed himself to be used as a front man for the periodical *New Witness* which was revived as G.K.'s *Weekly* in 1924. In 1922 he became a Roman Catholic and *The Everlasting Man* (1925) is a serious work on theology. Catholic apologetics became his central focus and there was a short-lived attempt, until 2019, to propose him for canonisation. He was ahead of his time in opposing eugenics and denouncing *Hitler.

All his work, including essays, poetry, novels, and literary, social and religious studies, reveals tremendous energy, robust humour and mastery of paradox. Renowned for his geniality, Chesterton was enormously fat.

Pearce, J., *Wisdom and Innocence*. 1996; Barker, D., G. K. Chesterton. 1973; Ingrams, R., *The Sins of G. K. Chesterton*. 2021; Ker, I., G. K. *Chesterton. A Biography*. 2022.

Chevalier, Maurice (1888–1972). French music-hall singer and film star. His engaging smile and charm won him fame not only in Paris music halls (where he was long a co-star with *Mistinguett) but internationally. He appeared in several films, notably *Le Roi* (1949) and *Gigi* (1958).

Chevreul, Michel-Eugène (1786–1889). French chemist, born in Angers. He worked at the Museum d'Histoire Naturelle and the Jardin des Plantes in Paris and became the director of both. He began a major study of the chemistry of oils and fats which led to soap-making becoming an exact science and to greatly improved candles. Elected FRS in 1826, he received the Copley Medal in 1857. A director of the Gobelins tapestry works, he became interested in the chemistry of dyes and in colour contrast. His ideas influenced neo-impressionist painters, e.g. *Seurat. The first to grasp the significance of sugar in the urine of diabetics, he was also a pioneer in gerontology and his 100th birthday was commemorated in the first photographic interview (by Felix and Paul *Nadar).

Chevrolet, Louis (1879–1941). American racing car driver and designer, born in Switzerland. In 1911 he founded his own automobile company, but in 1917 sold out to General Motors which retained his name for a popular model. He continued his career as a driver but died in poverty.

Chiang Ch'ing (Jiang Qing) *see* **Mao Zedong**

Chiang Kaishek (Wade-Giles: **Jiang Jieshi** in pinyin). (1887–1975). Chinese marshal and politician, born in Zhejiang. Son of a farmer, as an officer cadet he became involved in the successful revolution (1911) against the last Manchu emperor and was from then onwards a loyal adherent of *Sun Yat-sen who, in 1921, established himself as President of the republican government centred on Canton. The north was still in the lands of self-appointed warlords and after Sun's death in 1925 Chiang was chosen to command an expedition to bring them under control. This was delayed by a split between the Communist and Nationalist wings of Sun's revolutionary party, the Guomintang. Appointed leader of the Nationalists, Chiang, as generalissimo, resumed the delayed northern drive and by 1928 overcame the warlords and occupied Beijing (Peking). He then broke with the Communists. He was Commander-in-Chief of all forces under Guomintang control 1928–46 and held the titles of President of China 1928–31, 1943–49 and Premier 1930–31, 1935–37, 1939–45, 1947.

In 1931 the Japanese invaded Manchuria. Chiang was torn between wanting to resist the Japanese and defeating the Communists who ruled in Kiangsi province, settling for appeasement of the invaders. In the great 'Long March' (October 1934–January 1936), *Mao Zedong led his followers from Kiangsi to the remote Shensi province. In 1936 Chiang was kidnapped at Xi'an by *Zhang Xueliang and released on promising to make a truce with the

Communists and stop appeasing the Japanese. This led to an intensification of the war, with the Japanese occupying Shanghai, forcing Chiang's government to move from Nanjing progressively up the Yangtze river until it found refuge above the rapids at Chungking. Pressure eased when, in 1941, the US entered World War II and in 1945 Chiang emerged as president of a stricken and impoverished country.

But immediately the old struggle with the Communists broke out, and political manoeuvre was followed by civil war in which the Communists finally triumphed. Chiang withdrew to Taiwan in 1950 and continued to lead a Guomintang administration, which occupied the seat of China in the Security Council of the United Nations until 1971.

Chiang obtained help and encouragement at every stage of his career from his American-educated second wife **Song Meiling** (1898–2003), sister of Sun Yat-sen's widow. His son **Chiang Chingkuo** (Jiang Jingguo) (1910–1988), was Premier of the 'Republic of China' (i.e. Taiwan) 1972–78 and President 1978–88.

Fenby, J., *Generalissimo Chiang Kai-Shek and the China He Lost*. 2003; Crozier, B., *The Man Who Lost China*. 2009; Pakula, H., *The Last Empress*. 2009.

Chichele, Henry (1362–1443). English prelate and patron of learning. Educated at Winchester and New College, Oxford, he soon became prominent in Church and state, and after serving on embassies abroad became Bishop of St David's in 1408 and Archbishop of Canterbury 1414–43. He strongly supported *Henry V's war policy in France and his resistance to the encroachments of papal power at home. In 1437 he founded two Oxford colleges, All Souls and St John's (originally called St Bernard's).

Chicherin, Georgi Vasilievich (1872–1936). Russian diplomat. Of noble origin, he served in the Russian foreign office but resigned on joining the Social Democrat party; from 1904 he lived with revolutionaries abroad. In 1917 he was arrested in England and exchanged for Sir George Buchanan, British Ambassador. He became Peoples' Commissar for Foreign Affairs 1918–30. He signed the Brest-Litovsk Treaty which ended the German war. While attending the Genoa Conference (1922) he secretly negotiated the Rapallo Treaty, securing recognition and trade agreements from Germany. Illness led to his resignation (1930).

Chichester, Sir Francis Charles (1901–1972). English aviator and yachtsman. In 1929–30 he made a solo flight from England to Australia in a Gipsy Moth bi-plane; in 1931 he made the first east–west flight between New Zealand and Australia. He began ocean sailing in 1953. In 1960 he won the first transatlantic race for solo yachtsmen. In 1966–67 he sailed round the world single-handed in *Gipsy Moth IV*.

Chichester, F., *The Lonely Sea and the Sky*. 1964.

Chifley, (Joseph) **Ben**(edict) (1885–1951). Australian Labor politician, born in Bathurst. Chifley's family suffered in the 1890s Depression. Separated from his parents and two younger brothers at the age of five, he rarely saw his mother for the next nine years, and lived with his grandparents at Limekilns until 1899, where he slept on a chaff-bag. He attended the Patrician Brothers' High School in Bathurst for two years (1899–1901) and became a voracious reader, including *Gibbon and *Plutarch. In 1902 he joined the New South Wales Railways as a shop-boy, then became a cleaner and fireman. He studied at the Workers' Educational Association and the Bathurst Technical School, and became an industrial advocate for the Locomotive Engine-drivers', Firemen's and Cleaners' Association. Promoted to first-class locomotive engine driver, he was later demoted because of his role as a trade union activist. He was a Member of the House of Representatives 1928–31 and 1940–51, and served as Minister of Defence 1931–32 under James *Scullin. When the ALP split in New South Wales, during the Depression, he supported the Federal leadership and strongly opposed J. T. *Lang.

Ben Chifley held the key position of Commonwealth Treasurer 1941–49 under *Curtin when war with Japan broke out. After Curtin died, Frank *Forde succeeded for a week but Chifley won the Labor leadership overwhelmingly and became Prime Minister 1945–49. He was the architect of post-war reconstruction, including full employment and the welfare state, supported *Evatt on foreign policy and *Calwell in the post-war mass migration program. He was strongly committed to Bretton Woods, the World Bank and early elements of the global economy, but had to use all his political skills to win Caucus' reluctant approval. He aided the CSIRO and the ABC, created The Australian National University but ran aground with his preoccupation with banking and excessive regulation. The long coal strike of 1949 was no help either. However, there were significant gaps in his political repertoire: White Australia Policy, Aboriginal people, women's issues and schools, the last regarded as a state responsibility. On these issues, Chifley was a man of his times.

Day, D., *Chifley*. 2001.

Chikamatsu Monzaemon (Sugimori Nobumori) (1653–1724). Japanese dramatist. He wrote about 160 plays for the Bunraku puppet theatre. He was the first playwright to introduce true drama to the puppet theatre, previously a display of virtuoso skill by the puppeteers. Many of his plays were adapted for the Kabuki theatre and remain in the repertoire. He wrote historical melodramas such as *The Battles of Kokusenya* (1715) and realistic domestic tragedies such as *The Love Suicides at Amijima* (1720).

Childe, V(ere) **Gordon** (1892–1957). Australian archaeologist, born in Sydney. Educated in Sydney and Oxford, he became secretary to John Storey,

Premier of New South Wales 1920–21, and his *How Labour Governs* (1923) was a pioneering analysis. He worked in London from 1921 as a librarian, secretary, translator and pioneering archaeologist. He wrote several important books on archaeology, including *The Dawn of European Civilization* (1925), providing a theory of social structures in prehistory, still widely supported, and the popular *What Happened in History* (1942). He excavated Skara Brae, Orkney, and held chairs in archaeology at Edinburgh 1927–46 and London 1946–56. He coined the term 'Neolithic Revolution' in 1935. He jumped to his death in the Blue Mountains, New South Wales.

Irving, T., *The Fatal Lure of Politics: The life and thought of Vere Gordon Childe*. 2020.

Childeric III (735–755). King of the Franks 743–51. Last of the Merovingians, he was deposed by *Pepin III.

Childers, (Robert) **Erskine** (1870–1922). Anglo-Irish author and nationalist, born in London. A clerk in the House of Commons, he won a sensational success with his novel, *The Riddle of the Sands* (1903), dealing with secret preparations for a German invasion of Britain. Later he became a strong Irish nationalist. He was a leader of the Sinn Féin resistance to the Irish Free State, condemned by an Irish military court and executed. His son **Erskine** (Hamilton) **Childers** (1905–1974), born in London, educated at Trinity College Cambridge, became a Fianna Faíl MP 1938–73, Deputy Prime Minister 1969–73 and was President of the Irish Republic 1973–74.

Wilkinson, B., *The Zeal of the Convert*. 1978.

Ch'in. Chinese dynasty, now called *Qin (pinyin), which ruled 221–205 BCE.

Ch'ing. Chinese dynasty, in pinyin *Qing, which ruled 1644–1912.

Chippendale, Thomas (c.1718–1779). English furniture maker and designer. The son of a Yorkshire joiner, he moved from Worcestershire to London where, by 1755, he and his firm were occupying three houses in St Martin's Lane. Furniture still surviving in Harewood House and elsewhere is mentioned in his accounts. His own best work, almost exclusively in mahogany, is in the neo-classical style, the association of his name with an Anglicised rococo style (with Gothic and oriental variants) being due to the fact that it was to that particular style that the designs of his publication *The Director* (*The Gentleman and Cabinet Maker's Director*, 1754) were devoted. Most so-called Chippendale furniture is the work of other craftsmen taken from *The Director,* designs inspired, but not actually drawn, by Chippendale himself.

Coleridge, A., *Chippendale Furniture*. 1968.

Chirac, Jacques René (1932–2019). French politician, born in Paris. As a student activist, he was briefly in the Communist Party, graduated from Sciences Po and the ENA, served as an army officer, then worked as public servant and a staffer for Georges *Pompidou. A Member of the National Assembly 1967–74, Minister for Agriculture 1972–74, and the Interior 1974, he became Prime Minister 1974–76, under *Giscard d'Estaing. He led the RPR (Rassemblement pour la République) 1976–94. After the revival of the office of Mayor of Paris (in abeyance since 1871), he was elected, serving 1977–95. In 1981, he was a candidate for president, ran third in the first round of voting but contributed to Giscard's defeat by splitting the conservative vote. He was Prime Minister again 1986–88, in 'cohabitation' with *Mitterrand, but ran against him in 1988. President of France 1995–2007, his resumption of nuclear tests in the Pacific (1995–96) drew international protests. In 1997, he apologised to the descendants of *Dreyfus and *Zola. He was frank in his condemnation of the French regime during the German occupation, and its role in the Holocaust. He was re-elected President in 2002, defeating Jean-Marie *Le Pen, with 82 per cent of the vote in the second ballot. In 2011, he was found guilty of diverting public funds and abusing public confidence as Mayor of Paris and given a two-year suspended prison sentence.

Chirico, Giorgio De' (1888–1978). Italian painter, born in Greece. One of the most important precursors of Surrealism, he painted objects and landscapes in unexpected juxtaposition with no regard to reality. Thus window dummies, plaster busts, abstract shapes or bits of machinery might be grouped against a background of classical architecture. From this he developed a style which came to be known as metaphysical painting in which there was a greater symbolic content. In the 1920s he abandoned his earlier style and turned to more conventional styles and subjects, but the galleries of the world have chosen to show his earlier idiosyncratic paintings.

Chirico, G. de', *Memorie della mia vita*. 1945.

Chisholm, Caroline (née Jones) (1808–1877). English social reformer, born near Northhampton. She married an officer in the Indian army, and campaigned for migration and employment opportunities of young women to Australia as an essential precondition to a civilian society, and lived near Sydney 1838–46, 1859–66 and in Victoria 1854–59. *Dickens satirised her, unfairly, as Mrs Jellyby in *Bleak House*.

Chisholm, George Brock (1896–1971). Canadian psychiatrist. After a distinguished career he was Director General of the World Health Organisation 1948–53. His *Can People Learn to Learn?* (1958) was a bestseller.

Choiseul, Etienne François, Duc de (1719–1785). French diplomat. Through the patronage of Madame de *Pompadour, he became ambassador to Rome 1753–57 and Vienna 1757–58, returning to take office as Foreign Minister 1758–70. He was thus at the heart of affairs during the Seven Years' War and signed the Treaty of Paris (1763), which confirmed the losses, e.g. in Canada and India, of the preceding years. He was also responsible for popular reforms in the services, supported the publication of the *Encyclopédie*, and assisted in the suppression of the Jesuits. Madame du *Barry's party at court was responsible for his downfall (1770) and he lived in retirement until his death.

Chomsky, (Avram) **Noam** (1928–). American theoretical linguist and political activist, born in Philadelphia. Educated at Pennsylvania and Harvard Universities, he taught linguistics at the Massachusetts Institute of Technology from 1955 and held chairs in modern languages and linguistics from 1961. His principal thesis was first defined in *Syntactic Structures* (1957) and developed further in *Aspects of the Theory of Syntax* (1965), *Language and Mind* (1968), *Reflections on Language* (1975) and *Essays on Form and Interpretation* (1977). He argued for the existence of a universal grammar that underlies all languages, and that the structural principles of language are innate, biologically determined and capable of genetic transmission. He regarded linguistics as a branch of cognitive psychology. He was a vigorous polemicist, opponent of US foreign policy**,** especially in Vietnam, Iraq and with Cuba. He vigorously denied charges that he was an apologist for *Pol Pot in Cambodia and described himself as a libertarian socialist. His political books include *Manufacturing Consent* (1988) and *Deterring Democracy* (1991). Between 1980 and 1992, according to the *Arts and Humanities Citation Index*, Chomsky was cited more often than any other living scholar.

Chopin, Frédéric François (Fryderyk Franciszek) (1810–1849). Polish-French composer, born near Warsaw. From boyhood Chopin suffered from ill health, but early displayed musical gifts. His music teacher in Warsaw encouraged him to develop in his own way and by 21 Chopin was already an accomplished pianist and composer for the piano. He made his debut as a concert pianist in Vienna in 1829, and from 1831 lived mainly in Paris and did not return to Poland. His recitals were successful and he became the friend of *Bellini (who, like *Donizetti, influenced his melodic style) and *Mendelssohn. Catholic, conservative and royalist, he admired *Bach, *Haydn and *Mozart but had grave doubts about *Beethoven. He gave few concerts after 1831. His compositions established the piano as a solo concert instrument. No other composer has surpassed him in this field which he explored more fully than any of his predecessors. His individual lyric and harmonic sense and his innovations in the technique of playing the piano were profoundly influential. His fame rests upon the wide range of his piano compositions, including three sonatas (1828, 1839, 1844), two concertos (both 1830), 24 preludes (1836–39), four ballades (1835, 1839, 1841, 1842), four scherzos (1835, 1837, 1839, 1842), 15 polonaises, 60 mazurkas, 21 nocturnes and many etudes and waltzes. In Paris he fell in love with the woman novelist George *Sand, an affair which began in 1838, survived a horribly uncomfortable winter in Majorca (1838–39), before ending in a quarrel in 1847 due to her children's jealousy. Chopin's health deteriorated over many years but the cause is uncertain: tuberculosis, bronchiectasis or cystic fibrosis of the lungs have been suggested. In 1848 he visited England and Scotland, giving several concerts. He died in Paris and was buried in the Père-Lachaise cemetery.

Hedley, A., *Chopin*. 1947; Rosen, C., *The Romantic Generation*. 1995.

Chou En-lai *see* **Zhou Enlai**

Chrétien, (Joseph Jacques) **Jean** (1934–). Canadian Liberal politician. Educated at Laval University, he became a lawyer and was a Liberal MP 1963–86, 1990–2003, serving under *Trudeau and *Turner as Minister for Industry, Trade and Commerce 1976–77, for Finance 1977–79, Attorney-General 1980–82, External Affairs Minister and Deputy Prime Minister 1984. Leader of the National Liberal Party 1990–2003, and Prime Minister 1993–2003, he was awarded the Order of Merit in 2009.

Chrétien de Troyes (fl. 1166–1190). French trouviere. A poet at the court of Champagne, he developed many of the legends which were later incorporated into Arthurian romances (*Malory) and also the Holy Grail and Parsifal (*Wolfram von Eschenbach, *Wagner). *Perceval*, left unfinished at his death, is the first in which the story of the Holy Grail is associated with Arthurian material. His claim that material for the epic *Guillaume d'Angleterre* was found at Bury St Edmunds suggests that he may have visited England. He was one of the most influential of medieval poets and many translations and imitations of his work appeared.

Christ, Jesus *see* **Jesus Christ**

Christian VII (Christian Oldenburg) (1749–1808). King of Denmark and Norway 1766–1808. Son of Frederik V and his wife Louise, aunt of *George III of Great Britain. His mother died early, his father was neglectful and his education often brutal. Suffering from schizophrenia and epilepsy, an obsessive masturbator, after a disastrous marriage to the young Princess Caroline Matilda, sister of George III, the physician Johann Friedrich *Struensee won his confidence, then became chief advisor (forelaeser) 1770–72, and the queen's lover. Struensee made 1069 executive decisions in the king's name, progressive reforms which anticipated other Enlightened despots.

Struensee made powerful enemies, his adultery was detected, and his swift execution followed. Queen Caroline was exiled to Celle, but her daughter Louise Augusta remained at the Danish court until she married.

Christian IX (Christian of Schleswig-Holstein-Sonderburg-Glücksburg) (1818–1906). King of Denmark 1863–1906. Born in Schleswig to a junior branch of the *Oldenburg family, he was recognised as heir to the throne (1852) because **Frederik VII** (1808–1863), despite three marriages, had no legitimate heir. Immediately after succeeding his distant cousin, he had to face war with *Bismarck's Prussia and surrender the duchies of Schleswig and Holstein to overwhelming force. He was resistant to democratic change and, with his wife's strong encouragement, gained a special notoriety by the way in which he extended his family connexions. His children included his successor **Frederik VIII**, *Alexandra, wife of Edward VII of Great Britain, *George I of Greece, and Dagmar, wife of the Russian emperor *Aleksandr III. His grandson became *Haakon VII of Norway. In the next generation this dynastic network spread further still, and, not only through Queen Alexandra but through its Greek connexions, including Prince *Philip, Duke of *Edinburgh, and Princess Marina, Duchess of Kent.

Christian X (Christian Carl Frederik Albert Alexander Vilhelm Schleswig-Holstein-Sonderburg-Glücksburg) (1870–1947). King of Denmark 1912–47. Son and successor of **Frederik VIII** and the elder brother of *Haakon VII of Norway, in 1920 he reluctantly accepted constitutional restraints on his authority to choose ministers. He achieved great popularity by his courageous bearing and behaviour during the German occupation in World War II.

Christie, Dame Agatha Mary Clarissa (née Miller, later Mallowan) (1890–1976). English crime novelist and playwright, born in Torquay. After limited schooling, although she read widely, she married Colonel Archibald Christie in 1914, became a nurse in World War I, published *The Mysterious Affair at Styles* in 1920, disappeared equally mysteriously in 1926, and in 1930 married the archaeologist **(Sir) Max Mallowan** (1904–1978). She published 66 detective novels, and 15 collections of short stories, translated into 103 languages, with total sales estimated at 4 billion books. Her plots were ingenious but hardly more baffling for her devoted readers than for her two most famous sleuths, the Belgian Hercule Poirot and the homely Englishwoman Miss Jane Marple. Her best known play, *The Mousetrap*, had an unbroken run in London from its premiere on 25 November 1952, until 16 March 2020, when it was closed due to COVID-19, after 28,000 performances, the longest run in theatrical history. (It reopened in May 2021).

Worsley, L., *Agatha Christie: A Very Elusive Woman*. 2022.

Christie, John (1882–1962). English opera promoter. Born to a rich landed family, educated at Eton and Trinity College, Cambridge, he taught at Eton for seven years. He won an MC fighting in France, and decided to turn his family home at Glyndebourne, Sussex, into an opera house, supported by his wife **Audrey Mildmay** (1900–1953), a Canadian operatic soprano. The Glyndebourne Opera began in 1934 (Fritz *Busch) and was revived in 1950. He received a CH in 1954. His son, **Sir George Christie** (1934–2014), was chair of Glyndebourne Opera 1962–2014, built a new opera house (1994) and received a CH (2001).

Christie, John Reginald Halliday (1899–1953). English murderer. He was convicted and hanged for the murder of his wife but also confessed to the murder of five other women whose bodies were found at his home. Among those whom he claimed to have killed was the wife of **Timothy John Evans**, an illiterate truck driver. When Evans was tried in 1950 for murdering his wife and daughter, Christie had been the principal witness for the prosecution. Evans was hanged for the murder of the child but received the consolation of a posthumous pardon in 1966.

Christie, William Lincoln (1944–). American-French harpsichordist and conductor, born in Buffalo. Educated at Yale and Harvard, he lived in France from 1971 and in 1979 founded the baroque group Les Arts Florissantes, directing outstanding performances of baroque operas and making many recordings. Also an expert gardener, he became a French national in 1996.

Christina (Kristina Augusta Vasa) (1626–1689). Queen of Sweden 1632–54. Daughter of *Gustaf II Adolf, during her minority until 1644, the country was effectively governed by the great chancellor Axel *Oxenstierna, but their relationship was cool and he despaired at her extravagence. After the Thirty Years' War ended she acquired (1649) the collection of the Emperor *Rudolf II and commisioned many paintings and statues. Her sexuality is ambiguous, she had androgynous characteristics, but insisted that she was 'neither male nor hermaphrodite'. She probably suffered from a multi-endocrine disorder. She indicated abhorrance of marriage and secured recognition of her cousin, the future *Karl X Gustaf, as heir. She was fascinated by literature, theatre, art, music, theology, science, mathematics and philosophy and had a great library. (*Descartes came to Sweden at her invitation.) In 1652 she indicated her wish to abdicate but was persuaded to delay until 1654. She left Sweden, disguised as a man, and in Brussels in December 1654 became a Roman Catholic. She lived in Rome from 1655. In 1656, Cardinal *Mazarin toyed with making her Queen of Naples. She returned to Sweden briefly in 1660 after Karl X died but was barred from resuming her rule and in 1668 offered herself as a candidate for the Polish throne. She wrote an autobiography in 1681. In Rome she ruled a

brilliant artistic and literary circle. She had an intense relationship with **Cardinal Decio Azzolini** (1623–1689) and left her collections to him. Pope Alexander VII called her 'a queen without a realm, a Christian without faith, and a woman without shame'.

Buried in St Peter's Basílica, she was the subject of August *Strindberg's play *Kristina* (1901), the films *Queen Christina* (1933, Greta *Garbo), *The Abdication* (1974, Liv Ullmann) and *The Girl King* (2015, Malin Buska), an opera and several novels.

Weibull, C., *Christina of Sweden*. 1966; Meyer, C., *Kristina, Queen of Sweden*. 2003; Buckley, V., *Christina, Queen of Sweden*. 2004.

Christo (Christo Vladimirovich Javacheff) (1935–2020). Bulgarian-American artist. Educated in Sofia and Paris, he gained early recognition for his 'wrapped objects', temporary public sculptures in which buildings, walls, bridges or coastlines were wrapped up. His wife **Jeanne-Claude Denat de Guillebon** (1935–2009), born in Morocco on the same day, was his collaborator.

Christoff, Boris (Kirilovich) (1918–1993). Bulgarian singer, born in Sofia. The greatest operatic bass since *Chaliapin, and a powerful actor, he was a notable Boris *Godunov, Prince Igor and Philip (*Felipe) II (in *Verdi's *Don Carlos*).

Christophe, Henri (1767–1820). Haitian soldier, revolutionary and ruler, born probably in Grenada. Descended from the Bambara people of West Africa, his mother was a slave, his father a freeman. He became *Toussaint l'Ouverture's most successful general in his struggle against the French. After the death (1806) of *Dessalines he was elected President of Haiti 1807–11. Impatient of constitutional control, he set up an independent state in the north. He proclaimed himself King of Haiti 1811–20, built a palace modelled on St Cloud and created a nobility to provide a court. Though ruthless and capricious he showed an extraordinary willingness to learn and to introduce laws, educational methods, agricultural machinery indeed anything he thought useful from abroad. A stroke left him helpless in the face of a military revolt and he shot himself.

Christopher, Warren (1925–2011). American lawyer and administrator, born in North Dakota. Educated at Stanford, he became a Los Angeles lawyer, served as Deputy Secretary of State under President *Carter 1977–81 and was President *Clinton's Secretary of State 1993–97.

Christus (Cristus), **Petrus** (c.1420–1473). Flemish painter, born near Antwerp. Active in Bruges from 1444, he was strongly influenced by the van *Eycks and is best known for his altarpieces and portraits, of which about 30 survive. He may have visited Milan in 1457.

Chrysler, Walter Percy (1875–1940). American motor manufacturer, born in Kansas. He left the Buick company, of which he was president (1916–19), to form the Chrysler Corporation, which he ran until 1938. Chrysler produced the Jeep and the Dodge. In 2009, to avoid bankruptcy, it formed a strategic alliance with Fiat.

Chrysostom, St John *see* **John Chrysostom, St**

Chu, Steven (1948–). American physicist, born in St Louis. Professor of physics at Stanford 1987–2001, he shared the 1997 Nobel Prize for Physics for 'development of methods to cool and trap atoms with laser light' and directed the Lawrence Berkeley National Laboratory 2004–09, and in Houston Superconductivity. US Secretary of Energy 2009–13, he was an effective advocate for climate change mitigation.

Chu Hsi *see* **Zhu Xi**

Chun Doo-hwan (1931–2021). Korean soldier and politician. He commanded the defence security unit in the South Korea army (1979–80), organised a coup that took over the army leadership in 1980, and became President of the Republic of Korea 1981–88. In 1996 he was tried for his involvement in the murder of President *Park Chung Hee (1979), was sentenced to death and amnestied in 1997.

Church, Alonzo (1903–1995). American mathematician and logician, born in Washington DC. A pioneer of symbolic logic, he taught at Princeton and UCLA. His students and collaborators included Alan *Turing.

Churchill, Arabella (1648–1730). English mistress. Sister of the 1st Duke of *Marlborough and mistress of James, Duke of York (later *James II), their son, the Duke of *Berwick, became a distinguished soldier in the French armies.

Churchill, Charles (1731–1764). English satirical poet. Ordained in 1756 he was briefly a curate but soon turned to writing satirical and political verse. He led a dissipated life, and left the Church in 1763. He was a vigorous supporter of John *Wilkes and wrote much of his famous political polemic in *The North Briton*.

Laver, J., *Poems of Charles Churchill*. 1970.

Churchill, Lord Randolph Henry Spencer (1849–1895). English politician. The third son of the 7th Duke of Marlborough, he was educated at Eton and Oxford and became a Conservative MP in 1874. He developed a policy of progressive conservatism, known as Tory Democracy, and attacked both Liberal and Conservative leaders. He was Secretary for India 1885–86 and Chancellor of the Exchequer 1886, resigning the latter office after six months as a protest against the excessive financial demands of the army

and navy. Then 37, he never held a Cabinet post again and was crippled by syphilis in his later years. In 1874 he married **Jenny Jerome** (1854–1921), daughter of a New York newspaper proprietor.

Churchill, W. L. S., *Lord Randolph Churchill*. Rev. ed. 1952.

Churchill, Winston (1871–1947). American novelist, born in Missouri. Among his successful romantic novels were *Richard Carvel* (1899, also a play), *The Crisis* (1901) and *The Crossing* (1904). He was also a poet, essayist and landscape painter. Active in Theodore *Roosevelt's Progressive Party, he was sometimes confused with his namesake, the English politician.

Churchill, Sir Winston Leonard Spencer (1874–1965). English politician, soldier and author, born at Blenheim Palace. An adoring son of a bullying remote father and a vivacious remote mother, his parents were Lord Randolph *Churchill, a seventh generation descendent of the Duke of *Marlborough, and Jenny Jerome, an American. He was educated (patchily) at Harrow and Sandhurst. He served with the Spanish forces in Cuba (1895) then joined the British army in India, where he began to take an intense interest in history and literature. He was sent to the Sudan in 1898 and took part in the battle of Omdurman. A correspondent of the *London Morning Post* during the Boer War, he was captured by the Boers, escaped and returned to England as a hero. In 1900 he published a novel, *Savrola*, and was elected to the House of Commons, serving as MP 1900–22 and 1924–64 (Conservative 1900–04, 1924–64, Liberal 1904–22). His dreadful relatives and friends caused deep seated suspicion. Although a devoted monarchist, he was mistrusted by *Edward VII, *George V and (at first) *George VI.

In the Liberal ministry of *Campbell Bannerman he was Undersecretary for the Colonies 1906–08, President of the Board of Trade 1908–10 and Home Secretary 1910–11. As First Lord of the Admiralty 1911–15, he was responsible for the mobilisation of the fleet on the outbreak of World War I. He planned the Allied landing at Gallipoli (1915) and when this failed he was subject to severe criticism and resigned. In 1916 he served in France with the 6th Royal Scots Fusiliers, but when *Lloyd George displaced *Asquith he recalled Churchill to office as Minister of Munitions 1917–19. He was Secretary of State for War and for Air 1919–21 and Colonial Secretary 1921–22. When the war ended he was prominent in organising armies of intervention to overthrow the Soviet Government in Russia. He saw the futility of continued violence in Ireland and supported the establishment of the Irish Free State. After the dissolution of the Turkish Empire he was responsible for creating the new states of Jordan and Iraq (suggesting the last name himself as a substitute for Mesopotamia) which became British mandates.

He opposed breaking up Lloyd George's coalition government and was defeated in the 1922 and 1923 general elections. Returned in the October 1924 election, he served as Chancellor of the Exchequer 1924–29, under Stanley *Baldwin. In 1925 he pegged sterling to the Gold Standard, at the 1914 exchange rate, leading to an overvaluation which made exporting harder. He took an extremist line against the General Strike of 1926, calling it 'revolutionary' and had to be calmed down by Baldwin. He also showed some sympathy for *Mussolini. He was not offered a place in the *MacDonald-Baldwin National Government (1931), flirted briefly with Lloyd George and Oswald *Mosley and took an extreme view in opposing all moves towards self-government in India. He denounced *Gandhi in 1931 as 'this seditious … fakir of a type well known in the east … half-naked'. He remained deeply anti-Indian. In 1936 he reached his political nadir, supporting King *Edward VIII against Baldwin over the abdication crisis. Despite his lamentable judgment in other areas, he was correct in his consistent opposition to *Hitler, although silent on Ethiopia and Spain. After *Chamberlain became Prime Minister (1937) he bitterly attacked the policy of appeasing Germany and, on the outbreak of World War II (1939), became First Lord of the Admiralty. Chamberlain resigned after widespread criticism of his wartime government.

In May 1940 Churchill was made Prime Minister in a coalition government. He told the nation: 'I have nothing to offer but blood, toil, tears and sweat.' As Prime Minister and Minister of Defence he led a coalition government with Labour and Liberal support. He worked in close cooperation with *Roosevelt, whom he met in August 1941 in the Atlantic, near Newfoundland, and other world leaders including Josef *Stalin (August 1942, Moscow), General *de Gaulle and *Chiang Kaishek. He took little interest in the Pacific War and Asia (other than India: he had never visited Australia or New Zealand). His strategic judgment was often erratic and he treated some able generals (*Dill, *Wavell, *Auchinleck) harshly. Apart from his opposition to Hitler, his war aims were ill-defined apart from a determination to maintain the British Empire. In October 1944 at Moscow he conceded Stalin's claim to dominate Eastern Europe and the Balkans, and Roosevelt acquiesced at Yalta (February 1945).

At the post war general election of July 1945 his party was heavily defeated by Labour and *Attlee replaced him at the Potsdam Conference. Churchill continued as Conservative leader and Leader of the Opposition. In March 1946 his famous speech at Fulton, Missouri helped to define the 'Cold War'. He led the Conservatives to a narrow victory (his only one) in October 1951 and resumed office as Prime Minister 1951–55 and Minister of Defence 1951–52. His relationship with *Elizabeth II had embarrassing parallels with Lord *Melbourne and Queen *Victoria. He maintained his close relations with the US under

Presidents *Truman and *Eisenhower. In April 1955, past 80, he gave up as Prime Minister very reluctantly, although he had suffered two serious strokes and his memory was failing. Anthony *Eden replaced him. He declined a dukedom in 1955, wishing to continue as a member of the House of Commons. Always a colourful and controversial figure, he earned the gratitude of the democratic world for his dynamic leadership in the wartime years. He was an enthusiast for Franco-German reconciliation and some form of European union.

A gifted amateur painter, he was made an honorary Royal Academician in 1948. His literary work reflects the stylistic influence of *Gibbon and *Macaulay. Among his books were *Lord Randolph Churchill* (1906), *The World Crisis* (1923–29, a history of World War I), *My Early Life* (1930), *Life of the Duke of Marlborough* (1933–38), *Great Contemporaries* (1937). He published *The Second World War* (6 vols, 1948–54) and *A History of the English Speaking Peoples* (4 vols, 1956–58). He won the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1953 'for his mastery in historical and biographical presentation and for his brilliant oratory, in which he has always stood forth as the defender of eternal human values'. He suffered from periods of depression which he called the 'black dog'.

He was awarded the CH (1922) and OM (1946), made a Knight of the Garter in 1953, and received innumerable awards, degrees and fellowships, including FRS and RA.

He married **Clementine Ogilvy Hozier** (1885–1977) in 1908. She was created GBE in 1946 and **Baroness Spencer-Churchill** in 1965. Their son, **Randolph Frederick Edward Spencer Churchill** (1911–1968) was a notoriously erratic writer and journalist. He served in the army in World War II and was a Conservative MP 1940–45. Among his books were *The Story of the Coronation* (1953) and *The Rise and Fall of Sir Anthony Eden* (1959). Their daughter **Mary Spencer-Churchill, Baroness Soames** (1922–2014) married **Christopher Soames,** wrote Clementine Churchill's biography (1979) and was created LG in 2005. Randolph's son **Winston** (Spencer) **Churchill** (1940–2010) was a Conservative MP 1970–97.

Churchill, R. S. *Winston S. Churchill* 2 vols (and companions) 1966–67, continued by Gilbert, M. 6 vols (and companions) 1971–88; Soames, M., *Clementine Churchill* 1979; Charmley, J., *Churchill: The End of Glory*. 1992; Jenkins, R. *Churchill*. 2001; Roberts, A., *Churchill. Walking with Destiny*. 2018.

Chu Teh *see* **Zhu De**

Ciano, (Gian) **Galeazzo, 2nd Conte di Cortellazzo e Buccari** (1903–1944). Italian Fascist politician, born in Livorno. Son of a naval hero who became a minister in the first Fascist Government, in 1930 he married **Edda Mussolini** (1910–1995), daughter of il Duce. He served as Minister for Foreign Affairs 1936–43 but voted for *Mussolini's deposition at the Grand Council (1943). He was later captured by Mussolini's supporters, tried in Verona and shot as a traitor.

Mazzeo, T. J., *Sisters in Resistance*. 2022.

Cibber, Colley (1671–1757). English actor, playwright and poet. The author of about 30 plays, the best known being *She Would and She Would Not*, he was denounced by *Pope, *Fielding and *Johnson, and his appointment as Poet Laureate in 1730 was the subject of much derision. He achieved varying success on the London stage as an eccentric comedian. He wrote the autobiographical *Apology for the Life of Mr Colley Cibber, Comedian* (1740).

Cicero, Marcus Tullius (106–43 BCE). Roman orator, politician and philosopher, born in Arpinum. Educated in Rome, Rhodes and Athens, he achieved early fame as an orator, served as quaestor of Sicily (75) and praetor of Rome (66). Although he was not of noble birth his ability won him the support of the senatorial party. As Consul (63) he exposed and suppressed the conspiracy of *Catiline but was later exiled, and deprived of his property for having illegally passed death sentences on some of the conspirators. He served as Governor of Cilicia (52–51). He supported *Pompey against *Caesar during the civil war (49–48) and only returned to Rome on Caesar's invitation in 47. He supported the conspiracy against Caesar but did not take part in his murder. He led the republicans in opposition to the Second Triumvirate (Mark *Antony, *Octavianus and *Lepidus) and was exiled and ultimately murdered on Antony's orders. His severed head and hands were displayed to the mob.

Vain but sincere, he proved an inept politician. Regarded as the greatest of Roman orators, 57 of his major speeches have survived. His vivacious letters and his books on law and philosophy (*On Oratory*, *On the Republic*, *On Old Age*, *On Friendship*) were of great historical significance and affected the development of Latin style. His writings were a major influence on the literature of the Renaissance, and *Petrarch wrote commentaries on his works.

Stockton, D., *Cicero: A Political Biography*. 1971.

Cid, El (Rodrigo Diaz de Vivar) (c.1040–1099). Spanish soldier. The name 'El Cid' is Arabic: 'seyyid' means 'lord'. He was also called 'El Cid Campeador': 'the lord champion'. So many legends have been told about him that it is difficult to determine the truth. He seems to have been a soldier of fortune who sold his services from time to time to both the Christians and the Moors. Noted for his skill in guerrilla warfare, he conquered and ruled Valencia 1094–99. Medieval legends incorrectly described him as a valiant champion of Christianity against the Moors.

Ciller, Tansu (1946–). Turkish economist and politician. Educated in the US, she became an academic, wrote textbooks, succeeded *Demirel as leader of the True Path party and was Prime Minister 1993–96.

Cimabue (= 'bull headed'), **Giovanni** (né Ceni de Pepo or Pepi) (c.1240–1302). Italian painter, born in Florence. Little has survived of his work apart from some mosaics in Pisa, and panel paintings and frescoes attributed to him in Florence and Assisi. His use of a golden background reveals the extent of Byzantine influence, but his figures are more natural than those of his predecessors. He was the teacher of *Giotto according to *Vasari but there is hardly any documentary evidence of his life and work. *Dante, his contemporary, refers to him as enjoying a fame that was overtaken by that of Giotto.

Battisti, E., *Cimabue*. 1967.

Cimarosa, Domenico (1749–1801). Italian composer, born in Naples. He wrote about 60 operas, few of which are still performed; the best known is *The Secret Marriage* (1792), a comic opera. He became court conductor for *Catherine the Great at St Petersburg. A popular oboe concerto was arranged by Sir John *Barbirolli from Cimarosa's music.

Cincinnatus, Lucius Quinctius (519–435 BCE). Roman politician and soldier. He was twice appointed dictator by the Senate to deal with invasions by the Aequians. On each occasion he returned to retirement in the country as soon as the military emergency was over. He was famous as a model of devotion to duty and the unselfish renunciation of power.

Cinna, Lucius Cornelius (d.84 BCE). Roman politician. A leader of the democratic party, he was Consul in 87 and in 86–84, and supported *Marius in the civil war against *Sulla. His daughter Cornelia became the second wife of Julius *Caesar, whose ambitions Cinna encouraged. He was killed during a mutiny of his own troops. His son **Lucius Cornelius Cinna** (d.44 BCE) was one of Caesar's assassins.

Cinthio (name used by **Giovanni Battista Giraldi**) (1504–1573). Italian novelist and poet, born in Ferrara. *Shakespeare's *Othello* is almost certainly drawn from a story in Cinthio's *Hecatommithi* (1565).

Cipriani, Amilcare (1844–1918). Italian revolutionary politician. A friend of *Garibaldi, he fought for Italian unification, then served in the Paris Commune (1870–71). He spent many years in prison or in exile. He raised a battalion to fight for Greek independence from the Turks, and supported the Allied cause in World War I.

Citroën, André Gustave (1878–1935). French motorcar manufacturer. After World War I he began to produce small, low-priced cars, but in 1934 he went bankrupt and lost control of the company that still carries his name.

Cixi (pinyin: **Tz'u Hsi** in Wade-Giles) (1835–1908). Dowager empress of China 1861–1908. Daughter of an army officer, her personal name was Yehonala. A striking beauty who became the concubine of the weak and dissolute emperor **Xianfeng** (1831–1861) she achieved personal domination over him, bore his only son, **Tongzhi** (1856–1875) and became regent when he succeeded at the age of five. Tongzhi died of smallpox, his wife disappeared and presumably soon died. Cixi gained a new term of regency by placing her sister's four-year-old son **Guangxu** (né Zaitian) (1871–1908) on the throne. When he came of age (1889), she continued to rule in his name, maintaining authority with diplomatic skill to prevent further foreign encroachments. But there were major blows. China was defeated in a war with Japan (1894). In 1898 the emperor encouraged the 'Hundred Days' Reform movement (*Kang Yuwei) but the empress rallied reactionary forces, regained power and imprisoned Guangxu. There were even more disastrous effects from reprisals for the anti-foreign Boxer Rebellion of 1900 (secretly encouraged by Cixi) which left the *Qing (Manchu) dynasty thoroughly discredited. She introduced some modest reforms including the abolition of footbinding for women (1905), which had never been part of Manchu custom. Guangxu died of arsenic poisoning, a day before Cixi, and the likeliest culprits were either the empress herself, despite her fragile health, or *Yüan Shikai. On the death of 'the Old Buddha', a two-year-old child (*Pu'yi, or **Xuantong**) was left to succeed. The revolution was in sight. She liked to be designated 'Motherly Auspicious Orthodox Heaven-Blest Prosperous All-Nourishing Brightly Manifest Calm Sedate Perfect Long-Lived Respectful Reverend Worshipful Illustrious Exalted Empress Dowager'.

Chang, J., *Empress Dowager Cixi*. 2013.

Clair, René (né René-Lucien Chomotte) (1898–1981). French film director, born in Paris. Noted for developing a cinematic equivalent of the verbal cut and thrust of stage comedy, and for his poetic originality, his best known films are *An Italian Straw Hat* (1928), *Le Million* (1931), *À nous la Liberté* (1931), *The Ghost Goes West* (1935), *And Then There Were None* (1945) and *La Beauté du Diable* (1950). In 1960 he became the first film director to be elected to the Académie française.

Clarensol, G., and Regent, R., *René Clair: Un Maître du Cinéma*. 1952.

Clare, John (1793–1864). English poet. Called 'the Northamptonshire peasant poet', he became a farm boy at the age of seven, then worked as a gardener until he joined the local militia. He was a vagrant for some years, lived with gypsies and, after an unhappy love affair, became insane. He was confined in an asylum from 1837. His simple and direct lyrics have an unusual purity of style and he published *The Village Minstrel* (1821) and *Rural Muse* (1827) which

were well received. His best known lyric, written in the asylum, was: 'I am: yet what I am, who knows or cares?'.

Storey, E., *A Right to Song: The Life of John Clare*. 1982.

Clarence, George Plantagenet, Duke of (1449–1478). English prince. Son of Richard, Duke of *York, and brother of *Edward IV and *Richard III, he was also the son-in-law of the Earl of *Warwick ('The Kingmaker'). A vacillating character, he first supported Warwick against Edward, then changed sides and was ultimately imprisoned in the Tower on a charge of necromancy. He died in the Tower, traditionally having been 'drowned in a butt of Malmsey', presumably meaning that he drank himself to death.

Clarence, William Henry, Duke of *see* **William IV**

Clarendon, 1st Earl of, Edward Hyde (1609–1674). English lawyer, politician and historian, born near Salisbury. The son of a squire, he was educated at Oxford, became a successful barrister and sat in the House of Commons 1640–42. Although he had criticised the practice of the monarchy of 'the personal government of *Charles I', he joined the King before the outbreak of the Civil War (1642) and tried to exert a moderating influence on him. Chancellor of the Exchequer 1642–43, he was the chief advisor to the future *Charles II from 1646. After the Restoration he served as Chancellor of the Exchequer 1660–61 and Lord High Chancellor 1660–67, being the effective head of the government. His daughter, **Anne Hyde** (1637–1671) married the future *James II in 1660 and was the mother of queens *Mary and *Anne. He became Chancellor of Oxford University 1660–67 and received an earldom in 1661. The Clarendon Code which aimed at maintaining supremacy for the Church of England and denied toleration to Catholics and Dissenters was somewhat erroneously ascribed to him. King Charles began unjustly to blame him for every failure of national policy and dismissed him in 1667, the 'Cabal' ministry then taking office. Clarendon was impeached and fled to France, where he remained for the rest of his life. He wrote an important *History of the Rebellion*, published posthumously in 1704, with a perpetual copyright to the University of Oxford, which became the basis of the Clarendon Press. He also wrote against *Hobbes. He died in Rouen.

Wormwald, B. H. G., *Clarendon: Politics, History and Religion, 1640–1660.* 1951; Ollard, R., *Clarendon and His Friends*. 1988.

Clark, Champ (né James Beauchamp Clark) (1850–1921). American Democratic politician, born in Kentucky. He represented Missouri in Congress 1893–95; 1897–1921 and was Speaker of the House of Representatives 1911–19. At the 1912 Democratic Convention he led on 30 ballots for the Presidential nomination but failed to win the two-thirds majority required, losing to Woodrow *Wilson on the 46th.

Clark, Sir Christopher Munro (1960–). Australian historian, born in Sydney. Educated in Sydney, Berlin and Cambridge, he taught in Cambridge and was Regius Professor of Modern History 2014– . His books include *Iron Kingdom* (2006), *The Sleepwalkers* (2012), and *Revolutionary Spring – Fighting for a New World 1848–49* (2023).

Clark, Colin Grant (1905–1989). English-Australian economist and statistician, born in London. Educated at Oxford, he worked with *Beveridge and *Keynes, developed 'gross national product' (GNP) as an economic indicator, divided his time between Britain and Australia and popularised (1940) A.G.B. Fisher's analysis of the labour force into primary, secondary and tertiary sectors.

Clark, George Rogers (1752–1818). American surveyor, soldier and frontiersman. He led successful military expeditions defending Kentucky during the War of Independence. He attacked the Shawnee Indians as well as the British, his aim being the extension of American settlement. After the war he was appointed an Indian commissioner, and helped to negotiate a treaty with the Shawnee tribe in 1786. He lost his position as the result of intrigues, and in 1793 was part of an intrigue against Washington to persuade the US to join France in a war against Britain. He returned to Louisville on the Ohio River (which as Fort Nelson, had been one of his main war time bases) and lived in retirement.

Clark, Graeme Milbourne (1935–). Australian medical scientist. Educated at Sydney University, he was Professor of Otolaryngology at Melbourne University 1970–2000 and developed a cochlear implant, known as the bionic ear, which restored hearing to the profoundly deaf. He was awarded an AC, FAA, FRS, the Lister Medal (2010) and the Lasker DeBakey Prize (2013).

Clark, Helen Elizabeth (1950–). New Zealand Labour politician. She lectured at Auckland University, became an MP 1981–2009, Minister for Health 1989–90, Leader of the Opposition 1993–99 and Prime Minister 1999–2008. She was Director of the UN Development Programme 2009–17.

Clark, Joe (Charles Joseph) (1939–). Canadian politician. A journalist and academic in Alberta, he was a Progressive Conservative MP 1972–93, Leader of the Opposition 1976–79 and 1980–83, and Prime Minister 1979–80. He became Minister for External Affairs 1984–91 and Minister for Constitutional Affairs 1991–93, under *Mulroney.

Clark, Kenneth Mackenzie Clark, Baron (1903–1983). English art historian, museum director and broadcaster, born in London. Educated at Oxford, he worked with Bernard *Berenson in Florence for two years, and became Director of the National Gallery, London 1934–45. He was Slade Professor

of Fine Arts at Oxford University 1946–50 and 1961–62, Chairman of the Arts Council of Great Britain 1953–60 and of the Independent Television Authority 1954–57. His books included *Leonardo da Vinci* (1939), *Landscape into Art* (1949), *Piero della Francesca* (1951), *The Nude* (1956) and *Rembrandt and the Italian Renaissance* (1966). His television series and later book *Civilisation* (1969) were extremely popular. He received a KCB in 1938, the CH in 1959, a peerage in 1969 and the OM in 1976. His son **Alan Kenneth Mackenzie Clark** (1928–1999) was a controversial military historian and diarist, Conservative MP 1974–92, 1997–99, and a junior minister.

Secrest, M., *Kenneth Clark*. 1984.

Clark, (Charles) **Manning** (Hope) (1915–1991). Australian historian. Educated at Melbourne and Oxford, he was professor of Australian history at The Australian National University 1949–80, writing the massive but controversial *A History of Australia* (1962–87, 6 vols). He was one of the original recipients of the AC (1973).

Clark, Mark Wayne (1896–1984). American soldier. He served in World War I and was wounded, and in World War II became GOC of the US Fifth Army in the invasion of Italy (1943), later commanding all US troops in Italy 1944–45 and Austria 1945–47. He succeeded General M. B. *Ridgway as Supreme Commander of Allied Powers in the Far East and UN Commander-in-Chief in Korea 1952–53. He was in charge of the allied armies at the end of the Korean War. He wrote *From the Danube to the Yalu* (1954).

Clark, William (1770–1838). American explorer, born in Virginia. He joined the army in 1792 and fought against the Native Americans. With Meriwether *Lewis he went on an expedition to the northwest of the United States (1804–06). Leaving from St Louis, they explored the Missouri River to its source, crossed the Rocky Mountains and followed the Columbia River to the Pacific. They returned to St Louis and published a valuable scientific record of their expedition. Clark was Governor of Missouri Territory 1813–20 and Superintendent of Indian Affairs 1822–38.

Clarke, Sir Arthur C(harles) (1917–2008). British novelist and science writer. His predictions of future technological developments scored well for accuracy, including the communications satellite (1945). With Stanley *Kubrick he wrote *2001: A Space Odyssey* (1968) as a novel and script for an important film. He published more than 50 books. He lived in Sri Lanka from 1956.

Clarke, John Morrison (1948–2017). Australian-New Zealand satirist, actor, writer and film producer. A penetrating satirist in the tradition of *Swift and a master of language, he punctured political absurdity and pomposity on film, television, radio, books and journals.

Clarke, Kenneth Harry, Baron Clarke of Nottingham (1940–). English Conservative politician. A barrister (QC), he was a Member of Parliament 1970–2019, Secretary of State for Health 1988–90, for Education and Science 1990–92, for Home Affairs 1992–93 and Chancellor of the Exchequer 1993–97. Under David *Cameron, he served as Minister for Justice and Lord Chancellor 2010–12, then as Minister without Portfolio 2012–14, then forced out, was consoled by the award of a CH. His ministerial service was the fifth longest since *Palmerston.

Clarke, Marcus Andrew Hislop (1846–1881). Australian novelist, born in London. He became a journalist in Melbourne and wrote a powerful (but not completely accurate) novel about the convict settlement at Port Arthur (Tasmania), *For the Term of His Natural Life* (1874).

Claude, Georges (1870–1960). French chemist. He invented neon lighting and founded a company to exploit this invention. Among his other achievements was the invention of processes for the production of liquid air and of synthetic nitrates.

Claude Lorrain(e) (Claude Gellée) (1600–1662). French landscape painter, born in Nancy. Originally a pastrycook, he was trained in Rome and lived there from 1627. Most of his paintings were based on biblical, classical or medieval themes, for example *The Judgment of Paris* (1646), *Seaport: The Embarkation of the Queen of Sheba* (1648) and *Landscape with the Marriage of Isaac and Rebekah* (1648). He made thousands of fluent, almost impressionistic, drawings and was also an etcher. He died rich and about 250 of his paintings survive, most in England, where his idealised landscapes were much admired, especially by *Turner.

Claudel, Paul Louis Charles Marie (1868–1955). French poet, playwright and diplomat. He studied law, joined the diplomatic service in 1890 and spent most of his adult life abroad. He served as Minister to Brazil 1917–19, and Ambassador to Japan 1921–25, to the US 1926–33, and to Belgium 1933–35. He called himself a follower of *Rimbaud and it was the influence of the Symbolists which turned him away from materialism and the acceptance of a mechanical universe; however, he reacted against the decadence of the symbolists and his work reflects his devotion to Catholicism. His plays include *Break of Noon* (1908), *The Tidings Brought to Mary* (1916) and *The Book of Christopher Columbus* (1930). He was elected to the Académie française in 1946. He is important in the history of the theatre because of his use, in his later plays, of 'total theatre' stage presentation. His sister **Camille Claudel** (1864–1943) was a sculptor,

mistress and model of *Rodin, and was confined in an asylum from 1913. The film *Camille Claudel* appeared in 1989.

Fowlie, W., *Claudel*. 1958.

Claudius I (Tiberius Claudius Drusus Nero Germanicus) (10 BCE–54 CE). Fourth Roman Emperor 41–54 CE. Born in Lugdunum (modern Lyon), son of Drusus, the brother of the Emperor *Tiberius, his supposed, or assumed, imbecility and physical incapacity saved him from the fate of many of his relatives. He wrote and studied history although his works (in Latin and Greek) are now lost. He became Emperor after *Caligula's assassination in 41. He built the Claudian aqueduct, commenced the conquest of Britain and was present for part of the campaign. He appeared to condone the viciousness and profligacy of his wife *Messalina, but when she publicly married a lover he had her executed. *Suetonius makes a confused reference to Claudius' attempt to expel Jews from Rome in 49 CE, because they had been 'causing disturbances at the instigation of Chrestus (sic)'. His second wife *Agrippina, who is believed to have poisoned him, was the mother of the next emperor, *Nero.

Graves, R., *I Claudius, Claudius the God*. 1934; Osgood, J., *Claudius Caesar*. 2010; Levick, B., *Claudius*. 2015.

Claudius II (Marcus Aurelius Claudius Gothicus) (d.270). Roman Emperor 268–70. Born in Sirmium, Pannonia (now in Serbia). A career soldier, he was Governor of Illyria, and was then appointed by the Emperor *Gallienus as his military deputy. After senior officers murdered Gallienus, troops outside Milan proclaimed Claudius as emperor. He defeated the Goths at Naissus (269) and died of the plague in his birthplace.

Clausewitz, Carl Philipp Gottleib von (1780–1831). Prussian soldier and military strategist. Of Polish origin, he served as a staff officer under *Scharnhorst and *Gneisenau, and directed the Prussian army school at Berlin 1818–30. His famous book *On War* (*Von Kriege*, published posthumously by his widow in 1832–37) dealt with military strategy in an analytical manner and remained of major importance until World War I. He coined the aphorism 'War is the continuation of politics by other means'.

Parkinson, R., *Clausewitz*. 1971; Howard, M., *Clausewitz*. 1983; Strachan, H., *Clausewitz*, 2007.

Clausius, Rudolf Julius Emanuel (1822–1888). German mathematical physicist, born in Pomerania (now in Poland). He was educated in Berlin and Halle, and became a professor of physics at the Artillery and Engineering School, Berlin 1850–55. In 1850 he enunciated the First and Second Laws of Thermodynamics ('Work and heat are equivalent', 'Heat cannot of itself pass from a colder to a hotter body') precise formulations of discoveries by J. R. *Mayer, *Joule and *Helmholtz, and of Sadi *Carnot respectively, just anticipating *Kelvin with the Second Law. In 1857 Clausius provided explanations of how electrolysis works and the kinetic theory of gases. He held professorships at Zürich 1855–67, Würzburg 1867–69 and Bonn 1869–88. In 1865 he proposed the concept of 'entropy', the measure of unavailability of energy for work within a system: with any change in the system, entropy increases (from order to disorder). Elected FRS, he was awarded the Copley Medal in 1879. A lunar crater is named for him.

Clay, Henry (1777–1852). American Whig politician, born in Virginia. He became a lawyer, lived in Kentucky from 1797, achieved great success as an advocate and served in the state legislature. He was a US senator 1806–07, 1810–11, 1831–42 and 1849–52, a Member of the House of Representatives 1811–14, 1815–21 and 1823–25, and three times Speaker 1811–14, 1815–20 and 1823–25. He was defeated each time he tried for the presidency, in 1824, 1832, 1840 and 1844. He insisted 'I would rather be right than President', and proved his point. When no candidate secured a majority in the 1824 poll, he urged his supporters in the House of Representatives to vote for J.Q. *Adams, rather than Andrew *Jackson who had led on the popular vote. Adams was elected and appointed Clay as US Secretary of State 1825–29. A great orator and magnetic personality, Clay was called 'The Great Pacificator' for his ability to effect compromises on issues that seemed likely to split the Union, e.g. the Tariff Bill of 1833, in which as an ardent protectionist he proposed that tariffs be lowered in order to appease the south. He also arranged the 1850 compromise, by which California was admitted to the Union as a non-slave state, and the Fugitive Slave Law was passed. His nephew **Cassius Marcellus Clay** (1810–1903) was an ardent abolitionist who edited an anti-slavery newspaper in Lexington.

van Deusen, G.G. *The Life of Henry Clay*. Repr. 1967. Heidler, D.S. and Heidler, J.T, *Henry Clay: The Essential American*. 2010; Klotter, J.C., *Henry Clay: The Man Who Would Be President*. 2018.

Cleanthes (fl. c.300 BCE). Greek philosopher. A Stoic, he was the pupil of *Zeno of Citium, and became a great teacher. St *Paul quoted from one of his poems in the Acts of the Apostles.

Clegg, Sir Nick (Nicholas William Peter) (1967–). English Liberal Democrat politician. Educated at Westminster School and Cambridge, he was MEP 1999–2004, MP 2005–17. He served as Deputy Prime Minister and Lord President of the Council 2010–15, in coalition with David *Cameron's Conservatives. In the elections of May 2015, the Liberals suffered a catastrophic loss, falling from 56 seats to 8.

Clemenceau, Georges Benjamin (1841–1929). French Radical politician, born in the Vendée. Son of a physician, he studied medicine in Paris, but went to the US as a journalist (1865–68) and taught for a time at a school in Connecticut. He was Mayor of Montmartre 1870–71 and a Member of the Chamber of Deputies 1876–93. He founded a radical newspaper in Paris, *La Justice*, in 1880, and became a remorseless critic of ministerial ineptitude. He forced the resignation of President *Grévy over an honours scandal (1887). He was defeated as a deputy in 1893. The ferocity of his journalistic attacks earned him the soubriquet of 'The Tiger' and his revelations caused the fall of several ministries. He was a strong supporter of Captain *Dreyfus, unjustly charged with espionage. A senator 1902–20, he served as Minister of the Interior 1906, and Premier 1906–09, completing the separation of Church and State, but losing the support of the Socialists by using troops to break several strikes. During World War I he flayed government inefficiency in his newspapers, *L'Homme Libré* (suppressed by the censor in 1914) and *L'Homme enchainé*. At a critical moment in the war, when resistance was low (November 1917), President *Poincaré appointed him as Premier and Minister of War, and he held these posts 1917–20. He proved a vigorous leader, mobilised all available resources, and crushed defeatism, but ruled as a virtual dictator, ignoring the legislature. He was responsible for the appointment of Marshal *Foch as Allied Generalissimo in March 1918. He was elected to the Académie française in 1918. After the war had been won he became President of the Paris Peace Conference (1919) and trenchantly criticised President *Wilson's proposals as impracticably idealistic. In January 1920 he was a candidate for President of the Republic, but received a derisory vote (6%) from the French legislature, which chose the feeble Paul *Deschanel. This was a left-handed compliment as his cynical advice at previous presidential elections had always been 'Vote for the stupidest'. He retired from public life, visited India and the US, and devoted himself to literature.

Monnerville, C., *Clemenceau*. 1968; Watson, D.R., *Georges Clemenceau*. 1974.

Clemens, Samuel Langhorne *see* **Twain, Mark**

Clement I, St (Clement of Rome) (c.30–100? CE). Pope 90–100? Thought to have been the fourth Bishop of Rome (i.e. Pope), assuming St *Peter to have been the first, an old tradition claims that he was consecrated by St Peter himself. He wrote an *Epistle to the Church of Corinth* (c.95) which has survived and demonstrates that the Roman see was exercising authority outside the boundaries of Italy. He is thought to have died in exile, perhaps in the Crimea.

Clement VII (Giulio de'Medici) (1478–1534). Pope 1523–34. Posthumous son of the murdered Giuliano de *Medici, and a cousin of Pope *Leo X, he was Archbishop of Florence 1512–34. He proved an indecisive pope and failed to cope with the problems raised by the Reformation. In 1527 Rome was sacked by the Imperial troops of *Charles V but by 1529 Clement had become reconciled with Charles, and begged him to solve the problem of Lutheranism. He refused *Henry VIII's request for an annulment of his marriage to *Katherine of Aragon, the aunt of Charles V (1534).

Clementi, Muzio (1752–1832). Italian pianist and composer. He lived in England 1766–80, 1782–1804, 1810–32, and achieved great fame, first as a pianist and composer, later as a publisher, teacher and piano manufacturer. He was one of the founders of the modern school of piano playing, and composed 70 sonatas and a famous collection of studies *Gradus ad Parnassum*.

Cleopatra VII (Thea Philopater) (69–30 BCE). Queen of Egypt 51–30 BCE. Born in Alexandria, daughter of Ptolemy XII Auletes, she was a member of a Macedonian-Greek dynasty, but spoke Egyptian as well. She married her younger brother, Ptolemy Dionysus, in 51 but was forced into exile by her brother's guardian, Pothinus, in 49. From Syria she attracted the interest and attention of Julius *Caesar, and after he conquered Egypt in 48 she was restored to power. She became Caesar's mistress, bore him a son (Caesarion, 47 BCE) and lived with him in Rome 46–44. On returning to Egypt she married Ptolemy XIV, another of her brothers, but he was soon poisoned on her orders. In 42, she met Mark *Antony, they lived together for 12 years and had three children. Cleopatra's union with Mark Antony cost him much support in Rome, and after his heavy defeat at the battle of Actium (31) he committed suicide. Cleopatra tried to win the love of the victorious Octavian (*Augustus) but failed, and killed herself (according to tradition) by applying an asp to her breast. She was intelligent and widely read but subject to an overmastering ambition and sensuality. She is a major character in plays by *Shakespeare and *Shaw, operas by *Händel and *Massenet and several films.

Volkmann, H., *Cleopatra*. 1958.

Clerk Maxwell, **James** *see* **Maxwell, James Clerk**

Cleveland, Barbara Villiers, 1st Duchess of (1641–1709). English noblewoman. The daughter of Viscount Grandison, she was the mistress of *Charles II from 1660–74 and her sons became Duke of Cleveland, Duke of Grafton and Duke of Northumberland. She became a Roman Catholic and her influence over Charles contributed to the fall of *Clarendon. Among her other lovers was the future Duke of *Marlborough.

Cleveland, (Stephen) **Grover** (1837–1908). 22nd and 24th President of the US 1885–89; 1893–97. Born at Caldwell, New Jersey, the son of a

Presbyterian clergyman, he worked in a lawyer's office from the age of 17 and became an attorney in 1859. He served as Assistant District Attorney of Erie County, New York State, 1863–65, sheriff (and hangman, three times) of Erie County 1871–73, then returned to his law practice. In 1881 he began his extraordinary political career which took him in four years from a law office to the White House. As mayor of Buffalo 1881–82 he proved a notable reformer and gained the Democratic nomination for Governor of New York State, serving 1883–85. He was Democratic candidate for the presidency in 1884, 1888 and 1892. In the 1884 election he was narrowly elected and served as 22nd President 1885–89. In 1888, although he gained a majority of the popular vote, he was defeated in the Electoral College and Benjamin *Harrison became President. In 1892 he won renomination at the Chicago Convention on the first ballot, despite fierce opposition from Tammany Hall in New York, defeated Harrison comfortably in the popular vote and the Electoral College (277 votes to 145) and became the only former President to serve non-consecutive terms. Extremely conservative on economic issues, he favoured a laissez-faire policy. He reformed the civil service, vetoed about 300 Civil War pension bills, urged a policy of free trade (believing that protection was 'pampering employers'), and instituted the Interstate Commerce Commission (1887). His second term was marked by an economic depression. He secured the repeal of the Sherman Silver Purchase Bill and was anxious to maintain the gold standard. He used Federal troops to suppress the Pullman strike in Illinois (1894), despite the protests of J. P. *Altgeld, and invoked the *Monroe Doctrine against Great Britain in a dispute over the Venezuelan border (1895). He was virtually repudiated by his party in 1896 when W. J. *Bryan was nominated on a free-silver policy. He strongly opposed female suffrage. He retired to New Jersey, became a Trustee of Princeton University 1901–08 and of the Equitable Life Insurance Company, New York, 1905–08.

Cleveland, John (1613–1658). English poet. Champion of the Royalist cause during the Civil War, his best-known work is a series of political poems in heroic couplet: *Rupertismus, The Rebel Scot* and *The King's Disguise*.

Cliburn, Van (Harvey Lavan Cliburn, Jr) (1934–2013). American pianist, born in Louisiana. Brought up in Texas, he studied in New York, specialising in the Russian romantic tradition. Winning the first International Tchaikovsky Competition in Moscow (September 1958) made him an instant celebrity, highly honoured in the US and USSR. However, he kept playing the same repertoire that made him famous, suffered a 'burnout' in 1978 and withdrew from concerts until 1994.

Cliff, N., *Moscow Nights. The Van Cliburn Story*. 2017.

Clifford, Clark McAdams (1906–1998). American lawyer. Practising in Washington, he was an advisor to Presidents *Truman, *Kennedy and *Johnson, chair of the Foreign Intelligence Advisory Board 1963–68 and was Secretary of Defense 1968–69, when the US began to retract its military action in Vietnam. He was accused of conflict of interest in banking in 1991 which destroyed much of his reputation.

Clifford of Chudleigh, **Thomas Clifford, 1st Baron** (1630–1673). English politician and courtier. Educated at Oxford, he was MP 1660–72, served on several diplomatic missions for *Charles II, and became a member of the 'Cabal' (Clifford, Arlington, Buckingham, Ashley, Lauderdale) ministry, as Commissioner for the Treasury 1667–72 and Lord Treasurer 1672–73. He became a Roman Catholic about 1670. He was a sincere but ineffective minister.

Clinton, Bill (William Jefferson Blythe, Jr) (1946–). 42nd President of the US 1993–2001. Born in Hope, Arkansas, he took his step-father's name after his widowed mother remarried. Educated at Hot Springs High School and Georgetown University, he won a Rhodes scholarship to Oxford (where he campaigned against the Vietnam war) and completed legal studies at Yale. In November 1975, he married Hillary Diane Rodham (Hillary *Clinton). He was a professor at the University of Arkansas Law School 1974–76, Attorney-General of Arkansas 1977–79 and Governor of Arkansas 1979–81, 1983–93. In 1992 he won the Democratic nomination for president against a weak field, at a time when George *Bush was thought to be unbeatable. In November, he defeated Bush 43 to 38 per cent in the popular vote, with H. Ross *Perot on 19 per cent, after a vigorous campaign marked by strong personal attacks. Clinton concentrated on the US economy and promised an era of 'hope and change'. After a shaky start as President, he achieved some successes in foreign policy, backed the Middle East peace and supported Boris *Yeltsin. The Republicans won control of Congress in 1994 with a hard Right agenda, but this victory soon caused a political reaction, Clinton moved to the centre on policy issues and recovered lost popularity. In November 1996 he became the first Democrat since Franklin *Roosevelt to be elected for a second term, winning 49 per cent of the vote, in a low turnout, against Bob *Dole and Perot. His second term was distracted by allegations of sexual impropriety ('Zippergate') by Paula Jones, Monica Lewinsky, Kathleen Willey and others. Fears of a second Gulf War in February 1998 were averted (or postponed) by the intervention of Kofi *Annan. Clinton, pursued by special prosecutor Kenneth Starr, gave evidence to a grand jury (August 1998) and made damaging admissions about sexual relations with Lewinsky. Starr's report alleged 15 offences by Clinton, and the House of Representatives decided to conduct impeachment hearings. Despite Democrat gains in the 1998 Congressional elections, in December the House, voting on party lines, impeached Clinton

on two counts, perjury and obstruction of justice. (Air attacks on Baghdad at this time consolidated Saddam's position.) After trial in the Senate January–February 1999, the prosecution failed on both counts, but Clinton suffered heavy personal damage. NATO missile attacks and bombing of Serbia (April–June 1999) following 'ethnic cleansing' in Kosovo appeared at first to strengthen *Milosevic, but led to a peace agreement in which NATO and Russian troops occupied Kosovo under UN auspices. The Clinton Foundation was founded in 2001 and has developed programs for tackling problems of global health, education and exposure to climate change. In 2008, the Clintons campaigned for Barack *Obama after Hillary failed to win the Democratic nomintion, and used networking skills to promote her candidacy in 2016. In 14 Presidential rankings by US historians and political scientists, Clinton scored No. 17 in the aggregate.

Clinton, B., *My Life*. 2004; Branch, T., *The Clinton Tapes*. 2009.

Clinton, De Witt (1769–1828). American lawyer. US Senator from New York 1802–03, Mayor of New York City 1803–07, 1808–10, 1811–15, and State Governor 1817–23, 1825–28, he was Federalist candidate for president in 1812, against *Madison. He first put forward the idea of a canal linking the northeast coast with the Great Lakes through Lake Erie. The State Legislature accepted a scheme in 1816 and Clinton supervised the project himself and opened the Erie Canal in 1825. He was also noted for his interest in education and the dissemination of the arts and sciences.

Clinton, George (1739–1812). American politician, born in New York. Lawyer and soldier, he was Governor of New York 1777–95; 1801–04 (a record period), opposed ratification of the US Constitution and became a founder of the emerging Democratic-Republican Party. In 1792, he was a candidate for Vice President (losing to John *Adams), but won in 1804 and 1808, serving under *Jefferson and *Madison 1805–12, and dying in office. De Witt *Clinton was a nephew.

Clinton, Sir Henry (c.1738–1795). English soldier. A Member of Parliament 1772–84 and 1790–94, he was an indecisive Commander-in-Chief of British Forces in North America 1778–81, and wrote a narrative of the campaign.

Clinton, Hillary (Diane) (née **Rodham**) (1947–). American lawyer and Democratic politician, born in Chicago. Educated at Wellesley College (Mass.) and Yale, in 1964 she campaigned for Barry *Goldwater, but became a Democrat and a lawyer for the Senate's *Nixon impeachment team. She married Bill *Clinton in 1975. After her husband's election as President (1992), as First Lady she proposed comprehensive changes in health insurance which were blocked in Congress and she came under bitter personal attack about property dealings in Arkansas in the 1970s ('Whitewater'), which intensified after the Republican victory in mid-term elections in 1994. At the end of her husband's term, she was elected as US Senator from New York, serving 2001–09. She campaigned for the Democratic presidential nomination in 2008, and although initially regarded as a clear favourite, lost to Barack *Obama. She then served as his effective but controversial Secretary of State 2009–13, declining reappointment. In April 2015 she launched her campaign for the Democratic Party Presidential nomination. Overwhelmingly supported by the party establishment and in the Southern States, she was challenged by Senator Bernie *Sanders who appealed to the 'outsider' vote and young people. By June 2016 she had enough pledged delegates to secure the nomination—the first woman endorsed for President by a major party. In November, despite a popular vote of 65.8 million, the second highest figure in US history, a 2.1 per cent plurality, winning 20 states and the District of Columbia, she was defeated by Donald *Trump in the Electoral College.

Clinton, H. R., *Living History*. 2003, *Hard Choices*. 2014; Aller, J., and Parnes, A., *HRC*. 2014.

Clive, Robert, 1st Baron Clive of Plassey (Irish peerage) (1725–1774). English soldier and administrator, born near Market Drayton, Shropshire. Son of a squire, and MP, he was educated at the Merchant Taylors' School, became extremely unhappy there, and in 1743 joined the East India Company as a 'writer' (i.e. clerk administrator). He worked in Madras 1743–46 but obtained an ensign's commission in the Indian army after fighting began with *Dupleix' French troops. After training a large force of sepoys he defeated 10,000 French and Indian troops at Arcot in 1751 in a clash that resulted from a dispute over the control of the Carnatic. He returned to England in 1753.

When the Seven Years' War began in Europe, fighting between the British and French soon resumed in India. Clive was Lieutenant Governor of Fort St David (near Chennai) 1755–57. In June 1756, 64 British civilians were locked in the tiny 'Black Hole of Calcutta' and only 21 survived. Clive was ordered to remove the psychopathic Nawab of Bengal, **Siraj ud-Daula** (1733–1757) who was probably responsible. Clive's troops defeated the Nawab at Palashi (Plassey) in June 1757, after Siraj's commander **Mir Jafar** (c.1691–1765) was bribed to change allegiance: the large state of Bengal then came under EIC control, Mir Jafa became Nawab and Siraj was murdered. Clive became Commander-in-Chief in India 1756–60.

He returned to England in 1760, with about £48,000,000 in 2021 values (Horace *Walpole called him 'a Croesus'), and bought several estates. He had been a Member of Parliament 1754–55, was soon re-elected 1761–74 and awarded an Irish peerage in 1762.

In India for the third time, he was Commander-in-Chief and Governor of Bengal (technically, Governor of the Presidency of Fort William) 1765–67. He expanded British control over Bengal, Bihar and Orissa, proposed reforms in administration, reducing the role of the EIC and prohibiting corruption, on which he had expert knowledge. Oddly, he never liked India, made no attempt to learn its languages and was profoundly incurious about its history and culture. But he was a brilliant fighter with an exceptional grasp of strategy and human weakness.

He was attacked, somewhat unfairly, for the EIC's role in the catastrophic famine in Bengal in 1780 in which one-fifth of the population died but defended himself brilliantly before a Parliamentary Select Committee ('Mr. Chairman, at this moment I stand astonished by my own moderation'). A motion to censure Clive was defeated 155 votes to 95.

Suffering from depression and gout, addicted to opium for pain relief, he travelled through Europe, collected artworks. Back in London he committed suicide by cutting his throat with a pen-knife. (He had twice attempted suicide years earlier).

'Clive' became a popular given name, he was commemorated in Westminster Abbey, the subject of a poem by *Browning, plays and films (generally admiring). Many statues were erected, now under threat. His giant tortoise Adwaita, died in 2006.

His son, **Edward Clive, 1st Earl of Powis** (1754–1839) was Governor of Madras 1798–1803, raised to an earldom in 1804. His wife's inheritance, Powis Castle, Wales, housed a unique collection of artefacts looted from India. He voted against the Reform Bill (1832).

Harvey, R., *Clive: The Life and Death of a British Emperor*. 1998.

Clodius (Pulcher), **Publius** (c.93–52 BCE). Roman politician. A leader of the democratic party, he became a supporter of *Caesar and an opponent of *Pompey and *Cicero. As Tribune of the People 59–57, he proved to be a capable demagogue, revived the guilds, ordered free gifts of corn for the people, and sent Cicero into exile. He organised street gangs to help him in his campaign for the Consulate but was killed by the rival gang of Milo.

Cloete, (Edward Fairly) **Stuart** (Graham) (1897–1976). South African novelist. His novels include *Turning Wheels* (1937), *The Hill of Doves* (1941), *The African Giant* (1955), *The Mask* (1957), *Rags of Glory* (1963) and *The Abductors* (1966). He was a strong critic of apartheid and the Boer tradition.

Cloete, S., *Victorian Son*. 1972.

Close, 'Chuck' (Charles Thomas) (1940–2021). American painter and photographer, born in Washington State. Working in a variety of forms, including collage, woodcuts, lithographs, etchings, finger paintings, tapestry and mosaics, he was known for his massive portraits (e.g. Philip *Glass, Barack *Obama) and there were many international exhibitions.

Clough, Arthur Hugh (1819–1861). English poet. Brought up in the US, he was educated at Rugby and Oxford, and became the friend of *Carlyle, *Emerson and Matthew *Arnold. A civil servant, he was a melancholy sceptic whose verse reveals his preoccupation with ethical questions. He revised *Dryden's translation of *Plutarch's Lives*. His sister, **Anne Jemima Clough** (1820–1892) became the first Principal of Newnham College, Cambridge 1871–92.

Chorley, K., *Arthur Hugh Clough*. 1962.

Clovis I (Germanic form Hlodwig, Latinised as Louis) (466–511). King of the Franks c.481–511. Born in Tournai (modern Belgium), son of Childéric I, ruler of the Salian Franks, he murdered rivals to the succession, defeated the Gallo-Roman rulers of the Kingdom of Soissons in 486, made Paris his capital and won territory from the Alemanni, Burgundians and Visigoths. He married Clothilde, a Christian, and was baptised himself in Reims in 496. (This event led to a controversial commemoration in 1996 when Clovis was hailed by the ultra-Right as the founder of Christian France.) He opposed the Arians and convened a Church council at Orléans (511).

Verseuil, J., *Clovis*. 1992.

Clyde, 1st Baron *see* **Campbell, Colin**

Clynes, J(ohn) **R**(obert) (1869–1949). English Labour politician. Son of an Irish labourer, he worked in cotton mills from the age of 10, self-educated but a great reader, he became a union organiser and a Labour MP 1906–3l, 1935–45. He led the Labour Party 1921–22, during Ramsay *MacDonald's absence from Parliament, but stood down to become deputy Leader 1922–32. Lord Privy Seal 1924 and Home Secretary 1929–31, he died in poverty.

Cnut (or **Knud** = 'knot', also written as **Canute**) (c.995–1035). King of England 1016–35, Denmark 1018–35 and Norway 1028–35. Son of *Sweyn Forkbeard, King of Denmark, and a Polish mother, he invaded England in 1015, divided the kingdom with *Edmund Ironside and on his death became sole king. He codified law, encouraged the Church and (bigamously) married *Æthelred's widow Emma. He occupied Norway after a civil war in 1028. The legend of him attempting to command the tide to turn back has been misunderstood: he was ironically pointing out to fawning courtiers that there were limits to his power.

Bolton, T., *Cnut the Great*. 2017.

Coates, Albert (1882–1953). English conductor and composer, born in St Petersburg. He worked in business and studied in both Russia and England, then became a pupil of *Nikisch in Leipzig. He conducted the Russian Imperial Opera 1910–15, and was principal conductor of the London Symphony Orchestra 1919–22. Between 1921 and 1932 he made many acoustic and electric recordings, especially of *Wagner, but only a few are downloadable on the www. He composed seven operas which have all sunk without trace. He lived in South Africa 1946–53.

Coates, Eric (1886–1957). English composer. His light music gained wide popularity and included the *London Suite*, *London Again*, *The Three Elizabeths* and *The Three Bears* Suite.

Coates, (Joseph) **Gordon** (1878–1943). New Zealand politician. A Member of Parliament 1911–43, decorated in World War I, he became Leader of the Reform Party and Prime Minister 1925–28, the first born in New Zealand. As Minister for Finance 1933–35 he attempted to tackle the Depression's impact and during World War II served under Labour as a non-party minister 1940–43.

Cobb, John Rhodes (1899–1952). English racing motorist. He broke the world land speed record, 1947, by travelling at 634.4 km p.h.in a Napier-Railton. He was killed in a motor boat accident on Loch Ness, Scotland.

Cobbett, William (1763–1835). English pamphleteer and Radical politician. After service in the army in Canada 1783–91, he became a Tory propagandist, under the pen name of Peter Porcupine, and attacked all forms of radicalism and democracy. After 1804, he joined the radical cause, was imprisoned for denouncing flogging in the army and was later acquitted on a charge of sedition. A Member in the first reformed Parliament 1832–35 he wrote extensively on political and agricultural subjects. *Rural Rides* (1822–28), published as a series of pamphlets, is masterly.

Cole, G. D. H., *The Life of William Cobbett*. 3rd ed. 1947.

Cobden, Richard (1804–1865). English Liberal politician. A Member of Parliament 1841–65, the co-founder, with John *Bright, of the Anti-Corn Law League, he became known as 'The Apostle of Free Trade'. Prominent in opposing the Crimean War (which brought him much unpopularity), he was an active worker for international peace and disarmament. Although he regarded himself as a radical, he firmly believed in 'laissez faire' and opposed trade unions and factory legislation, which he thought were opposed to liberty of contract. He supported the North in the US Civil War.

Hinde, W., *Richard Cobden*. 1987.

Cobham, Sir Alan John (1894–1973). English aviator. After serving in the Royal Flying Corps during World War I, he entered civil aviation, took part in many notable long distance flights and won the Britannia Trophy in 1926 for his flight to Australia and back. He pioneered the London–Cape Town route and devised a system for refuelling planes in the air.

Cochrane, Thomas, 10th Earl of Dundonald (1775–1860). Scottish sailor. After many brilliant exploits in which he captured over 50 French and Spanish ships, he became a Whig Member of Parliament 1805–16. Deprived of his naval command in 1816, after being tried for fraud he was imprisoned for one year. On his release he went to South America, where the struggle against Spanish domination was in progress, and served as Commander of the Chilean Navy 1818–22, and of the Brazilian Navy 1823–25, contributing much to the success of the nationalist risings. On returning to Europe he became Commander of the Greek Navy 1827–28, but when the Whigs came to power in England he was reinstated in the British Navy (1832) and served as Commander-in-Chief of the North American Station 1848–51.

Cockcroft, Sir John Douglas (1897–1967). English physicist. Educated at Manchester and St John's College, Cambridge, he worked with *Rutherford at the Cavendish Laboratory. In 1932, with E. T. S. Walton, he succeeded in splitting the nucleus of the atom. Professor of natural philosophy at Cambridge 1939–46, during the war he worked on the production of the atomic bomb in the US. He was director of the UK Atomic Energy Establishment at Harwell 1946–59 and first Master of Churchill College, Cambridge 1959–67. He shared the Nobel Prize for Physics in 1951 with Walton, received the OM in 1957, and won the Ford 'Atoms for Peace' Award of $US75,000 in 1961. He was Chancellor of The Australian National University, Canberra 1961–65.

Cockerell, Sir Christopher Sydney (1910–1999). English engineer. He was a pioneer of the amphibious hovercraft that can travel across a variety of surfaces on a cushion of air. The air is produced by jets. Cockerell was knighted in 1969, 10 years after a prototype hovercraft crossed the English Channel.

Cocteau, Jean (1889–1963). French poet, ballet designer, novelist, playwright, actor, film producer and graphic artist, born near Paris. He published his first volume of poetry *La Lampe d'Aladin* in 1908, was associated with *Diaghilev's Ballets Russes and served as an ambulance driver in World War I. His ballets include *Parade* (1917), with music by Erik *Satie, sets by Pablo *Picasso and staged by *Diaghilev, *Le Boeuf sur le toit* (1920, *Milhaud/ *Dufy) and *Les Biches* (1924, *Poulenc). He wrote eight novels of which *Thomas l'imposteur* (1923) and *Les Enfants Terribles* (1929, filmed 1950) are the best known. His opera-oratorio *Oedipus Rex* (1927) was set to music

by *Stravinsky and remains in the repertoire. Several of his plays were filmed under his own direction e.g. *Orphée* (1926, 1950), and *Les Parents terribles* (1938, 1948), while others were successful on television and radio, e.g. *La Voix Humaine* (1930) and *La Machine á écrire* (*The Typewriter*, 1941). His beautiful but obscure films were based on a private mythology not always shared with the audience. The best known were *Le Sang d'un poete* (1932), *L 'Eternal retour* (1944) and *La Belle et la bête* (1945). In the 1950s he was active as a graphic artist and fresco painter. After decades as an 'enfant terrible' and foe of artistic orthodoxy, Cocteau accepted immortalisation by election to the Académie française (1955).

Cody, William F(rederick) (1846–1917). American showman, known as 'Buffalo Bill'. Originally an Indian scout, he gained his title by supplying buffalo meat to railway workers. From 1883 he organised a 'Wild West Show' which stimulated wide interest in 'Cowboys and Indians'.

Coen, Jan Pieterszoon (1587–1629). Dutch colonialist. He worked for the Dutch East India Company (Vereenigde Oostindische Compagnie: VOC) and was twice Governor-General of the Dutch East Indies 1618–23; 1627–29. He founded the capital, Batavia, established monopolies in nutmeg and cloves, and, using Japanese mercenaries, massacred 15,000 people in the conquest of the Banda Islands.

Coen, Joel (1954–) and **Ethan Coen** (1957–). American film directors, born in Minneapolis. Their films include *Raising Arizona* (1987), *Barton Fink* (1991), *Fargo* (1996) and *O Brother, Where Art Thou?* (2000). They won the Academy Award for *No Country for Old Men* in 2008.

Coetzee, J(ohn) **M**(axwell) (1940–). South African-Australian novelist and critic, born in Cape Town. Educated at the University of Cape Town and in Texas, he worked in London and for IBM as a computer programmer. He taught English at Buffalo, New York and in Cape Town and held a chair in Chicago. He won the Booker Prize twice, for *Life & Times of Michael K* (1983) and for *Disgrace* (1999). Other novels include *Waiting for the Barbarians* (1980), *Master of Petersburg* (1994), *Elizabeth Costello* (2003), *Slow Man* (2005), *Diary of a Bad Year* (2007) and *The Childhood of Jesus* (2013). He relocated to Adelaide in 2002 and became an Australian citizen in 2006. Awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature in 2003, the citation calls him 'a scrupulous doubter, ruthless in his criticism of the cruel rationalism and cosmetic morality of western civilisation'. He has published outstanding volumes of essays and literary criticism.

Kannemeyer, J. C., *J. M. Coetzee.* 2012; Attwell, J.C., *J. M. Coetzee and the Life of Writing*. 2015.

Coeur, Jacques (c.1395–1456). French merchant and pioneer capitalist, born in Bourges. Son of a merchant, he travelled through the Mediterranean and the Levant. His investments included ship-owning, salt, tax collecting, mining, shipping, arms, money changing, importing furs, silk, jewels and artefacts, and property in Paris, Marseille, Montpellier, Lyon and Tours. He was a minister to *Charles VII, then accused of disloyalty, tortured and imprisoned. He escaped and died on the Greek island of Chios. His palace in Bourges, begun in 1444, is the finest surviving example of medieval domestic architecture, and a mansion in Paris (4e arrondissment) is still in use.

Coggan, (Frederick) **Donald, Baron Coggan** (1909–2000). English prelate. He was Principal of the London School of Divinity 1944–56, Bishop of Bradford 1956–61, Archbishop of York 1961–74 and Archbishop of Canterbury 1974–80. His theology was evangelical, and, although concerned with social issues, he stressed that a changed society can only come from the conversion of the individual to the service of God. His works include *Sinews of Faith* (1969) and *The Heart of the Christian Faith* (1978).

Cohan, George M(ichael) (1878–1942). American songwriter, producer and performer, born in Rhode Island. Of Irish Catholic descent, he worked in Tin Pan Alley and composed more than 150 songs, including *Over There* and *I'm a Yankee Doodle Dandy*.

Cohen, Leonard (1934–2016). Canadian singer, novelist and poet, born in Montréal. Relatively late in securing recognition, he recorded and toured for the first time in 1970 but soon had a great reputation in a variety of art forms and received many honours including the Canadian CC (2003). His novels include *The Favourite Game* (1963) and *Beautiful Losers* (1966).

Coke, Sir Edward (1552–1634). English lawyer and politician. A Member of Parliament 1580–1606, he was Speaker of the House of Commons 1593–94 and Attorney-General 1594–1606, proving to be a zealous supporter of the royal prerogative and being responsible for the prosecution of *Essex, *Raleigh and the Gunpowder Plot conspirators. However, on his appointment as Chief Justice of the Court of Common Pleas, in 1606, he became the champion of the Common Law in opposition to the exercise of the Crown's prerogative rights. In 1610 he decided that the king's proclamations could not override laws made by Parliament and that ecclesiastical causes must be subject to the jurisdiction of the secular courts. He was promoted to the office of Chief Justice of the King's Bench Division 1613–16 where it was hoped that he would, prove less troublesome to *James I and his advisors. His fearless defiance of those orders of the king which he regarded as illegal made the supporters of the Divine Right determined to secure his removal from office. In 1616 several trivial charges prepared by *Bacon, the Attorney-General, were brought against him and he was dismissed. A leading member of Parliament 1621–29, he denounced interference with the liberty of the House of Commons. In 1622

he was seized and imprisoned as a result of his attacks. He vigorously opposed the Duke of *Buckingham's monopoly of office and favour, describing him as 'the grievance of grievances'. Coke's law reports helped to systematise and consolidate the Common Law of England and his writings on jurisprudence, such as the four Institutes are well known, especially *Coke on Littleton*.

Holdsworth, W. S., *A History of English Law*. 2nd ed. Vol. 5. 1937; Throne, S. E., *Sir Edward Coke*. 1957.

Coke, Thomas William, 1st Earl of Leicester of Holkham (1752–1842). English agricultural innovator and Radical, born in London. Educated at Eton, he went on 'the Grand Tour', succeeded his father as a Whig MP for Norfolk 1776–84; 1790–1832, supporting Charles James *Fox, the American and French Revolutions, the abolition of slavery, the right of workers to strike and the Reform Bill.

He inherited an estate of 12,000 hectares (30,000 acres) near Holkham, Norfolk, including 54 farms, and expanded it to 20,200 hectares. The soil was sandy and productivity low. He adopted and promoted many agricultural innovations: enclosure of open fields, four course crop rotation, sowing seeds in drills, developed better grasses and clover to support more livestock, bred superior cattle, sheep and pigs, replaced rye with wheat and engaged in massive tree planting. He offered secure leases to tenant farmers, created lakes and parklands and was a major collector of paintings, books and manuscripts. He promoted the Agricultural Revolution through 'open days' and tours of inspection, encouraging a major improvement in British farming.

He declined a peerage five times. When Coke left Parliament in 1832 *William IV, a subject of mutual detestation, refused him a peerage but Queen *Victoria obliged in 1837. He rarely attended the House of Lords which he called 'the hospital for incurables'. The Coke family pronounced its name as 'Cook'.

Stirling, A.M.W., *Coke of Norfolk and His Friends*. 2008; Martins, S.W., *Coke of Norfolk* 1754–1842. 2009.

Colbert, Jean Baptiste (1619–1683). French administrator. After the death of *Mazarin he became the Chief Minister of *Louis XIV. As Controller General of Finance 1665–83, he repaid most of the national debt, reorganised the French Navy, established new colonies in Africa and America, encouraged shipbuilding and foreign trade and reformed the French administrative service. To finance these reforms he had to introduce higher taxation which made him unpopular.

Mongredien, G., *Colbert, 1619–1683*. 1963.

Cole, G(eorge) **D**(ouglas) **H**(oward) (1889–1959). English economist. The author of *The Common People* (with Raymond Postgate) (1938) and *The Intelligent Man's Guide to the Post War World* (1947), he became professor of social and political theory at Oxford University in 1944 and was active in the Labour Party and the Fabian Society. With his wife **Dame Margaret Isabel Cole** (née Postgate) (1893–1980) he wrote 29 detective novels (1923–42).

Cole, Nat(haniel Adams) **'King'** (1919–1965). American singer and jazz pianist, born in Montgomery, Alabama. He first gained recognition as the leader of a jazz trio in the 1930s. Later he performed mainly as a singer. He had wide popular success with his more sentimental songs.

Coleridge, Samuel Taylor (1772–1834). English poet and philosopher, born in Devonshire. After leaving Jesus College, Cambridge, he became a friend of Robert *Southey and William *Wordsworth. Keenly interested in religion and philosophy, between 1794 and 1804 he was attracted by Unitarianism, preached for a time, planned to become a minister, then became agnostic. Involved in plans to set up a utopian community, a Pantisocracy, in Pennsylvania, his enthusiasm soon waned.

With Wordsworth he published *Lyrical Ballads* (1798) and the volume was a major contribution to the Romantic revival in English literature. All Coleridge's great poems were written in an 18–month burst: 'Kubla Khan' (1797–98), 'The Rime of the Ancient Mariner' (1797–98), 'Christabel' (1797; 1800), 'Frost at Midnight' (1798) and 'The Nightingale' (1798). He claimed that 'Kubla Khan' was part of a longer poem that he heard in an opium dream.

After 1800 he was completely addicted to opium and was dependent on the charity of friends. He spent time in Malta and Italy (1804–06) attempting to recover.

At his height he was celebrated as a dazzling conversationalist but later, because of debt and increasing ill-health, he became a melancholic. His principles of literary criticism are to be found in his *Biographia Literaria* (1817) and he is regarded as the founder of the modern school of Shakespearian criticism. He was also interested in metaphysics and translated works by *Schiller, *Kant and *Lessing. He popularised the word 'psychology' (1800). Although most of his poetry is of uneven quality, his masterpieces have a mysterious and magical beauty that echoes the music of a visionary world.

Bate, W. J., *Coleridge*. 1968; Wilson Knight, G., *The Starlit Dome*. Repr. 1971; Holmes, R., *Coleridge: Early Visions*. 1989; Holmes, R., *Darker Reflections*. 1998.

Coleridge-Taylor, Samuel (1875–1912). British composer and conductor, born in London. His mother was English, his father from Sierra Leone. His cantata *The Song of Hiawatha* (1900), based on

*Longfellow's poem, was a great success and he toured the United States. Much of his chamber music, unpublished in his lifetime, is now performed and recorded.

Colet, John (1466–1519). English theologian. A friend of *Erasmus and Thomas *More, he revived the humanist tradition in the English Church and his liberal opinions influenced the Reformation in England. He was Dean of St Paul's Cathedral 1505–19, and founder of St Paul's School, London.

Colette, Sidonie Gabrielle Claudine (1873–1954). French novelist. She began her working life as a music hall actor. Her first husband, **Henry Gauthier-Villars** (1859–1931), discovered her talent for writing and, by keeping her prisoner, forced her to produce novels which he published under his pen name of 'Willy'. After their divorce she continued to write and the semi-autobiographical 'Claudine' novels became very popular. A brilliant observer, she wrote always of love, with a masterly understanding of human motives. Her books include *The Vagrant* (1912), *Chéri* (1929), *Claudine in Paris* (1931), and *The Cat* (1936). *Gigi* (1951) was the basis of a highly successful musical film.

Richardson, J., *Colette*. 1982; Gilmour, J., *Colette's France. Her lives, her loves*. 2013.

Colfax, Schuyler (1823–1885). American Republican politician, born in New York City. He became a journalist, Congressman from Indiana 1855–69 and Speaker of the House of Representatives 1863–69. He was Vice President of the US 1869–73, serving with Ulysses S. *Grant.

Coligny, Gaspard de (1519–1572). French soldier, admiral and Huguenot leader. Brother of a cardinal, noted as a fearless leader and imprisoned in Spain 1557–59, he became a Calvinist convert. From 1560 he was joint leader of the Huguenots with Louis I, Prince of *Condé, and actively promoted the Protestant cause. Although he was a favourite of *Charles IX, he was murdered by servants of the Duc de Guise at the St Bartholomew's Day massacre.

Colijn, Hendrikus (1869–1944). Dutch Christian Democratic politician. Prime Minister 1925–26 and 1933–39, he died in German captivity.

Collingwood, Cuthbert Collingwood, Ist Baron (1750–1810). English sailor. After *Nelson's death he became Commander-in-Chief of the Mediterranean Fleet 1805–10.

Collins, Michael (1890–1922). Irish nationalist politician. He worked in London 1906–16 as a clerk in the post office and a bank, returning to Ireland to take part in the Dublin rising and was interned briefly. Elected to the House of Commons (1918) as a Sinn Féin MP, he refused to sit in Westminster but, with other Irish Nationalists, set up the Dáil Éireann (1919) and proclaimed the Republic. Under *de Valera, he became Minister for Home Affairs 1919 and Finance 1919–22, general of the Irish volunteer army and director of intelligence for the Irish Republican Army (IRA). In December 1921, with Arthur *Griffith, he negotiated a treaty with *Lloyd George that partitioned Ireland and set up the Irish Free State, with Dominion status. When de Valera repudiated the treaty, demanding full independence and the formation of a Republic, civil war broke out between the two Irish factions and Collins commanded the Free State forces. On the death of Griffith, he became head of the Free State Government but only 10 days later he was ambushed by soldiers of the Irish Republican Army and murdered.

Taylor, R. *Michael Collins*. 1958; Coogan, T. P., *Michael Collins.* 1996.

Collins, (William) **Wilkie** (1824–1889). English novelist, born in London. Son of a successful painter, he was trained for the law, but worked in publishing and was befriended by *Dickens, who (with *Poe) became a major influence. His melodramatic novels were great successes. *The Woman in White* (1860) is based on a personal experience: while he was walking with Dickens one night a distraught young woman, dressed in white, begged him for help, claiming that her life was threatened. On this theme he wrote a dramatic story, featuring the memorable villain, Count Fosco. *The Moonstone* (1868) has been described by T. S. *Eliot as 'the first, the longest and the best of modern English detective novels'.

Peters, C., *The King of Inventors: A Life of Wilkie Collins*. 2017; Ackroyd, P., *Wilkie Collins*. 2017.

Collor de Mello, Fernando (1949–). Brazilian politician, born in Rio de Janeiro. His family owned newspapers and magazines, and he entered politics in Alagoas State, as a mayor 1979–82, Federal Deputy 1982–86 and Governor 1986–89. He formed the National Reconstruction Party and after a sophisticated media campaign was elected President November–December 1989 in Brazil's first free direct election since 1960. Collor appeared to have cast off his playboy image, but serious accusations of corruption were raised in the Congress and in December 1992 he resigned to avoid impeachment.

Colman, Ronald (1891–1958). English actor, resident in Hollywood. He was well known for his romantic roles in films such as *Beau Geste*, *Random Harvest* and *The Prisoner of Zenda*.

Colombo, Matteo Realdo (1510–1559). Italian anatomist, born in Cremona. Son of an apothecary, he studied medicine under *Vesalius in Padua, succeeded him there in 1544, then moved to Pisa (1546). In 1549 he established himself in Rome, where he spent the rest of his life. His fame rests on his great skill and experience in dissection, vivisection and autopsy. In his only book, the *De Re*

Anatomica (published posthumously in 1559) he offered excellent descriptions of the eye, the pleura, and the peritoneum. But he is best known for his discovery of the course of the passage of blood from the right cardiac ventricle to the left through the lungs ('the pulmonary circuit'). From this he drew the important conclusion that it is not in the heart, but in the lungs, that venous blood is mixed with air to become arterial blood. He thus switched the focus of attention away from the heart to the lungs. His vivisections also led him to understanding the heartbeat. He emphasised the contraction of the heart, and the importance of its expulsion of materials. Such views were later taken up by *Harvey.

Colt, Samuel (1814–1862). American inventor. In 1835 he produced the famous revolver named after him and adopted by the US Army.

Coltrane, John (William) (1926–1967). American jazz saxophonist, born in North Carolina. He made his professional debut in 1945 and worked with Dizzy *Gillespie (1949–51) and Miles *Davis (1955–57). He was already regarded as a leader of modern jazz in the late 1950s. From then on he became increasingly interested in experimental jazz and free form.

Colum, Padraic (1881–1972). Irish playwright and poet. He helped to found the Abbey Theatre and wrote the plays *The Land* and *The Betrayal*. He was also the author of several books of verse and stories for children.

Columba (Colm Cille), **St** (c.521–597). Irish missionary. He established a monastery at Iona (563) and was responsible for the conversion of much of Scotland. He illuminated 300 books himself and established a scriptorium which produced the *Book of Kells* (c.800).

Columbus, Christopher (Cristóbal Colón in Spanish, Cristoforo Colombo in Italian) (1451?–1506). Spanish navigator and explorer, born in Genoa (Liguria). Probably of Castilian descent (but not Jewish, as sometimes suggested), and writing no Italian, son of a master weaver, went to sea at 14, and claimed to have sailed to Iceland, Ireland, England, Tunisia, the Greek islands and West Africa. He lived in Lisbon in the 1470s, possibly as a chartmaker, sailor and sugar buyer, trading with Madeira, the Canaries and the Azores. He married in 1479. His wife, who owned property in Madeira, died about 1484. Columbus became convinced that the shortest trade route to Asia was by sailing west, contrary to the prevailing Portuguese belief that the eastern (African) route would be quicker. (He assumed the earth had a circumference of about 25,000 kilometres; the true figure is 40,000.) With his brother **Bartoloméu Columbus** (1445?–1515) he sought patrons for a voyage of exploration. *João II refused him and *Henry VII of England and *Charles VIII of France turned his brother down. After eight years of pleading, assisted by Genoese bankers and the Franciscans, he attracted the patronage of *Ferdinand and *Isabella, rulers of the newly united Spain. On 3 August 1492, he set off from Palos with 87 men and three old ships (*Nina, Pinta*, *Santa Maria*), sailing via the Canaries. On 12 October 1492 he sighted an island, probably Watling Island in the Bahamas, naming it San Salvador. He assumed it to be part of India, describing the inhabitants as Indians, a term which has stuck. He then sailed by the north coast of Cuba (which he thought was China) and an island he named Hispaniola (Española), leaving a party to set up a fort in Villa de la Navidad (now in Haiti). The *Santa Maria* was wrecked on a reef in Santo Domingo (now the Dominican Republic), the *Pinta* lost in a storm and Columbus left for Spain in the *Nina* on 18 January 1493. On his return in March his discoveries were acclaimed, he was made Admiral of the Ocean Sea and Viceroy of the Indies, including all present and future discoveries. The impact was immediate. In 1494 Pope *Alexander VI divided the world between Spain and Portugal in the Treaty of Tordesillas. In his second expedition (1493–96) Columbus had 17 ships and 1500 men. He discovered the islands of Dominica and Jamaica and established the first European town in the New World on Haiti, at Isabella. Because he was unable to secure financial advantage to Spain from his discoveries he had difficulty in gaining support for a third expedition. However, in May 1498 he sailed again, discovered Trinidad, and on 5 August made his first landfall on the South American continent, on the Paria peninsula in Venezuela, then found the mouth of the Orinoco. Columbus was now convinced that he had discovered 'an Other World' (*otro mundo*), a continent to the south of China, concluding (oddly) that the world was pear—or breast—shaped. Meanwhile, John *Cabot had already landed in North America (June 1497) and Vasco da *Gama had found the eastern sea route to India (May 1498). Columbus was a poor administrator and after clashes with the colonists he lost his position of Viceroy of the Indies. In 1499 he was arrested by his successor, Francesco de Bobadilla, and sent back to Spain in chains. Soon released, although still in disfavour, he was later reinstated to his former position of honour. In his fourth expedition (1502–04), he sailed along the coast of Honduras and Nicaragua, spending four months in Panama (Jan.–Apr. 1503) without realising that the Pacific was barely 70 kilometres away. When he returned empty handed once more, his reputation suffered, his patron Isabella was dead, and he was ill and neglected. But he did not die in poverty and received regular payments of gold from Hispaniola. He died in Valladolid, was later buried in Seville, then reburied (1542) in Santo Domingo, transferred to Havana (1795) and back to Seville in 1898. However, in 1877 a casket labelled with his name was found in Santo Domingo. It is probable that his remains never left Santo Domingo and that the tomb in Seville contains his son. **Diego Columbus** (1480–1526),

appointed Viceroy of the Indies (1511) and created a duke, was refused authority over the mainland, although the Columbus estate received the gift of Jamaica and land in Panama. Ironically, adoption of the name America celebrates a relatively minor figure, Amerigo *Vespucci. Nevertheless, Columbus is widely commemorated—in Colombia, British Columbia, cities, rivers, mountains and universities. The towns at either end of the Panama Canal are Cristóbal and Colón.

The 1992 Quincentennial, *The Encounter of Two Worlds*, revived much controversy about Columbus. Some biographers saw him as a scientific, rational Renaissance explorer, most as an obsessed, medieval crusader who brought disease and slavery to the New World.

Fernandez-Armesto, F., *Columbus.* 1991; Henige, D., *In Search of Columbus: The Sources for the First Voyage.* 1991.

Combes, (Justin Louis) Emile (1835–1921). French Radical-Socialist politician. He was trained for the priesthood but became a physician. A senator from 1885, he became Minister of Education 1895–1906, and as Premier 1902–05 introduced anti-clerical legislation (1905) that ended the Concordat of 1801 and completed the separation of Church and state.

Comenius, Johannes Amos (Jan Amos Komensky) (1592–1670). Czech educationist. A pastor of the Moravian Church, he is famous for his innovations in the methods of teachings, especially of languages, and wrote the first pictorial text book for children *Orbis sensualism pictus* (1658). He was invited to England by the parliament in 1641 to advise on education and also assisted in reforming education in Sweden and Hungary.

Spinka, M., *John Amos Comenius: that Incomparable Moravian*. 1943.

Commodus, Lucius Aelius Aurelius (161–192). Roman Emperor 180–92. Son of *Marcus Aurelius, he was co-Emperor from 177. He ended the persecution of Christians but his rule was marked by extravagance, cruelty and corruption. He identified himself with Hercules and had all the months of the year renamed in his honour. He was strangled in his bath by the wrestler Narcissus, at the orders of his mistress, Marcia.

Compton, Arthur Holly (1892–1962). American physicist. He shared the Nobel Prize for Physics in 1927 (with C.T.R. *Wilson) for their research on X-rays. He was Chancellor of Washington University 1945–53. His brother **Karl Taylor Compton** (1887–1954) was President of the Massachusetts Institute of Technology 1930–49. Both brothers were associated with the development of the atomic bomb.

Compton, Dennis Charles Scott (1918–1997). English sportsman. He was a noted Test cricket batsman and soccer player and wrote *The End of an Innings* (1958).

Compton-Burnett, Dame Ivy (1884–1969). English novelist, born in London. Her first two novels *Dolores* (1911) and *Pastors and Masters* (1925) were followed by a sequence of 17 more, including *Men and Wives* (1931), *A House and its Head* (1935), *Parents and Children* (1941), *Mother and Son* (1955) and *A Cod and his Gifts* (1963) in which she examines the complexities of lives in middle-class families in the period around 1900. Her novels consist mostly of dialogue.

Baldanaza, F., *Ivy Compton-Burnett*. 1964.

Comstock, Anthony (1844–1915). American reformer. Secretary of the Society for the Supression of Vice in New York 1873–1915, his name has been used in the word 'Comstockery', meaning prudery.

Comte, (Isidor Marie) **Auguste** (François Xavier) (1798–1857). French philosopher, born in Montpellier. At first strongly influenced by *Saint-Simon, he was a lecturer at the École Polytechnique (1833–51) until periodic attacks of insanity compelled his retirement. He was financially assisted by J. S. *Mill in his later years. In *The Course of Positive Philosophy* (6 vols, 1830–42) he preached 'humanism' in its most extreme form, stating that mankind in general (and the individual also) passes through intellectual stages, the Theological (dominant in Europe until the 13th century) and the Positive (which he hoped would dominate Europe in the future, science taking the place of theology and philosophy). He theorised that because nothing can be ascertained beyond physical facts, it is useless to enquire into the origin of physical phenomena. Human knowledge is relative and not absolute, therefore mankind must seek moral values not in God, who is unknowable, but in the perfecting of human society on a scientific basis. This system is known as Logical Positivism. There are small Positivist Churches in several countries and these follow 'The Religion of Humanity' by worshipping the personification of man as an ideal. Comte was finally excommunicated by the Roman Catholic Church, and he died of cancer after a long illness.

Conant, James Bryant (1893–1978). American chemist, administrator and educationist. He was assistant professor 1919–27 and professor of organic chemistry 1928–33 at Harvard University, becoming president of the university 1933–53. He became High Commissioner 1953–55, then Ambassador, to West Germany 1955–57, and undertook a survey of American secondary education. Among his books are *Organic Chemistry* (1942), *Education is a Divided World* (1948), *Education and Liberty* (1953) and *The American High School Today* (1958).

Hershberg, J. G., *James B. Conant.* 1994.

Condé, de. French noble family, members of which include **Louis I de Bourbon, Prince de Condé** (1530–1569). French soldier. He was, with Gaspard de *Coligny, a leader of the Huguenot faction in the religious struggle against the party of the duc de Guise. After his defeat at the battle of Jarnac he surrendered but was treacherously slain by a Catholic officer. **Louis II de Bourbon, Prince de Condé** (1621–1686), was the great-grandson of the preceding. As duc d'Enghien he defeated the forces of the Spaniards and of the Holy Roman Empire in many notable battles (1643–46). After a bitter dispute with Cardinal *Mazarin he defected to Spain and later led the Spanish forces in several battles against the French. However, in 1659, he returned to France where he was pardoned and later commanded the armies of *Louis XIV in succession to *Turenne. He is commonly known as the Great Condé.

Mongredien, G., *Le Grand Condé*. 1959.

Condillac, Etienne Bonnot, Abbé de (1714–1780). French philosopher. Son of a vicomte, he took orders essentially as a means of establishing a career and income. He became one of the leading Paris *philosophes* of the mid-18th century, a friend of *Rousseau and *Diderot. One of his major undertakings was to make the empirical approach to epistemology developed by *Locke thoroughly familiar in France. Condillac, however, pursued a more reductionist analysis. Locke believed that all human information came into the mind through the senses, but that the mind possessed innate powers of reflection on those sense-data. Condillac argued that the powers of judgment themselves were associations which had been formed on the basis of previous sensations. In this regard, Condillac in particular insisted that language itself was not innate, but was learnt through individual experience. For this reason, he was an advocate of the reform and systematisation of scientific language, in order to purify thought. This idea played an important role in *Lavoisier's reforms of the language of chemistry.

Condorcet, Marie Jean Antoine Nicolas Caritat, Marquis de (1743–1794). French philosopher, mathematician and politician. Elected to the Académie française in 1782, he was a protégé of d' *Alembert, a contributor to the *Encyclopédie*, biographer of *Turgot and *Voltaire and a pioneer of probability analysis. He supported the Revolution and served in the Legislative Assembly 1791–92 and the Convention 1792–94. A devotee of reason, he remained naively convinced about human perfectibility. Proscribed by Robespierre as a Girondin, he was captured and died in prison, perhaps by suicide. He was strongly anti-clerical and anti-Imperialist. He supported pacifism, birth control, legal equality for both sexes, and the establishment of social services. His optimistic essay on population, published posthumously, urged active social choices, especially education for women and family planning (*Malthus' *Essay on Population* was written as a response).

Baker, K. M., *Condorcet: From Natural Philosophy to Social Mathematics.* 1982; Badinter, E. and R., *Condorcet.* 1988.

Confucius (Latinised form of Kongfuzi, i.e. 'Master Kung', personal name Kong Qiu in pinyin or K'ung Ch'iu in Wade-Giles) (551–479 BCE). Chinese philosopher and teacher, born in Ch'ü-fu, state of Lu (modern Shandong). Little is known of his life, but according to legend he was the son of a soldier who belonged to an impoverished noble family. His early years were spent in poverty and after some years of manual work he became an accountant and then a teacher c.531–517, wandering through the countryside discussing ethical problems. During his travels he is thought to have met *Lao Zi, the founder of Daoism. He married at an early age but the marriage soon ended in divorce and women are seldom mentioned in the Confucian writings. During a period of civil war Confucius fled to the neighbouring province of Chi and his fame spread throughout China. Duke Ting of Lu made him Governor of the city of Chungtu. He was Minister of Works and Justice 501–498 and Prime Minister of the province 498–495 until he was forced to resign by the pleasure-seeking duke. For 13 years he was an itinerant teacher. In 482 a new duke of Lu invited him to return and his three remaining years were devoted to collating and revising the ancient Chinese scriptures. He was buried with great ceremony at Qufu where his grave still attracts pilgrims. The term Confucianism is an 18th-century European coinage and characterising it as a religion is misconceived. Confucius was no more a religious teacher than *Socrates or *Plato: he was an ethical philosopher and none of his teachings deals with the nature of God or prospects of future life. He stressed that society depends on the observance of natural relationships of authority, obedience and mutual respect, both within the family and between ruler and subject, and he urged strict observance of loyalty, submission and benevolence. Many of his sayings are included in the famous *Analects* copied down by his disciples: they include Confucius' 'golden rule': 'What you do not like when done to yourself do not do to others.' Although he was never deified he has been the object of prayers and sacrifices by the Chinese and ancestor worship is inextricably linked to his teachings. Confucius was an exact contemporary of the *Buddha. Until World War II, knowledge of the Confucian scriptures (*The Five Kings*, *The Four Books* and the *Analects*) was compulsory for Chinese university students and civil servants. Confucian teaching was also influential in Japan and Korea. **H. H. Kung** (1881–1967), one of *Chiang Kaishek's ministers, was a direct descendant of Confucius, in the 75th generation.

Creel, H. G., *Confucius and the Chinese Way.* 1960; Dawson, R., *Confucius.* 1981; Leys, S., *The Analects of Confucius*. 1997.

Congreve, William (1670–1729). English dramatist. Brought up in Ireland and originally for the law he went to London in 1692, and became a novelist and playwright. *Double Dealer* (1694) and *Love for Love* (1695) show his mastery of construction and style. He was a friend of *Dryden and *Swift. His best known play, *The Way of the World* (1700), regarded as one of the best English comedies of manners, was a failure at first and Congreve, disappointed, abandoned writing for the stage.

Lynch, K. M., *A Congreve Gallery*. 1951.

Conkling, Roscoe (1829–1888). American Republican politician. US Congressman 1859–63, 1865–67, US Senator from New York 1867–81, he was progressive on slavery, a supporter of *Lincoln and *Grant, and the *Civil Rights Act* (1875). However, as leader of the 'Stalwart' faction, he was corrupt and strongly opposed to civil service reform. He declined appointment as Chief Justice of the Supreme Court in 1873 and as an Associate Justice in 1881.

Connally, John Bowden, Jr (1917–1993). American politician. Originally a Democrat and protégé of L. B. *Johnson, he became Secretary of the Navy 1961, and Governor of Texas 1963–69, being shot and injured in Dallas when President Kennedy was assassinated. He was *Nixon's Secretary of the Treasury 1971–72 and joined the Republicans in 1973.

Connaught and Strathearn, 1st Duke of, Prince Arthur William Patrick Albert Windsor (né von Wettin) (1850–1942). British prince and soldier. Third son of Queen *Victoria, he served for many years in the British Army and was Commander-in-Chief in Ireland 1900–04 and the Mediterranean 1907–10, Inspector-General of the Forces 1904–07. Promoted to Field Marshal in 1902, he was Governor-General of Canada 1911–16. His son, **Prince Arthur of Connaught** (1883–1938), was Governor-General of South Africa 1920–23, his daughter **Princess Margaret of Connaught** (1882–1920) married the future *Gustaf VI Adolf of Sweden.

Connelly, Marc(us Cook) (1890–1980). American playwright. He wrote the plays *The Wisdom Tooth* and *Green Pastures* and won the Pulitzer Prize in 1930.

Connery, Sir Sean Thomas (1930–2020). Scottish film actor. He worked in many casual jobs, including coffin polisher. He was the original James Bond in seven films based on Ian *Fleming's novels (from *Dr No*, 1962 to *Never Say Never Again*, 1983). He won an Academy Award for best supporting actor for *The Untouchables*. Other films included *The Russia House* (1990) and *The Rock* (1996).

Connolly, Cyril (Vernon) (1903–1974). English critic and editor. He edited *Horizon* 1939–50 and his books include *Enemies of Promise* (1938) and *Condemned Playground* (1944).

Connolly, James (1870–1916). Irish socialist politician. After joining the Sinn Féin movement, he became Commander-in-Chief of the Easter Rising in 1916. He was captured by the British and shot.

Conrad, Joseph (Jozef Teodor Konrad Naleczo Korzeniowski) (1857–1924). British novelist, born in Berdichev, Poland (now in Ukraine). From 1874 he worked as a seaman on French ships, joining the British merchant marine in 1880. He sailed round the world and qualified as a master in 1886. He became a naturalised British subject in 1886, explored the Congo on foot in 1890, retired from sea life in 1894 and devoted himself to writing. His novels, all written in English, include *Almayer's Folly* (1895), *An Outcast of the Islands* (1896), *The Nigger of the Narcissus* (1898), *Lord Jim* (1900), *Nostromo* (1904), *The Secret Agent* (1907), *Under Western Eyes* (1911), *Chance* (1913), *Victory* (1915), *The Shadow Line* (1917), *The Rescue* (1920) and *The Rover* (1923). His novella, *Heart of Darkness* appeared in the collection *Youth* (1902). Orson *Welles planned a feature film and it inspired Francis Ford *Coppola's *Apocalypse Now* (1979). Conrad worked with Ford Madox *Ford and was befriended by Henry *James and John *Galsworthy. His novels show a real mastery of narrative style and great psychological insight. There is also a strong sense of the mystery of nature, especially of the sea, and of the forces summoned up in human nature in order to fight it. The critic F. R. *Leavis placed him (1941) in 'the great tradition'.

Baines, J., *Joseph Conrad: A Critical Biography*. 1960.

Conrad von Hotzendorff, Franz, Graf [Count] (1852–1925). Austrian field marshal. Chief of Staff of the Imperial Army 1906–17, he was the leading Austrian advocate for war in 1914, anti-Serb and anti-Italian and persuaded the foreign minister *Berchtold to support a punitive war against Serbia.

Conran, Sir Terence Orby (1931–). English designer. He had a major influence in designing shops, restaurants, furniture, gardens and toys, was a prolific writer, able publicist, effective entrepreneur and company director.

Consalvi, Ercole (1757–1824). Italian cardinal and diplomat. As Papal Secretary of State 1800–23 he proved to be a masterly diplomat, took part in the Paris Peace Conference of 1814 and secured the restoration of the Papal States. He followed a relatively liberal domestic policy.

Constable, John (1776–1837). English painter. His landscape paintings have received recognition for their spontaneity and freshness, and greatly influenced the techniques of many 19th-century artists, notably the Barbizon school in France. He first exhibited at the Royal Academy in 1802, but he did not gain general recognition until about 1824, when his *View on the Stour* and *The Hay Wain* were exhibited in Paris, won gold medals and aroused great

admiration. His work was rooted in a deep love of the East Anglian landscape, and characterised by his ability to convey atmosphere, weather and changing light. He is considered, with *Turner, the greatest English landscape painter.

Gadney, R., *Constable and His World*. 1976.

Constant (de Rebecque), (Henri) **Benjamin** (1761–1830). French-Swiss writer and politician, born in Lausanne. A member of the Tribunate 1799–1802, he later opposed *Napoléon and was banished and after the Bourbon Restoration supported constitutional liberalism. He published the psychological novel *Adolphe* in 1816 and later wrote the monumental study *On Religion*. In 1951 *Cecile*, another of his novels, was discovered and published.

Nicolson, H., *Benjamin Constant*. 1949; Wood, D., *Benjamin Constant. A Life*. 1993.

Constantine I ('the Great') (Flavius Valerius Aurelius Constantinus) (c.280–337 CE). Roman Emperor 306–37. Born at Kis (now in Serbia), the illegitimate son of *Constantius Chlorus (250–306) and *Helena, he served as a soldier under *Diocletian and *Galerius, and in 305 accompanied his father to Britain. After his father's sudden death, Constantine was proclaimed as Emperor by his troops. There were several years of struggle before his authority was fully recognised throughout the empire. Between 306 and 316 his capital was at Augusta Treverorum (modern Trier), where he built a great basilica, which largely survives, and imperial baths. In 312 he finally defeated the general *Maxentius (who had been proclaimed Emperor in Rome by his troops) at the battle of Milvian Bridge. At this battle he saw a vision of the cross in the Heavens accompanied by the words 'in hoc signo vinces' ('In this sign shalt thou conquer'). In the Edict of Milan (313), he and **Licinius** officially granted toleration 'for Christians and all others'. In 324 he became sole ruler of both the Eastern and Western Empires, and after gaining the support of the Christian Church for this administration, he established an absolute monarchy. Although he did not become a baptised Christian until shortly before his death, he took an active interest in Church affairs and convened (325) the first General Council of the Church at Nicaea (modern Iznik) at which the Athanasian (or Nicene) Creed was adopted and toleration, in effect, withdrawn from other religions. In 325 he chose Byzantium as the capital of the Roman Empire ('Roma Nova'), in 330 renamed Constantinopolis in his honour. He then made Christianity the state religion and improved the administration throughout the empire. His son, Flavius Claudius Constantinus (317–340), ruled as **Constantine II** 337–40. He shared the government of the Empire with his brothers, taking Britain and Gaul as his personal responsibility. He was killed in a battle against his brother Constans.

McMullen, R., *Constantine*. 1969; Fletcher, J., *Life of Constantine the Great*. 2008; Stephenson, P., *Constantine. Roman Emperor, Christian Victor*. 2010; Potter, D., *Constantine the Great*. 2013.

Constantine (Konstantinos) **I** (1868–1923). King of the Hellenes (Greece) 1913–17; 1920–22. Son of *George I of Greece, and brother-in-law of Kaiser *Wilhelm II, he supported Germany during World War I and was forced to abdicate by the pro-British Prime Minister Eleutherios *Venizelos. After the war he was recalled by a plebiscite but abdicated once more on the failure of the Greek campaign against the Turks in Asia Minor. He was the father of three Greek kings: *Alexander, *George II and *Paul I.

Constantine II (c.879–953). King of Alba (Scotland) 900–43. Grandson of Kenneth MacAlpine, and son of Aed, after a long reign he abdicated and died as a hermit in St Andrews.

Constantine (Konstantinos Schleswig-Holstein-Sonderburg-Glücksburg) **II** (1940–2023). King of the Hellenes (Greece) 1964–67. Grandson of *Constantine I and son of *Paul I, he grew up in Egypt and South Africa. He won an Olympic Gold Medal for yachting in 1960. He toyed with adopting the numeral XIII to assert his continuity with the Byzantine (Greek) emperors before 1453. Following a military coup in April 1967, the king attempted a counter-coup in December in order to restore his personal authority. This failed and Constantine retreated to exile, settling in Hampstead. He was stripped of Greek citizenship in 1994.

Constantine IX (Kōnstantinos Monomarkhos) (c.1000–1055). Byzantine Emperor 1042–1055. Son of a Macedonian official, he was chosen to be husband and co-ruler by the Empress *Zoë. After her death (1050) he ruled with her sister **Theodora**. He revived the university in Constantinople and promoted arts, architecture and literature. However, he lost territory to the Normans in the West, to a rebellion in Thrace and the Seljuk Turks were about to invade Anatolia. The 'Great Schism' of 1054 between the Latin and Greek churches occurred during his reign but he was not involved.

Constantine XI Palaeologus (1404–1453). Byzantine Emperor 1448–53. Last Emperor of the East, he was killed by the Turks after the capture of Constantinople, and was buried without a trace.

Constantius I Chlorus (Gaius Flavius Valerius Constantius) (250–306). Roman Emperor 305–306. Born in Dardania (modern Kosova), his partner (or wife) was *Helena. Their son was *Constantine I. He left her and married the daughter of emperor *Maximian who promoted Constantius to be 'Caesar' in 293, under the tetrarchy created by *Diocletian, and on his abdication became joint Emperor with

*Galerius, ruling as 'Augustus' in the west. He defeated a rising in Britain and died suddenly at Eboracum (York).

Constantius II (Flavius Julius Constantius Augustus) (317–361). Roman Emperor 337–61. Born in Serbia, third son of *Constantine, he shared the throne with his brothers *Constantine II and Constans, but in the ensuing conflict, Constantine II was killed and the empire was divided, with Constantius taking the east. He engaged in inconclusive warfare with the Persians, continued his father's promotion of Christianity and attempted to find a compromise between the supporters of the Nicene Creed and Arianism. Baptised on his deathbed, he was succeeded by his cousin *Julian the Apostate.

Cook, Frederick Albert (1865–1940). American physician and explorer. In 1908 he claimed to have reached the North Pole but R. E. *Peary challenged this and Cook was greatly discredited. To the end of his life he still maintained that he was the first man to reach the Pole. He died in poverty after having been jailed for five years for mail frauds.

Cook, James (1728–1779). English explorer, navigator and scientist, born in Marton-in-Cleveland, Yorkshire. Son of an agricultural labourer, he joined the Royal Navy in 1755 and received rapid promotion, largely because of his skill at navigation. His detailed charts of the St Lawrence River assisted *Wolfe's victory on the Heights of Abraham, Québec (1759) and he was stationed in Newfoundland and Labrador waters 1763–67. In 1768 he was appointed commander of the barque *Endeavour* which was to take an expedition of scientists, headed by Joseph *Banks, to observe the transit of Venus, at Tahiti. On his return he circumnavigated the two islands of New Zealand and explored the eastern coast of Australia, north of 38º. On 29 April 1770, after Cook fired three shots at Indigenous people in canoes, his party landed at Botany Bay (originally called Stingray Bay), raised the Union Flag and stayed for eight days, collecting novel flora and fauna. Inexplicably, although Cook observed (and named) the entrance to Port Jackson, the future site of Sydney, just to the north, he failed to explore it. *Endeavour* was breached on a shoal of the Great Barrier Reef in June and repaired near the site of modern Cooktown. Having charted the whole eastern coastline, on 22 August 1770, at Possession Island, in the Torres Strait, he claimed possession of the whole eastern coast, naming it New South Wales, for King *George III. This exploration was acclaimed on his return to England in 1771. On a second expedition (1772–75), in the *Resolution*, he charted the coast of New Zealand, crossed the Antarctic Circle (January 1773) and reached 71°10'S, explored (and re-named) New Caledonia and named the New Hebrides (now Vanuatu). He experimented with diet, including malt and wort (by-products of making beer), sauerkraut and fresh vegetables and no sailor on the *Resolution* died of scurvy; for this he received the Copley Medal of the Royal Society (1775) and was elected FRS (1776). On his third voyage to the Pacific (1776–79), again on HMS *Resolution*, he landed at Bruny Island (Tasmania) in January 1777, circumnavigated New Zealand, made the first European landing on the Hawaiian islands (which he named the Sandwich Islands) and charted the Pacific coast of North America up to the Arctic regions in an unsuccessful attempt to find a north-east passage through North America from the Pacific. On returning to Hawaii he was involved in a scuffle with indigenous people over a stolen boat, was clubbed on the head and fatally stabbed in the neck. He was ceremonially cooked, but not eaten: the bones were extracted and returned to his crew who deposited them at sea. Minor planet 3061 Cook, a Moon crater and places in Australia, New Zealand, Canada, Alaska, Hawaii, Antarctica, Chile, French Polynesia and the Cook Islands are named for him.

His widow, **Elizabeth Cook** (née Batts) (1743–1835), burnt all his letters before she died.

Beaglehole, J. C. (ed.), *The Journals of Captain James Cook*. 1955–67; Frame, W. and Walker, L., *James Cook. The Voyages*. 2018; Sides, H., *The Wide Wide Sea: Imperial Ambition, First Contact and the Fateful Final Voyage of Captain James Cook*. 2024.

Cook, Sir Joseph (1860–1947). Australian politician, born in Staffordshire. Originally a coal miner, he emigrated to Australia in 1885, becoming a union organiser, fervent Methodist and Member of the New South Wales Legislative Assembly 1894–1901. He broke with Labor on the solidarity pledge in 1894, serving as a minister under George *Reid. Elected as a Free Trader to the House of Representatives 1901–21, he later became a Liberal, then Nationalist. Minister for Defence 1909–10, he succeeded *Deakin as Leader of the Opposition 1913, narrowly defeating *Forrest. He was Prime Minister 1913–14, Minister of the Navy 1917–20 and High Commissioner in England 1921–27.

Robin (né Robert Finlayson) (1946–2005). Scottish Labour politician. He was a tutor and racing journalist, Edinburgh councillor, MP 1974–2005, Foreign Secretary 1997–2001 and Leader of the House of Commons 2001–03. He broke with Tony *Blair over the Iraq war.

Cook, Thomas (1808–1892). English tourist agent. His firm pioneered the organisation of international tourist services which greatly encouraged European travel. Faced with online bookings, fierce competition, and an ageing clientele, the Thomas Cook Group ceased trading in September 2019.

Swinglehurst, E., *Romantic Journey: Story of Thomas Cook and Victorian Travel*. 1974.

Cooke, Robin Brunskill, Baron Cooke (1926–2006). New Zealand judge. A judge from 1972 and President of the Court of Appeal 1986–96, in 1995 he became New Zealand's last life peer.

Coolidge, (John) **Calvin** (1872–1933). 30th President of the US 1923–29. Born in Plymouth, Vermont, son of a storekeeper, he was educated at Amherst College, became an attorney, city councillor, Mayor of Northampton, State Senator 1912–15 and Lieutenant-Governor of Massachusetts 1916–18. As Governor 1919–20, he won fame by his firm handling of a police strike in Boston, 1919. In 1920 he was the successful Republican candidate for the vice presidency and served 1921–23. On the death of Warren *Harding, he succeeded to the presidency. Although re-elected overwhelmingly in 1924, he declined to stand again in 1928. He believed 'That the best government is the least government', and exercised little executive authority as president. A cold, somewhat introverted personality, he was notorious for his laconic utterances. When told that Coolidge had died, Dorothy *Parker commented: 'How can they tell?'

White, W. A., *A Puritan in Babylon*. 1938; Shlaes, A., *Coolidge*. 2013.

Coombs, H(erbert) **C**(ole) ('Nugget') (1906–1997). Australian economist, banker and public servant, born in Western Australia. Educated at the University of WA and the London School of Economics, he became Director of Rationing 1942–43 and Director-General of Post War Reconstruction 1943–49. For more than 40 years he played a decisive role in economic and social policy formulation, including central banking as Governor of the Commonwealth Bank 1949–60 and the Reserve Bank 1960–68, education, was Chairman of the Australian Council for the Arts 1968–74, the Council for Aboriginal Affairs 1968–76 and Chancellor of The Australian National University 1968–76. From 1972 he had an intense, touching relationship with the poet Judith *Wright and they were prolific correspondents. An original recipient of an AC in 1975, he resigned in protest when, in 1976, the Order of Australia was expanded (for some years) to include knighthoods.

Coombs, H. C, *Trial Balance*. 1981; Rowse, T., *Nugget Coombs. A Reforming Life*. 2002.

Cooper, (Alfred) **Duff, 1st Viscount Norwich** (1890–1954). English Conservative politician and writer. A descendent of *William IV, educated at Eton and Oxford, he entered the Foreign Office and won a DSO in World War I. Member of Parliament 1924–29, 1931–45, he was Secretary of State for War 1935–37, First Lord of the Admiralty 1937–38 (resigning as a protest against *Chamberlain's appeasement policy), Minister of Information 1940–41, and Ambassador to France 1944–47. A skilful author, he wrote biographies of *Haig, *Foch and *Talleyrand. In 1919 he married **Lady Diana Manners** (1892–1986), a daughter of the Duke of Rutland, a famous beauty and actor. For his son, *see* John Julius *Norwich.

Cooper, D., *Old Men Forget*. 1953. 1986; Charmley, J., *Duff Cooper*. 1986.

Cooper, Gary (Frank James) (1901–1961). American film actor. He appeared in 91 films as a vigorous man of action. The best known are *For Whom the Bell Tolls*, *Sergeant York* and *High Noon*.

Cooper, James Fenimore (1789–1851). American writer. His dramatic stories of the adventures of the pioneers with Native Americans include *The Last of the Mohicans* (1826), *The Pathfinder* (1840), and *The Deer Slayer* (1841). He lived in Europe 1826–33, where his novels were very popular and praised by Franz *Schubert, Victor *Hugo and *Balzac.

Grossman, J., *James Fenimore Cooper*. 1949.

Cooper, William (1860–1941). Australian Indigenous leader, born near Lake Moira. A Yorta Yorta man, whose tribal name was **Yelgaborrnya**, he became a Christian in 1884, worked as a shearer, was active in the AWU and campaigned for the recognition of Indigenous rights. Founder and secretary of the Australian Aborigines' League, based in Melbourne, 1933–40, he organised petitions and led deputations to ministers. In December 1938 he led a protest in Melbourne about Nazi persecution of Jews in Germany, which has been commemorated in Israel.

Atwood, B., *William Cooper: An Aboriginal Life Story*. 2021; Miller, B., *Shattered Lives Broken Dreams*. 2022.

Coote, Sir Eyre (1726–1783). English soldier. He served under *Clive at the battle of Plassey (1757). As Commander-in-Chief in India, 1779–83, he allied himself with Warren *Hastings and helped to complete the conquest of the subcontinent.

Copernicus, Nicolaus (Mikołaj Kopernigk) (1473–1543). German-Polish astronomer, mathematician, physician, theologian, and economist, born in Torun. His family spoke German, he wrote in Latin and mastered six languages. He studied at the Jagiellonian University Kraków, Bologna, Padua and Ferrara and became physician to his uncle, the Bishop of Ermeland, 1506–12. Although not in holy orders, his uncle appointed him to the office of Canon of Frauenburg in 1513 and he held this position until his death. For more than 30 years he worked on heliocentrism, the proposition that the Earth and other planets revolve in orbits around the Sun. His great book *De revolutionibus orbium coelestium* (1543) asserts that the Sun is the centre of the known universe, and the Earth rotates daily on its axis. He cautiously dedicated the book to Pope Paul III. He paid tribute to *Pythagoras, who was ambiguous on the subject, but removed a reference to *Aristarchus of Samos, and ignored *Eratosthenes and Islamic astronomers who were far more accurate. Regarded as the father of modern astronomy, his theories were adopted by *Galileo and *Kepler, but rejected by Tycho *Brahe. He also advocated monetary reform and anticipated *Gresham's Law. Element 112 Copernicium (Cn) and an exoplanet (55 Cancri A) are named for him.

Kuhn, T.S., *The Copernican Revolution*. 1957; Banville, J., *Doctor Copernicus*. 1975; Banville, J., *Doctor Copernicus*. 1977; Armitage, A., *Copernicus*. 1990; Gingerich, O., *Copernicus*. 2016.

Copland, Aaron (1900–1990). American composer and conductor, born in Brooklyn. His father, a Lithuanian Jew, migrated from Russia to the United States via Scotland; the family name had been Kaplan. He studied in France with Isidor Philipp and Nadia *Boulanger, stayed in Paris until 1924 and on his return was encouraged by Serge *Koussevitzky.

The ballets *El Salón Mexico* (1936), *Billy the Kid* (1938), *Rodeo* (1942) and *Appalachian Spring* (Pulitzer Prize, 1944) are written in a vernacular style and were much performed, also as concert pieces.

At the height of the Cold War he came under attack for his radical politics, which are implicit in *Lincoln Portrait* (1942), *Fanfare for the Common Man* (1942) and the opera *The Tender Land* (1954). He was also active as a teacher and author. Other important works include Symphony No. 3 (1946) and the clarinet concerto (1948). He denounced the Soviet persecution of *Shostakovich.

After 1950 his music was influenced, to a degree, by *Schoenberg, *Stravinsky, *Boulez and *Takemitsu. He was awarded an Oscar for *The Heiress* film score (1950), the Presidential Medal of Freedom (1964), and a Congressional Gold Medal (1987). In his last decades he toured internationally as a conductor and recorded his own works.

Smith, J., *Aaron Copland*. 1955.

Copley, Sir Godfrey, 2nd Baronet (c.1653–1709). English official. MP 1678–81, 1695–1705, he endowed the Royal Society's Copley Medal, its highest award, first conferred in 1736.

Copley, John Singleton (1738–1815). American portrait painter. Noted for his 'Boston portraits' of New England families, he moved to England in 1774 and extended his work into the genre of historical paintings. These were technically sophisticated but they lacked the vigour of his early work and his reputation suffered. His son, **John Singleton Copley, 1st Baron Lyndhurst** (1772–1863), born in Boston, was a Tory MP 1818–27, Attorney-General 1824–26, Lord Chancellor 1827–30, 1834–35 and 1841–46 and Chief Baron of the Exchequer 1831–34. He opposed Catholic emancipation and the Reform Bill (1832) and prosecuted Queen *Caroline, but supported Jewish emancipation, divorce reform and was admired by his rival Henry *Brougham.

Coppola, Francis Ford (1939–). American film director and writer. The son of a musician, educated at UCLA, his extremely successful films include *The Godfather* (1972), *Godfather II* (1974), *The Conversation* (1974), *Apocalypse Now* (1979), *Godfather III* (1990) and *The Rainmaker* (1997). He won five Academy Awards.

Coquelin, Benoît-Constant (1841–1909). French actor. He made his debut at the Comédie Française in 1860, and became a full member of the company at 23. His range was exceptionally wide, and he excelled at the broadest comedy and most delicate pathos. He formed his own company in 1892. In 1895–97 he worked at the Renaissance Théâtre, Paris. In 1897 he was a director of the Théâtre de la Porte-Saint-Martin, where he created the part of Cyrano de Bergerac in *Rostand's play. In 1900 he toured with Sarah *Bernhardt and acted at her theatre during the last years of his career.

Corbett, James John (1866–1933). American boxer, born in San Francisco. Known as 'Gentleman Jim', he defeated John L. *Sullivan to become world heavyweight boxing champion in 1892, losing to Bob *Fitzsimmons in 1897. He retired from boxing in 1903 and became an actor, appearing in 12 films. Errol *Flynn played Corbett in the film *Gentleman Jim* (1942).

Corbusier, Le *see* **Le Corbusier**

Corbyn, Jeremy Bernard (1949–). British Labour politician. MP 1983– , but never a minister, strongly opposed to many policies advanced by Tony *Blair, often voting against the Labour Government (or abstaining), especially on Iraq and national security. In September 2015 he won Labour's leadership with strong votes from trade unions and branch members, despite only minuscule support from fellow MPs. Despite low expectations, Corbyn campaigned well in the June 2017 election, reviving many pre-Blair policies, securing a 9.5 per cent swing to Labour and denying a Tory majority to Theresa *May. Corbyn seemed unable, or unwilling, to shake off accusations of anti-Semitism. In the campaign for the December 2019 election, his position on a second referendum about the UK's relationship with the EU was equivocal and Labour suffered its worst result since 1935, with a primary vote of 32.2 per cent. Corbyn left the Leadership in April 2020 on the election of his successor, Sir Keir *Starmer.

Corday, Charlotte (Marie Anne Charlotte Corday d'Armont) (1768–1793). French assassin and revolutionary. A member of an old Norman family, she supported the principles of the French Revolution, but, horrified by the Reign of Terror, she murdered one of the Jacobin leaders, Jean Paul *Marat, by stabbing him in his bath. She was guillotined four days later.

Corelli, Arcangelo (1653–1713). Italian composer and violinist, born in Fusignano. Educated in Bologna, he lived in Rome from 1675, enjoying the patronage of Queen *Christina and Cardinals

Pamphili and *Ottoboni, and composed orchestral music for great occasions. He created the Concerto Grosso form, wrote 60 of them, was extensively published, influenced *Scarlatti, *Händel and *Bach and became the first composer known exclusively for instrumental works. Corelli was an outstanding teacher, ensemble trainer and one of the earliest conductors.

Pincherle, M., *Corelli et son temps*. 1954; Allsop, P., *Arcangelo Corelli. New Orpheus of Our Times*. 1999.

Cori, Carl Ferdinand (1896–1984). American biochemist, born in Czechoslovakia. Professor of Biochemistry at Washington University, St Louis 1931–67, he and his wife **Gerty Theresa Cori** (née Radnitz) (1896–1957) shared the Nobel Prize for Medicine in 1947 for their studies in carbohydrate metabolism.

Coriolanus, Gaius Marcius (fl. 490 BCE). Roman hero. After being exiled from Rome he became Commander of the Volscian army, heading it against Rome. He stopped his forces outside the city in response to the pleas of his wife and mother, and was killed by the Volsces as a result. *Shakespeare wrote a tragic play on this theme.

Cormann, Mathias Hubert Paul (1970–). Australian-Belgian politician. He migrated to Australia in 1996 and became a Liberal Party official, Senator from Western Australia 2007–20 and Minister for Finance 2013–20. Elected as Secretary-General of the OECD 2021– , he became a passionate advocate of stronger action to mitigate climate change, having been a firm opponent in domestic politics.

Corneille, Pierre (1606–1684). French playwright, born in Rouen. Of a middle-class family, educated by the Jesuits, he became a lawyer and was Crown Counsel in Rouen until 1650. Between 1631 and 1635 he had written seven successful comedies, was awarded a pension by Cardinal *Richelieu and became nationally famous with his drama *El Cid* (1637?) which led to an obscure quarrel over royalties and the loss of the Cardinal's favour. Corneille's later plays were mostly tragedies, dramatic rather than cathartic, written in Alexandrine verse, physically static but emotionally vigorous and brilliantly characterised, generally turning on the conflict between two duties, and mostly based on classical subjects. They include *Médée* (1637), *Horace* (1640), *Cinna* (1641), *Polyeucte* (1643), *Oedipe* (1659), *Othon* (1664) and *Suréna* (1674). He was greatly admired by *Molière, *Voltaire, *Napoléon and *Balzac. He became a member of the Académie française in 1647. His brother **Thomas Corneille** (1625–1709) was the author of two very successful plays, *Timocrate* (1656) and *Ariane* (1672).

Yarrow, P., *Corneille*. 1963; Stegmann, A. (ed.), *Oeuvres complètes de Pierre Corneille*. 1963.

Cornforth, Sir John Warcup (1917–2013). Australian organic chemist, born in Sydney. Educated at Sydney and Oxford universities, and completely deaf from the age of 20, he worked for the UK Medical Research Council 1946–62, directed the Shell chemical enzyme laboratory 1962–75, and shared the Nobel Prize for Chemistry in 1975 for work on the stereochemistry of organic molecules and reactions. He was Australian of the Year in 1975, received the Copley Medal in 1982 and an AC in 1991.

Cornwall, Earl of *see* **Richard, Earl of Cornwall**

Cornwallis, Charles Cornwallis, 1st Marquess (1738–1805). English general and politician, born in London. Son of the 1st Earl Cornwallis, educated at Eton and Cambridge, he was a Member of Parliament 1760–62. An able soldier, he served in British forces in the American War of Independence from 1776, under William *Howe and the incompetent Henry *Clinton, until forced to surrender to George *Washington in Yorktown, Va. (October 1781), after defeat by American and French troops.

As Governor-General of Bengal and Commander-in-Chief in the East Indies 1786–93, he consolidated and simplified the legal system, imposing the English model. Master-General of the Ordnance 1795–1801, he was a signatory of the Treaty of Amiens (1802). Lord Lieutenant of Ireland 1798–1801, he imposed executions and brutal punishments after the 1798 Young Ireland rising (and an abortive French invasion), but detested the corruption involved securing the Act of Union (1801), which absorbed Ireland into the United Kingdom. Sympathetic to Catholic emancipation, he resigned, with William *Pitt when reform was blocked by *George III. On Pitt's return as Prime Minister, Cornwallis was reappointed as Governor-General of Bengal 1805, but nine weeks after his arrival he died of fever in Ghazipur and was buried there.

Corot, (Jean-Baptiste) **Camille** (1796–1875). French landscape and figurative artist, born in Paris. Son of prosperous shopkeepers, he was largely self-trained and apart from three years in Rome (1825–28) spent most of his life uneventfully in Paris, often visiting the country to sketch and paint. He never married. He began painting in the classical *Poussin tradition but evolved a subtle and original style that influenced and anticipated the Impressionists. He was a friend, but not a member, of the Barbizon school (*Millet). He was extremely prolific, much imitated (and forged): cynics observed that of Corot's 3,000 paintings, 5,000 were in the United States.

Correggio, Antonio Allegri da (c.1494–1534). Italian painter. His works are mostly on religious subjects and show great mastery of the art of composition. One of the best known is *The Ascension of the Virgin* in Parma Cathedral.

Cortés (de Monroy y Pizarro Altamirano), **Hernán** (1484–1547). Spanish (Castilian) conquistador, born in Medellin, Extremadura. Son of an impoverished hidalgo, he attended university at Salamanca, went to the New World in 1506 and became an administrator in Hispaniola (Santa Domingo) and Cuba. He led an expedition of 508 soldiers, 100 sailors and 16 horses which landed in Yucatan in February 1519, and soon formed alliances with some Mexican kingdoms hostile to Aztec domination. He arrived in Tenochtitlan (Mexico) in November 1519. The superstitious emperor *Moctezuma II may have identified Cortés with the god Quetzalcoatl and became a pliant hostage of the Spaniards until he died in June 1520, either as a result of stoning by his own people or Spanish murder. During Cortés' absence, the Aztecs drove the Spanish out of Tenochtitlan. He returned with a larger army in August 1521 assisted by horses, cannon and the devastating pandemic of smallpox to which the Spaniards were immune. Tenochtitlan was destroyed. Cortés established control of the whole Aztec empire and was made Governor of New Spain 1523–26. He explored Honduras 1524–26. Cortés was subject to violent attack by rival Spaniards and had powerful enemies at the court of *Charles V. However, in 1529 he was created marques del Valle de Oaxaca, married a duke's niece and was confirmed as Captain General of New Spain. In 1536 he explored (and named) Lower California. He returned to Spain in 1540, claimed poverty and neglect but was enormously rich and died on his estate near Seville. He is now buried in Mexico.

Madariaga, S. de, *Hernån Cortéz, Conqueror of Mexico*. 1941.

Cortot, Alfred (Denis) (1877–1962). French pianist and conductor, born in Nyon, Switzerland. He began his career as a *Beethoven pianist, then studied *Wagner's operas in Bayreuth and premiered *Parsifal* and *Götterdämmerung* in Paris (1902). In 1905 he formed a trio with Jacques Thibaud and Pablo *Casals and toured extensively. He became a noted interpreter of *Chopin, made many recordings and was an important teacher (*Lipatti was a pupil). He collaborated with the German occupation and *Petain's government and in 1945 was suspended from performing for a year.

Corvo, Baron *see* **Rolfe, Frederick William**

Cosgrave, William Thomas (1888–1965). Irish politician. Originally a grocer, he became active in the Irish Nationalist Movement and was a member of the House of Commons 1918–22, although he did not take his seat. Following the sudden deaths of Arthur *Griffith and Michael *Collins, he became the first Prime Minister (President of the Executive Council) of the Irish Free State 1922–32. He crushed *de Valera's rebellion far more harshly than the British had ever acted and, by 1923, 11,000 Republicans were in prison and more than 50 had been executed. His son, **Liam Cosgrave** (1920–2017) was Minister for External Affairs 1954–57, and Prime Minister 1973–77.

Cosgrove, Sir Peter John (1947–). Australian general, born in Sydney. Educated at Duntroon, he was Chief of the Army 2000–02, Chief of the Defence Force 2002–05 and Governor-General 2014–19. He wrote *My Story* (2006).

Cossa, Baldassarre (c.1370–1419). Italian prelate and anti-Pope, known as John XXIII, born in the kingdom of Naples. Educated at Bologna, he rose in the church bureaucracy at a time of 'the Great Schism', with rival popes in Rome (*Gregory XII) and Avignon (Benedict XIII). In Pisa, he was elected as 'pope' by a group of cardinals and was recognised by France, England, Portugal, Florence and Venice. He appointed the *Medici as bankers to the papacy. Cossa was deposed by the Council of Constance (1413), imprisoned in Germany, then ransomed by Florence. *Gibbon wrote of him, 'The more scandalous charges were suppressed; the vicar of Christ was accused only of piracy, rape, sodomy, murder and incest'.

Costa, Lúcio Marçal Ferreira Ribeiro Lima (1902–1998). French-Brazilian architect, born in Toulouse. A follower of *Le Corbusier, appointed as Director of the School of Fine Arts in 1931, he was one of a team responsible for the Ministry of Education and Health building in Rio de Janeiro 1937–43 which is regarded as pioneering modern architecture in Brazil. He designed the plan for the city of Brasilia in 1956.

Costello, John A(loysius) (1891–1976). Irish politician. Leader of Fine Gael, he was an opponent of *de Valera, served as Prime Minister 1948–51, 1954–57 and took Ireland out of the British Commonwealth (1949).

Costello, Peter Howard (1957–). Australian Liberal politician, born in Melbourne. Educated at Monash University, he became a barrister and was a Member of the House of Representatives 1990–2007 and Deputy Leader of the Liberal Party 1994–2007. In John *Howard's Government, despite some tensions on the issue of succession, he became Australia's longest serving Commonwealth Treasurer 1996–2007.

Coster, Laurens Janszoon (c.1370–1440?). Dutch inventor. He worked in Haarlem and is sometimes claimed to have preceded *Gutenberg in the development of movable, metal type.

Cotman, John Sell (1782–1842). English landscape painter and etcher. With *Crome he is considered the leading member of the Norwich School. He had a deep interest in architecture, and painted landscapes with a strong structural form, emphasised by flat washes. His *Liber Studorium* of 1838 consists of 48 soft-ground etchings, and is considered a landmark in etching technique.

Cotton, Charles (1630–1687). English poet. He was a country gentleman who wrote some beautiful short lyrics, admired by Wordsworth. He translated the Essays of Montaigne, and became the friend of Izaak Walton, to whose *Compleat Angler* he contributed. He wrote many parodies of the works of classical authors.

Coty, René Jules Gustave (1882–1962). French conservative politician. Originally a lawyer, he was active in local government and served as Deputy 1923–35 and Senator 1935–42. He took no part in politics during the war, but after the Liberation was re-elected as Deputy (1945) and Senator (1948). He became Minister of Reconstruction 1947 and was Vice President of the Senate 1949–53. In December 1953 on the 13th ballot he was elected as President of the Fourth Republic as a compromise candidate and served Jan. 1954–Jan. 1959. In May 1958, he installed General *de Gaulle as Premier, retiring on the inauguration of the Fifth Republic.

Coubertin, Pierre, Baron de (1863–1937). French publicist and educator. He was responsible for the revival of the Olympic Games and presided at the first modern Olympiad in Athens in 1896. He served as President of the International Olympic Federation 1894–1925.

Coué, Emile (1857–1926). French psychotherapist. He believed that auto-suggestion has a powerful effect on sickness (even organic disease) and his slogan 'Every day, in every way, l am getting better and better' became extraordinarily popular in the 1920s.

Coughlin, Charles Edward (1891–1979). American priest, born in Canada. He began broadcasting from Detroit, Michigan, in the 1920s, originally in opposition to the Ku Klux Klan. In the period 1930–36 he had a weekly audience of more than 10 million. Originally a supporter of the New Deal, he turned strongly against Roosevelt and in 1935 formed the National Union of Social Justice which had anti-Semitic and pro-Fascist tendencies. In 1942 his broadcasts were banned and he quickly lost influence. Joseph P. *Kennedy was a strong supporter of Father Coughlin.

Coulomb, Charles Augustin de (1736–1806). French physicist. Noted for his work on electricity and magnetism, he was a military engineer by profession, and invented a magnetoscope, a magnometer and a torsion balance. He proved that the force of attraction between two electrical charges is inversely proportional to the square of their distance: this is known as 'Coulomb's Law'. A 'coulomb' is the standard unit of electrical quantity, a current of one ampere per second. In 1802 *Napoléon appointed him as inspector of schools.

Couperin, François (1668–1733). French composer, harpsichordist and organist, known as 'Couperin le Grand'. His family produced many notable musicians. He studied the works of *Corelli and *Lully, becoming a church organist at St Gervais in Paris (from 1683) and music master at the Royal Court 1717–33. He was a great keyboard virtuoso and composed more than 300 vivacious and graceful harpsichord works that greatly influenced J. S. *Bach and *Händel. He also wrote chamber music, songs and religious works.

Mellers, W., *François Couperin and the French Classical Tradition*. 1950.

Courbet, (Jean Desiré) **Gustave** (1819–1877). French realist painter, born in Ornans. Originally a student of theology, he taught himself painting by copying the works exhibited in the Louvre and ultimately became one of the most prolific of all French artists. His realism in painting made him the enemy of the traditionalists, and his original technique influenced later French schools. An atheist and socialist, he was active in the Paris Commune, sitting as a member of the revolutionary assembly (1871). He later served six months in jail, and in 1873 exiled himself to Switzerland, where he died of dropsy. His best works include *The Burial at Ornans* (1850), *Bonjour, Monsieur Courbet* (1854), *The Painter's Studio* (1855) and the powerful nude *The Origin of the World* (*L'Origine du monde*, 1866). His work had a powerful influence on the Cubists.

Zahar, M., *Gustave Courbet*. 1950; Rubin, J. H., *Courbet.* 1997.

Courtauld, Samuel (1876–1947). British industrialist and patron of the arts. As chairman of Courtauld's textile company he pioneered the commercial development of man-made fibres. His collection of French paintings became the nucleus of the collection at Home House, where he also set up the Courtauld Institute for the study of art history.

Cousin, Victor (1792–1867). French philosopher and educationist. A popular lecturer at the Sorbonne, he developed what he termed 'eclectic' philosophy, insisting that truth can be discerned by 'intuition'. As Minister of Education 1840–5l, he introduced many reforms into French primary education, most of them derived from Germany. He translated *Plato's works and wrote studies on *Pascal and *Kant.

Cousteau, Jacques Yves (1910–1997). French marine explorer, conservationist, author and film-maker. A French naval officer, with Emil Gagnan he invented the aqualung (1943) which permitted much underwater exploration and popularised scuba-diving. In the *Calypso*, he conducted experiments to extend the period divers could spend underwater. With specially designed submarines, he made many underwater films: three won Academy Awards in 1957, 1959 and 1965. He directed the Oceanographic Museum, Monaco from 1957. The Cousteau Society (established in 1973) was a prolific producer of books and a 21–volume encyclopaedia. A member of the

Académie française 1988–97, he played a central role, with Bob *Hawke, in securing international agreement (1991) to preserve Antarctica from mining for 50 years.

Cousteau, J. Y., *The Ocean World of Jacques Cousteau*. 20 vols, 1973; Matsen, B., *Jacques Cousteau. The Sea King*. 2009.

Couthon, Georges (1755–1794). French revolutionary. A cripple, trained as a lawyer, he was a Member of the Legislative Assembly 1791–92, a Member of the Convention 1792–94 and of the Committee of Public Safety 1793–94. He was guillotined with *Robespierre.

Couve de Murville, Maurice (1907–1999). French diplomat and politician. He served as French Ambassador to Egypt 1950–54, to NATO 1954–55, to the United States 1955–56 and to West Germany 1956–58. President *de Gaulle appointed him Minister for Foreign Affairs 1958–68, in 1968 he was Minister of Finance and Economy (June and July) and then Prime Minister 1968–69. He was Chairman of the Foreign Affairs Committee of the National Assembly 1973–81.

Couve de Murville. M., *Une politique étrangère, 1958–1969*. 1973.

Coverdale, Miles (1488–1569). English prelate and translator, born in Yorkshire. Educated at Cambridge, he joined the Augustinian order, later becoming an ardent Protestant. In 1535, in Antwerp, he published the first printed, complete English translation of the Bible, including the Apocrypha. Having no Hebrew or Greek, he worked from the Latin Vulgate and *Luther's German translation, and incorporated *Tyndale's translations of the Pentateuch and New Testament. Coverdale's edition formed the basis of the so-called 'Matthew's Bible' of 1537, the first to be licensed for sale in England, and he worked on 'The Great Bible' of 1539 (also retaining Tyndale's material). Coverdale's Psalms were preserved in the Authorised (King James) Version. He was a Puritan and, because of his extreme views, spent several years in European exile, mostly in Germany 1543–48 and 1555–59. A notable preacher, he was Bishop of Exeter 1551–53 but lost this office on the accession of Queen *Mary.

Cowan, Edith Dircksey (née Brown) (1861–1932). Australian social reformer, born in Geraldton. In 1876 her father was hanged for shooting her step-mother. A prominent suffragist, she became an active campaigner on issues relating to women and children. A Nationalist MP in Western Australia 1921–24, and the first woman elected to an Australian Parliament, she was commemorated by the Edith Cowan University, a federal electoral division and appearing on the $50 banknote.

Coward, Sir Noël (Pierce) (1899–1973). English playwright, actor, producer and composer, born in Teddington. He made his stage debut as a boy and became a popular performer in light comedies. His first play *The Vortex*, portrayal of decadence, caused a sensation when produced in London in 1923. It was followed by many sophisticated comedies including *Hay Fever* (1925), *Private Lives* (1930), *Blithe Spirit* (1931), *Present Laughter* (1943) and *Nude with Violin* (1956). He composed the music and wrote the dialogue for the musical comedies *Bitter Sweet* (1929) and *Words and Music* (1934). He wrote and produced the successful films *Cavalcade* (1938), *In Which We Serve* (1942), *This Happy Breed* (1944), *Blithe Spirit* (1945) and *Brief Encounter* (1947). Among his other works were several volumes of autobiography, e.g. *Future Indefinite* (1954) and a number of witty songs, e.g. *Mad Dogs and Englishmen*. He was an accomplished actor who appeared in a number of films, e.g. *In Which We Serve* and *Our Man in Havana*. After World War II he lived in Bermuda. He was knighted in 1970.

Morley, S., *Noël Coward*. 1969; Hoare, P., *Noël Coward*. 1995; Soden, O., *Masquerade: The Lives of Noël Coward*. 2023.

Cowen, Sir Zelman (1919–2011). Australian lawyer, academic and administrator, born in Melbourne. Educated at Melbourne and Oxford, he was Dean of Melbourne University's law school 1951–66, and a prolific textbook writer, Vice Chancellor of the University of New England 1967–70 and of Queensland 1970–77. As Governor-General of Australia 1977–82 he brought a 'touch of healing' after the controversial Sir John *Kerr. He became Provost of Oriel College, Oxford 1982–90 and Chairman of the UK Press Council 1983–88, then returned to Australia.

Cowen, Z., *A Public Life. The Memoirs of Zelman Cowen*. 2006.

Cowley, Abraham (1618–1667). English essayist and metaphysical poet. Educated at Cambridge, he wrote a series of pastoral comedies as a young man but was expelled from university in 1643 on account of his Royalist sympathies during the Civil War. He lived on the Continent 1646–56 and undertook confidential missions for the royal family. Later he became a physician and actively engaged in botanical experiments. His poems include *The Mistress* and *Pindaresque Odes*.

Cowper, William (1731–1800). English poet. Trained as a lawyer, his verse was popular in his lifetime because of its directness and the natural sympathy he expressed towards everyday scenes and events. His life was characterised by evangelical religious fervour and periods of melancholia and mental instability. He collaborated with the evangelical divine John Newton in writing *Olney Hymns* (1779). He made an effective blank verse translation of *The Iliad* (1791).

Ryscamp, C., *William Cowper*. 1959.

Cox, James Middleton (1870–1957). American newspaper publisher and politician. He was Governor of Ohio 1913–15 and 1917–21, and became Democratic candidate for president in 1920, campaigning in support of *Wilson's policies with Franklin D. *Roosevelt as his running mate. He was heavily defeated by Warren *Harding.

Coypel, Charles-Antoine (1694–1752). French painter. Court painter to *Louis XV, he also designed tapestries, woven by the Gobelins manufactory, illustrating *Cervantes' *Don Quixote*. He wrote several plays.

Cozens, Alexander (c.1715–1786). English landscape painter, born in Russia. He settled in England (1746) and from 1763 to 1768 was drawing master at Eton. His watercolour landscapes are mainly in monochrome and are sometimes almost impressionistic in technique. His son **John Robert Cozens** (1752–c.1799), whom he taught, started to work in monochrome but later used a fuller range of colour.

Oppé, A. P., *Alexander and John Cozens*. 1954.

Cozzens, James Gould (1903–1978). American novelist. Educated at Harvard, his novels were conservative accounts of people operating within organisational or professional constraints, highly praised on publication, now undervalued. They included *The S.S. San Pedro* (1931), *The Last Adam* (1933), *Men and Brethren* (1936), *The Just and the Unjust* (1943), *Guard of Honour* (1948) and *By Love Possessed* (1958). He won the Pulitzer Prize in 1949.

Crabbe, George (1754–1832). English poet, born at Aldeburgh, Suffolk. He went to London to seek success as a writer. Edmund *Burke, to whom he had sent some poems, gave him encouragement, as did Dr *Johnson. In *The Library* (1781), *The Village* (1783) and *The Newspaper* (1783), he showed that stark but vivid realism which is his predominant characteristic. He took holy orders and in the following years, when he was chaplain to the Duke of Rutland (1783–85) and then a parish priest, he published nothing further. In 1807 came *The Parish Register*, and *The Borough* in 1810. A tale in the latter inspired Benjamin *Britten's opera *Peter Grimes*. (Britten later moved to Aldeburgh.) Crabbe's *Tales* (1812) and *Tales of the Hall* (1819) again show his realistic appreciation of character and somewhat grim sense of humour. Crabbe's main contribution to English poetry was his skill in telling a short story in verse.

Blunden, E. (ed.), *The Complete Works of George Crabbe*. 1947.

Craig, (Edward) **Gordon** (1872–1966). English theatrical designer, producer and actor. Son of Ellen *Terry and the architect Edward Godwin, he acted on the London stage for some years under Henry *Irving, but after 1900 he devoted himself to stage design and production. His first production (1900) was *Purcell's *Dido and Aeneas*, at the Hampstead Conservatoire, London. He lived with Isadora *Duncan 1905–07, then worked in Berlin, Florence and Rome. He produced a notable *Hamlet* in Moscow (1912) with Konstantin *Stanislavsky. His outstanding influence upon modern stage production was conveyed through his books, *The Art of the Theatre* (1905), *Towards a New Theatre* (1913), *Scene* (1923) and his magazine *Mask* (1908–14, 1919–29). By simplifying three dimensional scenery with costumes and lighting effects in harmony, he conceived a production as a unified and complete work of art. He spent several years in Florence, where he started a school of stage design. He received a CH in 1958 and died in Vence.

Craig, E. G., *Gordon Craig: The Story of his Life*. 1968.

Craig, James, 1st Viscount Craigavon (1971–1940). Northern Irish (Ulster) politician, born in Belfast. Son of a rich whisky distiller, he fought in the Boer War (1900–01) and was taken prisoner. In the House of Commons 1906–21, he became a strident opponent of Home Rule for Ireland, but held minor offices under *Lloyd George 1916–21. After Ireland was partitioned he became the first Prime Minister of Northern Ireland 1921–40, and received his peerage in 1927.

Cram, Ralph Adams (1863–1942). American architect. Practising in Boston, and teaching at MIT, he was exceptionally productive in designing 54 cathedrals, churches and chapels, mostly in the 'collegiate Gothic' style. The huge Cathedral of St John the Divine, New York, was begun in 1892: Cram became its chief architect in 1912 and designed the nave. Other works include buildings at Princeton University, including the chapel.

Cranach, Lucas (1472–1553). German painter and engraver, born in Kronach, Franconia. His name was derived from his birthplace. His earlier work included religious subjects (e.g. *Rest on the Flight to Egypt*) with idyllic backgrounds and remarkable for their fresh colouring. He also executed many woodcuts. In 1505 he became a painter to the Saxon court at Wittenberg. He became an ardent Protestant and among his many portraits in which he is inclined to over-concentrate on the accessories of dress is one of *Luther. Two of his sons were trained by him, **Lucas Cranach** (1515–1586), whose work is often indistinguishable from that of his father, and **Hans Cranach** (d.1537).

Crane, (Harold) **Hart** (1899–1932). American poet. After working as a reporter in New York, he drifted unhappily through a succession of odd jobs. Most of his poetry, which shows the influence of *Rimbaud and *Whitman, was published in two volumes, *White Buildings* (1926) and *The Bridge* (1930), which has been called 'a mystical interpretation of the past, present and future of America'. He jumped over the side of a ship in despair at his homosexuality and alcoholism.

Crane, Stephen (1871–1900). American writer and war correspondent. He wrote two novels, the stark and powerful *Maggie, A Girl of the Streets* (1892), ignored at the time of publication, and *The Red Badge of Courage* (1895), a sensitive account of heroism under fire in the American Civil War. Its success led to his appointment as war correspondent in the Greco-Turkish and Spanish-American Wars. He also wrote poetry and realistic short stories. From 1898 he lived in England and came to know Joseph *Conrad, Henry *James and other writers. He died of tuberculosis in Germany.

Stallman, R. W., *Stephen Crane: a Critical Bibliography*. 1972.

Crane, Walter (1845–1915). English artist. He is best known as an illustrator (e.g. of the *Toy-book* series). Like William *Morris he sought to ally art to industry and everyday objects.

Cranmer, Thomas (1489–1556). English prelate, born in Nottinghamshire. Educated at Cambridge University, he became a Fellow of Jesus College and lectured in divinity, at the same time studying *Luther's works critically. (Martin *Bucer was a more important influence than Luther.) A widower, he also served as a diplomat. In 1529 he attracted the attention of *Henry VIII by expressing his opinion that Henry's reasons for divorcing *Katherine of Aragon were valid, and that views from European universities should be sought. Cranmer was sent on missions abroad to rally support and in 1530 arrived in Rome to present the case for annulment of the marriage to Pope *Clement VII. He became envoy to Emperor *Charles V in 1532 and in Nuremberg married Margarete Osiander. In January 1533 he was raised from Archdeacon of Taunton to become Archbishop of Canterbury, working with, and to a large degree under the direction of, Thomas *Cromwell. He declared the king's marriage to Katherine null and void (1533). In 1536 he annulled Henry's marriage to *Anne Boleyn but gave no detailed explanation and he pleaded against her execution. He supported too, the Act of Supremacy (1534) which asserted the royal headship of the Church of England. He also encouraged the English translations of the Bible but failed to reach doctrinal agreement with the German reformers, with the result that little change in doctrine was made in Henry's reign. The two prayer books of *Edward VI's reign, the latter little different from the *Book of Common Prayer* (of *Charles II's reign) still used, were, however, largely due to Cranmer's work and inspiration, and his gift for noble and sonorous expression is fully displayed. The words of the marriage ceremony are his. When *Mary came to the throne his Protestantism, combined with his support for Lady Jane *Grey, made his fate inevitable. He tried to save his life by a recantation of his opinions, but this he afterwards withdrew and met his death at the stake at Oxford with the same courage as his fellow martyrs, *Ridley and *Latimer.

MacCulloch, D., *Thomas Cranmer: A Life*. 1996.

Crashaw, Richard (1613–1649). English poet. The son of a Puritan clergyman, he was educated at Charterhouse and Cambridge University. While at Peterhouse, he became a Roman Catholic and in 1643 fled abroad. He eventually obtained a benefice at Loreto, where he died soon after his arrival. His gentle character made him much loved. He wrote secular and religious poems in both Latin and English, and his fame mainly rests on those in which devotion and mystical experience are expressed in ardent, almost sensual, terms.

Crassus, Marcus Licinius (c.110–53 BCE). Roman magnate. Considered the wealthiest Roman of his time, he was also an able politician and a skilled but brutal general, who destroyed the slave revolt (73–71 BCE) led by *Spartacus. He used his money for political ends and so was able to form with *Caesar and *Pompey the first triumvirate which dominated Roman politics from 60 BCE. He held the office of consul twice (70 and 55) and as part of the bargain made with his associates at Luca became Governor of Syria in 54. His campaign to subdue the Parthians (53) ended in disaster in Mesopotamia and his own death.

Craxi, Bettino (1934–2000). Italian Socialist politician, born in Milan. He became a journalist and party organiser, Deputy 1968–94, party leader 1976–93 and Prime Minister 1983–87. He was charged with corruption in 1993, retired to Tunisia and was sentenced *in absentia* (1994) to 8½ years jail.

Cray, Seymour R(oger) (1925–1996). American computer designer. Educated at the University of Minnesota, he worked for Remington Rand and UNIVAC, and became the co-founder of Control Data in 1957. In 1972 he established Cray Research Inc. and designed a series of supercomputers, leading to the Y-MP C90 of 1990. Supercomputers were soon challenged by 'massively parallel' computing, where a network of smaller computers was linked synergistically to create greater computing capacity.

Crean, Simon Findlay (1949–2023). Australian Labor politician. Son of **Frank** (Francis Daniel) **Crean** (1916–2008), a minister under Gough *Whitlam 1972–75, he was President of the Australian Council of Trade Unions 1985–90, a Federal MP 1990–2013, Minister 1990–96; 2007–13 (serving under *Hawke, *Keating, *Rudd and *Gillard). He died suddenly in Berlin.

Crébillon, Claude Prosper Jolyot de (1707–1777). French novelist. A gay and witty man of the world, he chose elegant, sophisticated and licentious themes. In his most famous work, *Le Sopha* (1745), an oriental prince transformed into a sofa is titillated by overhearing the amorous conversations of those who choose him for a resting place. His father, **Prosper Jolyot de Crébillon** (1674–1762), a playwright,

was regarded as a rival to *Voltaire; his sensational tragedies, e.g. *Atrée et Thyeste* (1707), were based on unnatural crimes.

Creevy, Thomas (1768–1838). English diarist. His letters and journal, covering more than 40 years, give a sometimes prejudiced but always vivid account of the political and social events and gossip of his time. He married a rich widow, was an often absentee Whig MP 1802–26, 1831–32, always representing 'rotten boroughs', but regarded himself as a disciple of Charles James *Fox.

Cremer, Sir (William) **Randal** (1836–1908). English politician. Originally a carpenter and trade union leader, he was a friend of *Mazzini and *Garibaldi and general secretary of the International Workingmen's Association 1864–67 and secretary of the Workmen's Peace Association 1871–1908. Elected as a Liberal MP 1885–95; 1900–08, he founded the Inter-Parliamentary Union (IPU) in 1889 and was a strong advocate of international arbitration. In 1903 he received the Nobel Peace Prize. A pacifist, he became a passionate opponent of female suffrage (asserting that women voters were likely to be influenced by religion).

Crerar, Harry (Henry Duncan Graham) (1888–1965). Canadian soldier. After having commanded the Canadians in Italy and the Mediterranean area (1943–44) he was GOC of the Canadian 1st Corps, which formed (1944–45) the left wing of the great Allied liberating drive from Normandy to the German frontier. An excellent staff officer, less successful in the field, he was one of many generals scorned by *Montgomery. He received a CH in 1945.

Cressent, Charles (1685–1768). French cabinet-maker. Considered the greatest in the Regency style and one of the finest in the 18th century, he began his career in the studios of *Boulle, and was appointed official cabinet maker to the Duke of Orléans, Regent of France, in 1715. He was a skilled metalworker, not only designing and making his pieces but casting and carving their characteristic gilded bronze ornaments himself.

Cresson, Edith (née Campion). (1934–). French Socialist politician. She served under *Mitterrand and was Minister for Foreign Trade 1983–86 and for European Affairs 1988–90. She was France's first woman Prime Minister 1991–92 and became European Commissioner for Research, Science and Technology 1995–99.

Crewe, Robert Offley Ashburton Crewe-Milnes, 1st Marquess of (1858–1945). English Liberal politician, born in London. Son of Richard Monckton *Milnes (Lord Houghton), educated at Harrow and Cambridge, he became Lord Lieutenant of Ireland 1892–95. Created earl in 1895, he served as a minister under *Campbell-Bannerman and *Asquith 1905–16 and was Secretary of State for India 1910–15. Liberal Leader in the House of Lords 1908–23 and 1936–44, he played a key role in securing passage of the Parliament Act 1911, which ended the veto power of the House of Lords. Promoted to marquess in 1911, he served as Ambassador to France 1922–28 and Secretary of State for War 1931. The last Whig, he was the son-in-law of *Rosebery and wrote a boring official biography (1931).

Crichton, James (1560–1582). Scottish scholar. Known as 'the Admirable Crichton' for his skill as a poet, linguist, mathematician and athlete, he graduated from St Andrew's University at the age of 15, left Scotland in 1577 and in the course of his continental travels gained fame by his ability to carry out disputations in 12 languages. He was killed in Mantua in a street brawl. (The play *The Admirable Crichton* by *Barrie is wholly unrelated.)

Crick, Francis Harry Compton (1916–2004). British molecular biologist, born in Northampton. Educated at Mill Hill School, he graduated in physics from University College, London and worked for the Admiralty developing magnetic mines during World War II. From 1947 he worked at Cambridge, first at the Strangeways research laboratory 1947–49, then at the Medical Research Council's molecular biology laboratory 1949–77, where he studied under Max *Perutz. At the Cavendish laboratories he worked with J. D. *Watson on the molecular structure of DNA (deoxyribonucleic acid), partly basing their work on the X-ray diffraction studies of M. H. F. *Wilkins and Rosalind *Franklin. Crick and Watson published a joint paper in *Nature* (25 April 1953) explaining the double helical structure of DNA, the chemical bases joining the helixes (like steps on spiral staircases) and the replication mechanism. This was regarded as one of the greatest scientific discoveries in all biology, in the face of fierce competition e.g. from Linus *Pauling and many others. In 1962 Crick, Watson and Wilkins shared the Nobel Prize for Physiology or Medicine. Crick was a fellow at the Salk Institute at San Diego 1962–73 and a research professor there 1977–2004. He proposed what he called the 'central dogma of molecular biology' (1970)—that DNA determines how cells will grow, that RNA (ribonucleic acid) acts as a transmission line, and 'information' is passed on to the protein which changes as directed. He wrote *Of Molecules and Men* (1966) and in the controversial *Life Itself* (1981) proposed the concept of 'directed panspermia'—that bacteria were introduced to earth from other planets. He received the Royal Society's Royal Medal (1972) and Copley Medal (1975) and the OM in 1991. *What Mad Pursuit: A Personal View of Scientific Discovery* (1990) was a memoir. His last great area for investigation was theoretical neuroscience and he attempted to explain the physical basis for consciousness. *The Astonishing Hypothesis* (1994) described the soul as 'no more than the behaviour of a vast assembly of nerve cells and their associated molecules'. The Francis Crick Institute, Europe's largest biomedical research centre, was opened in 2016.

Judson, H. F., *The Eighth Day of Creation*. 1979; Edelson, E., *Francis Crick and James Watson: And the Building Blocks of Life*. 2000; Ridley, M., *Francis Crick: discoverer of the genetic code*. 2006.

Crippen, Hawley Harvey (1865–1910). American homeopath and convicted murderer, born in Michigan. He lived in London from 1897 and in 1910 he poisoned his wife, a music-hall actor known as Belle Elmore, and concealed her dismembered body beneath the floor of his house. With his mistress, **Ethel Le Neve** (1883–1967), who was dressed as a boy, 'Dr' Crippen sailed for America but was arrested on the ship as the result of a wireless signal—the first time this new invention had been used to bring a criminal to justice. He was found guilty and hanged; Ethel Le Neve was acquitted.

Cripps, Sir (Richard) **Stafford** (1889–1952). British politician. Son of the ecclesiastical lawyer **Charles Alfred Cripps, 1st Baron Parmoor** (1852–1941) who served in the Labour governments of 1924 and 1929–31, Cripps, educated at Winchester and London University, was already one of the most successful KCs in the country when he became immersed in politics. MP 1931–50, and Ramsay *MacDonald's Solicitor General 1931, he was expelled from the Labour party (1939) for supporting a 'Popular Front' with the Communists. In World War II he was Ambassador to Russia 1940–42, Lord Privy Seal 1942 and Minister for Aircraft Production 1942–45. In 1942 he failed in a mission to India to secure agreement among Indians on the terms on which a promise to give dominion status to India after the war could be fulfilled. In Attlee's postwar Labour government, Cripps, as President of the Board of Trade 1945–47 and Chancellor of the Exchequer 1947–50, was especially associated with the austerity policy of rationing and controls. (Churchill called him 'Christ and carrots'.) Cancer forced his retirement (1950).

Cripps, S., *Towards a Christian Democracy*. 1945.

Crispi, Francesco (1819–1901). Italian politician, born in Sicily. A republican, inspired by *Mazzini, he took refuge in France after the collapse of the 1848 revolution. He landed in Sicily with *Garibaldi's Thousand in 1860. He accepted the monarchy of *Vittorio Emmanuele as a unifying force, and in the Chamber of Deputies gained a great reputation for independence and his support of a nationalism based on moral unity. As Prime Minister 1887–91, 1893–96 he abandoned Italy's traditional amity with France by strengthening the Triple Alliance with Germany and Austria. He also developed the Italian settlements in East Africa, Somalia and Eritrea. The crushing defeat of the Italians at Adowa (1896) forced his resignation and had a demoralising effect on Italian politics for decades.

Cristofori di Francesco, Bartolomeo (1655–1731). Italian harpsichord maker, born in Padua. Under Medici patronage, in 1700 there is the first reference to an 'arpicembalo', a harpsichord that could produce a soft or loud note according to the pressure on the keys. This he did by introducing a hammer action in place of the former plucking of the strings. The instrument was the first 'piano forte' ('soft loud') and the forerunner of the present pianoforte. He died in Florence.

Crivelli, Carlo (c.1430–c.1495). Venetian painter. His many altarpieces and pictures illustrate the life of the Madonna. His *Annunciation* in the National Gallery, London, is remarkable for its background ornamentation (which includes a peacock, a hanging carpet and many other decorative objects) and the mathematical precision of its perspective.

Croce, Benedetto (1866–1952). Italian philosopher, historian and critic, born in the Abruzzi region. Son of a landowner, he lost both parents and his sister in an earthquake at Ischia (1883) from which he narrowly escaped. Educated in Rome, he abandoned law for history and aesthetics. In Naples, he founded the journal *La Critica* in 1903 and edited it until 1944. Early formulations of his views on literature, philosophy and history appeared there and he also held an honorary chair in philosophy at Naples University 1903–44. His philosophy, influenced by Hegel, is an idealism that holds that the only reality is mind or spirit. This is not a transcendent entity, however, but rather to be identified with human experience and includes works of art. Croce's discussion of this area, which in a rather wide sense of the word he calls aesthetics, has been the most influential part of his philosophy. Actual works of art, according to Croce, are expressions of sensuous insights of artists. The insights, it is claimed, are the 'real' works of art, and the actual paintings, for example, are merely means of communicating them to others. Croce's greatest work is the *Philosophy of the Spirit* (1902–17) but his views on aesthetics are also presented in *Aesthetic* (1902). He was a Senator 1910–44 and Minister of Education 1920–21, withdrawing from politics when *Mussolini came to power. He wrote *An Autobiography* (1927) and returned to public life as Leader of the Liberal Party 1944–47.

Crockett, David ('Davy') (1786–1836). American hero. This semi-legendary figure of the pioneer days ('cradled in a sap trough, clouted in a coonskin …') was a lawyer, active in the development of Tennessee, Member of the House of Representatives for much of the period 1817–35, and killed at the Battle of Alamo, fighting against the Mexicans.

Croesus (d.546 BCE). Last king of Lydia (Asia Minor) 560–546 BCE. He extended his kingdom eastwards but when opposed by Cyrus, the Persian king, he was quickly overthrown and his realm annexed. It is for his proverbial wealth that he is remembered. His help in the rebuilding of the temple at Ephesus is commemorated by a column inscribed with his name, now in the British Museum.

Croker, John Wilson (1780–1857). British literary critic and politician, born in Ireland. An MP 1807–52, he was a vitriolic opponent of parliamentary reform and coined the political name 'Conservative'. In 1809, he helped to found the *Quarterly Review*, in which appeared his attack on *Endymion* that, in Byron's words, 'killed John Keats'. Macaulay detested him 'more than cold boiled veal'. He was one of the founders of the Athenaeum Club, London, in 1824.

Crome, John (1768–1821). English painter. A leading member (with *Cotman) of the Norwich School, he began as a sign painter and educated himself in art mainly by copying works owned by a friendly local collector. Most of his life was spent in and around Norwich (where he was a drawing master) and his pictures, e.g. *The Poringland Oak*, and *Mousehold Heath*, both in the National Gallery, London, which show the serenity and spatial quality of the Dutch landscapists, are mainly of local scenes. River and windmill, skies drenched in light, meadows and storm-wrecked trees are typical subjects.

Clifford, D., and Clifford, T., *John Crome*. 1968.

Cromer, 1st Earl of, Evelyn Baring (1841–1917). English administrator, born in Cromer. Member of a merchant banking family (*Baring), he was educated at Woolwich, served as a staff officer in Malta and Jamaica and became private secretary 1872–76 to his cousin Lord *Northbrook, Viceroy of India. One of the European commissioners of the Egyptian public debt 1877–79 and Comptroller-General 1879–80, he returned to India as Finance Member of the Viceroy's Council 1880–83. As British Consul-General and Agent to Egypt 1883–1907, he was the de facto ruler of 'the veiled protectorate', with responsibility for finance, foreign affairs, defence, education and public works, although the country was nominally part of the Ottoman Empire. He was a Latin and Greek scholar but never attempted Arabic. He saw himself as ruling in an enlightened Whig tradition and was showered with British honours including an earldom in 1901, the OM in 1906, the Albert Medal, a FRS and £50,000 from parliament. He led the Unionist free traders in the House of Lords and was a vigorous opponent of votes for women. He chaired the Dardenelles Commission 1916–17, enquiring into the Gallipoli fiasco, where his exertions contributed to his death. His grandson, (George) **Rowland Stanley Baring** (1918–1991), **3rd Earl of Cromer**, managing director of Baring Brothers (from 1947), headed the British Treasury's delegation in the US (1959–61), became a Director of the International Monetary Fund and the World Bank, Governor of the Bank of England 1961–66 and Ambassador to the US 1971–74, receiving a KG in 1977.

Crompton, Richmal (pen name of Richmal Crompton Lamburn) (1890–1969). English writer. Originally a classics teacher, beginning with *Just William* (1922) she wrote 37 children's books about William Brown, a mischievous but endearing middle-class schoolboy and his friends (and enemies). By 1977, nine million of her books had been sold.

Crompton, Samuel (1753–1827). English inventor, born near Bolton, Lancashire. He was working in a spinning mill when he invented the 'spinning mule', which combined the virtues of *Hargreaves' 'spinning jenny' and *Arkwright's waterframe. In 1812 Crompton received a grant of £5,000, but his business ventures failed and he died in poverty only mitigated by secret gifts from friends.

Cromwell, Oliver (1599–1658). English soldier, statesman and Lord Protector of the Commonwealth, born in Huntingdon. Of yeoman stock (the original family name was Williams), related by marriage to Thomas *Cromwell, he attended grammar school, spent a year at Sidney Sussex College, Cambridge, and may have studied law at Lincoln's Inn, London. In 1620 he married Elizabeth Bourchier, the daughter of a London merchant. He represented Huntingdon in Parliament 1628–29, but during the 11 years of *Charles I's absolute rule (1629–40) he was active only in local affairs, though he became a fervent, but not bigoted, Puritan. In 1638 he inherited property at Ely from an uncle, but suffered a nervous breakdown, leading to 'reconversion' and a burst of religious fervour. He was MP for Cambridge in the Short and Long Parliaments 1640–53. Soon after the Civil War broke out (1642) he was serving under *Essex and won distinction as a cavalry officer at Edgehill. His military skill became more and more evident, his tactics being especially effective at the great parliamentary victory (1644) at Marston Moor near York. He played a principal part in the creation of the New Model Army (known as the 'Ironsides'), who were subjected to rigid discipline and stern morality. Cromwell emerged as the leader of this body and it became devoted to his interests. He was helped too by the passing of the Self Denying Ordinance (1645) under which the parliamentary generals (Cromwell himself excepted) gave up their commands. This left *Fairfax and Cromwell to lead the New Model Army to victory at Naseby. This was the beginning of the end: the west country and other royalist held areas were gradually overrun, the towns were stormed or surrendered. Charles himself was harried and chased until at last he surrendered to the Scots near Newark, only to be handed over after a year of haggling to the English parliament. In 1647 parliament and army quarrelled, Charles was seized in the name of the army and thenceforth, Fairfax being in favour of conciliation and no longer able to influence events, Charles depended for his life on Cromwell's mercy. Probably the king's intrigues with the Scots, which brought them into a war against him, made Cromwell decide that he must die. Having crushed the Scots at Preston, he caused Charles to be brought to trial and his execution followed (January 1649). With the formation of the Commonwealth, Cromwell's only official position was his army leadership, but he gradually gathered the executive reins into his hands.

First a rising of the extremist 'Levellers' had to be suppressed (1649), then he went to Ireland, still in royalist hands, and achieved a conquest by cruelties, such as the massacres of the garrisons of Drogheda and Wexford, which provoked bitter memories that still survive. His settlement, based largely on dispossessing Roman Catholic Irish and replacing them by English ex-soldiers or land speculators, was equally disastrous. In contrast, after he had crushed, at Worcester, a Scottish invasion headed by Prince Charles (the future *Charles II) he brought to Scotland the advantage of union and free trade with the more prosperous and advanced England. Meanwhile he was in trouble with the surviving members of the old parliament, known as the Rump, who had little relish for a new autocrat. Cromwell dissolved them by a show of force and called a Puritan convention, nicknamed the 'Barebones Parliament', which proved equally intractable and was also dismissed. Supreme power now rested with Cromwell and his officers. In 1653 under an 'Instrument of Government' he was declared Protector, a council of state assisted him in his executive functions and a single-chamber parliament dealt with legislation and taxation. His ordinances had the effect of law when parliament was not in session. The members varied from the sycophants to the querulous, but Cromwell never succeeded in working with assemblies and had to rule as a virtual dictator with 'major-generals' acting as regional administrators. He was offered the crown but would have forfeited the support of the army had he accepted. Cromwell proved as good an administrator as he had been soldier. In his religious reforms he took measures to improve the quality of the ministry but showed tolerance to all denominations other than Roman Catholicism and Anglican episcopalianism. His legal ordinances aimed at the suppression of corrupt practices swept away many barbarous punishments and provided relief for debtors. His foreign policy was designed to strengthen English trade. Although the 1651 Navigation Act precipitated the first Dutch War (1652–54), *Tromp found a match in *Blake, whose successes brought the Commonwealth much prestige. In the war with Spain (1655–58), in which Jamaica was won, Cromwell even managed to gain the alliance of Catholic France. He suffered from gout, malaria and stones in the bladder. He died on 3 September 1658, the anniversary of his victories at Dunbar and Worcester. His body was buried in Westminster Abbey, but in January 1661, after the Restoration, his embalmed body was exhumed, hanged at Tyburn, then decapitated and his head exposed on a pole outside Westminster Hall until 1684. (In 1960 his head was buried at Sidney Sussex College.)

Cromwell believed in, and found biblical justification for, all that he did and was unquestionably among the greatest of all English rulers, but that his system struck no deep roots was proved by the fact that within two years of his death the people were cheering the return of the monarchy. His third son, **Richard Cromwell** (1626–1712), succeeded him briefly as Lord Protector (1658–59), becoming virtually a prisoner of the army which deposed him. Known as 'Tumbledown Dick', he lived in exile in Paris until 1680.

Ashley, M., *The Greatness of Oliver Cromwell*. 1966; Fraser, A., *Cromwell: Our Chief of Men*. 1973.

Cromwell, Thomas, 1st Earl of Essex (c.1485–1540). English lawyer and administrator, born in Putney. Son of a brewer and a gentlewoman, he did not attend university but left home, led an adventurous life on the Continent and became fluent in Italian, French and Latin. He became established (c.1513) in London as a trader. He attached himself (1514) to *Wolsey and, though elected to parliament (1523), continued to serve him as an assistant and secretary until his downfall. This he survived and soon proved as useful to King *Henry VIII as he had been to Wolsey. MP again 1529–36, he became Chancellor of the Exchequer 1533–40, Principal Secretary to the King 1533–40, Master of the Rolls 1534–36 and Lord Privy Seal 1536–40. Sympathetic to the religious reformers in Zürich, Geneva and Strasbourg, and strongly opposed to papal supremacy, after Henry's position as head of the church was secured by the Act of Supremacy (1534), he was given the rather odd title of Vice-Gerent 1535–40, in which, as the king's deputy in religious affairs, he carried out the dissolution of the monasteries and secured a large part of their revenues for the crown. He played a significant role in the execution of John *Fisher and *Anne Boleyn (not so much with Thomas *More), succeeding Fisher as Chancellor of Cambridge University 1535–40 and attending Anne's beheading.

He continued to support Henry's personal ambitions and, by centralising the administration and making it more efficient, added to his power. For his services he was created a baron 1536 and KG 1537.

He secured publication of the 'Matthew Bible' (1537) and the 'Great Bible' (1539), most of it translated by the unnamed (and unnameable) William *Tyndale, with the remainder by Miles *Coverdale and John Rogers.

In April 1540, he was created Earl for arranging Henry's marriage with *Anne of Cleves. It was this service that proved his undoing. As the king's agent he made many powerful enemies and so, when the marriage failed, Henry could vent his anger in the certainty of public approval. Cromwell was arrested, condemned by bill of attainder for heresy and treason, and executed, without trial, in July 1540. However, in December 1540 Henry created Gregory Cromwell (c.1520–1555) a baron, apparently claiming to have been misled about his father's guilt.

The three novels of Hilary *Mantel (two winning the Man Booker Prize) were persuasive rehabilitations of his reputation, arguing that he was a practical reformer, remote from religious fanaticism and a restraint on Henry. Diarmaid *MacCulloch's biography is a powerful reinforcement.

Dickens, A. G., *Thomas Cromwell and the English Reformation*. 1959; Mantel, H., *Wolf Hall*. 2009; *Bring Up the Bodies*. 2011; *The Mirror and the Light.* 2020; MacCulloch, D., *Thomas Cromwell. A Life*. 2018.

Cronje, Piet (1835–1911). South African soldier. He was a leading figure of the Transvaal army in the first and second Boer Wars. In the early stages of the latter he had a striking success at Magersfontein when he repulsed Lord Methuen's attempt to relieve Kimberley. In the following February, however, at Paardeberg he was forced to surrender with 4,000 men to Lord *Roberts. He was confined at St Helena for the rest of the war.

Crookes, Sir William (1832–1919). English chemist and physicist, born in London. Educated at the Royal College of Chemistry, like *Huggins, *Joule and *Rayleigh he inherited wealth and was able to pursue independent research without having to teach. He discovered (1861) the element thallium from spectroscopic investigation of selenium residues from a sulphuric acid plant. He invented the radiometer and a vastly improved vacuum tube, leading to the development of the cathode ray tube. In 1879 he discovered a 'fourth state of matter' (after solids, liquids and gases), which he called 'radiant matter', now known as 'plasma'. He correctly concluded that cathode rays consisted of streams of particles, later called electrons. He was unlucky not to have beaten *Röntgen to the discovery of X-rays. He designed 'Crookes glass' to protect the eyes of industrial workers from strong radiation which is now also widely used for protection against bright sunlight. He became a naïve and credulous President of the Society for Psychical Research 1896–99. Awarded a knighthood (1897), the Copley Medal (1904) and the OM (1910), he was President of the Royal Society 1913–15. Nominated for the Nobel Prize for Physics five times and for Chemistry six—all failed.

Crosby, Bing (Harry Lillis) (1903–1977). American singer and actor, born in Tacoma, Washington. He began singing professionally in the 1920s, working 1926–30 with Paul *Whiteman's band. A baritone, Crosby was a pioneer of 'crooning', a soft, murmuring style, ideal for singing into a microphone. He made his film debut in 1930 and began his radio career as a soloist in 1931. His 84 films, some as narrator, included *Pennies from Heaven* (1936), *Road to Singapore* (1940, first of a Road series with Bob *Hope), *Going My Way* (1944, Academy Award), *The Bells of St Mary's* (1945), *White Christmas* (1954) and *High Society* (1956). He won many awards, invested in technology, died suddenly on a golf course in Spain and left a large fortune.

Crosland, (Charles) **Anthony Raven** (1918–1977). English Labour politician and writer. After war service in North Africa and Italy, he resumed his studies at Oxford and lectured in economics there 1947–50. He was a Labour MP 1950–77, serving under Harold *Wilson in a variety of ministries 1964–70, and as Minister for Environment 1974–76. He contested the party leadership in 1976, polling badly, but James *Callaghan appointed him Foreign and Commonwealth Secretary, a post he held until his sudden death. Crosland will be best remembered for his writings on political philosophy, especially for his advocacy of democratic socialism in a mixed economy in *The Future of Socialism* (1956) and *The Conservative Enemy* (1962).

Crosland, S., *Tony Crosland*. 1982.

Crossman, Richard Howard Stafford (1907–1974). English Labour politician. Son of a judge, he was educated at Winchester and Oxford, becoming a don at New College and Deputy Editor of the *New Statesman* 1938–44. A Labour MP 1945–74, as an intellectual he aroused deep suspicion and *Attlee excluded him from office. He was party chairman 1960–64, serving under Harold *Wilson as Minister for Housing and Local Government 1964–66, Lord President of the Council 1966–69 and Secretary of State for Social Security 1968–70. He edited the *New Statesman* 1970–72. His *Diaries*, published posthumously (1975–77), although largely self-serving, give vivid insights into the workings of cabinet government.

Crowley, Aleister (né Edward Alexander) (1875–1947). English occultist and charlatan. He liked to be known as 'the wickedest man in the world'. He devised a form of Satanism, which involved many obscure and repugnant rituals, and attracted a small number of eccentric disciples.

Cruden, Alexander (1701–1770). Scottish bookseller in London. He compiled the *Concordance of the Holy Scriptures* (1737). He became insane soon afterwards and was subsequently subject to periods of madness in which he called himself 'Alexander the Corrector'.

Cruikshank, George (1792–1878). English caricaturist. Both his father and his elder brother were caricaturists. His cartoons, especially those ridiculing participants in Queen *Caroline's trial, created his reputation but he is now best known for his book illustrations, especially those for *Grimm's fairy tales, *Dickens' *Oliver Twist* and some of Harrison *Ainsworth's novels.

Crumb, George Henry (1929–2022). American composer, born in West Virginia. He studied in Berlin, and was influenced by *Webern. His output was small, but intense and deeply emotional, including *Black Angels* (1970) for amplified string quartet, *Vox Balaenae* (*Voice of the Whale*) (1971), for electric flute, electric cello, and amplified piano, *Music for a Summer Evening* (*Makrokosmos III*) (1974), for two amplified pianos and percussion, songs and piano works.

Crusell, Bernhard Henrik (1775–1838). Finnish composer, conductor and clarinettist. He worked in Stockholm from 1791, composed three vivacious concertos for clarinet, a Sinfonia concertante for

clarinet, horn, bassoon and orchestra (1808), much chamber music, and translated the libretti of *Figaro* and *Fidelio* into Swedish.

Crutzen, Paul Jozef (1933–2021). Dutch atmospheric chemist, born in Amsterdam. He shared the 1995 Nobel Prize for Chemistry with Mario Molina and Sherwood *Rowland 'for their work in atmospheric chemistry, particularly concerning the formation and decomposition of ozone'. He promoted the use of the term 'anthropocene' to define a new era in geology and ecology.

Cruz, Ted (Rafael Edward) (1970–). American Republican politician, born in Canada. His father was Cuban born. Educated at Princeton and Harvard, he became a lawyer and administrator. US Senator from Texas 2013– , he was a strong conservative contender for the Republican Presidential nomination in 2016.

Cudworth, Ralph (1617–1688). English philosopher. The best known of the group of philosophers generally called the 'Cambridge Platonists', he summed up his philosophy in his *The True Intellectual System of the Universe*, a rambling uncompleted work intended to counteract materialism by proving the existence of a supreme divine intelligence. The learning displayed was immense, the presentation of his opponents' case was so fair and their arguments against the existence of God so strongly put forward that *Dryden could doubt whether he had successfully demolished them.

Passmore, J. A., *Ralph Cudworth*. 1950.

Cuénod, Hugues(-Adhémar) (1902–2010). Swiss tenor. His mother was of English descent, distantly related to the *Churchills. His voice was small, but beautifully managed, with outstanding diction and a repertoire which extended from *Monteverdi to *Stravinsky. He recorded selectively over a longer period than any other singer, and was an admired teacher, who continued his career well into his 90s. He married his partner in 2007.

Cugnot, Nicolas-Joseph (1725–1804). French military engineer. In 1769–70 he designed and built two steam-propelled vehicles for hauling heavy guns. The vehicles had three wheels, the single front wheel steering and driving. Cugnot had not solved the problems of water supply and of maintaining steam pressure, but his invention pioneered steam traction vehicles.

Cui, Cesar Antonovich (1835–1918). Russian composer of French-Lithuanian origin. He was associated with the group of composers known as 'The Five' (*Balakirev), and composed operas, piano pieces and orchestral works. By profession he was a military engineer and became a lieutenant general.

Cuitlahuac (or Quetlavaca) (d.1520). Mexican (Aztec) Emperor 1520. He replaced his brother *Moctezuma, who was under Spanish control, rebelled against *Cortés and died of smallpox during the siege of Tenochtitlan.

Cullen, Paul (1803–1878). Irish prelate. He worked in Rome for 20 years, became Archbishop of Armagh 1849–52 and Dublin 1852–78, and was the first Irish cardinal (1866). Because of his Vatican links, he was able to shape the Catholic Church not only in Ireland but in the US, Canada and Australia.

Cumberland, Ernest Augustus Welf-Este, Duke of (1771–1851). British prince and, as **Ernst August**, King of Hanover 1837–51. Born in London, the fifth son of *George III, also King of Hanover, he fought the French in the Hanoverian army (1792–93) and was severely wounded. An extreme reactionary in the House of Lords, and rumoured to have murdered his valet, he succeeded *William IV as King of Hanover, because the Salic Law excluded Queen *Victoria.

Cumberland, William Augustus Welf-Este, Duke of (1721–1765). British prince and Field Marshal. Known as 'Butcher', son of *George II, in the War of Austrian Succession he distinguished himself at the battles of Dettingen (1743) and Fontenoy (1745). He was then recalled to meet the threat of the Jacobite invasion from Scotland under Charles Edward *Stuart (the Young Pretender). Having reached Derby the Scots retreated to their own country where Cumberland gained a decisive victory at Culloden (1746). It was his severity after this battle that earned him his nickname. He commanded the Hanoverian army in the Seven Years War but, hopelessly outnumbered by the French, was defeated at Hastenberg (1757) and signed the convention of Kloster Zeven (later repudiated by George II) which left Hanover and Westphalia in French hands.

cummings, e e (Edward Estlin Cummings) (1894–1962). American poet and painter, educated at Harvard. He was imprisoned for six months during World War I by the French who mistakenly believed him to be a spy. He wrote about this experience in *The Enormous Room* (1922). His volumes of poetry are notable for their unorthodox form and abandonment of punctuation and capital letters.

Cunard, Sir Samuel, 1st Baronet (1787–1865). English ship owner, born in Nova Scotia. Having acquired experience of coastal shipping by carrying the mails from Halifax to Boston he came to England in 1838 and in 1840, in association with Robert Napier and others, started a fortnightly trans-Atlantic service. The first vessel used was the *Britannia*, a wooden paddle steamer of 1156 tons, but iron and screw propelled ships of much greater speed and tonnage were gradually introduced.

Cunningham of Hyndhope, Andrew Browne Cunningham, 1st Viscount (1883–1963). British sailor. In World War I he distinguished himself (DSO with two bars) in the Dardanelles campaign and the Dover patrol. In May 1939 he was appointed Commander-in-Chief in the Mediterranean where he had to face the much more numerous enemy squadrons. In September 1940 a brilliantly planned

and executed naval air attack on the ships in Taranto harbour crippled the Italian battle fleet. Three more cruisers and two destroyers were eliminated at the battle of Cape Matapan in the following March. Cunningham had to organise the evacuations from Greece and Crete, to contain and attack when possible the Italian fleet and above all to protect the passage of convoys to Malta and the armies in North Africa in the face of almost continuous German and Italian air attack. In 1943 he succeeded Sir Dudley *Pound as First Sea Lord. Created a baronet in 1942, he received the KT in 1945 and a viscountcy and the OM in 1946. His brother, **Sir Alan Gordon Cunningham** (1887–1983), commanded the brilliant and successful attack from the south (1940) against the Italians in Ethiopia. His later appointment (1941) as Commander of the 8th Army in the western desert ended when he was superseded while an offensive which he had launched was still in progress. He was later High Commissioner in Palestine 1945–48.

Cunningham, A. B., *A Sailor's Odyssey*. 1951; Winton, J., *Cunningham*. 1998.

Cunobelinus (d.c.40). British ruler. From Verulamium (St Albans) he extended his power to cover most of southeast England. The legends preserved in *Shakespeare's *Cymbeline* are of no historical value.

Cuomo, Mario Matthew (1932–2015). American Democratic politician. A lawyer, he was narrowly defeated in an election for Mayor of New York (1977), but served as Secretary of State of New York 1975–78, Lieutenant-Governor 1979–82, and Governor 1983–94. An outspoken liberal, he declined to run for the presidential nomination in 1988 and 1992 and was dubbed 'Hamlet on the Hudson'. His son, **Andrew Mark Cuomo** (1957–) was US Secretary for Housing and Urban Development 1997–2001, Attorney General 2007–10 and Governor 2011–21 of New York State. He handled the COVID-19 crisis decisively, but was then accused of suppressing information. Facing impeachment, he resigned after accusations of sexual harassment.

Curie, Marie (née Manja Sklodowska) (1867–1934). Polish-French physicist, born in Warsaw. The youngest of five children, her father was a teacher of mathematics and physics, her mother principal of a girls' school. She taught briefly, then studied at an underground nationalist university. (Poland was then under Russian rule.) In 1891 she followed her sister Bronja to Paris, where she enrolled at the Sorbonne, living in great poverty. She became the assistant of Pierre *Curie and married him in 1895.

Following *Becquerel's discovery of radioactivity (1896), the Curies in 1898 identified two new elements, polonium and radium, in pitchblende (a form of uranium oxide found in pitch-like substances), and after processing eight tonnes of it, isolated a gram of radium salts. She shared the 1903 Nobel Physics Prize with *Becquerel and Pierre *Curie for their work on radioactivity, becoming the first woman Nobel Laureate, and, at 36, still the youngest. On her husband's death in an accident, she succeeded him as professor of physics at the University of Paris until 1919, being the first woman ever appointed. She investigated the medical effects of radioactivity, and in 1910 isolated metallic radium. In 1911 she was awarded the Nobel Prize for Chemistry for the discovery and isolation of radium and polonium, becoming the first person (and only woman) to win two Nobel Prizes in the sciences. Her gender precluded election as FRS or award of the Copley Medal. She had a close relationship in 1911 with the physicist Paul *Langevin, but gave him up to devote herself to research. She founded and directed the Radium Institute in Paris and in World War I took a mobile treatment unit to the battlefields.

Professor of radiology at the University of Warsaw 1919–34, she continued her intensive research and also wrote a biography of her husband (1923). In 1921 she visited the US, met President *Harding and was publicly acclaimed. She died of leukaemia, induced by her years of working with radioactive materials, near Sallanches in Haute-Savoie. The film *Marie Curie* (1943) featured Greer Garson in the title role. The element 'curie' was named for her in 1944 by Glenn *Seaborg. In 1995 she was reburied with her husband in the Panthéon, the first woman so honoured.

She had two daughters. **Irène Curie** (1897–1956), worked with her mother, married another assistant, Jean Frédéric Joliot (later *Joliot Curie), sharing the 1935 Nobel Prize for Chemistry with him for the creation of artificial radiactivity. They both joined the Communist Party. **Eve Curie** (1904–2007) wrote her mother's biography (1937) and *Journey among Warriors* (1943).

Cotton, E., *Les Curies*. 1963; Quinn, S., *Marie Curie: A Life* 1995.

Curie, Pierre (1859–1906). French physicist. In 1880, with his brother (Paul) **Jacques Curie** (1855–1941), he discovered piezoelectricity (electricity produced by pressure in certain crystals). He also investigated the magnetic properties of materials and established 'Curie's Law' which relates magnetic properties and temperature. He was director of the laboratories 1882–95 and professor of physics 1895–1906 at the University of Paris. In 1895 he married Manja Sklodowska (Marie *Curie) and thereafter they devoted themselves to the study of radioactive minerals. Jointly with his wife and *Becquerel, he was awarded the Nobel Prize for Physics (1903). He was run over by a truck and killed.

Cotton, E., *Les Curies*. 1963.

Curnow, (Thomas) **Allen** (Munro) (1911–2001). New Zealand poet. Some of his best poems were collected in *At Dead Low Water and Sonnets* (1949), while his satiric

verses, written under the pen name 'Whim Wham', proved popular. He edited the much praised *A Book of New Zealand Verse* (1945; expanded 1960).

Currier and Ives. American printers. **Nathaniel Currier** (1813–1888) founded a lithographic and publishing business, engaging **James Merritt Ives** (1824–1895) as designer. The prints, which represent many aspects of the US of their time—houses, coaches, railway and outdoor scenes in general—were popular in their day and have become valued collectors' pieces.

Curtin, John (Joseph Ambrose) (1885–1945). Australian politician, born in Creswick, Victoria. After being secretary of the Victorian timber-workers' union 1911–15 and editor of the *Westralian Worker* 1917–28, he was a Labor MP 1928–31 and 1934–45. Leader of the ALP 1935–45, having been a determined isolationist and supporter of appeasement, from the outbreak of World War II he urged the strongest support of Britain in the struggle against *Hitler. In the deeply divided parliament elected in 1940, *Menzies was forced out by colleagues, *Fadden was dogged but inadequate and two Independents decided to support Labor. Curtin became Prime Minister in October 1941. When Japan's conquest of Southeast Asia and invasion of the East Indies threatened Australia he appealed to *Roosevelt for US aid. Joint defence was set up under the supreme command of General Douglas *MacArthur. Curtin was fortunate to be supported by a strong Treasurer, J. B. *Chifley, and in the election of 1943 he won a massive majority. He died in office and many historians regard him as Australia's greatest Prime Minister.

Serle, A. G. *For Australia and Labor*. 1998; Day, D., *John Curtin: a life*. 1999; Edwards, J., *John Curtin's War*. 2 vols, 2017, 2018.

Curtis, Charles (1860–1936). Republican politician, born in Kansas. A member of the Kaw nation, he became the first Native American to achieve high political office. A lawyer, and US Senator 1907–13; 1915–29, he served as Vice President 1929–33 under Herbert *Hoover.

Curzon, Sir Clifford (Michael) (1907–1982). English pianist. He was noted as an exponent of *Mozart, *Beethoven and *Brahms, and toured widely.

Curzon of Kedleston, George Nathaniel Curzon, 1st Marquess (1859–1925). English Conservative politician, born in Kedleston, Derbyshire. Son of a peer, he showed brilliance at Oxford, was an MP 1886–99 and equipped himself by travel in Russia and the East and by extensive study to become Undersecretary for Foreign Affairs 1895–99. In 1899 he was appointed Viceroy of India, the youngest ever, and accepted an Irish barony, hoping to return to the Commons. He effected major reforms in Indian administration and his term was extended in 1904. However, in 1905 he resigned over a quarrel with the Commander-in-Chief, India, Lord *Kitchener, as much a clash of two autocratic temperaments as a real difference concerning the relation between army and civil authority. Curzon was an activist Chancellor of Oxford University 1907–25, accepted an earldom in 1911 and was raised to a marquessate in 1921. In World War I he was a member of *Lloyd George's war cabinet as Lord President of the Council 1916–19, later as Foreign Secretary 1919–24, continuing after the coalition broke up (1922). On Bonar *Law's resignation (1923), Curzon was bitterly disappointed to be passed over, when *George V, acting on advice from *Balfour and others, chose Stanley *Baldwin as Prime Minister, partly because Labour, having become the major opposition party, was virtually unrepresented in the Lords. Curzon's temperament was as much his enemy as circumstances. His attempts to conceal his intense sensitivity, combined with a real love of, and skill at, organising pageantry, gave him a reputation for arrogance, hauteur and even bombast, which had a most damaging effect on his career. After Labour's 10 months in power, Curzon became Lord President of the Council 1924–25, but without departmental responsibilities. He was a pioneer conservationist and donated Bodiam Castle and Tattershall Castle to the National Trust.

His daughter, **Lady Cynthia Blanche Curzon** (1898–1933) married Oswald *Mosley, was a Labour MP 1929–31 and died of peritonitis: her sister **Lady Alexandra Naldera Curzon**, later **Metcalfe** (1904–1995), known as 'Baba Blackshirt', had an early enthusiasm for *Hitler, and many prominent lovers, including Lord *Halifax, but redeemed herself after World War II as a campaigner for the Save the Children Fund.

Gilmour, D., *Curzon: Imperial Statesman.* 1994.

Cushing, Harvey Williams (1869–1939). American surgeon. An early pioneer in brain surgery, he made valuable contributions, both technical and as teacher and writer. His *The Life of Sir William Osler* (1925) won the Pulitzer Prize. He held chairs at Harvard and Yale, was nominated 38 times for the Nobel Prize (without success) but was elected FRS.

Custer, George Armstrong (1839–1876). American soldier, born in Ohio. A dashing cavalry leader in the Civil War, he served in many campaigns against the Indians and is especially famous for 'Custer's last stand' (1876), at Little Bighorn River, Montana, when he led 200 cavalry into a Sioux Indian ambush (*Sitting Bull) in which all were killed. This tragic exploit has made him the subject of much controversy.

Goble, P. and D., *Custer's Last Battle*. 1970.

Cuthbert, St (c.634–687). Anglo-Saxon monk, possibly born in Scotland. He lived as a hermit, was faithful to the Roman tradition and became Bishop of Lindisfarne in 686. *Alfred the Great was inspired

by Cuthbert who became regarded as the patron saint of northern England and was reburied at Durham Cathedral in 1104. Buried with him was a tiny Gospel of St John, described as 'the earliest surviving intact European book and one of the world's most significant books', bought by the British Library in 2012 for £9 million.

Cuvier, Georges (né Jean Léopold Nicolas Frédéric Cuvier)**, Baron Cuvier** (1769–1832). French zoologist, anatomist and palaeontologist, born in Montbéliard. A Lutheran, as a youth he assumed the name of his dead brother Georges. Educated at Stuttgart, where he began his animal studies, he became a tutor near Caen, Normandy, where he could study fossils and the animal life of the seashore at first hand. His abilities were recognised by a visiting *savant* and he was invited to Paris. He was the first scientist to recognise the extinction of species, named the Megatherium and Mastodon (1800) and became professor of comparative anatomy at the Jardin des Plantes 1802–32. He pioneered the study of fossils and is regarded as the founder of comparative anatomy. Cuvier asserted that species are fixed and strongly opposed the concept of evolution. His *Le Regne animal* (1817) contained a systematic classification of all animal life, based on structural similarities, and these theories led him to modify the Linnean system of animal classification. He was active in public life under successive regimes, a university chancellor, member of the Council of State and secretary of the National Institute. A beaked whale, gazelle, toucan, tiger shark and extinct giant sloth are named for him.

Coleman, W., *Georges Cuvier, Zoologist*. 1964.

Cuyp, Aelbert (1620–1691). Dutch landscape painter. He was the son of **Jacob Cuyp** (1575–1649), also an artist, best known for animal subjects and military scenes. Aelbert, though he also painted portraits, military and hunting scenes, is famous for idyllic scenes near his native Dordrecht (e g. *Landscape with Cattle* at the National Gallery, London) in tones warm and golden with sunshine. He greatly influenced English landscapists of succeeding generations.

Cymbeline *see* **Cunobelinus**

Cyprian, St (Thascius Caecilius Cyprianus) (c.200–258). Latin bishop and martyr, born in Carthage. Trained as a rhetorician, he was past middle life when (c.246) he was converted to Christianity. As Bishop of Carthage he proved to have great powers of organisation, especially during the persecutions of the emperor Decius when he had to direct the affairs of the see from hiding. Later he showed moderation and humanity in dealing with the lapsed, those who for one reason or another had abandoned their faith. He was martyred during the persecutions of the emperor Valerian.

Cyril (Kyrill, né Konstantinos), **St** (c.827–869) and his brother **St Methodius** (né Mikhaël) (c.825–885). Greek missionaries in Russia, born in Thessalonica. In c.860 Cyril went to preach among the Tartar Khazars to the north of the Black Sea. Meanwhile Methodius had been working among the Bulgarians but in c.863 the two brothers went together to Moravia, where their knowledge of the Slav language of the people and their ability to transcribe the Bible and other liturgical works made them more influential than the missionaries already there who knew only Latin or German. Summoned to Rome, they received papal sanction for their use of the Slavonic language. Cyril died there (869) but Methodius, now Bishop of Moravia, returned to complete their work. Cyril devised the Glagolitic alphabet, a modification of the Greek with symbols for additional elements in spoken Slavonic. A later modification, developed in Bulgaria, now called Cyrillic, is the basis of written Russian, Ukrainian, Bulgarian and Serbian.

Cyrus (Ku'rash) (d.401 BCE). Persian prince. He was pardoned for conspiracy against his brother, King *Artaxerxes II, and became satrap of Asia Minor, he then raised a rebel army, many of them Greeks, but was met, defeated and killed at Cunaxa in Babylonia. The epic homeward march of the Greeks, the dangers they encountered, including the snows of Asia Minor, is described in the *Anabasis* of *Xenophon, who was with them.

Cyrus II ('the Great': Greek form of Ku'rash) (c.585–529 BCE). King of Persia 559–529 BCE, Shahanshah (King of Kings) of Iran 550–529. Son of *Cambyses I, of the Achaemenid dynasty, he conquered Media, Lydia (where he overcame *Croesus) and Babylon (*Belshazzar), and founded the Achaemenid Empire, the greatest to that time. Notably tolerant, he allowed the Jews to return from captivity in Babylon (539) and rebuild the temple in Jerusalem. He is often credited with promoting the first 'charter of human rights', and abolishing slavery, but this is contested. He had an enthusiasm for gardens. Killed fighting a nomadic tribe, the Massagetai, at his death Cyrus' empire spread from Afghanistan to the Bosphorus. His reign was described by *Xenophon, *Herodotus and the Book of Daniel. His son *Cambyses II added Egypt, Libya and Thrace to the empire.

Frye, R. N., *The Heritage of Persia*. 1963; Potts, D.T., *Cyrus the Great and the Kingdom of Anshan*. 2005; Jovy, A., *Cyrus the Great*. 2011.

Czerny, Karl (1791–1857). Austrian pianist and teacher. Noted for his studies and exercises designed to improve technique, he studied with *Beethoven, and his pupils included *Liszt and *Leschetizky.

Cziffra, György (Georges) (1921–1994). Hungarian-French pianist. A phenomenal technician, he left Hungary in 1956 and made many recordings.

D

Dagobert (Dagobertus) **I** (605–639). King of Austrasia 623–29, of the Franks 629–39, of Neustria and Burgundy 634–39. He succeeded his father Chlothar II, was the last powerful Merovingian king, and the first to be buried at St Denis. He briefly reunited the whole kingdom of the Franks. St Eloi, a goldsmith and patron saint of craftsmen, was his treasurer.

Daguerre, Louis-Jacques-Mandé (1787–1851). French painter and physicist, born at Cormeilles, Seine-et-Oise. He invented the daguerreotype, the first practical process of photography. He worked first as an officer for inland revenue, then as a scene painter for the opera. He opened the Diorama in Paris (1822), an exhibition of panoramic views, different effects achieved by changes in lighting. In the same year J. N. *Niepce produced the first permanent photograph, though it was of poor quality and required eight hours' exposure time. Learning of Daguerre's experiments in the same field, he joined him in 1829. After Niepce's death in 1833, Daguerre continued with their work and in 1839 was able to publish his daguerreotype process, which required only 20–30 minutes exposure time. By this process permanent pictures (single images) were produced on an iodised silver plate, called a daguerreotype. His publications include *Historie et description des procédés de daguerréotypie* (1839). Made an officer of the Legion of Honour, he and Niepce's heir were granted annuities in 1839.

Gernsheim, H. and A., *L. J. M. Daguerre*. Rev. ed. 1968.

Dahl, Raold (1916–1990). English novelist, born in Cardiff. Son of Norwegian immigrants, he was an officer in the RAF, wrote for television and film screenplays, then became enormously successful as a writer in the fantasy genre, especially for children, with sales of 250 million books, including *Charlie and the Chocolate Factory* (1964) and *Charlie and the Great Glass Elevator* (1972). Dahl had a dark side, misogynist, racist and anti-Semitic, and treated his crippled wife, the actress **Patricia Neal**, appallingly. Tim *Minchin's *Matilda the Musical* (2010), later a successful film, was based on Dahl's novel *Matilda* (1988).

Dennison, M., *Raold Dahl, Teller of the Unexpected*. 2022.

Daimler, Gottlieb Wilhelm (1834–1900). German pioneer motor manufacturer, born in Württemberg. His success rested on his production (after earlier experiments with coal gas as a fuel) of a light, petrol-driven combustion engine, patented in 1883. He founded (1890) the Daimler car company at Cannstatt and in 1900 produced the first Mercédès cars (named after the daughter of his financial backer Emil Jellinek). The Daimler and *Benz companies merged in 1926.

Daladier, Édouard (1884–1970). French politician, born in Carpentras, Provence. Son of a baker, he taught history at Grenoble and elsewhere before moving to Paris. After fighting in World War I, he was elected to the Chamber of Deputies (1919) and eventually succeeded Herriot as leader of the Radical Socialist party. He was Prime Minister 1934 and 1938–40 and negotiated the Munich agreement (1938) with *Hitler, *Mussolini and Neville *Chamberlain. He was arrested (1940) by the Vichy Government, interned by the Germans (1942–45) and became a deputy again 1946–58.

Dalai Lama, The (Tenzin Gyatso) (1935–). Tibetan religious leader, born in Taktser in Ando province. From a peasant family, he was identified as the 14th Incarnation as a child and enthroned at Lhasa in 1940. He assumed political power in 1950 just after *Mao's victory in China, asserted Tibet's claim to autonomy, attempted to negotiate with Beijing, but withdrew to India after Chinese military action (1959). He campaigned for Tibetan independence but took up human rights and humanitarian causes generally and received the 1989 Nobel Peace Prize.

Dalcroze, Émile Jaques *see* **Jaques-Dalcroze, Émile**

Dale, Sir Henry Hallett (1875–1968). English physiologist, born in London. Educated at Trinity College, Cambridge, he was Secretary of the Royal Society 1925–35, Director of the National Institute for Medical Research 1928–42, Director of the Royal Institution, London 1942–46, and President of the Royal Society 1940–45. He shared the Nobel Prize for Medicine (1936) for his work on the chemical transmission of nerve impulses. He was awarded the Copley Medal (1937) and the OM (1944).

Dalén, (Nils) **Gustav** (1869–1937). Swedish engineer, born in Stenstorp. In 1906 he was appointed chief engineer of the AB Gas Accumulator (AGA) company which marketed acetylene gas. He researched into gases and turbines, improved hot-air turbine engines and the Laval steam turbine. By 1909 he was appointed managing director and invented Agamassan, the substance which absorbs acetylene with no risk of explosion. In 1912 he won the Nobel Prize for Physics for inventing the automatic sun valve ('solventil' in Swedish), regulating the flow of gas according to the intensity of light. It was widely used (as 'the Dalén light') in bouys and unmanned lighthouses. He was blinded by an explosion during an experiment (1913) but continued his research until his death. He patented the AGA cooker in 1922.

Dalhousie, James Andrew Broun-Ramsay, 1st Marquess of (1812–1860). Scottish administrator. Son of the 9th Earl of Dalhousie, a general, he

lived in Canada as a child, was educated at Harrow and Oxford and elected MP in 1837. After being President of the Board of Trade 1845–46, he became Governor-General of India 1848–56. His first years were marked by the Second Burmese and the Sikh Wars, as a result more of Lower Burma and the Punjab were annexed. The annexation of Oudh, however, was much criticised. Dalhousie initiated a system of primary education, introduced railways and the telegraph, developed roads, trade and the postal service, and inaugurated major irrigation schemes. Created marquess in 1849, he succeeded *Wellington as lord warden of the Cinque Ports 1853–60.

Dali, Salvador Felipe Jacinto (1904–1989). Spanish painter and sculptor. Through the influence of *De'Chirico and Max *Ernst, he became (from 1929) one of the principal exponents of Surrealism, a form of irrational art, deeply influenced by *Freud's work on the unconscious mind. Dali's paintings of nightmares or hallucinations often include figures drawn and painted with extreme realism. In addition to his paintings he made films (notably *Un Chien Andalou*, with *Buñuel, 1928), designed ballets, wrote an autobiography and other books. A retrospective exhibition of his work was held in Paris in 1980.

Gerard, M., *Salvador Dali.* 1974.

Dalton, (Edward) **Hugh** (John Neale) **Dalton, Baron** (1887–1962). British Labour politician. Educated at Eton and King's College, Cambridge he taught economics and worked with his close friend J. M. *Keynes before becoming a Labour MP 1924–31, 1935–59. Undersecretary for Foreign Affairs 1929–31, in *Churchill's wartime coalition he became minister. In 1945 he was Chancellor of the Exchequer in *Attlee's Labour Government, but resigned (1947) after a leakage of his budget proposals. He was Minister of Town and Country Planning 1950–51, and in 1960 became a life peer.

Dalton, John (1766–1844). English chemist, born in Cumberland. Son of a Quaker weaver, he spent most of his adult life in Manchester as a teacher and private tutor. Earlier, while teaching at Kendal (from 1781), he began a series of 200,000 meteorological observations which he continued throughout his life. He revived the theory, originating in ancient Greece, that matter is not continuous but made up of atoms, and he showed that such an atomic theory is consistent with the observed laws of constant, multiple and reciprocal proportions. He published these ideas, with a table of atomic weights and a list of chemical symbols, in *A New System of Chemical Philosophy* (1808). In the physical field he did much research into the constitution of gases and their expansion when heated, and into the force of steam. Dalton and his brother were colour-blind, and he was the first to give a detailed description of this deficiency.

Thackray, A., *John Dalton: Critical Assessment of His Life and Science*. 1973.

Damasus I, St (c.305–384). Pope 366–84. Born in Rome, son of a priest and deaconess from Lusitania, he was sometimes violent in his methods, overcame a rival pope, made many enemies and asserted papal primacy. He changed the liturgical language of the Church from Greek to Latin. The Council of Rome (382) settled the contents of the Bible and he commissioned his secretary *Jerome to produce the Latin 'Vulgate' translation.

Damien, Father (Joseph de Veuster) (1840–1889). Belgian Catholic missionary. A member of the Picpus Society (Fathers of the Sacred Heart of Jesus and Mary), he went to the Hawaiian Islands in 1864 and from 1873 served at the leper colony at Molokai. After 16 years of selfless devotion he contracted leprosy and died on the island.

Farrow, J., *Damien the Leper*. 1955.

Damocles (4th century BCE). Syracusan courtier. Having expressed his envy of *Dionysius' power, the ruler then seated him at a banquet beneath a sword suspended by a single hair. The story was popularised by *Cicero and *Horace and quoted by *Chaucer.

Dampier, William (1652–1715). English navigator, born in Somerset. He went early to sea and had taken part in several voyages before he became engaged (from 1679) in buccaneering along the South American coasts and further afield. On one such expedition (from 1683) he crossed the Pacific, touching on the Philippines, China and (in January 1688) King Sound, Western Australia. This brought him government employment. In 1699 he was commissioned to chart the east coast of New Holland in HMS *Roebuck*, and while failing in this, explored the coasts of northwest Australia, New Guinea and New Britain. When wrecked off Ascension Island on the return voyage, goats and turtles provided his diet for five weeks. He was soon at sea again, once more a privateer. The sailing master of one of his two ships was the prototype of Robinson Crusoe, Alexander *Selkirk, who was marooned (1704) on one of the islands of Juan Fernández. Dampier sailed with Woodes Rogers on the expedition that found and rescued him (1709). Dampier wrote vivid accounts of his voyages. He was probably the first navigator to have explored every continent except Antarctica.

Lloyd, C., *William Dampier*. 1966; Rutherford, A., and Preston, M.J., *A Pirate of Exquisite Mind*. 2004.

Danby, Thomas Osborne, 1st Earl of (later **1st Duke of Leeds**) (1631–1712). English politician. He entered parliament (1665) and as a strong supporter of the king and the established Church was quickly promoted. In 1674 he became Chief Minister to *Charles II, but was impeached (1678) by the Commons on a number of charges, the worst of which were concerned with secret negotiations, on Charles' behalf, with *Louis XIV and accepting bribes. The Commons rejected the king's immediate

pardon, and Danby was imprisoned until 1684. After *James II's accession his zeal for the established Church led him to take an active part in promoting the revolution (1688) that placed *William and *Mary on the throne. He was virtually Prime Minister 1688–99 but lost his influence after being charged with bribery (1695) and retired.

Browning, A., *Danby*. 3 vols, 1944–51.

Dance, George (?1695–1768). English architect. Son of a London merchant, he started his career as a mason and in 1735 became surveyor to the City of London. Among the buildings he designed were the Mansion House (1739–53), St Botolph's, Aldgate (1741–44), and the facade of Guy's Hospital (1764). His son, also **George Dance** (1741–1825), who succeeded his father as city surveyor, was responsible for many London buildings and churches, e.g. Newgate Prison (1770–78, demolished 1902), All Hallows London Wall (1765–67), and the Royal College of Surgeons in Lincoln's Inn (1806–13, later reconstructed). As designer of country houses he was also in great vogue. He was an original member of the Royal Academy, where he became professor of architecture (1798).

Stroud, D., *George Dance, Architect*. 1971.

Dandolo, Enrico (c.1107–1205). Venetian patrician. Elected as Doge of Venice in 1192, when he was blind and about 85, he provided transport for and accompanied the 4th Crusade, which he successfully diverted to the capture of Constantinople (1204). The islands and territories acquired by Venice were the foundations of its power in the Near East. Among the spoils were the four bronze horses which now surmount the doorway of St Mark's Cathedral (Venice).

Daniel (6th century BCE). Jewish exile in Babylon. He gave his name to a book in the Bible. He is said to have won favour with King Nebuchadnezzar for his ability to foretell the future, for interpreting the words that presaged Belshazzar's doom and, finally, for his miraculous preservation when he was thrown into a lion's den for refusing to obey a royal decree that conflicted with his religion.

D'Annunzio, Gabriele (1863–1938). Italian poet, novelist, dramatist, politician, born in Pescara. Son of an influential landowner, educated at the University of Rome, his first poems, *Primo vere*, were published in 1879 and a prose continuation *Terra Vergine* appeared in 1882, as did *Canto Nuovo*, followed in 1889 by an autobiographical novel *Il Piacere*. In 1892 he began reading *Nietzsche who influenced his later works, several of which featured grasping, completely amoral Nietzschean heroes. He served as Deputy 1897–1900, supported the Allies in World War I, became an aviator and lost an eye. After the war he occupied Fiume with a force of volunteers, ruled as dictator from 1919–21, and became a national hero. Later he became an ardent fascist. He retired to Gardone Riviera and devoted himself to writing memoirs and confessions. His other important works include the two plays *La figliadi Jorio* (1904) and *Le Martyre de Saint Sébastien* (1911) the poetic works *Laudi del cielo, del mare, della terra e degli eroi* (1899), *Alcyone* (1904) and the novel *Il trionfo della morte* (1894). A prolific writer, he produced work of great passion and exuberance, and showed an individual and skilful use of language which influenced subsequent Italian literature. In his style of writing he broke away from the intellectualism of the 19th century, for which he was much criticised.

Julian, P., *D'Annunzio*. 1973; Hughes-Hallett, L., *The Pike*. 2013.

Dante Alighieri (or **Durante degli Alighieri**) (1265–1321). Italian poet, born in Florence. His prominent family belonged to the *Guelf (pro-papal) faction in Florentine politics. Nothing certain is known about his education but he was formidably learned. In his first major work, *La Vita Nuova* (1283–92), a sequence of 31 love poems, we are introduced to 'Beatrice', the love of his life. The poet met her when he was nine and she was eight, and became enchanted. They met again when she was 18 and occasionally afterwards. Her death (1290) left him utterly forlorn. Her identity is a famous literary puzzle. The accepted version is that the 'glorious lady of his mind', as he describes her, was Bice (or Beatrice) Portinari, who married Simone de Bardi, a banker. Others suggest that the name merely masks an unknown lady, while a third theory argues that she personifies his ideal of love. In his sorrow he turned to theology and became interested in politics. In 1291 he married Gemma Donati, by whom he had three sons and two daughters.

His political ventures were disastrous. Florence was a Guelf city but the party was divided into two factions, the moderate 'Whites' (*Guelfi Bianchi*) and the extreme papal supporters, the 'Blacks' (*Guelfi Neri*). Dante, a 'White', rose to be on the Supreme Council of One Hundred. He joined the Apothecaries Guild, was elected a prior (senior magistrate) in 1301 and joined diplomatic missions to San Gemignano and possibly Paris. In Rome, on a mission to Pope *Boniface VIII, when the 'Blacks' seized power, he was convicted *in absentia* (1302) of barratry (selling political offices), and was sentenced to two years exile and an enormous fine. He remained in exile for the rest of his life having refused to pay the fine, with a sentence of burning at the stake if he returned to Florentine territory. He refused a conditional pardon in 1316. (The city council of Florence, not wanting to be too hasty, rescinded his conviction in June 2008.) His years of exile were in Lucca, Verona and, after 1318, Ravenna.

About 1307, he began *Commedia* (the word originally means a transition from confusion to certainty, or misery to joy), which *Boccaccio renamed *La Divina Commedia*.

Set in Easter (or the week before) 1300, over seven days (Thursday to Wednesday), *The Divine Comedy* consists of three books (canticas)—*Inferno*, *Purgatorio* and *Paradiso*—divided into 'cantos' (34 + 33 + 33), 100 cantos in total, 14,233 lines, written in tercets (*terza rima* in Italian, units of three lines), with the rhyming scheme aba/bcd/cdc and so on, running to about 430/500 printed pages.

The Divine Comedy describes Dante's own spiritual development as he overcomes a mid-life crisis, presenting a vivid account of the mediaeval view of hell, purgatory and heaven, and life as a journey.

It is encyclopaedic in range, Michelangelesque in ambition, and draws heavily on many sources, including *Homer, *Virgil, Greek and Roman mythology, Old and New Testament, Ptolemaic cosmology and the theology of St *Augustine and St Thomas *Aquinas.

This epic poem, completed in 1321, written in the Tuscan dialect, was immediately recognised as a masterpiece, and helped to standardise the Italian language. Dante's Italian is closer to the modern language than Shakespeare's English is to ours.

It was translated into Spanish in 1428, French in 1596, and the complete version in English as late as 1802, due to Anglican resistance to Catholic orthodoxy. (At least 60 English translations of the complete work have been published and perhaps 100 of *Inferno*.)

The Divine Comedy has been memorably illustrated by Domenico di Michelino, Sandro *Botticelli, William *Blake, Gustave *Doré and Salvador *Dali, and inspired music by *Liszt and *Tchaikovsky.

The poet is guided through Hell and Purgatory (and Limbo) by *Virgil who has been sent by Beatrice. Ultimately, Beatrice leads him to Heaven. *The Divine Comedy* is written with extraordinary passion, obsessed with sin and punishment, often violent and scatological but also musical and serene. In the nine Circles of Hell, he assigns many personalities of his own and other times, judging them on political and moral grounds.

Colin Burrow refers to Dante's 'delicacy, his violence, his irony, his ability to soar into the divine abstraction of desire, his combination of physical immediacy and metaphysical urgency, his material weight and his spiritual profundity'.

Among Dante's lesser works, the *Latin De Vulgari Eloquentia* (1303–04) includes a classification of dialects and reveals his aim to secure a unified Italian tongue. *Convivio* (*Feast*, 1304–07), in which he discusses his moral and philosophic ideas, is the first important treatise written in Italian rather than Latin. *De Monarchia* (c.1313) discusses the relations of emperor and pope and the concept of a universal empire, and by then he was probably in the *Ghibelline faction.

By using the vernacular in a major work, Dante is considered as the father of European literature, not only Italian. Dante died in Ravenna and is buried there, but Florence is eager for the remains to be returned.

T. S. *Eliot wrote: '[T]ake the *Comedy* as a whole, you can compare it to nothing but the entire dramatic work of Shakespeare … Dante and Shakespeare divide the modern world between them; there is no third.' Dante was much admired by Ezra *Pound, James *Joyce, Samuel *Beckett and Leon *Trotsky.

Moore, E., *Studies in Dante*. 1969; Hawkins, P. S., *Dante: A Brief History*. 2007; Bemrose, S., *A New Life of Dante*. 2009; Santagata, M., *Dante: The Story of His Life*. 2016.

Danton, Georges Jacques (1759–1794). French revolutionary politician, born in Champagne. Originally an advocate in Paris, he was one of the founders of the radical Cordeliers' club (1790) but later identified himself with the moderate Jacobins, although he claimed credit for the revolt of the Paris sections (10 August 1792) which led to the overthrow of the Legislative Assembly and suspension of the monarchy. For two brief periods he was the most powerful leader in France, first as Minister of Justice (but de facto Minister of War) from August to October 1792 and President of the Jacobin club (1793) and the leading spirit in promoting national resistance as Prussian troops neared Paris with his bold challenge: '*De l'audace, encore l'audace, et toujours l'audace*!'. He proclaimed that the revolutionaries had the moral right to initiate wars of national liberation outside France. He was a member of the Convention 1792–94. His second term in power was as virtual leader of the Committee of Public Safety from April to July 1793, but when his moderate policies failed he was displaced by the extremist leader *Robespierre, who had long been his rival. Danton and his friend Camille *Desmoulins were denounced and guillotined. A great orator, known as 'the *Mirabeau of the mob', he was susceptible to bribery, flattery and friendship and died rich.

Hampson, N., *Danton*. 1978.

Da Ponte, Lorenzo (original name Emanuele Conegliano) (1749–1838). Italian librettist, born in Vittorio Veneto. Of Jewish parentage, he was converted to Roman Catholicism by the Bishop of Cendea, whose name he took. He moved to Vienna (1780), became a friend of *Mozart and wrote the libretti for his operas *The Marriage of Figaro*, *Don Giovanni* and *Così fan tutte*. He lived in London 1793–1805 and in 1805 moved to the US where he became a storekeeper in New Jersey for a time. He was the first professor of Italian at Columbia University 1825–38.

Darby, Abraham (1677–1717). English iron-master and inventor, born near Dudley, Worcestershire. He patented (1707) a method of casting iron pots in sand moulds. Having taken over a blast furnace

at Coalbrookdale, Shropshire, he brought about Britain's supremacy as an iron producing country by discovering (1709) a method of using coke instead of charcoal for the smelting of iron ore. A further development came when his son, the second **Abraham Darby** (1711–1763), successfully produced malleable iron from coke smelted pig iron. His son, the third **Abraham Darby** (1750–1791), helped to construct the cast-iron bridge over the Severn at Coalbrookdale, the first of its kind.

Raistrick, A., *Dynasty of Ironfounders*. 1953.

Darius I ('the Great', Greek form of Darayavaush) (548–486 BCE). King of Persia 521–486 BCE. The death (522) of *Cambyses found Persia in the midst of civil war and Darius, who belonged to a junior branch of the royal line, had to fight hard for his throne. Gradually he restored order to the empire, continued the reorganisation of the administration begun by *Cyrus, and linked the provinces with the capital by highways of which the royal road from Sardis to Susa was the most famous. The Achaemenid Empire extended from Egypt to India and included part of the Balkans. He was tolerant towards the Jews, who were permitted and assisted to rebuild the temple at Jerusalem. After successful invasions of northwest India, Thrace and Macedon, Darius sent three expeditions that failed to conquer Greece: in the second his armies were defeated by the Athenians at Marathon (490), and the third was foiled by a rebellion in Egypt. He was succeeded by his son, *Xerxes. Darius is mentioned in Daniel v. 31, and subsequently.

Darius III (d.330 BCE). King of Persia 336–330 BCE. His reign was marked by the conquest of his empire by *Alexander the Great, who inflicted a series of defeats, culminating with Arbela (331) in the Tigris valley. Darius fled but was murdered by the Bactrian satrap Bessus, in the belief that his death would appease Alexander. Barsine, Darius' daughter, was taken by Alexander as a second wife.

Darlan, (Jean Louis Xavier) **François** (1881–1942). French admiral. He joined the navy in 1902 and was Commander-in-Chief of the French fleet 1939–40. Strongly anti-British, he joined *Pétain's Government as Minister for Marine 1940–41, becoming Premier and Foreign Minister 1941–42, then, after the Germans insisted that *Laval return to government, Commander-in-Chief of all Vichy forces. However, after *Eisenhower's invasion in November 1942, Darlan negotiated to surrender North Africa to the allies, in return for being recognised as Chief of State. Enigmatic and ambiguous, he was assassinated in Algiers on Christmas Eve by a young monarchist who was executed two days later.

Smith, F., *The Ship Aground*. 1940.

Darnley, Henry Stuart, Lord (1545–1567). Scottish nobleman. Consort of *Mary Queen of Scots, he was the son of the 4th Earl of Lennox, whose mother, Margaret, sister of England's *Henry VIII, had married the Earl of Angus after the death of her husband *James IV. Darnley was therefore a cousin of Mary, whose second husband he became in 1565. Their son, the future James VI of Scotland (later *James I of England), was born the following year. After the murder of her favourite *Rizzio, in which Darnley played a leading part, the queen came to hate her husband, but when he became ill there was an apparent reconciliation. He was brought from Glasgow to Edinburgh, but was almost immediately killed when the house where he was staying, at Kirk o'Field, was blown up with gunpowder. The Earl of *Bothwell, already aspiring to take Darnley's position, was clearly guilty despite the show of a trial, at which he was acquitted. The strong probability of Mary's complicity has been the subject of continued controversy. Darnley, a gay man of cultivated tastes, was politically inept.

Darrow, Clarence Seward (1857–1938). American lawyer. He appeared for the defence in many controversial cases, notably for Eugene *Debs in the railway strike case (1894), for Loeb and Leopold in the 'thrill-murder' case in Chicago (1924) and for John T. *Scopes in the Dayton, Tennessee, 'Monkey Trial' (1925), where he battled with W. J. *Bryan. He strongly opposed capital punishment, and none of his clients was ever sentenced to death.

Darwin, Charles Robert (1809–1882). English naturalist, born in Shrewsbury (on the same day as Abraham *Lincoln). His father Robert Waring Darwin, a physician, was the son of Erasmus *Darwin and his mother, Susannah Wedgwood, the daughter of Josiah *Wedgwood. After attending Shrewsbury Grammar School he studied medicine at Edinburgh and divinity at Christ's College, Cambridge, but his inclinations turned him to botany and geology. He had a profound, lifelong admiration for Alexander von *Humboldt. As naturalist on the naval survey ship, HMS *Beagle* (commanded by Robert *FitzRoy), making a voyage round the world, he investigated (1831–36) the fauna, flora and geological formations of many areas, including Brazil, Argentina, the Galapágos Islands, New Zealand, New South Wales, Tasmania and Western Australia. He never left Britain again. He became Secretary of the Geological Society of London 1838–41 and was elected FRS (1839). In the same year he married his cousin **Emma Wedgwood** (1808–1896) who bore him 10 children. He and his wife inherited a fortune and he was a shrewd investor leaving an estate of £146,911 (the equivalent of £18.1 million in 2021 values). By 1838 he had become convinced of the mutability of species and *Malthus' *Essay on the Principle of Population* helped him to grasp the mechanism of his famous theory of 'natural selection'. However, he treated his discovery as a deadly secret for 20 years. Darwin lived and worked in secure seclusion at his home at Down House, Kent, and had long periods of debilitating illness, probably Chrone's disease (inflammatory bowel syndrome), compounded by chronic depression. In

1842 he published *The Structures and Distribution of Coral Reefs*, which contains the now generally accepted theory of the origin of coral formations. From observations made during the *Beagle* expedition, he had become convinced that species had gradually evolved from earlier, simpler life forms in an unbroken descent from monocellular life instead of being immutable as was generally held (although *Thales, *Empedocles, *Aristotle, *Montesquieu, *Buffon, Erasmus *Darwin, *Lamarck and others speculated otherwise). Darwin's great achievement was to propose a scientific explanation of how this transformation takes place. The most important factor, he considered, was 'natural selection': because of slight differences (many of them heritable) in their characteristics, some members of a species are better fitted than others for survival under the conditions of their environment and are therefore the most likely to live long enough to reproduce. In this way the variations passed on to the next generation tend to be those that favour the survival of the fittest. Although communicated privately to several colleagues, including Joseph *Hooker, this theory remained unpublished until 1858 when A. R. *Wallace sent to Darwin from Malaya a manuscript putting forward a similar theory which he had worked out independently. Darwin then, in a paper before the Linnaean Society, announced their joint conclusions and in 1859 published his major work, *On the Origin of Species by Means of Natural Selection*. The work provoked furious opposition from clergy and others who saw it as an attack on the doctrine of the special creation of man, but with the support of T. H. *Huxley and many other eminent scientists the theory of evolution (although Darwin did not use the word in his text) gained widespread acceptance. He received the Copley Medal of the Royal Society in 1864, for 'his important researches in geology, zoology, and botanical physiology', not for his work on evolution. In 1871 Darwin published *The Descent of Man*, which provoked fresh controversy by its insistence that man and the anthropoid apes must have a common ancestor. In an unpublished letter to Hooker (1871) he hypothesised about the preconditions needed for the first cellular life.

The Expression of the Emotions in Man and Animals (1872), his third work on evolutionary theory, explores biological factors in human behaviour.

The concept of 'the survival of the fittest' (later described as 'social Darwinism') was proposed by Herbert *Spencer, whom Darwin detested. By contrast, Darwin argued that humans had essentially similar physical and intellectual potential.

He was buried in Westminster Abbey (against his wishes). Darwin had a profound influence on Karl *Marx and the science of genetics (*Mendel) later developed many of his ideas.

About 250 species including finches, frogs, shrimps, insects (mostly beetles), barnacles, an extinct primate (Darwinius), dinosaur (Darwinsaurus) and pterosaur (Darwinopterus), craters on the Moon and Mars, minor planet 1991, Darwin, an Australian city, and mountains in the Andes, Antarctica, Canada and the US were named for him.

Desmond, A. and Moore, J. *Darwin*. 1991; Browne, J., *Charles Darwin: Voyaging*. 1996; Browne, J., *The Power of Place*. 2002; Gopnik, N., *Angels and Ages*. 2009.

Darwin, Erasmus (1731–1802). English medical practitioner and philosopher of science, born at Elton Hall, Nottinghamshire. Best remembered as a forerunner of his grandson Charles *Darwin in developing evolutionary theories, his conclusions were essentially reached by philosophic speculation rather than scientific observation. He studied medicine at Edinburgh and took his degree at Cambridge. He practised as a doctor in Nottingham and with increasing success at Lichfield, when his fame even reached *George III. Meetings of Lichfield's Lunar Society were attended by Matthew *Boulton, James *Watt, Josiah *Wedgwood, and Joseph *Priestley. Darwin moved from this congenial environment to Derby (1802). *The Botanic Garden* (1789–91) is an odd work written in rhyming couplets and, among other eccentricities, personifying the forces of nature, but it contains, especially in the notes, a mass of miscellaneous information. His immense range of interests included sewerage, flying machines, temperance, canals, and female education in boarding schools. His *Zoonomia or the Laws of Organic Life* (1794–96) anticipates evolutionary theory. He envisages the possibility of an animal having the faculty of self-improvement and able to pass on 'those improvements by generation to its posterity world without end'.

Hele, D., *Erasmus Darwin*. 1963.

Darwin, Sir George Howard (1845–1912). English astronomer, born in Down, Kent. The fifth child of Emma and Charles *Darwin, he studied law at Cambridge for six years, then returned to Trinity College to pursue his interests in mathematics and astronomy. Elected FRS in 1879, he became Plumian professor of astronomy and experimental philosophy, Cambridge 1883–1912. Essentially a mathematical cosmologist, his major work was on the origin of the Moon, which he argued had been drawn from planet Earth, when it was still molten, by solar tides, estimating this to have occurred about 50 million years ago. Neither hypothesis is now accepted. Recent research concludes that the Moon was fractured from Earth by a giant impact about 4.5 billion years ago. Darwin received the Copley Medal in 1911.

Darzi, Ara Warkes, Baron Darzi of Denham (1960–). Armenian-British medical specialist, born in Baghdad. His family relocated to Ireland as refugees and, after training in Dublin, he moved to London in 1990, and became an outstanding surgeon, developing keyhole and robotic techniques. Professor of Surgery at Imperial College, London,

1996– , he was Under-Secretary for Health 2007–09 and proposed major reforms to the National Health Service. He received a peerage in 2007 and the OM in 2016.

D'Aubigny, Charles François (1817–1878). French landscape painter. After a residence of a few years in Italy he lived mainly near Paris (the last 20 years on a houseboat on the Seine). Associated with the Barbizon school, he is noted for his successful impression of atmosphere and half-light.

Daudet, Alphonse (1840–1897). French novelist, born at Nîmes. He went to Paris at the age of 17 and became a secretary to the Duc de *Morny, publishing his first work, *Les Amoureuses*, a book of poems, in 1857. He confirmed his reputation with the collection of short stories *Lettres de mon moulin* (1866) and *Contes du lundi* (1873), and many novels which include *Le petit chose* (1868), with its memories of his own childhood. Best known of all is *Tartarin de Tarascon* (1872), first of a series centred on this delightful Provençal character. *Bizet wrote the music for his only play *L'Arlésienne* (1872). Daudet's ironic and sensitive work is notable for its realism. His son, **Leon Daudet** (1867–1942), editor of *L'Action Française*, was an unscrupulous but brilliant propagandist for the royalist cause.

Sachs, M., *The Career of Alphonse Daudet*. 1965.

Daumier, Honoré-Victorin (1808–1879). French painter, sculptor, lithographer and caricaturist, born in Marseille. Of poor parentage, in 1832 he drew a cartoon of King *Louis Philippe which earned him six months' imprisonment. Throughout his life Daumier was a victim of poverty and a savage critic of social injustice, he especially satirised the malpractices and foibles of lawyers and other members of the rich bourgeoisie, and the regime of *Napoléon III provided some excellent targets. The effectiveness of his lithographs derives from bold silhouettes defined by an energetic line and strongly marked lights and darks. In his paintings, whose near uniformity of style renders them difficult to date, Daumier made a still more imaginative play with strong shapes. His Don Quixote series constitutes a revolutionary reduction of form and narrative to the barest essentials. Daumier's paintings range between this extreme of modernism and a wholly romantic treatment of the commonplace (e.g. *Tireur de Bateau*).

Rey, R., *Daumier.* 1966; Roy, C., *Daumier*. 1971; Laughton, B., *Honoré Daumier*. 1996.

Davenant, Sir William (1606–1668). English poet and playwright, born in Oxford. Son of a tavern keeper, gossip, repeated by John *Aubrey, that he was *Shakespeare's illegitimate son lacks supporting evidence. His first play *The Cruel Brother* was produced in 1627. For the next 11 years he entertained the court of *Charles I with a series of tragedies, comedies and masques, and became Poet Laureate in 1638. During the Civil War he was knighted (1643) by Charles for his military services. He followed Queen Henrietta Maria into exile and in 1650, while on the way to America, was captured by a parliamentary frigate and briefly imprisoned. His best known works are the tedious epic *Gondibert* (1651) and *The Siege of Rhodes* (1656), said to have been the first English opera. After the Restoration he was active in the London theatre, and collaborated with *Dryden on a new version of *The Tempest* (1667).

Nethercot, A. H., *Sir William D'Avenant: Poet Laureate and Playwright Manager*. 1967.

Davenport, Thomas (1802–1851). American inventor. A blacksmith from Rutland, Vermont, in 1835 he built the first successful rotary electric motor, later adapting it for use in a drill and printing press.

David (Dawid) (d.c.970 BCE). King of Israel and Judah c.1010–970 BCE. According to 1 Samuel, he was born in Bethlehem, the eighth son of Jesse, a farmer. Originally a shepherd, he became a gifted singer and lyre player, winning King *Saul's favour by assuaging his melancholy. He became an intimate of his son Jonathan and married Saul's daughters Michal (but without issue) and, later, Merab. He became the object of Saul's obsessions, especially after the prophet *Samuel anointed David as his successor. In the war against the Philistines, David killed the giant, Goliath. Forced into exile, after Saul and Jonathan were killed by the Philistines, he was proclaimed king, set up his court at Hebron and later built a new capital at Jerusalem, where he brought the Ark of the Covenant, and from which he ruled all Israel. Stories of his later life include the revolt of his favourite son Absalom, whose death he lamented so deeply. Overcome by lust, cruelty and his desire for Bathsheba, wife of Uriah the Hittite, he sent her husband into certain death in battle. He had eight wives and many children. The 'Psalms of David' are attributed to him; some may be authentic, for example the beautiful lament for Saul and Jonathan. The Messianic hopes of the Jews were fixed upon the royal line of David and the New Testament emphasises the genealogical links between him and *Jesus Christ. David was succeeded by his son *Solomon.

David (Dewi), **St** (d.c.589). Welsh monk and bishop. The details of his life are clouded by legend but he seems to have been a leading figure in the monastic revival in Wales, Cornwall, Ireland and Brittany during the 6th century. His bishopric of Mynyw (Menevia) was renamed St David's (in Pembrokeshire) in his honour, and his shrine was a famous place of pilgrimage in the Middle Ages (from c.1000). Canonised in 1120, he is the patron saint of Wales. St David's Day is 1 March.

David I, St (Daibhidh mac Chaluim) (c.1084–1153). King of Scotland 1124–53. Younger son of *Malcolm III, of the House of Dunkeld, and Margaret of Wessex, on his father's death he was sent for safety to the English

court where he befriended the future *Henry I, who married his sister Matilda. David married (1113) Maud, Countess of Huntington, heiress of daughter of **Waltheof** (d. 1076), and acquired the earldoms of Huntington and Northumberland. After succeeding his brother *Alexander as king, he supported his niece *Matilda in her struggle for the English throne against *Stephen. He introduced the Norman style of governing and feudalism. Though defeated at Northallerton he secured terms that allowed him to extend his kingdom to the Tees and Eden. He completed the alignment of the Scottish Church with that of the rest of western Christendom by increasing the number of bishoprics and founding many monasteries, e.g. Holyrood and Melrose, and was venerated as a saint. During his reign he introduced important changes in law and administration.

David II (1324–1371). King of Scotland 1329–71. He succeeded his father, Robert *Bruce, as a child, but owing to the confused state of his country was sent to France in 1334. Returning in 1341, he invaded England in 1346 but was captured at Neville's Cross (by *Edward III's troops). After an imprisonment in England lasting 11 years, he was ransomed for a huge sum of which only half had been paid when he died childless.

David, Jacques Louis (1748–1825). French painter. He worked under Joseph-Marie Vien from 1765. After winning the first prize of the Académie des Beaux Arts he went to Italy, where he studied for some years. With the exhibition (1785) in Paris of his picture *The Oath of the Horatii* David became the leader of the neo-classical movement. It is a painting of great austerity and dramatic clarity with serious political undertones. During the Revolution David served as a member of the Convention 1792–95, and was briefly its president. From this period date some of his finest portraits and a haunting drawing of *Marie Antoinette on the way to the guillotine. Under the Consulate and Empire David's paintings embraced stilted, antiquarian interpretations of classical subjects (Leonidas at Thermopylae), huge compositions of great occasions such as *The Coronation of Napoleon*, and excellent, if sometimes over-romanticised, portraiture (e.g. *Madame Récamier* and *Napoleon on Horseback*). With the return of the monarchy David lived as an exile in Brussels. From this period dates the wonderful, compassionate yet severely realistic portrait of *The Three Ladies of Ghent*. Conflicting trends appear in David's paintings. He moves from pure neo-classicism to freer use of light and colour, reverts to a stilted classicism albeit with a relaxation in its style. He exerted considerable influence as the teacher of, among others, *Ingres, Gérard and Gros.

Hautecoeur, L., *Louis David*. 1954.

Davies, Sir John (1569–1626). English poet and lawyer. Attorney-General for Ireland and later Lord Chief Justice of England (though he died before he could take up office), his poetry is 'philosophical' in approach: *Orchestra* (1596) sees nature through a sustained metaphor of dancing and *Nosce Teipsum* (1599) considers the nature of man and his soul. His reputation as a wit is justified in *Hymns to Astraea* (1599), a series of nimble acrostics on the name Elizabeth Regina. T. S. *Eliot praised his poetry. He also wrote in prose on Irish history. His wife, **Eleanor Touchet** (d.1652), generally regarded as insane, became a prophetess, foretold the death of *Charles I and produced a series of cryptic pamphlets during the 1640s and early 1650s.

Davies, Sir (Peter) **Maxwell** (1934–2016). British composer and conductor. Educated at the Royal Manchester College of Music (where he was professor of composition 1965–80), and Manchester University, he also studied in Rome and Princeton. He directed the Pierrot Players 1967–71 with (Sir) Harrison *Birtwistle, and the Fires of London 1971–87, and won many awards for his recordings. A prolific composer, his works include the opera *The Martyrdom of St Magnus* (1976), four symphonies, concertos for violin, oboe, trumpet, cello and guitar, chamber music, songs and film scores. He lived in Orkney from 1971, became Master of the Queen's Music 2004–2014, and wrote 10 string quartets for Naxos. He received a CH in 2014.

Davies, (William) **Robertson** (1913–1995). Canadian novelist, playwright, poet, critic, essayist, editor and academic, born in Ontario. He edited *The Examiner*, which his family owned, 1942–55, taught at Toronto University and was Master of Massey College, 1963–81. His masterpiece, known collectively as *The Deptford Trilogy*, comprises three novels, *Fifth Business* (1970), *The Manticore* (1972) and *World of Wonders* (1975). He was extremely prolific, diverse in his interests, with a passionate interest in theatre, and won many awards.

Davies, William Henry (1871–1940). Welsh poet, born in Monmouthshire. For a time apprenticed to a picture-framer, he was an itinerant worker, drifter and tramp in the United States 1893–99, losing his right leg in 1899 after jumping a train in Canada. He returned to England as a tramp, but began writing poetry. His first collection, in 1905, printed privately, attracted critical interest. His *Autobiography of a Super-Tramp* (1908) attracted the support of Bernard *Shaw.

Hockey, L., *W. H. Davies*. 1971.

Davis, Sir Andrew Frank (1944–2024). English conductor and composer. He was organ scholar at King's College, Cambridge, conductor of the Toronto Symphony 1975–88, the Glyndebourne Opera 1988–2000, the BBC Symphony Orchestra 1989–2000, the Lyric Opera of Chicago 2000–21 and the Melbourne Symphony Orchestra 2013–19. He also translated *Virgil's *Aeneid*.

Davis, Bette (1908–1989). American film actor. Famous for the dramatic intensity with which she entered into her parts, she made 88 films between 1931 and 1989, won Academy Awards for *Dangerous* (1933) and *Jezebel* (1938) and received eight more nominations, a record. Her best films include *The Petrified Forest*, *Dark Victory*, *All This and Heaven Too*, *The Little Foxes*, *All About Eve*, *Wedding Breakfast* and *Whatever Happened to Baby Jane?* Her autobiography, *The Lonely Life*, was published in 1963.

Davis, Sir Colin Rex (1927–2013). English conductor. He was chief conductor of the BBC Symphony Orchestra 1967–71, Royal Opera House Covent Garden 1971–86, the Bavarian State Radio Orchestra 1983–95 and the London Symphony Orchestra 1995–2006 and received a CH in 2001. He made outstanding recordings of *Sibelius, *Berlioz, *Bruckner, *Mozart and *Elgar.

Davis, Dwight Filley (1879–1945). American official. A national doubles lawn tennis champion (1899–1901), as an enthusiastic Harvard law undergraduate he was donor (1900) of the Davis Cup, an international award for national teams, competed for annually (except for 12, mostly wartime, years). He served as Secretary of War 1925–29 and Governor-General of the Philippines 1929–32.

Davis, Glyn Conrad (1959–). Australian political scientist and administrator, born in Sydney. He directed the Premier and Cabinet office in Queensland 1995–96; 1998–2002, was Vice Chancellor of Griffith University 2002–04 and the University of Melbourne 2005–18, ranked first in Australia. Charismatic, deeply analytical and prolific, he became Secretary of the Department of Prime Minister and Cabinet 2022– . He married Margaret *Gardner.

Davis, Jefferson (1808–1889). American politician, President of the Confederate States of America 1861–65. Born in Kentucky, he lived in Mississippi from childhood, became an officer in the US army, but resigned in 1835 after eloping with his commander's daughter. Returning to Mississippi, he became a cotton planter. He was elected to the US House of Representatives in 1845, but resigned (1846) to serve in the Mexican War. Afterwards he returned to politics as a senator 1847–51, 1857–61 and was Secretary of War 1853–57 under President *Pierce. When Mississippi seceded from the Union (1861) Davis withdrew from the Senate, and in February was chosen by the Congress of seceding states as President of the Confederacy. In the ensuing Civil War 1861–65 Davis failed to adequately coordinate the civil and military administrations, and was regarded by many as unduly hesitant and moderate. At the end of the war treason charges against him were dropped. He returned home to live in obscurity and wrote *The Rise and Fall of the Confederate Government* (1878–81).

Davis, John William (1873–1955). American lawyer and Democratic politician, born in West Virginia. A graduate of Washington and Lee University, he was a Congressman 1911–13, Solicitor General 1913–18 and Ambassador to the UK 1918–21. He adopted his young, orphaned cousin Cyrus *Vance in 1922. At the 1924 Democratic Convention, in New York, the party was hopelessly deadlocked between Al *Smith and W. G. *McAdoo (a 'dry' supported by the Ku Klux Klan) and nomination required a two-thirds majority. On the 103rd ballot, Davis, a 'dark-horse' candidate, was chosen, with Charles Bryan (brother of W. J. *Bryan) as his running mate. In the ensuing campaign he opposed the Klan and Prohibition, and was overwhelmingly defeated by *Coolidge, carrying only 12 states in the South, with a primary vote of 28.8 per cent. He became a leading corporation lawyer in New York, representing J P *Morgan, cautiously supported Franklin *Roosevelt in 1932, but then turned against the New Deal and voted Republican thereafter. He argued 140 cases in the Supreme Court. He opposed *Truman's seizure of a steel mill, anti-lynching laws and ending racial segregation in schools. Paradoxically, he gave character evidence in support of Alger *Hiss.

Davis, Miles Dewey (1926–1991). American bandleader, trumpeter and composer, born in Illinois. Son of a dentist and a teacher, he studied at the Juilliard School of Music in New York. He was a pioneer of 'cool jazz', attempted to combine elements of jazz and rock, and experimented with electronic effects.

Davis, Sammy, Jr (1925–1990). American actor, singer, dancer, born in New York City. He appeared in his uncle's all-black family troupe at the age of four and developed an extraordinary range of skills, including instrumentalist and mimic. He appeared on Broadway from 1956, in 26 films and countless nightclubs, often working with Frank *Sinatra. He lost an eye and a hip, converted to Judaism and the Republican Party.

Davisson, Clinton Joseph (1881–1958). American physicist. In 1937 he shared, with Sir George *Thomson, the Nobel Prize for Physics for his work on the diffraction of electrons by crystals. He showed that electrons reveal wave-like, as well as corpuscular, properties.

Davitt, Michael (1846–1906). Irish nationalist politician. He joined the Fenians in 1865 and served seven years in jail (1870–77) for his revolutionary activities. He migrated to the US and was influenced by the ideas of Henry *George. He became the co-founder, with C. S. *Parnell, of the Land League, and campaigned for reduced rents and peasant ownership of the land. The League was suppressed in 1880

and Davitt was jailed for sedition 1881–82, 1883. He advocated secularism, socialism, collectivism and land nationalisation for Ireland, but denounced terrorism, adopting a policy of passive resistance. Elected in 1882, but unseated, he was an anti-Parnellite MP 1892–93, 1895–99. He founded the Irish Land League (1898), toured Australia in 1899 and Russia in 1903.

Davout, (sometimes spelled d'Avout or Davoust), **Louis-Nicolas, Duke of Auerstädt, Prince d'Eckmühl** (1770–1823). French marshal. One of *Napoléon's ablest commanders, known as 'the iron marshal', he fought under him in Egypt, at Austerlitz (1805), Auerstädt (1806), after which he received his dukedom, and at Eckmühl and Wagram in 1809. He was a despotic governor of Warsaw 1807–10, accompanied Napoléon to Moscow and, after the return from Elba, was Minister of War. He lost all his titles and rank after the Bourbon restoration, but was later pardoned and, in 1819, was made a peer of France.

Davy, Sir Humphry, 1st Baronet (1778–1829). English chemist, born in Penzance. Son of a woodcarver, educated at a local grammar school, he became apprenticed to a surgeon-apothecary and was influenced by the writings of *Boyle and *Lavoisier. He became superintendent (1798) of the laboratory in the Pneumatic Institute, Bristol, established to investigate the medical effects of inhaling gases. He discovered (1799) the anaesthetic properties of laughing gas. He was a friend of *Coleridge, and was deeply imbued with Romanticism. As professor of chemistry at the newly established Royal Institution in London 1802–13, he isolated sodium, potassium, calcium, magnesium, barium and strontium by using an electric current to decompose their fused salts. He formulated a theory of the electrical nature of chemical affinity (not verified for more than a century) and analysed many substances such as metallic oxides and acids, suggesting what elements were responsible for their properties. He recognised iodine, chlorine and fluorine as elements, but failed to isolate the last two. In 1812 he took on Michael *Faraday as his assistant, received a knighthood, married and went on a honeymoon tour of Europe with his wife and Faraday. His name was given to the miner's safety lamp he invented (1815) to meet the problem of fire-damp. He received a baronetcy in 1818. Davy was President of the Royal Society 1820–27, succeeding Joseph *Banks, but he found the job frustrating, did no more experimental work and developed a deep resentment of Faraday. He died of a stroke.

Knight, D., *Humphry Davy: Science and Power.* 1993.

Dawes, Charles Gates (1865–1951). American banker, administrator and Republican politician, born in Ohio. A Chicago banker, he was a Brigadier in World War I, and first Director of the Bureau of the Budget 1921–22. As Director of the Allied Reparations Commission 1923–24 he proposed the 'Dawes Plan' for securing German repayment of war debts to the Allies. He served as Vice President of the US 1925–29, shared the Nobel Peace Prize for 1925 with Austen *Chamberlain, and was Ambassador to Great Britain 1929–32.

Dawson, Peter (1882–1961). Australian singer, born in Adelaide. A baritone, notable for his diction, he recorded for almost 50 years and composed many successful ballads under the name J. P. McCall.

Day, Dorothy (1897–1980). American social activist. She became a socialist, a supporter of the Industrial Workers of the World (IWW) and a journalist on *The Masses*. Converted to Catholicism, she was co-founder of *The Catholic Worker* (1933) and a devoted supporter of many radical causes, but came to support Catholic teaching on birth control and was critical of the welfare state. She has been proposed as a candidate for sainthood.

Loughery, J. and Randolph, B., *Dorothy Day: Dissenting Voice of the American Century*. 2020.

Day Lewis, Cecil (1904–1972). British poet, born in Ireland. Regarded with W. H. *Auden and Stephen *Spender as one of the 'Thirties group' of poets, his work includes *A Hope of Poetry* (1934), *The Friendly Tree* (1936), *Overtures to Death* (1938) *Collected Poems* (1954) and an autobiography, *The Buried Day* (1960). Created CBE in 1950, he was professor of poetry at Oxford 1951–56 and Poet Laureate 1968–72. Under the pseudonym Nicholas Blake he wrote several accomplished detective stories. His son **Daniel** (Michael) **Day Lewis** (1957–), an actor, won an Oscar for *My Left Foot* (1989) and starred in *The Last of the Mohicans* (1993) and *In the Name of the Father* (1993).

Dayan, Moshe (1915–1981). Israeli soldier and statesman, born Deganya, Palestine (now Israel). In 1937 he was a member of the guerrilla force under British Captain Orde *Wingate, organised to fight Arab rebels in Palestine and to form the nucleus of a Jewish army. Dayan formed the Haganah (Jewish militia) but the band was declared illegal and Dayan imprisoned 1939–41. Freed to serve in World War II, he led a Palestinian Jewish company against the Vichy French in Syria, and lost an eye. His black patch became his trademark.

He commanded the Jerusalem area in the Israeli war of independence (1948), and later headed the delegation in armistice negotiations. From 1953–58 he was Chief of Staff, and planned and led the 1956 invasion of Sinai Peninsula, which gained him the reputation of an outstanding military commander. In 1966 he published *Diary of the Sinai Campaign*. Retired as chief of staff, he was elected to the Knesset (parliament) as a member of the Labour Party. In 1959 he was appointed Minister of Agriculture by Prime Minister *Ben Gurion, and served until 1964. In 1967 when war with the Arabs was imminent,

Dayan was appointed Minister of Defence by popular demand. He directed the extremely successful attack on Egypt, Jordan and Syria in the Six-Day War. A symbol of security to the Israelis, he played a large part in the post-war period in determining policy in Arab territory occupied by Israeli forces.

Teveth, S., *Moshe Dayan*. 1973.

Deák de Kehida, Ferenc (1802–1876). Hungarian politician. He entered parliament in 1833, liberated his serfs and supported progressive taxation. He was minister for justice after the rising in 1848 against rule by Austria, but resigned when *Kossuth seized power, and after his overthrow retired to his estates for six years. On Austria's defeat by Prussia (1866) he conducted the negotiations by which Hungary became an equal partner with Austria in the Habsburg Empire. Hungary was granted a constitution in 1867 and Deák was the leading figure in the Hungarian Assembly until his death.

Kiraly, B. K., *Ferencz Deák*. 1975.

Deakin, Alfred (1856–1919). Australian politician, born in Melbourne. A barrister and a journalist, he was a Member of the Victorian Legislative Assembly 1879; 1880–89; 1889–1900 and soon became one of the leaders of the Liberal party. In 1883 he joined a coalition ministry, and as Minister of Public Works and Water Supply won international repute for his irrigation plans. He then became one of the most persuasive advocates of Australian federation. He was Attorney-General in *Barton's first Commonwealth Government and Prime Minister three times 1903–04, 1905–08, 1909–10, for a total of four years 10 months and 10 days, winning elections in 1903 and 1906 but without an outright majority. His first two governments were protectionist, the third was a protectionist-free trade coalition. Member of the House of Representatives 1901–13, he undertook a mission to the United States in 1915 but soon sank into dementia.

An idealist and intellectual with a deep interest in spiritualism, he created what has been called 'The Australian Settlement', five principles that dominated politics until the 1960s: White Australia, Industry Protection, Wage Arbitration, State Paternalism and Imperial Benevolence. (All have disappeared.) He secured passage of the Invalid and Old Age Pensions Act (1908) but resigned before its proclamation. He speech on the Judiciary Act (1903), creating the High Court, against strong state objections, promoted a strong national vision. He also supported imperial preference and compulsory military training.

He declined all honours. His *The Federal Story* was published in 1944.

Brett, J., *The Enigmatic Mr Deakin*. 2017.

Dean, Brett (1961–). Australian composer, born in Brisbane. He played the viola in the Berlin Philharmonic Orchestra 1985–99, composed a viola concerto (2004) and won the Grawemeyer Award for Composition in 2009 for his violin concerto *The Lost Art of Letter Writing,* featuring letters by *Brahms, van *Gogh, Hugo *Wolf and Ned *Kelly. His opera *Bliss*, based on Peter *Carey's novel, was premiered in Sydney in March 2010. *Hamlet* (2017) premiered at Glyndebourne Opera to great acclaim.

Dean, James (Byron) (1931–1955). American actor. Despite the brevity of his career, he was a spectacular screen success, embodying the restlessness of mid-50s American youth with his performance in *Rebel Without a Cause* (1955). His two other major films were *East of Eden* (1955) and *Giant* (released 1956). After his death in a car accident he acquired international cult status.

Deane, Sir William Patrick (1931–). Australian jurist, born in Melbourne. Educated in Sydney and a Federal Court Judge 1977–82, he was a judicial activist as a Justice of the High Court 1982–95. He became Governor-General of Australia 1996–2001 and expressed passionate concern on many social issues, including global poverty and Indigenous welfare.

DeBakey, Michael Ellis (1908–2008). American surgeon, born in Louisiana. He developed new techniques in cardio-vascular surgery, taught at Baylor College of Medicine, Houston and published 1500 articles.

de Bono, Edward (Francis Charles Publius) (1933–2021). British academic and author, born in Malta. Educated in Malta and at Oxford, he lectured in medicine at Oxford, Cambridge and Harvard. He established the Cognitive Research Trust in 1971, promoted the concept of 'lateral thinking' and urged the teaching of thinking as a discrete part of formal education. His many popular books included: *Lateral Thinking* (1970), *The Greatest Thinkers* (1976), *Wordpower* (1977), and de Bono's *Thinking Course* (1982).

Deborah (fl. c.1125 BCE). Hebrew prophet. Wife of Lapidoth, and the only woman judge in Israel, she persuaded Barak to free her people from Canaanite oppression. With him she led an army against Sisera and the Canaanites, and soundly defeated them at the Battle of Esdraelon. A long period of peace ensued. Scholars generally accept the 'Song of Deborah' (Judges v) as a genuine contemporary document, one of the oldest biblical records and one of the most brilliant poems in the Bible.

De Botton, Alain (1969–). Swiss-British writer, philosopher and documentary maker, born in Zürich. He came from a rich Sephardic family in Switzerland but was educated at a school in Oxford and at Cambridge University. He wrote a series of lucid and engaging books which sold prodigiously, including *How Proust Can Change Your Life* (1997), *The Consolations of Philosophy* (2000), *The Art of Travel*

(2002), *Status Anxiety* (2004) and *The Architecture of Happiness* (2006). His interests turned towards architecture and filming.

Debré, Michel Jean Pierre (1912–1996). French politician. A senator 1948–58, he backed General *de Gaulle's resumption of power (1958) and was appointed Minister of Justice. He drafted the new constitution which was adopted by a referendum in December 1958, and in January 1959 he became the first premier of the Fifth French Republic until replaced by *Pompidou in 1962. He served as Minister for Finance 1966–68, Foreign Affairs 1968–69 and Defence 1969–73.

Debs, Eugene Victor (1855–1926). American union leader and Socialist. He was active in the organisation of railway workers from 1875, and in 1893 became President of the American Railway Union. For his part in the Pullman strike (1894) he was imprisoned for contempt of court. He founded the US Social Democratic Party (1897) and was Socialist candidate for the presidency in 1900, 1904, 1908, 1912 and 1920. He was again imprisoned (1918–21) for alleged sedition in World War I. He advocated organising trade unions on an industry-wide basis.

Ginger, R., *The Bending Cross: A Biography of Eugene Victor Debs*. 1949.

Debussy, (Achille-) **Claude** (1862–1918). French composer, born at St-Germain-en-Laye. He entered the Paris Conservatoire when he was 10 and studied composition for a time under *Massenet. He was pianist in the household of **Nadezhda von Meck**, who had been *Tchaikovsky's patron, and travelled with her (1880–82) in Italy, Switzerland and Russia. He won the Prix de Rome with *L'Enfant prodigue* (1884) and studied in Italy until 1887. Both drawn to and repelled by *Wagner, he was influenced by *Berlioz, *Mussorgsky and *Fauré, exposure to Javanese music, by Symbolist poets, *Turner and the Pre-Raphaelites, and French Impressionist painters. He reacted against classical forms, declaring the symphony to be dead. He described critics who called him an 'impressionist' as 'imbeciles' because his writing was exceptionally precise not hazy, preferring to identify himself with the Symbolists. The String Quartet (1893) and *Prélude à l'après midi d'un faune* (1894), a ballet score, based on a poem by *Mallarmé, were the first works of his maturity. He was primarily occupied with the opera *Pélleas and Mélisande* (libretto by *Maeterlinck) from 1894 to 1902; its success earned him wider recognition. *Printemps* (1896), *Nocturnes* (1899), *La Mer*, his masterpiece (1905), *Images* (1906–12) and the ballet *Jeux* (1913) demonstrate his genius as an orchestrator. He composed two books of *Préludes* (1909–10; 1911–13) for piano, many piano solos and songs and incidental music to *D'Annunzio's *Le Martyre de St Sébastien* (1911). A fine pianist, he made some acoustic recordings as an accompanist, and toured Europe giving many concerts. Politically, he was a conservative patriot, mildly anti-Dreyfusard. His last works were three sonatas for piano and cello (1915), flute, viola and harp (1915), piano and violin (1917), written in neo-classical style. His music had a profound influence on *Janáček, *Bartók, *Messiaen, *Boulez and—up to a point—*Ravel and *Stravinsky, even *Puccini. In his last years he suffered from rectal cancer and was burdened by debt.

Walsh, S., *Debussy. A Painter in Sound*. 2018.

Decatur, Stephen (1779–1820). American naval commander. During the war against Tripoli pirates in the Mediterranean (1801–05), and under fire from 141 guns, he entered the harbour and boarded and burned the captured ship *Philadelphia*, a feat that Nelson described as the 'most daring of the age'. He captured the *Macedonian* in the 'war of 1812' against Britain but was forced to surrender in 1814. In 1815 he resumed the contest with the pirate regimes of Algeria, Tunis and Tripoli, defeated them and obtained indemnities. Violence pursued him to the last: he was killed in a duel. To Decatur, Americans owe the toast 'May she be always in the right: but my country, right or wrong.'

Decius (Gaius Messius Quintus Decius, later Traianus Augustus) (201–51). Roman emperor 249–51. Born in Serbia, he was a soldier, senator and consul in Rome, and a governor in Spain, raised to the purple by his troops. In 250 he imposed an oath of loyalty to himself and compulsory sacrifices to the Roman gods. This was not specifically aimed at Christians, and Jews were exempted, nevertheless, it became the first serious persecution suffered by Christians since 177: there were some executions and many exiles and apostates. Decius was killed in battle at Abritus (modern Razgrad, in Bulgaria).

Dee, John (1527–1608). English astrologer, mathematician and reputed magician. He was educated at Cambridge and Louvain and travelled extensively. Although he was imprisoned by *Mary Tudor under suspicion of arranging her death by magic, he impressed *Elizabeth I with his scientific and occult skills. Many of his interests, previously dismissed by historians and others as 'on the lunatic fringe' of learning and enquiry, are now seriously investigated. Dee has been recognised as one of the most enterprising and intelligent, if still somewhat ambivalent, figures of the Elizabethan period.

Ackroyd, P., *The House of Doctor Dee.* 1993.

Deffand, Marie de Vichy Chamrond, Marquise du (1697–1780). French literary hostess. Her salons were famous in 18th-century Paris. The witty and lively conversations there are recalled in her letters to *Voltaire and Horace *Walpole, with whom she developed a passionate friendship in her old age.

Defoe, Daniel (1660–1731). English writer, born in London. Son of a prosperous tallow chandler, James Foe, of Flemish descent, Daniel adopted the name

Defoe. Excluded as a nonconformist from Oxford and Cambridge, he became a hosier and general merchant. By 1700 he was known as a vigorous political pamphleteer. The issue of an ironic pamphlet which purported to be an attack on the Dissenters but in reality was directed against the Anglican High Church resulted (1703) in imprisonment, the pillory and bankruptcy. This crisis necessitated a *volte-face*. Though a Whig, he started the *Review* with the aid and patronage of *Harley, leader of the moderate Tories. When *George I came to the throne he reversed the process by getting control of Tory periodicals and, gradually, without attracting attention, reconciling their policies.

At the age of 60 he started the new career as a prolific writer of fiction that brought him so much renown. In 1719 appeared *Robinson Crusoe*, based on the experiences of Alexander *Selkirk; *Moll Flanders* (1721) leads the story of a lady of easy virtue through many episodes to an ending of penitence and prosperity. Other works include *A Journal of the Plague Year* (1721), *Jack Sheppard* (1724) and *Roxana* (1724). *The History of Apparitions* (1727) is among the books showing his continuing interest in the supernatural revealed by *The Apparition of Mrs Veal* (1706). His *Tour Thro' the Whole Island of Great Britain* (3 vols, 1724–26) displays the author as a shrewd and observant traveller. He wrote a vast amount of hack-work, sometimes under pseudonyms, on economic, social, political and historical matters, all of it very competent and readable.

Sutherland, J. R., *Defoe*. 1954.

De Forest, Lee (1873–1961). American physicist and engineer. He introduced the 'grid' into the thermionic valve and so made possible the large-scale amplification of radio signals. In 1916 De Forest was responsible for the transmission of the first radio program, and in 1923 he invented a technique for recording sound on film. He later also devised a process for transmitting photographs by radio (E. H. *Armstrong).

De Forest, L., *Father of Radio*. 1950.

Degas, (Hilaire-Germain) **Edgar** (1834–1917). French painter and sculptor, born in Paris. From a prosperous mercantile family, he studied with Louis Lamothe, a follower of *Ingres and although at first he seemed likely to become an academic painter, he developed into one of the great innovators of his time after coming to know *Manet and his circle. In 1874 he took part in the first Impressionist Exhibition (he exhibited in seven of their eight exhibitions). He had private means and unlike many of the Impressionist painters did not depend on selling his pictures. After the Franco-Prussian War he turned in his painting to such unposed subjects as ballet girls and models in their off-duty moments, working girls and cabaret artists, showing a detached objectiveness of great power. He used a wide variety of media—oil, gouache, tempera, pastel—the last increasingly as his eyesight failed. *Renoir thought him superior to *Rodin as a sculptor. He was a misanthrope and anti-Semite.

Rich, D., *Degas.* 1954; Dunlop, I., *Degas*. 1979; Growe, B., *Edgar Degas*. 1992; Mannering, D., *The Life and Work of Degas*. 1994.

De Gasperi, Alcide Amadeo Francesco (1881–1954). Italian politician, born in Pieve Tesino, in the Austrian Tyrol (now the Italian Trentino). He studied philology, became an editor and was elected to the Austrian Reichsrat 1911–17. When his native province was joined to Italy at the end of World War I, he became active in the PPI (Partito Popolare Italiano) and a member of the Chamber of Deputies 1921–24. After a brief enthusiasm for *Mussolini, he became a strong anti-Fascist and was imprisoned 1927–28. After his release (1928) he withdrew from politics and worked in the Vatican library. He founded (1944) the Christian Democratic party which, like the pre-war Popular party that it replaced, had Vatican support. When Italy became a republic he was its first Prime Minister 1946–53. Under his leadership Italy joined NATO.

de Gaulle, Charles André Joseph Marie (1890–1970). French general and statesman, born in Lille. His father (a reluctant Dreyfusard) taught philosophy at a Jesuit college. Trained at the Military Academy at St Cyr, he was commissioned in 1909, fought at Verdun and became a prisoner of war in Germany 1916–18: captivity not only saved his life but forced him to study. He served under *Weygand in Poland against the Red Army 1919–21. As a lecturer at St Cyr 1924–25 he first formulated his ideas about tactics and especially the use of mechanised forces, published in France in 1932–34 and in English as *The Army of the Future* (1940). Little notice was taken in France but his basic ideas were adopted by the German general staff and later used in the 'Blitzkrieg' attacks of 1940. In June 1940, promoted brigadier, de Gaulle was appointed under-secretary of war, but France was already defeated and a few days before the armistice he flew to London and declared himself leader of the 'Free French'.

Few troops were at his disposal, *Churchill found him arrogant and abrasive, *Roosevelt recognised *Pétain's regime until the end of 1942, then favoured de Gaulle's rival Henri *Giraud. However, de Gaulle was an extremely effective broadcaster who promoted 'a certain idea of France', new and glorious, (assisted, to a degree, by his name, de Gaulle) and he soon outwitted Giraud. In 1943, his negotiations with Jean *Moulin, leader of the underground Resistance, won him reluctant support from France's most active patriots. He promoted the illusion that the liberation of France (1944–45) had been essentially a French operation, and when the Germans surrendered his national leadership was accepted as inevitable. Chair

of the Provisional Government June 1944–January 1946, he attempted to rule through a coalition of all parties, including the Communists.

He failed: moreover, the constitution of the Fourth Republic seemed to him no better than the old one and frustration resulted in his resignation. In 1947 he founded a new party, 'Rally of the French People' (RPF), but despite early success in municipal elections it fell back to 22 per cent for the National Assembly in 1951. de Gaulle withdrew from its leadership in 1953. He then devoted himself to writing his *War Memoirs* (3 vols: 1954, 1956, 1959).

Algeria was administratively part of France, and French and European settlers (*colons* or *pieds noir*) made up 15 per cent of its population. After more than a century of tension between French and Algerians civil war began in 1954, with increasing savagery on both sides. In May 1958, after successive governments failed to end the Algerian conflict, and the prospect of a military coup in France, the Fourth Republic virtually collapsed. de Gaulle, at that time free of all party commitments, accepted President René *Coty's invitation to form a government. As Premier 1958–59 almost his first act was to bring in a new constitution, that of the Fifth Republic, overwhelmingly passed by referendum, which gave the President almost unlimited power. As President of the Fifth French Republic 1959–69, de Gaulle ruled decisively and while the legislature remained a forum for discussion and advice he significantly reduced its powers. He faced the reality of Algeria and gave the country full independence (1962), provoking *colon* fury. He survived 30 assassination attempts, the last and most serious by the OAS (Organisation armée secréte) in 1962.

He completed the liberation of French territories, held to France only by language, economic ties and the vague description of French communities. Domestically de Gaulle was helped by the general prosperity of western Europe. He brought France into the European Economic Community, but maintained his support on condition that France's autonomy was unchallenged and its agriculture protected. He vetoed Britain's entry to avoid any challenge to French hegemony. In foreign affairs he saw western Europe under Franco-German leadership as a third great power. He welcomed the security of the American alliance but resented the curbs of NATO and asserted France's independence by manufacturing nuclear weapons and recognising the People's Republic of China. In the presidential election of 1965, he defeated *Mitterrand by a smaller margin (55 per cent to 45 per cent) than expected. France was rocked by strikes and mass demonstrations, led by workers and students, in May 1968, and de Gaulle seemed to lose his nerve. In April 1969, when a further referendum on reform of the Senate was defeated, he resigned unexpectedly and retired to the country, dying 19 months later. De Gaulle had significant personal advantages – his height, his magnificent rhetoric, the clarity of his writing and thinking all marked him out as a great national leader. Moreover, he succeeded in the task he dedicated himself to in 1940. His singleness of purpose, obduracy and prestige, within a framework of his own devising, largely dispelled the disillusion and frustration of a defeated and tortured France.

He was oddly rewarded with a GCVO from the UK in 1945, nothing from the US, but many honours from European nations. In Paris the airport (CDG) and Place d'Etoile are named for him.

Crozier, B., *De Gaulle: The Warrior*. 1973, De Gaulle: *The Statesman*. 1974; Jackson, J., *A Certain Idea of France. The Life of Charles de Gaulle*. 2018.

De Gennes, Pierre-Gilles (1932–2007). French physicist. Educated in Paris, he served in the navy, with the French Atomic Energy Commission, and was a professor at the Orsay University 1961–71 and the Collège de France 1971–76. He worked on magnetism, liquid crystals (as used for displays in calculators, watches and computers) and polymers, and won the 1991 Nobel Prize for Physics for his contribution to understanding how complex forms of matter behave during the transition from order to disorder. He worked at increasing public understanding of science, gave superb lectures in French and English and wrote satirical poetry.

Degrelle, Léon Marie Joseph Ignace (1906–1994). Belgian Fascist politician. He led the Rexist party (from 1935) and collaborated with the Nazis during World War II. He served as a colonel in the Waffen-SS, escaped to Norway in 1945 and then to Spain, remaining there until he died.

de Havilland, Sir Geoffrey (1882–1965). English aircraft designer. He built his first plane in 1908 but it never flew. He then joined the Army Aircraft Factory at Farnborough, where he produced the BE1, DH2, DH4, and DH9, which played an important part in World War I. He formed his own firm in 1920 and ran it until 1955. He designed the small Tiger Moth (DH.82, 1931), moderately priced, and 8,900 were manufactured, some still being flown in 2024. In World War II his most successful aircraft were the multi-purpose Mosquito and the Vampire jet. After World War II the 'Comet' DH 106 was the world's first commercial jetliner. In service from 1952, it experienced three disastrous break ups in flight, but after major restructuring some remained operational until 1981. Two of his three sons were killed in test flying. He received the OM in 1962.

Dekker, Thomas (c.1572–1632). English dramatist, poet and pamphleteer. His plays are lively and realistic and are notable for their witty dialogue. His plays include *The Shoemaker's Holiday* (1600), *Old Fortunatus* (1600), and *The Honest Whore* (1604, Part II 1630). Among the most interesting of his

many pamphlets is *The Gull's Hornbook* (1609), a racy account of London's places of public resort. His collaborators included Ben *Jonson, *Middleton, *Massinger, John *Ford, and *Webster.

de Klerk, Frederik Willem (1936–2021). South African Nationalist politician, born in Johannesburg. He was a nephew of J. G. *Strijdom and his father served as a minister in *Verwoerd's Government. Educated at Potchefstroom University, he practised law 1961–72 and after a brief period as a professor became a Member of the House of Assembly 1972–89. He was Minister for Posts and Telecommunications 1978–79, of Mines and Energy 1979–82, of Internal Affairs 1982–85 and National Education and Planning 1985–89. He succeeded P. W. *Botha as State President 1989–94 and introduced a series of reforms, including the release of Nelson *Mandela, lifted the ban on the African National Congress, securing majority support at a 'whites only' referendum for the abolition of apartheid and working towards a common electoral roll for future elections. He was attacked by the ANC for not proceeding fast enough but there was broad international support for his initiatives and sporting boycotts, and trade sanctions were lifted. He shared the 1993 Nobel Peace Prize with Mandela with whom he collaborated in working towards a Government of National Unity based on universal suffrage. In the election of 1994 the National Party won 20.4 per cent of the vote and de Klerk became Second Deputy President. In May 1996 the Nationals withdrew from the Government of National Unity and he retired as party leader in August 1997.

de Kooning, Willem (1904–1997). American painter, born in Rotterdam. He settled in New York in 1926 and became a leading abstract expressionist, best known for his powerful images of women, varying from sensual to aggressive. He received the Presidential Medal of Freedom in 1964. His painting *Interchange* (1955) sold for $US300 million in 2015.

Rosenberg, H., *De Kooning Drawings*. 1967; Stevens, M., and Swan, A., *de Kooning: An American Master*. 2004.

De La Beche, Sir Henry Thomas (1796–1855). English geologist and palaeontologist, born in London. His father, an army officer whose family name was Beach, owned a slave plantation in Jamaica. Henry grew up in Lyme Regis, Devon, and was influenced by Mary *Anning's discoveries of fossils there and he became an avid collector and illustrator. In the 1820s he explored Devon, Cornwall, France and Switzerland, and published widely in descriptive stratigraphy. He was a scrupulous fieldworker, stressing the primacy of facts and distrusting theories, as can be seen from his *Sections and Views Illustrative of Geological Phenomena* (1830) and *How to Observe* (1835). His important watercolour *Duria Antiquior—A More Ancient Dorset* (1830) became a widely circulated lithograph; the sales assisted Anning. He clashed with Roderick *Murchison, Charles *Lyell and Adam *Sedgwick in dating the fossil record. In 1835 he persuaded the government to establish the world's first national geographical survey and became the first director of the Geological Survey of Great Britain. The Survey began work in Cornwall and on the South Wales coalfield, flourished and expanded. De La Beche's career reached its peak with the establishment of a Mines Record Office and then the opening in 1851, under the aegis of the Geological Survey, of the Museum of Practical Geology and the School of Mines in London.

McCartney, P., *H. T. De La Beche*. 1978.

Delacroix, (Ferdinand Victor) **Eugène** (1798–1863). French painter, born in Charenton-Saint-Maurice. The illegitimate son of *Talleyrand, he was the great leader of Romanticism in painting and the defender of colour (at the expense of draughtsmanship, though he drew admirably) and movement. He opposed *Ingres' more static line and balance. He had been in Baron Gros' studio, knew the dying *Géricault, studied *Rubens and the Venetians, was a friend of *Bonington and admired *Constable's *Hay Wain* so much that he repainted the sky in *The Massacre at Chios* (1824) just before it was exhibited. He admired English colour and freshness of handling. The exuberance both of his colours and of his subjects (mainly contemporary or exotic) was much attacked. His visit to North Africa (1832) provided many new subjects, e.g. scenes from Arab life and animals fighting. From the mid 1830s he undertook large-scale official decorations, e.g. the ceiling of the Salon d'Apollon in the Louvre (1849), works in the libraries of the Palais Bourbon and the Senate (1838–47) and murals in St Sulpice Church. His *Journals* give a remarkable picture of Parisian life and of the many celebrities who were his friends. His careful studies of colour and the prominence he gave to it had a great effect on later painters, notably *Renoir, *Degas and *Cézanne.

Jullian, P., *Delacroix*. 1963.

de la Mare, Walter John (1873–1956). English poet, born in Kent. Of Huguenot descent, he retired from his employment with the Anglo-Iranian Oil Company in 1908 to give his full time to writing, which included book reviewing as well as poetry. In his volumes of short poems *Songs of Childhood* (1902), *The Listeners* (1912), and *Peacock Pie* (1913) he evoked a delicate and enchanting fantasy world. He also wrote short stories, children's books, and novels, e.g. *The Return* (1910) and *Memoirs of a Midget* (1921). The latter won the Hawthornden and James Tait Black prizes. He received a CH in 1948 and the OM in 1953.

Cecil, D., *Walter de la Mare*. 1973; Whistler, T., *Imagination of the Heart*. 1993.

Delane, John Thaddeus (1817–1879). English journalist. After working as a parliamentary reporter he was editor of *The Times* (1841–77), and his knowledge of world affairs, his innumerable sources of information, extraordinary flair for news and complete independence of judgment gave his paper a prestige and influence that extended far beyond his own country. His attacks during the Crimean War on the mismanagement responsible for shortages of food, warm clothing and ordinary necessities, revealed by the famous *Times* correspondent W. H. *Russell, are an example of the way in which he could unseat a government.

De la Roche, Mazo (1885–1961). Canadian novelist. Her novel *Jalna* (1927) was the first of a series which told the story of the Whiteoaks family and achieved an enormous popular success.

De la Roche, M., *Ringing the Changes*. 1957.

Delaunay, Robert (1885–1941). French painter. Influenced by *Cézanne and the Post-Impressionists, he made vibrant use of colour which he applied to Cubism. He developed his own theory of 'colour orchestration', called 'Orphism' by the poet *Apollinaire, which in turn influenced the German Blaue Reiter Expressionists and painters in the US and Australia. His wife **Sonia Delaunay-Terk** (née Stern) (1885–1979), born in Russia, painted in Orphic style and was an important textile designer.

De la Warr, Thomas West, 12th Baron (1577–1618). English administrator. He was the first Governor of Virginia 1610–11 and rescued the colony from ruin. The American state and river Delaware are named after him.

Delbrück, Max (1906–1981). German American molecular biologist. He trained in physics under Niels *Bohr and biology with T. H. *Morgan and was a professor of biology at the California Institute of Technology 1947–81. His work on phage (a virus that attacks bacteria) and genetic recombination in bacteria laid the basis for molecular biology and he won the 1969 Nobel Prize for Medicine.

Deledda, Grazia (1875–1936). Italian novelist, born in Sardinia. She wrote novels in the verismo style, many reflecting harsh conflicts in Sardinian life, including *Elias Portolu* (1903), *Ashes* (1910) and *The Mother* (1920). She won the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1926.

Delibes, (Clément Philibert) **Léo** (1836–1891). French composer. He studied at the Paris Conservatoire, and spent most of his life in Paris where among his musical occupations were those of organist and chorus master with opera companies. His compositions include the very successful ballets *Coppélia* (1870) and *Sylvia* (1876) and the comic opera *Lakmé* (1883).

De L'Isle, William Philip Sidney, 1st Viscount (1909–1991). English politician, soldier and administrator, born in London. A descendant of Sir Philip *Sidney, he was educated at Eton and Cambridge, served with the Grenadier Guards, rising to major, and won the Victoria Cross at Anzio (1944). A Conservative MP 1944–45, he was Parliamentary Secretary to the Ministry of Pensions 1945 and Secretary of State for Air 1951–55. He held directorships in banking and insurance and became the last UK resident to be appointed (1961) as Governor-General of Australia, serving until 1965.

DeLillo, Don (1936–). American novelist, playwright, essayist and short story writer. Educated at Fordham University, he became an advertising copywriter. His novels include *Americana* (1971), *White Noise* (1985), *Libra*, a plausible fictional treatment of John *Kennedy's assassination (1988), *Mao II*, a powerful story of a reclusive intellectual challenged by mass political action (1991), *Underworld* (1997), *Falling Man* (2007) and *Point Omega* (2010). He has been much praised by fellow writers but failed to win major awards.

Delius, Frederick (Theodore Albert) (1862–1934). English composer, born in Bradford. Of German descent, as a young man he went to Florida to grow oranges, became a music teacher in Virginia, and, on returning to Europe, moved to Leipzig where he first made his mark as a composer. From 1890 he lived mostly in France. His music, influenced at first by *Wagner and *Greig, later by *Debussy, *Ravel and *Grainger, rhythmic, rhapsodic, and harmonically luxuriant, was at first poorly received except in Germany and England. His works include *Paris: The Song of a Great City* (1899), *Brigg Fair* (1907), *Eventyr* (1917), concertos for violin (1918) and cello (1921), the opera *A Village Romeo and Juliet* (1901), *Appalachia* (traditional songs, 1903), *Sea Drift* (*Whitman, 1903), *A Mass of Life* (*Nietzsche, 1905) and *A Song of the High Hills* (textless: 1911) for orchestra and chorus, chamber music and songs. His music was tirelessly promoted and recorded by Sir Thomas *Beecham. In later years, blind and paralysed from syphilis, he dictated his work to the musician **Eric Fenby** (1906–1997), who wrote a memoir of him. He received the CH in 1929. His music is now rarely performed.

Fenby, E., *Delius*. 1971.

Deller, Alfred (George) (1912–1979). English counter-tenor. He worked in the furniture trade for 13 years, sang in the choirs in Canterbury (1940–47) and St Paul's (1947–62) Cathedrals and, with the encouragement of Michael *Tippett, revived the art of the counter-tenor (male alto) after 300 years of neglect, except in Anglican choirs. A natural baritone, Deller sang falsetto with exceptional breath control and masterly ornamentation. He devoted himself to the alto repertoire of *Dowland, *Purcell (himself an

accomplished counter-tenor), *Buxtehude, *Händel, *Bach and *Britten, and made many recordings. Alan Blyth remarked on 'Deller's otherworldly sound, at once ethereal yet strangely sensual'.

Delors, Jacques Lucien Jean (1925–2023). French politician, economist and administrator, born in Paris. Educated at the University of Paris, he worked for the Banque de France 1945–62, 1973–79, and became a public servant specialising in labour programs and social research. He was Minister for the Economy and Finance 1981–84 and President of the Commission of the European Communities 1985–94.

De Mille, Cecil B(lount) (1881–1959). American film director. He entered the film industry in 1913, founded the Paramount Company and pioneered the production of such lavish and spectacular films as *The Ten Commandments* (1923, 1957), *The Sign of the Cross* (1932), and *The Greatest Show on Earth* (1952). His daughter **Agnes de Mille** (1908–1993), a dancer from 1928, won fame as choreographer for musical comedies such as *Oklahoma* (1943) and *Brigadoon* (1947). She also devised her own ballets, e.g. *Fall River Legend* (1948) and *The Rib of Eve* (1956).

Demirel, Süleyman Göndoğdu (1924–2015). Turkish politician. He became an electrical engineer, worked in the US for five years, then taught English at a technical university. He led the Justice Party 1964–81 and the True Path Party 1987–93 and was Prime Minister 1965–71, 1975–77, 1977, 1979–80, 1991–93 and President 1993–2000.

Democritus (c.460–370 BCE). Greek philosopher, born in Abdera, Thrace. Known as 'the laughing philosopher', he was amused at the weaknesses of mankind. His atomic theory stimulated the thought of many future thinkers. The essence of it was that the only ultimate realities are (a) atoms, minute, solid, invisible and indestructible, (b) void. The atoms, whirring in the void, combine and coalesce in an infinite number of patterns and shapes which present 'images' to the senses. He is known to have left a vast quantity of writing on every aspect of human knowledge. Unfortunately only 200 or 300 fragments survive and almost all that is known of his work is at second hand.

De Morgan, William Frend (1839–1917). English potter, designer and novelist. Influenced by the Pre-Raphaelites, William *Morris, and Islamic decoration, he designed stained glass and decorative tiles, and invented lustre glazes. He wrote seven popular novels.

Demosthenes (c.384–322 BCE). Athenian orator and politician. Having studied law and oratory to regain his inheritance from fraudulent guardians, he became a speech writer for litigants in the courts. When 30 years old he entered politics. By two series of brilliant speeches known as the *Olynthiacs* and the *Philippics* he tried to convince the Athenians and their allies of the danger from *Philip of Macedon. The Athenians did indeed go to war but failed to save Olynthus. From 346 to 340 Demosthenes was actively building up a coalition but it was decisively defeated by Philip at Chaeronea (338). Demosthenes vindicated himself in one of his greatest speeches, *On The Crown*, a reply to an attack by his great rival *Aeschines on a proposal to award him a crown of honour. In 325, however, he went into exile after being charged (probably falsely) with embezzling money from the state treasury. He returned after *Alexander the Great's death but an attempt to throw off the Macedonian yoke again met with disaster. Fleeing from the battlefield, Demosthenes was caught by the enemy and took poison.

Dempsey, Jack (né William Harrison) (1895–1983). American boxer, born in Colorado. A cultural icon of the 1920s, he was world heavyweight boxing champion 1919–26, defeating Jess Willard, then losing to Gene *Tunney.

Dench, Dame Judi(th Olivia) (1934–). English actor, born in Yorkshire. She demonstrated exceptional versatility in stage, screen and television, and was best known internationally for playing 'M' in James Bond films from 1995 to 2015. She also gained awards for performances in plays by *Shakespeare, *Chekhov, *Wilde and *Coward, and in film adaptations of Jane *Austen and Charlotte *Brontë and portrayals of Queens *Elizabeth I and *Victoria. A Quaker, she was a passionate campaigner for causes and received a CH in 2005. *Shakespeare. The Man Who Pays the Rent* (2023) is an incisive collection of dialogues with Brendan O'Hea.

Deneuve, Catherine (née Dorleac) (1943–). French film actor. Sister of the actor **Françoise Dorleac** (1942–1967), from 1956 she made more than 60 films including *Les parapluies de Cherbourg* (1964), *Polanski's *Repulsion* (1964), *Bunuel's *Belle de jour* (1967), *Tristana* (1970), *Benjamin* (1967), *Mayerling* (1969), *Truffaut's *Le Sauvage* (1975), *Le dernier metro* (1980), *The Hunger* (1983) and *Indochine* (1992), *Place Vendôme* (1999), *Palais Royal* (2006) and *Potiche* (2011). Her extraordinary beauty and cool, intelligent acting left an unforgettable impression, although many of her films were of poor quality. She married the English photographer David Bailey and had sons by the director Roger Vadim and the actor Marcello *Mastroianni. In 1985 she became the model for Marianne, symbol of the French Republic in statues and stamps.

Deng Xiaoping (Teng Hsiao-p'ing in Wade-Giles) (1904–1997). Chinese Communist politician, born in Sichuan province. Son of a landlord, he studied in Paris, working at a Renault plant, joined the CCP in 1925 and spent 1926 at university in Moscow. He served as an officer and political commissar in the Red Army in Jiangxi and Shaanxi and later in the People's Liberation Army. In 1933 he was demoted and imprisoned for being too close to *Mao but took part

in the Long March (1934–36) and became General Secretary of the Central Committee in 1936. He was political commissar of the PLA 8th Route Army 1937–51 and a Central Committee member 1943–66. Vice Premier 1952–66, he became a Politburo member in 1955 and Secretary-General of the CCP in 1956–66. During the 'cultural revolution' he was denounced with *Lui Shaoqi as a 'capitalist roader', forced from office, publicly humiliated, and he attempted suicide (1967). Forced to work as a manual labourer until 1969, in April 1973 he was reinstated as Deputy Premier and took charge of government operations during *Zhou Enlai's last illness. He rejoined the Politburo and in 1975 became PLA Chief of Staff. In April 1976 he was dismissed from all posts, denounced again as a 'capitalist roader' and subjected to a campaign of attack for months. In July 1977 he was restored as 1st Deputy Premier, Vice Chairman of the CCP, and PLA Chief of Staff, working with Chairman *Hua Guofeng until forcing him to resign in 1981. Deng's supporters, heirs of *Zhou Enlai, then took charge of government, party and armed forces. In 1978 he visited Tokyo to conclude the China–Japan Friendship Treaty and toured the US in 1979. He closed down the communes, proposed an 'open door' economic policy, encouraged the entry of foreign capital and negotiated the return of Hong Kong to Chinese sovereignty. However, the CCP maintained a political monopoly and Deng was largely responsible for crushing pro-democracy demonstrations in Tiananmen Square (June 1989). He gave up all official posts in 1989 but, despite age and failing health, continued to be recognised as 'paramount leader', promoting 'market force socialism'.

Salisbury, H., *The New Emperors: Mao and Deng.* 1992; Deng, M. M., *Deng Xiaoping: My Father*. 1995.

Denikin, Anton Ivanovich (1872–1947). Russian general. He rose from the ranks and after the first Russian Revolution was imprisoned for supporting *Kornilov's attempted revolt against *Kerensky's Socialist Government but escaped to raise an army in the south. Meanwhile (November 1917) the Bolsheviks under *Lenin had seized power and Denikin's 'White' army, with Allied support, occupied the Ukraine and northern Caucasus. As Bolshevik power grew, the 'Red' army gradually forced the 'Whites' back to the Crimea and in 1920 Denikin abandoned the struggle. He died in exile in France.

de Niro, Robert (1943–). American film actor, born in New York. He starred in Martin *Scorsese's *Mean Streets* (1973), *Taxi Driver* (1976) and *Goodfellas* (1990) and won Academy Awards for his roles in *The Godfather Part II* (1974) and *Raging Bull* (1980). Other films include *The Mission* (1986) and *Awakenings* (1990).

Denis (Dionysius), **St** (d.c.258). Italian martyr: patron saint of France. Sent from Rome (c.250) to convert the Gauls, he won many converts in and around Paris, and became the first bishop. During one of the periodical persecutions of Christians, Denis, with two others, was beheaded at Montmartre by order of the Roman Governor. According to the pious legend, he walked (head tucked under his arm) to the site of the Abbey of St Denis, a distance of 5.5km. Founded (c.630) by King *Dagobert, the Abbey acquired great wealth and for centuries was the burial place of French kings.

Denning, Alfred Thompson Denning, Baron (1899–1999). English judge. Educated in Oxford, he became a judge in 1944, a Lord of Appeal 1957–62 and Master of the Rolls 1962–82. His judgments attracted professional controversy because of his interest in filling in gaps in the law, reflecting deeply held social convictions (e.g. that unions should be held accountable for strike losses). He received the OM in 1997.

Dennis, **C**(larence) **J**(ames) (1876–1938). Australian poet and journalist. He worked as a journalist in Adelaide and Melbourne and achieved success with his volumes of vernacular verse tales, *The Songs of a Sentimental Bloke* (1915), *The Moods of Ginger Mick* (1916) and *The Glugs of Gosh* (1917).

Depardieu, Gérard (1948–). French actor, director and producer. He starred in *Cyrano de Bergerac* (1990), *The Green Card* (1990), *Germinal* (1994), *Les Miserables* (2001), *Mammuth* (2010), *Life of Pi* (2012) and many other films. In 2013, irritated at proposed increases in income tax, he became a Russian citizen.

de Paul, St Vincent *see* **Vincent de Paul, St**

Depretis, Agostino (1813–1887). Italian politician. A supporter of *Mazzini, he was a journalist and founded the journal *Il Progresso* in Turin (1850). As Premier of Italy 1876–78, 1878–79, 1881–87 he developed the policy of *trasformismo,* an attempt to accommodate a variety of policies without ever making clear or painful choices.

De Quincey, Thomas (1785–1859). English writer, born in Manchester. Son of a merchant, he was famous as the author of *Confessions of an English Opium Eater*. The experiences which gave rise to this book began at Worcester College, Oxford, where he went in 1803 after running away from Manchester Grammar School and a year's adventurous and hard wandering which had undermined his health. The *Confessions* first appeared in the *London Magazine* in 1821 and from then onwards he became one of the leading essayists of his day. In 1809 he went to live at *Wordsworth's old home, Dove Cottage, Grasmere, and thus came to know well the Lakeland poets, Wordsworth himself, *Coleridge and *Southey, though his later brilliant accounts of them in his *Literary Reminiscences* (1834–40), published after his removal to Edinburgh in 1828, were waspish enough to cause offence. In 1816 he married Mary Simpson, daughter of a Lakeland farmer, who bore him a large family and did much to curb his addiction to opium. In all his writing de Quincey uses a beautiful and

rhythmical, if sometimes intricate, prose. He had a genuine interest in German philosophy, to which he tried to direct English attention.

Hayter, A., *Opium and the Romantic Imagination*. 1968.

Derain, André (1880–1954). French painter. He was one of the original 'Fauves' (a word meaning 'wild beasts' and referring to the sense of violence and heightened intensity imparted by strong colour and distortion) and much influenced by *Cézanne, *Vlaminck and *Matisse. Before 1914 he used very bright colour and (often) a pointillist technique. His later works are more academic and mostly painted in browns and greens.

Sutton, D., *André Derain*. 1959.

Derby, Edward Geoffrey Smith Stanley, 14th Earl of (1799–1869). English politician. He first entered the House of Commons (where his dash and brilliance won him the nickname the 'Rupert of debate') in 1820 as a Whig, and supported the Reform Bill (1832). As Colonial Secretary he carried the act for the emancipation of West Indian slaves (1833), however, from 1834 he was a Conservative. On his father's death (1844) he led the wing of his party in the Lords opposed to *Peel's free-trade policy. He was leader of the Conservative Party 1846–68, the longest period for any British politician. Prime Minister for three short terms (1852, 1858–59 and 1866–68), he was, with *Disraeli, responsible for the passing of the second Reform Bill (1867). He was a classical scholar who translated *The Iliad* (1864), a keen sportsman, and cared little for office. (He declined to form a ministry in 1855.) His great-grandson, **Edward George Villiers Stanley, 17th Earl of Derby** (1865–1948), racehorse owner and friend of *George V, proposed the 'Derby scheme' for recruitment before the introduction of conscription (1916) and was Secretary of State for War 1916–18, 1922–24.

Derrida, Jacques (1930–2004). French philosopher, born to a Jewish family in Algiers. Educated in Algiers and at the École Normale Superieure, Paris, he taught at the Sorbonne and the ENS. He emphasised the primacy of written language over speech and was a pioneer of 'deconstruction', a rigorous analysis of the language used in literary texts which concluded that authors often convey meaning through unconscious (or conditioned) selection of vocabulary, for example by using masculine terminology. Deconstruction was an important element of 'postmodernism' with its radical attack on assumptions about intrinsic literary merit in particular texts e.g. the classics. His books included *Of Grammatology* (1967), *Writing and Difference* (1967), *Margins of Philosophy* (1972), *What is Poetry?* (1991) and *The Other Heading* (1992).

Peeters, B., *Derrida*. 2013.

Desai, Morarji Ranchhodji (1896–1995). Indian politician. A Gujerati, he became a public servant, a follower of Mahatma *Gandhi from 1930 and was imprisoned five times. He became Chief Minister of Bombay 1952–56, and served in the Union Government as Minister for Commerce 1956–58, Minister for Finance 1958–63 and 1967–69, and Deputy Prime Minister 1967–69. He contested the Congress leadership against Indira *Gandhi in 1966, supported by the traditionalists, founded the Janata Party, and became Prime Minister 1977–79 in a coalition united only by opposition to Mrs Gandhi.

Descamps, Chevalier Edouard Eugène François, Baron (1847–1933). Belgian jurist and politician. A professor at Louvain, he was an ardent proponent of an International Court of Justice, and was nominated for the Nobel Peace Prize 27 times (without success). He was the world's first Minister for Sciences and Arts 1907–10.

Descartes, René (1596–1650). French philosopher, mathematician and scientist, born at La Haye, Touraine. Educated by the Jesuits, he was impressed by the certainty of mathematical conclusions, which he tried to make the basis of his philosophical system. From 1628 he lived and worked in Holland for 20 years. In 1649 Queen *Christina of Sweden invited him to live in Stockholm, but he died there after a few months. In his philosophy, he attempted to set out an account of the universe based on undoubted premises from which all else could be rigorously deduced. Following the method which came to be known as 'Cartesian', he found that there was only one thing that he could not possibly doubt: since he did have certain thoughts, whether or not true, he must exist as 'a thinking substance' (*cogito ergo sum*: 'I think, therefore I am'). He went on to establish the existence of his own body, of other 'extended substances' and hence of the material universe, and of God. A dualism of spirit and matter, so complete that the one cannot exercise influence on the other without the intervention of God, was a fundamental part of his system, which provoked criticism by later psychologists. His approach was highly mechanistic and he regarded animals as animated machines (*machinae animatae*) and infinitely exploitable. His work, set out in *Discourse de la Méthode* (1637), *Méditations de prima philosophia* (1641) and *Principia philosophiae* (1644), was the first great philosophy written in French. It also established literary style which has been of immense influence. In mathematics, he instituted a system of co-ordinate geometry, the application of algebra to geometrical problems, and although he mistakenly believed, at least initially, that scientific investigation should proceed by a *priori* deduction, he did important experimental work in optics. He is thought to have been a sincere Catholic and after *Galileo had been condemned by the Inquisition he withdrew from publication an early work that advanced the Copernican system of the universe.

Vrooman, J. R., *René Descartes: A Biography*. 1970.

Deschanel, Paul Eugène Louis (1856–1922). French politician, born in Brussels. Elected as Deputy in 1885, he was President of the Chamber of Deputies 1898–1902 and 1912–20, but was never a minister. A member of the Académie française (1899), and a prolific author, he was a strong advocate of the separation of church and state, and an opponent of the death penalty. Elected President of the Republic in February 1920 (heavily defeating Georges *Clemenceau), he soon showed some mental health problems, fell off a presidential train in his nightshirt, an event that caused embarrassment, ridicule and, in September, resignation. This did not prevent his election to the Senate 1921–22.

de Sitter, Willem (1872–1934). Dutch mathematician and cosmologist. Professor of astronomy at Leiden University 1908–34, influenced by *Einstein's work on relativity, he hypothesised (1917) a theoretical model of an expanding universe. Later work by *Lemaître and *Hubble demonstrated that de Sitter's estimates were far too modest. Asteroid 1686 De Sitter and a Moon crater are named for him.

Desmoulins, Camille (1760–1794). French revolutionary politician. A lawyer and journalist in Paris, despite his stammer, he helped to rouse the mobs at the storming of the Bastille (14 July 1789). He was a member of the National Assembly 1789–91 and of the National Convention 1792–94. In his newspaper, *Le Vieux Cordelier*, he attacked the terrorism of *Robespierre and his party, and was guillotined with his friend *Danton.

De Soto, Hernando (c.1500–1542). Spanish explorer. He was with *Pizarro in the conquest of Peru, landed in Florida (1539), explored northwards as far as what are now the Carolinas, and then westward to the Mississippi, which he discovered and crossed in 1541.

DesRochers, Alfred (1901–1978). French Canadian poet. His collections *L'Ofrande aux vierges* (1929) and *Ál'Ombre de l'Orford* (1930) revealed his remarkable gift for evoking the way of life of the country people in the province of Québec.

Dessalines, Jean Jacques (c.1758–1806). Haitian adventurer. After taking part in the slave revolt (1791) he became a provincial governor under *Toussaint L'Ouverture. After the latter was captured he renewed the struggle, forced the French to surrender and in 1804 proclaimed Haitian independence. With British support he drove the French out of Haiti (1803), proclaimed himself as the emperor Jacques I (1804–06), but his cruelty and extortions led to his assassination.

Dessay, Natalie (1965–). French coloratura soprano, born in Lyon. After studying ballet and acting, she began her operatic career in 1992, achieving international recognition for her versatility, virtuosity and dramatic gifts, excelling in *Händel, *Mozart, *Donizetti, *Bellini and *Strauss.

Deterding, Henri Wilhelm August (1865–1939). Dutch oil magnate, born in Amsterdam. He was a bank clerk until he went to the East Indies to seek his fortune. In 1896 he joined the Royal Dutch Oil Company, of which he had become Director General by 1902. The merger with the British 'Shell' company in 1907 made the Royal Dutch-Shell group one of the strongest oil combines in the world. Awarded an honorary KBE in 1920, he was Chairman of Royal Dutch Shell until 1936 when his sympathy for the Nazi regime led to a board revolt.

Deutscher, Isaac (1907–1967). English writer, born in Poland. He was a prominent Communist journalist in Poland until expelled from the party for his anti-Stalinist position. He fled to England (1939) and wrote for leading British periodicals. His biography *Stalin* (1949) was authoritative.

De Valera, Eamon (1882–1975). Irish republican politician, born in New York. After his father, a Spanish artist, died, he returned to his mother's family in Ireland, graduated at the Royal University, Dublin and became a mathematics teacher. He joined the nationalist Irish volunteers (1913) and was sentenced to death for his part in the Easter rebellion (1916), but was reprieved and, in 1917, released. He was elected Sinn Féin member of East Clare in 1917 but never took his seat. Another term of imprisonment (1918–19) was ended by a daring escape from Lincoln Jail. In 1919 he became head of the insurgent Irish government but did not accompany the negotiating team to London in 1921. He was bitterly opposed to concessions made by Arthur *Griffith and Michael *Collins and led the militant republicans in the ensuing civil war. In 1927 he finally abandoned his extremist attitude, formed a new political party the *Fianna Fail* ('Soldiers of Destiny'), which he led in the Dáil Éireann (House of Representatives). After defeating *Cosgrave in the 1932 election he became Prime Minister and held office 1932–48, 1951–54, 1957–59. (In 1937 when the Irish Free State became the Republic of Ireland—*Poblacht Na hÉireann*—the title of President of the Executive Council was replaced by Taoiseach.) Eire remained neutral during World War II but did not leave the British Commonwealth until 1948, when John *Costello defeated de Valera. He became President of the Republic 1959–73. Devious and autocratic, de Valera remains an intensely controversial and enigmatic figure.

Fitzgibbon, C. and Morrison, G., *The Life and Times of Eamon De Valera*. 1974; Coogan, T.P., *De Valera: Long fellow, long shadow.* 1993.

De Valois, Dame Ninette (Edris Stannus) (1898–2001). British ballet director, choreographer and dancer, born in Ireland. She danced under *Diaghilev

and from 1926 to 1930 was choreographer at the Old Vic Theatre, London. In 1931 she founded and became artistic director of the Sadler's Wells Ballet, now known as the Royal Ballet, retiring in 1963. She received the CH in 1981 and the OM in 1992. Her 100th birthday was celebrated in June 1998.

Walker, K. S., *Ninette de Valois*. 1987.

Devereux, Robert *see* **Essex, Robert Devereux, 2nd Earl of**

Devonshire, 4th Duke of, William Cavendish (1720–1764). English Whig politician and courtier. He was First Lord of the Treasury (i.e. Prime Minister) 1756–57, in a seven months ministry dominated by *Pitt the Elder, and Lord Chamberlain 1757–62. A collateral successor, **Spencer Compton Cavendish, 8th Duke of Devonshire** (1833–1908), educated at Trinity College, Cambridge, was, as Marquess of Hartington, MP 1857–91, a minister under *Gladstone, and Leader of the Liberal Party 1875–80. He declined invitations to lead a government in 1880, 1886 and 1887. He broke with Gladstone over Home Rule (1886) and led the Liberal Unionists, serving under *Salisbury as Lord President of the Council 1895–1903. In 1892 he married his mistress, Louisa, Duchess of Manchester, known as 'the double Duchess', and was Chancellor of Cambridge University 1892–1908.

De Vries, Peter (1910–1993). American novelist, born in Chicago. The son of Dutch immigrants, he studied at Calvin College, became a freelance writer (1931), editor of *Poetry* (1942) and a staff writer on the *New Yorker*. His dead-pan, multi-punned humour exposes many aspects of life without individual responsibility in a commercialised mass society. His novels include: *No, But I saw the Movie* (1952), *Comfort Me with Apples* (1956), *The Mackerel Plaza* (1958), *The Blood of the Lamb* (1962), *The Cat's Pajamas and Witch's Milk* (1968), *Without a Stitch in Time* (1972), *The Glory of the Hummingbird* (1974), *I Hear America Swinging* (1976) and *Madder Music* (1977).

Dewar, Sir James (1842–1923). Scottish physical chemist, born in Kincardine. Educated at Edinburgh University, he was Jacksonian Professor of Natural Philosophy, Cambridge, 1875–1923, and Fullerian Professor of Chemistry at the Royal Institution, London, 1877–1923. He is best known for his extensive researches into the properties of matter at very hot temperatures. He invented the vacuum-jacketed flask, often referred to as a Dewar flask, the parent of the present-day vacuum flask. He showed that liquid oxygen and ozone are magnetic, and he was the first to prepare liquid and solid hydrogen. With Sir Frederick Abel he developed (1889) an early form of cordite. Nominated eight times for a Nobel Prize, he was awarded the Copley Medal in 1916.

De Wet, Christiaan Rudolph (1854–1922). Boer soldier and politician. A successful guerrilla leader in the Boer War (1899–1902), he never accepted the political implications of defeat. He wrote *Three Years' War* (1902). Believing that the outbreak of World War I (1914) provided an opportunity to re-establish a Boer republic, he led a rising against the *Botha government. He was captured and briefly imprisoned.

Dewey, George (1837–1917). American admiral. He led the US fleet in the Spanish American War (1898–99), destroyed the whole Spanish squadron and captured Manila (1898), and became a popular hero in the US.

Dewey, John (1859–1952). American philosopher. Important for his advancement of progressive education and professor of philosophy at Michigan, Chicago and Columbia universities, he was influenced by the pragmatism of *Peirce and William *James. He thought of philosophy as something relevant to practical problems, his views being sometimes crudely summarised as 'truth is what works'. In fact his thoughts covered a much wider field, as such books as *Reconstruction in Philosophy* (1920) show; he also wrote on psychology, logic and ethics. His views on education, through the many translations of his *School and Society* (1900) and *Democracy and Education* (1916), achieved international influence. On the grounds that 'education is life, not a preparation for life' and that a 'school is a community in miniature' he held that children should be faced with practical concerns and real problems rather than given traditional instruction, he emphasised 'learning by doing'.

Berstein, R. J., *John Dewey*. 1966; Ryan, A., *John Dewey and the High Tide of American Liberalism*. 1995.

Dewey, Melvil Louis Kossuth (1851–1931). American librarian. In 1876 he devised the 'Decimal Classification and Relative Index' for library books, widely adopted in public libraries not only in the US but in many other countries.

Dewey, Thomas E(dmund) (1902–1971). American Republican politician and lawyer, born in Michigan. Educated at Michigan and Columbia universities, he became a special prosecutor to root out organised crime in New York State 1935–38, winning a national reputation. District Attorney of New York County (Manhattan) 1938–41, he was narrowly defeated for Governor of New York in 1938. A leader of the moderate Republicans, at the 1940 National Convention, aged 38, he won the first three ballots for the presidential nomination, but lost to Wendell *Willkie. As Governor of New York State 1943–55, he enforced the death penalty and there were 90 executions. He became Republican candidate for president in 1944 (losing to Franklin *Roosevelt) and in 1948 (losing unexpectedly to *Truman). He helped *Eisenhower win the 1952 Republican nomination. Offered the Chief Justiceship of the US

by Eisenhower and *Nixon, he declined. Dewey was very able but oddly unlikeable. Theodore *Roosevelt's daughter, Alice Longworth, lethally despatched him as 'the little man on a wedding cake'.

Hughes, R., *Thomas E. Dewey*. 1944; Smith, R.N., *Thomas E. Dewey and His Times*. 1982.

De Wint, Peter (1784–1849). English landscape painter, born in Staffordshire. His father, a doctor of Dutch descent, had worked in New York. He became a very successful water-colourist and teacher, working in London but painting extensively in Lincolnshire.

De Witt, Johan (or Jan) (1625–1672). Dutch statesman. Son of the burgomaster of Dordrecht, his family was traditionally opposed to the House of Orange. He took part in the administration of his native city until he became (1653) Grand Pensionary of Holland (an office which, as developed by him, made him the head of the largest of the Dutch provinces and predominant in the country as a whole). He connived with *Cromwell that the peace treaty with England (1654) should stipulate that the House of Orange (which favoured the royalist cause in England) was to be excluded from all its offices. His foreign policy aimed at an alliance with France, so as to leave himself free to assert Dutch maritime power. Intervention in the Baltic proved profitable and some striking successes were achieved in an indecisive war with England (1666–67) but an unforeseen alliance between England and France created a crisis, in which the Dutch turned to their traditional saviours, the House of Orange. De Witt resigned in 1672 but a fortnight later, when visiting his brother Cornelius who had been imprisoned on a charge of conspiracy, he was killed by an angry mob of Orange partisans.

Diaghilev, Sergei Pavlovich (1872–1929). Russian ballet impresario, born in Novgorod. He was, with Leon *Bakst and Alexandre *Benois, the driving force of the artistic movement and periodical *Mir Iskusstva* (*World of Art*, 1899–1904). In pursuit of an idea of introducing Russian art to western Europe, he presented (1908) *Chaliapin in a season of Russian opera in Paris. He followed this up with his famous Ballets Russes presented in Paris (1909) and London (1911) in the conviction that in ballet he could form a union of all the arts. To this end he secured the services of dancers of outstanding skill—*Pavlova, *Nijinsky, *Karsavina and Lopokova—and choreographers such as *Fokine and *Massine: he commissioned Benois, Bakst, *Matisse, *Picasso, *Braque and others to design the decor and *Debussy, *Ravel, *Stravinsky and *Prokofiev to compose ballet scores. The Revolution broke his links with Russia, but with Paris as its headquarters his company continued to enjoy the highest reputation. He retired to Venice and died there.

R. Buckle, *Diaghilev*. 1979.

Diana (née Diana Frances Spencer, later Mountbatten-Windsor) (1961–1997). Princess of Wales. Daughter of the 8th Earl Spencer, she became a kindergarten assistant and married *Charles, Prince of Wales in 1981. They had two sons, *William (b.1982) and *Harry (b.1984). The princess was the subject of enormous media coverage, at first adulatory, then critical. After a period of damaging media speculation about the marriage, Charles and Diana separated in December 1992. After encouraging damaging attacks on the Royal family in books, newspapers and television, she agreed to a divorce in 1996, then devoted herself to major causes (AIDS, leprosy, land mines). Killed in a car crash in Paris with her lover **Dodi al-Fayed** (31 August 1997), her death and funeral created unexpectedly intense international public reaction.

Dias, Bartolomeu (c.1450–1500). Portuguese navigator. Of noble birth, he became interested in geographical discoveries at the court of *João II who sent him to explore the west African coast. In January 1488, driven by storms, he rounded the Cape of Good Hope (originally called the Cape of Storms), without seeing it. Owing to the discontent of his crew, he turned back without exploring the coast of east Africa. His discovery showed the route to India, but when he sailed with da *Gama in 1497 he was sent back after a short distance. He was drowned in 1500 on a voyage to Brazil.

Diaz, Armando (1861–1928). Italian general of World War I. He succeeded *Cadorna as Commander-in-Chief after the disaster at Caporetto (1917), retrieved the situation and by his decisive victory at Vittorio Veneto (October 1918) forced the Austrians to accept an armistice a few days later.

Diaz (del Castillo), **Bernal** (1492–1581). Spanish soldier and historian. He was with *Cortés in Mexico 1519–21 and wrote the important *True History of the Conquest of New Spain* (1532).

Diaz, Porfirio (1830–1915). Mexican soldier and president. Originally a supporter of the liberal president *Juarez, he shared his triumph after the withdrawal of the French and the execution of their protégé, the emperor *Maximilian. Feeling himself inadequately rewarded, he twice vainly opposed Juarez for the presidency (1867 and 1872). In the latter year Juarez died and in 1876 Diaz took up arms to prevent his successor, Manuel Gonzales, from embarking upon a second term. Having achieved his object, Diaz ruled as a dictator for the next 34 years. By enforcing law and order and by proving himself the friend of big business in the development and modernisation of the country, he greatly increased the state's revenues, but the discontents of nationalists, resentful of foreign control of their resources, of liberals, eager for democracy, and of the impoverished Indians and exploited peasants, accumulated. In 1911 Diaz was forced into exile by *Madero.

Godoy, J. F., *Porfirio Diaz*. 1976.

Dickens, Charles (John Huffam) (1812–1870). English novelist, born near Portsmouth. Both his parents provided models for future characters: his father (an improvident clerk in the naval dockyard) for Mr Micawber, his mother for Mrs Nickleby. When his father was imprisoned (1824) for debt in the Marshalsea in London (see *Little Dorritt*, 1855–57) Charles, then 12, worked for some months pasting on labels in a blacking factory, an experience that left much bitterness behind. After two more years at school he worked as a lawyer's clerk (1827–30) and then, having learned shorthand, became a parliamentary reporter, an apprenticeship in journalism which stood him in good stead. In 1833 he began to write, for the *Monthly Magazine* and other periodicals, a number of short sketches of places seen and personal encounters that were collected under the name of *Sketches by Boz* (1836), Boz being his pen name for some years. Its success led to a suggestion by the publishers Chapman and Hall that he should write the text to fit a series of plates by the artist Robert Seymour. Dickens' counter proposal that the pictures should illustrate the text was accepted and his first great success. *The Posthumous Papers of the Pickwick Club* began to appear, serialised in parts like many of the later novels. In 1836, Seymour, who died before the second part had appeared, was replaced by 'Phiz' (Hablot K. *Browne), Dickens' illustrator for over 20 years. The gallery of humorous eccentrics portrayed in this work, Pickwick himself, Sam Weller, Mr Winkle and the rest was to be constantly enlarged as the years went by. It is sometimes urged that the balance of the plot of the novels is upset by the intrusions of such characters as Pecksniff *(Martin Chuzzlewit,* 1843), Mr and Madame Mantalini (*Nicholas Nickleby*, 1839), Mr Boffin (*Our Mutual Friend*, 1865). A vein of autobiography occurs in many of the novels, especially in *David Copperfield* (1849–50).

London itself, the sprawling, vulgar, fog bound, Cockney metropolis, is the setting of most of his novels, but sometimes he goes back into history for dramatic plots, the Gordon riots in *Barnaby Rudge* (1841) and the French Revolution (influenced by *Carlyle's famous book) in *A Tale of Two Cities* (1859). Mystery and crime always attracted him, partly no doubt because of his great friendship with Wilkie *Collins, and are a feature especially of the more elaborately planned novels of his later period, e.g. *Bleak House* (1859), *Great Expectations* (1861), and the last, unfinished, *Edwin Drood* (1870), to which many distinguished writers such as G. K. *Chesterton have tried to conjecture the solution. Especially when depicting children ill or doomed to die—Tiny Tim in *A Christmas Carol* (1843), Little Nell in *The Old Curiosity Shop* (1841) or Paul in *Dombey and Son* (1846)—Dickens can be over-sentimental. He is most effective as a satirist when he flays the *nouveaux riches*, the pompous and the hypocrites, or finds targets in the delays of the civil service ('Circumlocution Office') and the law. Any form of exploitation of the young or helpless by a schoolmaster, such as Wackford Squeers in *Nicholas Nickleby*, by a crook, such as Fagin in *Oliver Twist* (1838), or by a ruthless employer such as Bounderby in *Hard Times* (1854) earns his abhorrence.

Dickens was unhappy in his private life. An early love for Maria Beadnell (David Copperfield's Dora) was rejected. His marriage in 1836 to Katharine Hogarth was clouded a year later by the death of her dearly loved younger sister Mary (Little Nell); it finally was ended by separation 20 years later. Dickens maintained an intimate but complicated relationship with Nellie (Ellen) Ternan (1839–1914) from 1857 until his death. His son, **Sir Henry Fielding Dickens** (1849–1933), was a barrister, KC and judge.

Both *Dostoevsky and *Tolstoy admired Dickens. George *Orwell argued that Dickens describes, wonderfully, eloquently, evocatively, but he does not analyse, nor does he prescribe. His novels are never contemporary; he always writes of some decades earlier. There is a manic, driven, dark side to Dickens, shown in four areas: his constant exploitation of women, exceptional even for his time, his racism and celebration of cruelty, applauding atrocities following the Indian Mutiny, his growing sympathy for the Confederate cause in the US Civil War and his support for E. J. *Eyre after the bloody suppression of the Jamaica rebellion (1865).

Dickens wrote many short stories and sketches, *A Child's History of England* (1851–53), and *American Notes for General Circulation* (1842) and *Pictures from Italy* (1846), which illustrated his travels. He was first editor (1846) of the *Daily News*, he edited *Household Words* (1850–59) and *All The Year Round* (1859–70). He toured the US in 1842, 1867 and 1868, Canada in 1842 and Britain constantly, giving public readings from his novels, a total of 471 performances. This enabled him to display his extraordinary ability as an actor, which had a mesmerising effect on audiences, but exhausted him and hastened his death.

Dickens is one of the few authors who, after the publication of his first success, has been a continuous bestseller for 175 years. Modern criticism has rediscovered the richness of his imagination, the depth of his insight, and the consummate skill with which he combines the many disparate strands of his works. Dickens was one of the greatest 19th-century novelists in any language, demonstrating 'demonic and disturbed' elements, the odd combination of evil and comedy. Dickens was a darker, more conflicted, more powerful writer than generally recognised, even by his ardent supporters; a giant of world literature.

Collins, P., *A Dickens Bibliography*. 1970; Collins, P., *Dickens, the Critical Heritage*. 1971; Ackroyd, P., *Dickens.* 1990; Tomalin, C., *Charles Dickens. A Life.* 2011; Douglas-Fairhurst, R., *Becoming Dickens. The Invention of a Novelist*. 2011; Callow, S., *Charles Dickens and the Great Theatre of the World*. 2012.

Dickinson, Emily Elizabeth (1830–1886). American poet, born in Amherst, Massachusetts. Her father, a lawyer, served briefly in the Massachusetts Legislature and the US Congress and had been treasurer of Amherst College. She rarely left her birthplace and at the age of 23, possibly after an unhappy love affair, became a recluse, seeing only her family and a very few intimates and began writing poetry, intensely personal and daringly original in language and form, often written on small pieces of paper, including bills and envelopes. No one, not even her friends, recognised the merit of her poems, now numbered 1,775. Her most productive years were 1860–64, during the Civil War, although she never mentions it specifically. Epilepsy was probably a major factor in her seclusion and poetic intensity. Her brother's mistress, **Mabel Loomis Todd** (1856–1932) edited three volumes of her poems (1890, 1891, 1896), the first two with T. W. Higginson, winning immediate recognition, but her sharp originality was timidly modified and lost until a new edition by Thomas Johnson in 1955. Her themes are those within her narrow experience, love, nature, the changing seasons, the birds, frogs and insects that inhabited her garden and her edgy relationship with God.

Reading her is like making a telephone call to an inner life.

> I cannot live with You –
> It would be Life –
> And Life is over there –
> Behind the Shelf …
>
> Because I could not stop for Death –
> He kindly stopped for me –
> The Carriage held but just Ourselves –
> And Immortality …
>
> Faith is a fine invention
> When Gentlemen can see –
> But Microscopes are prudent
> In an Emergency
>
> Hope is the thing with feathers
> That perches in the soul,
> And sings the tune without the words,
> And never stops at all …

Sewall, R. B., *The Life of Emily Dickinson*. 1974; Habegger, A., *My Wars are Laid Away in Books: The Life of Emily Dickinson*. 2002; Gordon, L., *Lives Like Loaded Guns: Emily Dickinson and Her Family Feuds.* 2010.

Diderot, Denis (1713–1784). French encyclopaedist, born in Langres, Champagne. He was an important member of the group of scholars and sceptical thinkers known as *philosophes*, who created the climate of opinion, known as the 'enlightenment', critical of the *Ancien Régime*. In this, his own great *Encyclopédie* played a most important part. Before embarking upon this enterprise Diderot had led a bohemian life and earned a precarious livelihood by writing plays, novels and art criticism, but the exuberance of his personality, his enthusiasm and wide knowledge gave him a secure place in intellectual society. The basis of the *Encyclopédie* (1751–72), for which he shared editorial responsibility with the mathematician d'*Alembert, was the English *Cyclopaedia* of Ephraim *Chambers, which he was asked to translate, but the conception was constantly enlarged until it became a vast work of 17 volumes of text and 11 of plates. The intention of the work, which became the focus of the rationalism and anti-clericalism of the age, was to show the interconnexion of all branches of knowledge. Diderot wrote many articles himself on philosophical and mechanical subjects and gathered as contributors some of the greatest men of his time, including *Voltaire, *Rousseau (a great friend of Diderot, with whom he quarrelled in 1757), *Montesquieu, *Turgot and *Buffon. Diderot, who had suffered imprisonment for his *Letter on the Blind* (1749), one of the many works in which he set out his materialistic philosophy, had some trouble with the censorship, but comparatively few articles were banned. Diderot's last years were made easier by a kindly gesture of *Catherine the Great, who bought his library and appointed him its custodian. He went to St Petersburg (1774) and before returning had written for the benefit of his patroness a plan for a Russian university, a proof of the amazing industry and versatility that made him one of the most universal influences of his era.

Furbank, P. N., *Diderot: A Critical Biography.* 1992; Curran, A. S., *Diderot and the Art of Thinking Freely*. 2019; Zaretsky, R. *Catherine & Diderot*. 2019.

Didion, Joan (1934–2021). American writer, born in California. A reporter, editor, essayist, novelist and screenplay writer with an exceptional gift for analysis and a sharp critic of sentimentality, her books include *Slouching Towards Bethlehem* (1968) and *The Year of Magical Thinking* (2005).

Diefenbaker, John George (1895–1979). Canadian politician. Educated at the University of Saskatchewan, after service in World War I he became a successful barrister. He was a Progressive Conservative MP 1940–79 and party leader 1956–63. Prime Minister of Canada 1957–63, he won the greatest majority in Canadian history (until 1993) in 1958. In 1963 his opposition to a US contention that nuclear warheads for Canadian missiles were a necessary part of North American defence led to a rift in his Cabinet, his resignation and electoral defeat.

Diemen, Anthony van (1593–1645). Dutch administrator. As Governor-General of the Dutch East Indies 1636–45 he commissioned Abel *Tasman's voyages of exploration. The island off Australia named Van Diemen's Land was renamed Tasmania in 1853.

Diesel, Rudolf (1858–1913). German inventor, born in Paris. He moved to England and studied engineering and thermodynamics in Germany. The engine which bears his name, an internal-combustion engine in which the fuel is ignited by heat following compression, was patented in 1892. After having been nearly killed in an explosion of an earlier model, he produced his first successful engine in 1897. He disappeared at sea.

Nitske, W. R. and Wilson, C. M., *Rudolf Diesel: Pioneer of the Age of Power*. 1965.

Dietrich, Marlene (née Maria Magdalene) (1901–1992). German-American film actor and cabaret performer. After starring in her best known film, *The Blue Angel* (1930), in Germany, she went to Hollywood. She became an American citizen in 1937. She often played the part of an adventuress in films which included *The Flame of New Orleans* (directed by René *Clair), *Destry Rides Again*, *Foreign Affair, Witness for the Prosecution, Touch of Evil and Judgment at Nuremberg*. She died in Paris.

Dilke, Charles Wentworth (1789–1864). English writer and critic. A public servant, and friend of *Keats, he was the anonymous author of *The Source and Remedy of the National Difficulties* (1821), which had a significant influence on *Marx. His grandson, **Sir Charles Wentworth Dilke, 2nd Baronet** (1843–1911) was a politician, born in London. After graduating at Cambridge, he travelled extensively in the Australian colonies (1867–68) and wrote the influential *Greater Britain: A Record of Travel in English-Speaking Countries During 1866 and 1867* (2 vols, 1868). He was MP for Chelsea 1868–86, an imperialist radical with republican leanings. Undersecretary for Foreign Affairs 1880–82 he joined *Gladstone's Cabinet as President of the Local Government Board 1882–85. Chairmanship of a royal commission on housing and work on parliamentary redistribution showed his interest in social conditions at home, while he closely associated himself with the imperial and colonial views of his (then) fellow radical Joseph *Chamberlain. In 1885–86, although cleared of adultery in a complicated divorce case, he imprudently sought a review to resolve any ambiguities (as later happened with Oscar *Wilde). Dilke, possibly a victim of a conspiracy, proved to be a disastrous witness in his own case, and this destroyed his political prospects. (Adultery had never harmed *Palmerston.) Though he re-entered parliament (1892) and his brilliant books on foreign and colonial affairs were highly praised, he never returned to high office. In his later years he worked closely with trade unions and Labour MPs.

Jenkins, R., *Sir Charles Dilke*. 1958; Nicholls, D., *The Lost Prime Minister: Life of Sir Charles Dilke*. 1995; Jenkins, R., *Dilke: A Victorian Tragedy*. 1996.

Dill, Sir John Greer (1881–1944). British field marshal, born in Ulster. He served in France, India and Palestine and was *Churchill's Chief of the Imperial General Staff, May 1940–November 1941. Churchill thought him defeatist because in discussions on strategy he failed to fight back (as also happened with *Wavell). Sent to Washington as head of the Joint Staff Mission 1942–44, he achieved unexpected and brilliant success by winning the confidence of *Marshall, *Hopkins, *Leahy and, through them, *Roosevelt. He died in Washington and was buried at Arlington.

Dillinger, John (1903–1934). American gangster. After serving nine years of a sentence for robbery with violence he headed a gang of escaped convicts who terrorised the states of Indiana, Illinois, Ohio and Pennsylvania. He was eventually shot resisting arrest.

Dillon, (Clarence) **Douglas** (1909–2003). American administrator, born in Geneva. In 1931 he joined the family firm of investment bankers, and after navy service in World War II, became Chairman in 1953. Appointed by President *Eisenhower as Ambassador to France 1953–57, although a Republican, he became Secretary of the Treasury 1961–65 under Presidents *Kennedy and *Johnson.

DiMaggio, Joe (Joseph) (1914–1999). American baseball player, born in California. Played for the New York Yankees 1936–51 and had an outstanding record as a batter. He was briefly married to Marilyn *Monroe (1954) and loyally supported her until she died.

Dimitri (Dimitri Ivánovich) (1581–1591). Russian prince. Son of *Iván IV, when his elder brother *Fyodor became tsar, he was removed from the court and died mysteriously. The regent, Boris *Godunov, who reported that he had fallen on a knife during an attack of epilepsy, was accused by his enemies of murder. Subsequently several 'false' Dimitris appeared, of whom one, after defeating Boris' troops, was crowned tsar in 1605, but was murdered by the nobles in the following year. *Mussorgsky's opera *Boris Godunov* gives a version of the story. *See* **Dimitri, False.**

Dimitri, False. Name given to three pretenders to the Muscovite throne during the Time of Troubles (1605–13). On the death of Fyodor I (1598), Boris *Godunov succeeded and the First False Dimitri challenged his right to the throne and claimed to be Dimitri, the son of *Ivan IV, who had died mysteriously in 1591 while still a boy. He is thought to have been, in fact, Yuri Otrepyev, a noble.

Threatened with exile he fled to Lithuania and in 1604 invaded Russia at the head of an army. In 1605 Boris died and Dimitri was proclaimed Tsar, but soon alienated his supporters and was murdered in 1606. Rumours that the First Dimitri had survived led to the appearance of a second pretender who quickly gained support and established his court at Tushino (1608). Initially very successful, he was ousted by Vasily Shuysky, the boyar who had murdered the first Dimitri and become tsar (1606), and was assassinated by one of his own followers (1610). In 1611 the Third

False Dimitri, possibly a deacon named Sidorka, gained the allegiance of Cossacks who were ravaging Moscow's environs, but he was betrayed in 1612 and executed in Moscow.

Dimitrov, Georgi Mikhailovich (1882–1949). Bulgarian Communist politician. A printer, he came into international prominence when in 1933 he was tried in Berlin and acquitted on a charge of setting fire to the Reichstag, a crime almost certainly committed by his Nazi accusers. He was Secretary of the Communist International (Comintern) in Moscow 1934–43 and Premier of Bulgaria 1946–49.

Dimitry (Ivanovich) **Donskoy** (c.1350–1389). Grand Prince of Moscow 1359–89. Son of Ivan II ('the Fair'), and Grand Prince of Vladimir from 1363, he asserted his dominance over rival princes but his real importance lies in the fact that, by his two victories over the Golden Horde at the River Vozha and more decisively at Kulikovo (1380), near a crossing of the River Don (hence his additional name), he destroyed the legend of Tartar invincibility. Moreover, even though subsequently defeated, his prestige was so great that the princes of Moscow were thenceforth regarded as national rulers. One of the heroes of Russian history, he is a saint in the Orthodox Church.

d'Indy, Vincent *see* **Indy, Vincent d'**

Dine, Jim (1935–). American painter, sculptor, print maker, photographer and poet, born in Ohio. Widely exhibited, his subjects were mostly ordinary objects, e.g. shoes, dressing gowns, tools, but invested with a life of their own.

Dinesen, Isak (pen name of Baroness Karen Christenze von Blixen-Finecke, née Dinesen) (1885–1962). Danish novelist, born in Rungsted. Writing in both Danish and English, she married unhappily and lived in Kenya 1914–31, managing a coffee plantation. Her lover **Denys Finch Hatton**, aviator and big game hunter, died in a plane crash in 1931. She updated the Gothic novel with *Seven Gothic Tales* (1934). Her non-fiction included *Out of Africa* (1937) and *Shadows on the Grass* (1960). In Denmark, during the German occupation, she wrote her only full-length novel, *The Angelic Avengers* (1946), under the pseudonym Pierre Andrezel. *Babette's Feast* (1958) became an Oscar winning film in 1987. Nominated 12 times for the Nobel Prize, she died, not of syphilis, as she claimed, but from self-prescribed over-medication.

Thurman, J., *Isak Dinesen*. 1982.

Dingaan (or **Dingane**) **ka Senzangakhona Zulu** (c.1795–1840). Zulu chief. He was half-brother of *Shaka, whom he murdered (1828). After permitting the Boers to settle in Natal, killed a party of 470 Voortrekkers under **Piet Retief** (1837), an act revenged by Andries *Pretorius (1838). 'Dingaan's Day' (16 December), celebrated by Boers for more than 150 years, became the Day of the Vow in 1980 but was chosen by Nelson *Mandela in 1995 as 'Day of Reconciliation'.

Dio, Cassius (Dio Cocceianus) (c.155–235). Greek historian, born in Nicaea, now Iznik. After a long period of distinguished public service under the emperor *Commodus and his successors, he retired to write a comprehensive history of Rome in 80 books, of which Books 36–50 survive. His careful use of the best available sources give value to his record.

Millar, F., *A Study in Cassius Dio*. 1964.

Diocletian (Gaius Valerius Aurelius Diocletianus, originally Diocles) (245–313). Roman Emperor 284–305. Born in Dalmatia, from a modest background, he became a cavalry commander and was proclaimed emperor at a council in Nicomedia after he had overcome a rival claimant, Carinus. In order to rule and defend the vast empire, in 293 he created a tetrarchy ('rule of four') in which administration was decentralised, shared with *Maximian (as co-emperor, or 'Augustus', in the west) and two 'Caesars', virtually junior emperors, *Constantius Chlorus and *Galerius. Diocletian remained in a dominant position but ruled from the east as 'Augustus'. His main concern was to maintain the great armies necessary to defend the empire and he introduced a tax system to enable him to do so. Sons of soldiers had to serve and landowners to provide recruits, a regular land tax was introduced, based on acreage, productivity and labour employed, but this had the effect of making taxation a hereditary responsibility and of tying the peasantry to the land. His attempt to curb inflation by price control under the edict of 301 failed. Diocletian had been cautiously conservative about religion, but in 303, probably at the urging of Galerius, he instituted public ceremonies of sacrifice to the Roman gods, intended as a unifying factor throughout the empire. This was anathema to Christians and led directly to the fourth and most serious campaign of persecution, which lasted until 311, involving executions, banishment and the destruction of churches. After 21 years as emperor, Diocletian abdicated and induced Maximian to resign as well. This was the first voluntary abdication by an emperor, demonstrating Diocletian's achievement in ending decades of fratricidal anarchy. Constantius Chlorus and Galerius became co-emperors, and Severus and Maximin were made Caesars. Apparently the scheme of succession had worked but confusion soon followed. The vast palace at Split (Croatia) was built for his retirement.

Williams, S., *Diocletian and the Roman Recovery*. 1997.

Diogenes (c.412–323 BCE). Greek 'cynic' philosopher, born at Sinope (on the Black Sea). His father was a magistrate convicted of 'defacing the currency'. Forced into poverty Diogenes found that it enabled him to lead a life in accordance with his belief in entire self-sufficiency and freedom from ordinary

desires and conventions. He spent a wandering life begging his way and sleeping in the open or in such shelter as he could find, perhaps even in the proverbial tub. In Athens, where he was often to be found, he was called 'Cynic', a word much changed in meaning which then meant simply that he lived like a dog. He died, so legend goes, by eating raw cuttlefish in order to prove that cooking is unnecessary. Apparently he wrote plays and described an ideal republic where there were no armies or family life, but none of his work survives.

Dionysius (c.430–367 BCE). Tyrant of Syracuse 405–377 BCE. He was able to seize and maintain power in Syracuse, a Greek colony in Sicily, by playing on the fears of his subjects of the Carthaginians who held a substantial part of the island. Much of his reign was occupied by this task, and varied by his own expeditions against the Greek colonies in southern Italy. Dionysius was a poet and a patron of letters.

His son **Dionysius II** (c.390–344 BCE) succeeded him and ruled despotically until ejected in 356 by a fleet sent from Greece under Dion, who temporarily restored the republic. Dionysius regained power in 347.

Dionysius Exiguus (d.c.545). Roman monk and scholar, born in Scythia. Among the most learned men of his time, he worked in Rome from about 500, collecting and translating canons and documents of the early Christian era, and became abbot of a monastery in Rome, where he died. In 525, he proposed the Christian chronology, beginning with the birth of *Jesus Christ in Anno Domini I (i.e. 'Year of our Lord' = year 754 in the Roman calendar). His starting date was arbitrary: probably four to eight years too late. *Bede later proposed BC ('Before Christ') numbering.

Dior, Christian Ernest (1905–1957). French fashion designer. After World War II he launched the 'New Look', which brought the period of wartime austerity in women's clothes to an end. He also revolutionised the world of haute couture by having simplified versions of his models reproduced for the mass market.

Dioscorides, Pedanius (Pedánios Dioskourídes) (c.40–90 CE) Greek physician, pharmacologist and botanist, probably born in Anazarbus, Cilicia, Asia Minor. Employed as a physician in the Roman army, he identified herbs for their pharmaceutical properties. His *De Materia Medica*, in five volumes, circulated in Greek, Latin and Arabic, was the most influential of all herbals, used throughout the Middle Ages down to the 18th century. Other works, of doubtful authenticity, are attributed to him.

Dirac, P(aul) **A**(drien) **M**(aurice) (1902–1984). British physicist, born in Bristol. Of Swiss parentage, he studied electrical engineering at Bristol and mathematics at Cambridge, becoming a pioneer of wave (quantum) mechanics. In 1928 he predicted the existence of the positron, a positively charged particle of the same mass as the negatively charged electron. This was observed by *Anderson in 1932. He was Lucasian professor of mathematics at Cambridge 1932–69, and a research professor in Florida 1971–84. Dirac shared the 1933 Nobel Prize for Physics with *Schrödinger. He received the Royal (1939) and Copley (1952) Medals of the Royal Society and the OM (1973).

Farmelo, G., *The Strangest Man: the Hidden Life of Paul Dirac*. 2009.

Disney, Walt(er Elias) (1901–1966). American producer of cartoon films, born in Chicago. He devised the first successful film cartoon (*Oswald the Rabbit*) in 1923 and won immense popularity for the medium with his Mickey Mouse pictures and such favourite characters as Pluto and Donald Duck. Later he produced many full-length cartoon films in colour, e.g. *Snow White and the Seven Dwarfs* (1938), *Fantasia* (1940) and *Bambi* (1942). His nature films, e.g. *The Living Desert* (1953), won many Academy awards. In films such as *Treasure Island* (1950) he used living actors and combined live actors with cartoons in *Mary Poppins* (1965). He set up (1955) a vast amusement park in California called Disneyland.

Finch, C., *The Art of Walt Disney*. 1973.

Disraeli, Benjamin, 1st Earl of Beaconsfield (1804–1881). English Conservative politician and novelist, born in London. He was the son of **Isaac D'Israeli** (1766–1848), an Anglicised Sephardic Jew whose literary talents (e.g. his *Curiosities of Literature*) won him the friendship of *Byron, *Scott and *Southey. Benjamin was brought up as a Christian and studied law. His brilliant first novel, *Vivian Grey* (1826), won him immediate acclaim. After making the 'grand tour' of Europe and the Near East, he began (1831) the life of a man-about-town, remarkable for his novels and brilliant attire. After four unsuccessful attempts, he became a Tory MP 1837–76. In 1839 he married **Mary Anne Evans** (1792–1872), widow of his friend Wyndham Lewis. Her wealth gave him financial independence and enabled him to buy Hughenden, Berkshire, later their home. The marriage, though childless, was happy. She was created **Viscountess Beaconsfield** in 1868.

In parliament, Disraeli addressed himself to advocating the ideas he later embodied in his political novels *Coningsby* (1844) and *Sybil* (1846). The Tory party as he envisaged it should no longer be representative merely of a small class of country gentlemen but should meet the needs of the growing electorate enfranchised by the Reform Act. Loyalty to the Church, the crown and a vision of national greatness combined with material and social progress had, he thought, a greater appeal than the Liberal slogan 'of peace, retrenchment and reform'. He found an opportunity to make his mark when Sir Robert *Peel's decision to repeal the Corn Laws

split the Tory Party. Disraeli became leader of the 'Young England' group of Tories who believed that protection for British agriculture was essential, and his biting attacks on the new policy led to Peel's political eclipse.

He bought for Britain a controlling interest in the Suez Canal, had Queen *Victoria made Empress of India (1876), annexed the Transvaal (1877) and at the Congress of Berlin (1878) from which he brought back 'peace with honour', did much to ensure that the Russo-Turkish conflict did not develop into a European war and greatly impressed *Bismarck who commented, 'Der alte Jude, das ist der Mann' ('The old Jew, that is the man'). Meanwhile his ambition to extend his party's interest in social welfare brought into being an act giving legal protection to trade unions, a great Factory Act, and a Public Health Act. He was created Earl of Beaconsfield in 1876 and KG in 1878. In the 1880 election, in response to higher taxes and a trade recession, the electorate returned an overwhelming Liberal majority. Disraeli died the following year.

Blake, R., *Disraeli*. 1966; Weintraub, S., *Disraeli.* 1993.

Dix, Otto (1891–1969). German painter. He joined the Neue Sachlichkeit (New Objectivity) movement, which extended Expressionism but rejected abstraction. He painted working class life, some portraits and later turned to mysticism.

Dixon, Sir Owen (1886–1972). Australian jurist, born in Melbourne. Educated at Melbourne University, he became a Justice of the High Court of Australia 1929–52, serving during World War II as Minister to the US 1942–44, and Chief Justice 1952–64. He served as UN mediator in Jammu and Kashmir (1950) over the border dispute between India and Pakistan. Regarded as one of the greatest judges in the common law world, he was awarded the OM in 1963. In 1965 he declined appointment as Governor General.

Ayres, P., *Owen Dixon*. 2003.

Djilas, Milovan (1911–1995). Yugoslav politician and author. One of the most active of the partisans during World War II he was, when *Tito came to power, at first the most trusted and certainly the most intellectually gifted of his lieutenants. He backed Tito in breaking with the Cominform but in 1954 he fell into disfavour for advocating greater democracy and in 1956 was imprisoned for supporting the Hungarian uprising. In 1957 he published *The New Class*, highly critical of communism in practice. He was subsequently imprisoned again for 'revealing official secrets' in his book *Conversations with Stalin* (published outside Yugoslavia in 1962).

Dobell, Sir William (1899–1970). Australian painter. Trained in London, influenced by *Renoir and *Soutine, he was Australia's leading portrait and landscape artist in the 1940s and 1950s.

Dodd, Charles Harold (1884–1973). English Congregational clergyman and biblical scholar. Professor of divinity at Cambridge University 1935–49, he had the general direction of the work of translation required for *The New English Bible* (New Testament published 1961, Old Testament and Apocrypha 1970).

Dodge, John Francis (1864–1920) and **Horace Elgin Dodge** (1868–1920). American manufacturers, both born in Michigan. John was a manager, Horace an engineer. Originally components manufacturers for Henry *Ford, they became heavy investors in Ford's company. In 1914 they began manufacturing under their own names. Both died of influenza and in 1928 their firm was bought by the *Chrysler Corporation, which used the Dodge brand name for trucks and, later, compacts.

Dodgson, Charles Lutwidge *see* **Carroll, Lewis**

Dodsley, Robert (1703–1764). English publisher. While in service as a footman he was encouraged to write by Daniel *Defoe. He published poems and plays, on the profits of the first of which, *The Toyshop* (1735), produced at Covent Garden, he established himself as a bookseller and publisher of (among others) *Pope, Lord *Chesterfield, *Goldsmith, *Gray, *Sterne and Dr *Johnson, in whose *Dictionary* he had a share. In 1758, with Edmund *Burke, he founded the *Annual Register*.

Doherty, Peter Charles (1940–). Australian immunologist, born in Brisbane. Trained as a veterinarian at the University of Queensland, he took his PhD in Edinburgh, worked at The Australian National University and in Memphis, Tennesse. In Canberra, he had explored immunology with his Swiss collaborator, Rolf *Zinkernagel. In 1973 they demonstrated how the body's immune cells protect against viruses: a kind of white blood cell, T-cells, kills the virus-ridden cells, but only if they recognize both the foreign substances (viruses) and certain substances from the body's own cells. In 1996 they were jointly awarded the Nobel Prize for Physiology or Medicine. Australian of the Year in 1997, he was awarded an AC, and named as a Living National Treasure. The Peter Doherty Institute for Infection and Immunity was established in Melbourne in 2014. He became a prolific author, much of it quasi-autobiographical, with powerful insights into the overlap between science, society, history, the environment, politics and sport.

Dohnányi, Ernö (1877–1960). Hungarian composer, pianist and conductor, born in Pozsony. A friend and promoter of *Bartók, he was director of the Budapest Academy 1919 and 1934–41, and became musical

director of Hungarian broadcasting 1931–34. His earlier music, notably the Rhapsodies for Piano and the Cello Sonata, was strongly influenced by *Brahms. His most popular works are *Variations on a Nursery Song* (1919) and *Ruralia Hungarica* (1926). He lived in the US from 1948.

During World War II, he stayed in Hungary then in Austria, leading to unsubstantiated accusations of Fascist collaboration. Long investigation confirmed that he acted very courageously to protect Jews, and was not in the Richard *Strauss class. He became a US citizen after the war, lived and taught in Florida and (like Bartók) died in New York.

His son, **Hans von Dohnányi** (1902–1945), grew up in Germany after his parents divorced and became a lawyer. He worked in the German administration, but became active in the resistance, and was involved in the plot to assassinate Hitler (20 July 1944). He was condemned by the SS and hanged on a piano wire, as was his brother-in-law Dietrich *Bonhoeffer. Hans' son **Christoph von Dohnányi** (1929–) became conductor of the Cleveland Orchestra 1984–2002.

Dolci, Danilo (1924–1997). Italian social worker. He studied architecture in Rome but from 1952 devoted himself to a campaign for better living conditions in Sicily. He not only denounced economic extortion by landlords and Mafia terrorists but showed by his own example, and that of his fellow workers, how the poor could improve their own lot by shaking off their fatalistic lethargy, by improving methods of work and by mutual help. He survived many attempts upon his life.

Mangione, J., *World Around Danilo Dolci: A Passion for Sicilians*. 1973.

Dole, Bob (Robert Joseph) (1923–2021). American Republican politician, born in Russell, Kansas. Severely wounded in World War II, he became an attorney and was a US Congressman 1961–69, Senator from Kansas 1969–96, *Ford's vice presidential candidate (1976), and Republican Senate Leader 1985–96. He sought the Republican nomination for president in 1980 and 1988, winning it in 1996, but losing to Bill *Clinton. His wife **Elizabeth Dole**, née Hanford (1936–), also an attorney, was US Secretary of Transportation 1983–87 and for Labor 1989–90. She was President of the American Red Cross 1991–98, and a US senator 2003–09.

Dolin, Sir Anton (real name Patrick Healey Kay) (1904–1981). British ballet dancer, choreographer and writer. He studied ballet under *Nijinsky and was *premier danseur* with the Old Vic Sadler's Wells Company 1931–35. Later, with Alicia *Markova, he formed the Markova-Dolin Ballet (1935–5l).

Doll, Sir (William) **Richard Shaboe** (1912–2005). English physician and epidemiologist. Educated in London, he was an architect of the National Health Service. His research, with **Bradford Hill** and **Richard Peto**, demonstrated the link between smoking and lung cancer. He also worked on radiation and asbestos as carcinogenic agents. Regius Professor of Medicine at Oxford 1969–79, he received a CH in 1996.

Dollfuss, Engelbert (1892–1934). Austrian politician. Of peasant origin, a devout Catholic, only 150 cm tall, he was decorated for bravery and became a prisoner in World War I, graduated LLD from Vienna University and worked for the Chamber of Agriculture. He became a leader of the Christian Social (CS) Party, and was Minister for Agriculture 1931–34, Foreign Minister 1932–34 and Chancellor 1932–34. Nationalist and anti-Semitic, he developed Austro-fascism, which was corporatist and Catholic, with affinities to the Italian and Portuguese models. Faced with the fierce hostility of Socialists and Nazis, both, by their resort to violence, providing him with justification for raising a private army and for dictatorial rule. His ruthless shelling (1934) of the flats of Viennese workers and his flouting of democratic sentiment deprived him of the help and sympathy of those who might have been his staunchest allies against the Nazis, by whom he was murdered, during an attempted *coup d'état*. He was known as the 'pocket chancellor'.

Brook-Shepherd, G., *Dollfuss*. 1961.

Dolmetsch, (Eugene) **Arnold** (1858–1940). British musician and instrument maker, born in France. He was a great authority on early music and musical instruments, who settled (1917) with his family at Haslemere, in Surrey, where he demonstrated that composers' works could be best appreciated if played upon the instruments for which they were composed. His sons continued his work; **Carl Dolmetsch** (1911–1997) was a noted recorder player.

Domagk, Gerhard (1895–1964). German biochemist. One of the pioneers of chemotherapy, in 1934 he discovered the antibacterial action of the red dye prontone, demonstrated that the effective agent was the sulphanilamide that prontone produced in the body, and thus showed the way for the application of a wide range of sulphanilamide drugs. He was awarded the Nobel Prize for Medicine (1939), but declined it on instructions from the Nazi government.

Domènech i Montaner, Lluis (1850–1923). Spanish (Catalan) architect, born in Barcelona. His World Heritage listed buildings in Barcelona include the Palau de la Música Catalana and the Hospital of St Pau.

Domenichino (Domenico Zampieri) (1581–1641). Italian painter, born in Bologna. He went to Rome (1602), assisted Annibale *Carracci in the decoration of the Farnese Gallery but was soon accepting commissions on his own. He carried on the traditions of the Carraccis but developed a more severely classical style for the many ceilings and murals that he

worked on in Rome and Naples. His most ambitious achievement was for the choir (1624–28) of S. Andrea della Valle, Rome.

Domingo, Placido (1941–). Spanish opera singer, born in Madrid. Brought up in Mexico, where he made his debut (1961), he sang at the New York Met from 1968 and Covent Garden from 1969. He achieved great success in the major dramatic roles in *Verdi's operas. He was also an able operatic conductor and appeared in films.

Dominic, St (Domingo de Guzman) (c.1170–1221). Spanish (Castilian) priest and founder of the Dominican Order, born in Caleruega. He became a canon of Osma Cathedral. In 1205 he adopted voluntary poverty, in his missionary journeys, to convert the Albigensians (Cathars) of Languedoc, and he gathered a group of followers round him. He played an ambiguous role in Pope *Innocent III's savage Crusade against the Albigensians 1209–15. He attended the Fourth Lateran Council (1215) and petitioned Innocent for permission to establish an Order of Preachers (OP: known as the 'Black Friars') for the conversion of heretics. He established his headquarters in Toulouse. Told that the order must follow an existing rule he chose that of St Augustine, but he soon adopted absolute poverty, so that in fact a new order of mendicant friars came into being. To equip the friars for their task of preaching, an elaborate educational system was evolved. Each 'house' contained a doctor of theology, each province contained one or more houses for advanced studies and selected students were sent to the universities. In 1220 a new constitution was drawn up. The priors, who ruled the 'houses', were grouped under provincial priors subject to a master general. The legislative and disciplinary bodies were 'chapters', mainly elected, the supreme body being the annual general chapter, for which a complicated system was created to ensure that it was efficient and representative. This departure from the authoritarian rule of former religious orders was unique. Dominic died at Bologna, and was canonised in 1234. He saw the Order as a body of learned and ascetic defenders of the faith, and he was the first to put intellectual work as the first requirement of a friar. Dominic remains intensely controversial: was he attractive and open or closed and repellant? He is sometimes—but wrongly—credited with inventing the rosary.

Vicaire, M. H., *Saint Dominic and His Times*. 1964.

Domitian (Titus Flavius Domitianus) (51–96). Roman Emperor 81–96. He was a son of the emperor *Vespasian, a younger brother of *Titus, and the last of the Flavian dynasty. He fought defensively and, on the whole successfully on the German and Danubian frontiers, and his administration of Italy and the provinces was efficient. As his reign progressed, however, he not only persecuted Jews and Christians but developed suspicions of any who seemed capable of aspiring to power. The employment of informers followed by murders and confiscations provoked a palace conspiracy in which he was assassinated.

Donatello (Donato di Niccolo di Betto Bardi) (1386/7–1466). Florentine sculptor. The greatest sculptor before *Michelangelo, he also exerted great influence on the painters of the Paduan School and even on the Venetians. He introduced the 'heroic' style of sculpture, figures slightly larger than life infused with that feeling of determination and force so closely associated with the early Renaissance, and first exemplified in his *St Mark* (1412). His relief of *St George killing the Dragon* (c.1417) is the earliest datable example of the application of the new theory of perspective to sculpture. A further example is his very low relief in bronze of *Salome* (in Siena). His bronze, *David*, is one of the earliest free-standing nudes.

He was apprenticed to *Ghiberti, whom he helped (1403) to carve the doors of the Baptistery, and shortly after was working on the Cathedral in Florence on which he continued to work intermittently for the next 30 years. He also worked at times in Rome and Padua. In his later years Donatello experimented with expressionistic and dramatic distortion, e.g. the *Magdalen* in carved wood (c.1445) which inspired the tense and dramatic quality of Florentine painting of the period.

Dongen, Kees (originally Cornelis Theodoris Maria) **van** (1877–1968). Dutch-French painter, born in Rotterdam. He lived in Paris from 1897, was briefly in the Fauves, then moved to Monaco and painted many figure studies and portraits.

Dönitz, Karl (1891–1980). German sailor. A submarine commander in World War I, as a firm adherent of *Hitler he played an important part in the secret building of a submarine fleet in the years preceding World War II, in which he directed the submarine campaign with ruthlessness, administrative efficiency and tactical skill. In 1943 he became Grand Admiral and succeeded *Raeder as naval Commander-in-Chief. Hitler named him his successor. He held the title of President of Germany for 20 days (April–May 1945), and authorised the surrender. At the Nuremberg War Crimes Tribunal (1946) he was convicted on two counts and was sentenced to 10 years imprisonment. Released in 1956, he wrote the self-serving *Memoirs: Ten Years and Twenty Days* (1958).

Donizetti, Gaetano (1797–1848). Italian opera composer, born at Bergamo. His early work reflected *Rossini's influence but he developed a more personal style. He composed about 70 operas (the total is uncertain, because many were reworked and renamed), including three set in Tudor England: *Anna Bolena* (1830, his first great success), *Maria Stuarda* (1834) and *Roberto Devereux* (1837). The

most performed, *Lucia di Lammermoor* (1835), was based on a novel by Walter *Scott. Among the best known are *L'elisir d'amore* (1832), *Lucrezia Borgia* (1833), *La Favorita* (1840), *Don Pasquale* and *Maria di Rohan* (both 1843). He suffered from syphilis, becoming paralysed and insane.

Ashbrook, W., *Donizetti*. 1965.

Donleavy, J(ames) **P**(atrick) (1926–2017). Irish-American novelist, born in New York City. Trained in Dublin as a microbiologist, his novels include *The Ginger Man* (1955, also a play 1959), *A Singular Man* (1963), *The Beastly Beatitudes of Balthazar B* (1968), *The Onion Eaters* (1971) and *Leila* (1983) and *Wrong Information Is Being Given Out at Princeton* (1998).

Donne, John (1571–1631). English poet and cleric, born in London. The son of a merchant, and, through his mother, grandson of the dramatist John *Heywood, he was brought up among adherents of Roman Catholicism, which he rejected in his twenties. He studied at both Oxford and Cambridge, and later at Lincoln's Inn, soon gaining a reputation as a man-about-town of profligacy, wit and much learning. He sailed with *Essex against Cadiz in 1596 and again in 1597, in 1598 he became secretary to Lord Egerton, whose niece, the 16-year-old Ann More, he secretly married. He served briefly as MP 1602–03, 1614–15. With no dowry and a constant succession of children the couple lived in great poverty until, having become a fervent believer in Anglicanism, at last in 1615 he took holy orders. He now attained a new reputation as a great preacher, becoming Dean of St Paul's in 1621.

His poetry is inspired by the phases of his life and is sensual, passionate, witty, subtle and deeply religious. The metrical form of the stanza is rough, the imagery vivid:

> Go and catch a falling star,
> Get with child a mandrake root …

'I runne to Death, and Death meets me as fast, and all my Pleasures are like Yesterday' is in his 'Holy Sonnet VII', and the famous passage beginning, 'No man is an island entire of itself', concluding with 'Never send to ask for whom the bell tolls, it tolls for thee' is in his 'Meditation XVII'. 'A Hymn to God the Father' turns on the punning in the name/ word 'Donne/ done'. He is regarded as the greatest of the English metaphysical poets.

Keynes, G. L., *A Bibliography of Dr John Donne*. 1964; Lim, K., *John Donne. An Eternity of Song*. 2005; Stubbs, J., *Donne. The Reformed Soul*. 2006.

Donskoy, Mark Semyonovich (1901–1981). Russian film director. After studying medicine and law, he worked in film under *Eisenstein and became a director, achieving his greatest critical success with the trilogy based on Maksim *Gorki's autobiography: *My Childhood* (1938), *My Apprenticeship* (1939) and *My Universities* (1940).

Doolittle, Hilda (1886–1961). American poet (pen name H. D.). One of the first, and most consistent, Imagist poets writing in English, she was a notable Greek scholar and the classical influence is apparent in her work. She married Richard *Aldington in 1913. They lived in France and divorced in 1937.

Guest, B., *Herself Defined. The Poet H.D. and Her World*. 1985.

Doolittle, James Harold (1896–1993). American airman. After service as a flying officer in World War I, he won renown by his victory in the Schneider Trophy of 1925. As a civilian (from 1930) he became known as a test pilot and for aerobatic feats. Recalled to the service in World War II, he led the first raid on Tokyo (April 1942), a spectacular achievement which brought a series of promotions, culminating with the appointment to command of the 8th US Air Force (1944). After the war he was a businessman involved in insurance, oil and aeronautics.

Doppler, Christian Johann (1803–1853). Austrian mathematical physicist. He became professor of mathematics at Prague (1841) and professor of experimental physics at Vienna (1850). Although he wrote a number of mathematical works, his name is associated mainly with his contributions to physics. In 1842 he described in principle the phenomenon (later verified experimentally) now known as the 'Doppler effect'—that the pitch of sound (a siren, for example) rises as the source approaches the hearer and falls with increasing distance. He also hypothesised that stars would have a violet shift as they approached, a red shift as they receded, work confirmed by **Armand Fizeau** and William *Huggins.

Doráti, Antal (1906–1988). Hungarian-American conductor and composer, born in Budapest. Chief Conductor of the BBC Symphony Orchestra 1963–66, National Symphony Orchestra, Washington 1970–77, Royal Philharmonic 1975–79, he made more than 600 recordings, specialising in *Haydn, *Tchaikovsky, *Bartók and *Stravinsky. He was created an Hon. KBE.

Doré, Gustave (1832–1883). French artist. Famous for his book illustrations, early success came with his illustrations for *Balzac's *Contes drolatiques*. Other works he illustrated include *Dante's *Inferno* and *Paradiso,* *Cervantes' *Don Quixote* and *Tennyson's *Idylls of the King*. In his Paris studios he employed at times as many as 40 assistants working on his woodcuts. His style was often sensational and macabre. The drawings done for London (1871), which influenced Van *Gogh, are held to be his best work.

Rose, M., *Gustave Dore*. 1945.

Doria, Andrea (1468–1560). Genoese soldier and statesman. Born of a noble family, he became a mercenary in the service of the papacy, Naples,

and other Italian states. He also restored Genoese rule in Corsica. After the expulsion of the French King *Louis XII from Italy he restored the Genoese republic (1512), but entered French service (1522) when *François I again imposed his suzerainty. A quarrel over François' treatment of Genoa caused Doria to change sides and put his services and the Genoese fleet at the disposal of François' rival for power in Italy, the emperor *Charles V. Now the virtual autocrat in a restored Genoese republic, Doria was engaged for several years in fighting the Muslim pirates of the Barbary Coast, in the course of which he captured Tunis (1535).

Doriot, Jacques (1885–1945). French collaborator. Elected as a Communist Deputy in 1924, and Mayor of St Denis in 1931, he broke with the Left in 1934 and became a strong supporter of *Hitler. He was killed in an air raid.

Dornier, Claude (1884–1969). German aircraft pioneer and builder, born in Kempten. Leaving Munich technical college he began work for Ferdinand von *Zeppelin, in his airship factory at Friedrichshafen (1910) and in 1911 designed the first all-metal aeroplane. Zeppelin allowed him to establish a separate factory, the Dornier Aircraft Works. After World War I during which wooden and metal fighter planes built to his design were used, Dornier was given complete control of his factory. During the 1920s he built very successful seaplanes. In 1929 he produced DOX, then the world's largest aircraft, although not a financial success, with 12 engines and a passenger capacity of 169. Dornier twin-engined bombers became standard Luftwaffe type in World War II. After the war Dornier moved to Spain because aircraft building was prohibited in Germany by the Allies. When the ban was lifted in 1955 he opened a factory near Munich which produced US designed 'Starfighters'.

Dorsey, Jack Patrick (1976–). American computer programmer, born in Missouri. He developed web programs for the despatch of taxis and coordinating emergency services. With 'Biz' *Stone, he was the co-founder of Twitter in 2006.

Dos Passos, **John Rodrigo** (1896–1970). American novelist, born in Chicago. Educated at Harvard College, he was an ambulance driver in World War I. *Three Soldiers* (1921) was a powerful novel about war. His best known work is the trilogy *U.S.A.,* consisting of *The 42nd Parallel* (1930), *Nineteen Nineteen* (1932) and *The Big Money* (1936). With a quickly moving, constantly switching technique of the cinema in these and later books he expresses his concern with the cultural, social and political developments of the 'American way of life'. Originally on the far left, he moved steadily to the right and campaigned for *Goldwater and *Nixon.

Wrenn, J. H., *John Dos Passos*. 1961.

Dost Mohammed Khan (1793–1863). Amir of Afghanistan 1826–63, known as the 'Great Amir'. In 1839 he was overthrown by the British. Having regained power in 1842, he eventually (1855) made a treaty of friendship with the British, after they had defeated the Afghans' hereditary enemies, the Sikhs.

Dostoevsky, Fyodor Mikhailovich (1821–1881). Russian novelist, born in Moscow. His mother died of tuberculosis in 1837 and his father, a widely read but profoundly Orthodox physician, died in 1839 of a stroke, not murdered by serfs as was widely believed. He studied at the Military Engineering College at St Petersburg, translated some texts but felt unsuited to army life or engineering. He embarked on a literary career and his first novel, *Poor Folk* (1846), was promoted by *Belinsky. Originally attracted to socialism, he joined the Petrashevky Circle, a group that read forbidden books and theorised about changing how Russia was governed. In April 1849, at the instigation of Tsar *Nikolai, he was arrested with other members of the Circle, tried for sedition and condemned to death. In December 1849, Dostoevsky and 14 colleagues were facing a firing squad in what was essentially a mock execution when a pre-arranged commutation arrived. Four years in a prison camp in Omsk, Siberia, shackled for long periods, was followed by two years compulsory military service. His health was undermined, which he described in *Memoirs from the House of the Dead* (1861). Freed in 1855, he engaged in unsuccessful journalism which left him deeply in debt, compounded by his obsession with gambling. In 1857 he married, unhappily, and began to experience gross epileptic seizures. His wife died in 1864 and in 1865 he travelled to Germany with a young woman, Polina Suslova, to retrieve his fortune by an 'infallible' method of winning at roulette, which, of course, failed. On his return he set about writing a potboiler to satisfy his creditors (*The Gambler*). He engaged Anna Snitken as stenographer and soon married her. They had again to go abroad to avoid creditors, a humiliating time for Dostoevsky. His wife gradually restored order to his finances and they returned to Russia. In his later years he evolved a peculiar Slavophilism compounded of hatred for aristocrats and socialists alike, and of religious obsessions. However, even in his lifetime he won recognition both inside and outside Russia as a great novelist.

His greatest novels are *Crime and Punishment* (1866) and the unfinished *Brothers Karamazov* (1881). *Freud called *Karamazov* 'the most magnificent novel ever written'. Dostoevsky probed more deeply into the mind than any previous novelist, especially into the abnormal and criminal mind. His other novels include *Memoirs from the Underworld* (1864), *The Idiot* (1869) and *The Devils* (*The Possessed*) (1871–72).

Dostoevsky and *Tolstoy, close contemporaries, had a distinctly uneasy non-relationship, with different perspectives, mutually suspicious, eyeing each other

off from the distance like two old bears. Curiously, they never met. Dostoevsky declared his admiration for Tolstoy, but Tolstoy professed indifference until just before he died. Dostoevsky would have been less than human not to have resented Tolstoy for his energy, health, Olympian bearing, confidence, wealth and fame, while he was epileptic, deeply depressive, a compulsive gambler and often in penury.

During the Soviet era, Dostoevsky was dismissed as neurotic, morbid, mystical and reactionary, potentially anti-Soviet. As George *Steiner wrote: 'Dostoevsky came to be recognised as a dangerous foe, as an engenderer of subversion and heresy … Tolstoy, on the contrary, was securely enshrined in the revolutionary pantheon …'

Steiner, G., *Tolstoy or Dostoevsky.* 1958; Grossman, L., *Dostoevsky*. 1974; Frank, J., *Dostoevsky* 4 vols, 1976ff, incomplete; Frank, J., *Dostoevsky* 5 vols, 1976–2002, 1 vol. condensation 2009; Coetzee, J. M., *The Master of Petersburg*. 1994; Frank, J., *Lectures on Dostoevsky*. 2021; Marullo, T. G., *Fyodor Dostoevsky: A Life in Letters, Memoirs and Criticism*, 2 vols. 2021.

Doubleday, Abner (1819–1893). American general. For many years he was credited with inventing (1839) the game of baseball at Cooperstown, NY, but revisionists now assert that the game is a variant of the English 'rounders' and that the modern rules were set in 1845 by Alexander Jay Cartwright. In the Civil War, Doubleday's troops fired the first shots at Fort Sumter, SC (1861) and he commanded a corps at Gettysburg.

Doudna, Jennifer Anne (1964–). American biochemist. She shared the 2020 Nobel Prize for Chemistry with Emmanuelle Charpentier (1968–) for their pioneering work in genetic editing, using CRISPR (clustered regularly interspaced short palindromic repeats).

Isaacson, W., *The Code Breaker: Jennifer Doudna, Gene Editing and the Future of the Human Race*. 2021.

Doughty, Charles Montagu (1843–1926). English author and traveller. To write *Travels in Arabia Deserta* (1888), he mastered Arabic and lived (1876–78) among the tribesmen, disguised as an Arab. The book is written in a consciously archaic style. He also wrote verse dramas and epic poems, e.g. *Adam Cast Forth* (1908) and *The Dawn in Britain* (1906).

Douglas, Lord Alfred Bruce (1870–1945). British poet and journalist. Son of the 9th Marquess of *Queensberry, educated at Oxford, he became the lover ('Bosie') of Oscar *Wilde. His father's hatred led directly to Wilde's trial and imprisonment. On Wilde's release they lived together briefly in Rouen and Naples. Only one line of Douglas' poetry is now remembered: 'The love that dare not speak its name'. He became a Catholic convert, repudiated homosexuality, was an active anti-Semite in the journal *Plain English*, and was jailed in 1924 for criminal libel of Winston *Churchill.

Hyde, H. M., *Lord Alfred Douglas*. 1984.

Douglas, Clifford Hugh (1879–1952). British economist. An engineer, known by his military rank of major, he published in 1919 his economic theory (Social Credit), intended to overcome the chronic shortage of purchasing power which he held to be the cause of economic depression. The method to be adopted was a carefully regulated distribution of money which he called a 'national dividend'. Douglas attracted many followers, especially in Canada. Social Credit governments held office in Alberta 1935–71 and British Colombia 1952–72, 1975–86 but adopted few of Douglas' policies.

Douglas, Donald Wills (1892–1981). American aircraft manufacturer. In 1920 he founded the Douglas Aircraft Company, and produced his first aeroplane, the Cloudster, in 1922. The Douglas Commercial (DC) series began with DC-1 (1933). The DC-3 (1935) was phenomenally successful, some aircraft remaining in service for more than 40 years. The 'Dakota', one of the safest and most widely used aircraft for military and civilian transport during and after World War II, was a development of the DC3. Douglas lost market share to *Boeing which adopted jet engines earlier and was merged with the McDonnell Company in 1967. The DC-9 rivals the Boeing 737 in medium haul aviation, but Boeing's 747 ('Jumbo') was far more successful than the DC-10 for intercontinental flights.

Douglas, Gavin (c.1475–1522). Scottish poet and prelate. Third son of the 5th Earl of Angus, after the disaster at Flodden he joined the English faction and was appointed Bishop of Dunkeld (1515), but after the French party had regained power (1520) he had to retire to England where he died of the plague. He wrote moral allegories (*The Palice of Honour* and *King Hart*), but his fame rests on his verse translation into Scots of *Virgil's *Aeneid*, said to be the first rendering of a classical work into any form of English.

Douglas, (George) **Norman** (1868–1952). Scottish writer, born in Austria. Educated in England and Germany, he became a self-trained zoologist and voracious pederast, had three years in the diplomatic service (1894–97), then bought a villa in Capri (1898). He divided his life between London and Capri, wrote the travel book *Old Calabria* (1915) and the novel *South Wind* (1917), described as 'a love letter to Capri'. Fortunate to escape jail for his sexual exploits, Douglas appears as a character in novels by *Lawrence, *Huxley and *Highsmith. His writing was admired by *Joyce, *Forster, *Woolf, *Nabokov and *Greene.

Greenlees, I., *Norman Douglas*. 1957; Holloway, M., *Norman Douglas: A Biography*. 1976.

Douglas, Sir Roger Owen (1937–). New Zealand accountant and politician. A Labour MP 1969–90, he was Minister of Broadcasting 1973–75 (under *Kirk), and an intensely controversial Minister of Finance 1984–88 (under *Lange). He introduced free-market Thatcherite economic changes (known as 'Rogernomics'), cutting tariffs, deregulating the labour market, introducing a Goods and Services Tax (GST), and reducing government expenditure. He clashed with Lange, virtually forcing his resignation (1989). In 1993 he founded the ACT (Association of Consumers and Taxpayers) and was again MP 2008–11.

Douglas, Stephen A(rnold) (1813–1861). American Democratic politician, born in Vermont. He moved to Illinois, becoming a judge at the age of 27. He served in the US House of Representatives 1843–47 and Senate 1847–61. His interest in westward expansion made him demand that the Nebraska-Kansas region should be opened to settlement and that it should be left to the settlers to decide whether slaves should be introduced. This attitude cost him the Democratic nomination for the presidency in 1852 and 1856 though he retained his seat as senator for Illinois in a contest with Abraham *Lincoln, who won the popular vote but lost in the State legislature. In 1860 the Democratic Party split three ways over slavery, and Douglas, whose position on slavery was ambiguous, was nominated as candidate for president by Democrats in the northern states. Lincoln became the candidate of the new Republican Party. Douglas ran second in the national vote (29.5%) but carried only one state (Missouri). He opposed secession and supported Lincoln in the Civil War.

Johannsen, R. W., *Stephen A. Douglas*. 1973.

Douglas, T(homas) **C**(lement) (1904–1986). Canadian politician, born in Scotland. He became a Baptist minister in Saskatchewan and was a Member of the Canadian House of Commons 1935–44, 1961–79. He founded the Cooperative Commonwealth Federation (CCF) and as Premier of Saskatchewan 1944–61 led North America's first socialist government. He was Federal Leader of the New Democratic Party 1961–71.

Douglas, William O(rville) (1898–1980). American jurist. Professor of law at Yale University 1931–39, he was a prominent supporter of civil rights and the New Deal. His appointment as a justice of the US Supreme Court (1939) by President Roosevelt aroused considerable controversy. He served a record term, retiring in 1975 after a stroke.

Douglas-Home, Sir Alec *see* **Home, Alec Douglas-, Baron Home of the Hirsel**

Douglass, Frederick (né Frederick Augustus Washington Bailey) (1817?–1895). American abolitionist, born in Maryland. Son of a slave mother and a white father, he escaped from slavery (1838) and devoted himself to the anti-slavery movement. His autobiography, *Narrative of the Life of Frederick Douglass*, first published in 1845, was constantly updated. In the Civil War he organised black units to help the northern army and campaigned for the rest of his life for civil rights for black people. He was an early advocate of female suffrage. He filled government posts in Washington DC, and was Minister to Haiti 1889–91.

Douglass, F., *The Life and Times of Frederick Douglass*. 1947; Bontemps, A., *Free at Last*. 1971; Blight, D.W., *Frederick Douglass: Prophet of Freedom*. 2019.

Doumer, Paul (né Joseph Athanase Doumer) (1857–1932). French radical politician. He taught mathematics 1877–83, and became a Freemason and editor. A deputy 1888–89, 1890–96, 1902–12, he served as Minister for Finance 1895–96, 1921–22 and 1925–26 and President of the Chamber of Deputies 1905–06. As Governor-General of Indo-China 1897–1902, he set up a centralised administration which survived until 1945. President of the Senate 1927–31, he became 13th President of the Republic 1931–32, defeating *Briand. He was assassinated by a Russian anarchist, Paul Gorgulov.

Doumergue, Gaston (1863–1937). French politician. Elected as a radical socialist deputy in 1893, he moved steadily to the right, serving as Premier 1913–14, 1934, President of the Senate 1923–24, and President of the Republic 1924–31.

Dowding, Hugh Caswell Tremenheere Dowding, 1st Baron (1882–1970). British air chief marshal, born in Scotland. His life as a pilot began in 1914 when as a young artillery officer he was attached to the Royal Flying Corps. In 1919 he became a group captain in the RAF. Thereafter he held important administrative posts until in 1936 he was appointed Commander-in-Chief of Fighter Command. He held this post until 1940, when his brilliantly successful direction of the Battle of Britain proved the efficiency of the plans he had already prepared. He fell out with *Churchill, was eased out of the RAF, and received a barony in 1943 as a consolation prize. Bitter about his supersession, he became a spiritualist, theosophist, and lecturer on reincarnation.

Wright, R., *Dowding and the Battle of Britain*. 1969.

Dowland, John (c.1563–1626). English composer, singer and lutenist, probably born in London. His *First Booke of Songs or Ayres of Foure Partes with Tableture for the Lute* appeared in 1597, running to five editions by 1613. His second and third books of airs appeared while he was abroad (1600, 1603). He was a highly paid musician at the court of Christian IV of Denmark 1598–1606, then from 1612 played for *James I. His second *Lachrymae*, accounted some of the finest instrumental consort music of the time.

He is now remembered chiefly for his songs, among the most beautiful ever written, including 'Flow my tears...', 'Come heavy sleep...' and 'Come again'.

Dowling, Dame Ann Patricia (1952–). English mechanical engineer. A Cambridge professor 1993–2014, she made important contributions to the reduction of emission combustion and road vehicle and aircraft noise, and was elected FRS in 2003, created DBE in 2007, and awarded the OM in 2016.

Downer, Alexander John Gosse (1951–). Australian Liberal politician, born in Adelaide. From a patrician political family, he worked as an economist in a bank, then as a diplomat, until election as a Member of the House of Representatives 1984–2008. Briefly Leader of the Opposition 1994–95, under John *Howard he was Australia's longest serving minister for foreign affairs 1996–2007. He was High Commissioner to the United Kingdom 2014–18.

Downing, Sir George (1623?–1684). English soldier and diplomat. He served in *Cromwell's army in Scotland and was prominent among those who offered Cromwell the crown. He was British resident at the Hague under Cromwell and *Charles II. From the sale of estates left by his grandson, **Sir George Downing** (1684?–1749), Downing College, Cambridge, was founded, after whom Downing Street, Whitehall is named. No. 10 Downing Street became the official residence of the First Lord of the Treasury/Prime Minister in 1735.

Doxiadis, Constantinos Apostolos (1913–1975). Greek architect and city planner, born in Bulgaria. He became an architect in the 1930s, served in the Greek underground during World War II and was administrator of Marshall Plan aid in Greece (1947–51). A change of government and a breakdown in health led Doxiadis to migrate to Australia where his architectural qualifications were not recognised. While working as a farmer in Western Australia (1951–52) he devised the principles of *ekistics* (the science of human settlements). After returning to Europe he won an international reputation for his prophetic work on the coming world city 'Ecumenopolis', needed to accommodate the population explosion. He was commissioned to design or restore many cities, e.g. Islamabad, Khartoum, Louisville (Ky.), and parts of Philadelphia and Washington DC. He founded his own university in Athens.

Doyle, Sir Arthur Conan (1859–1930). British novelist, born in Edinburgh. He graduated in medicine at Edinburgh and there encountered Dr Joseph Bell whose methods of deductive reasoning reappeared in Doyle's fictional detective Sherlock Holmes. After practising medicine in Southsea (1882–90) he turned to authorship, and in *A Study in Scarlet* (1887) he introduced Holmes and his friend Dr Watson. The short stories of which the detective was the hero first appeared in the *Strand Magazine* and were collected as *The Adventures of Sherlock Holmes* (1891) and *The Memoirs of Sherlock Holmes* (1894). In the last tale Holmes (of whom his author was wearying) fell off a cliff but popular demand led Conan Doyle to retrieve him for *The Return of Sherlock Holmes* (1904), *His Last Bow* (1918) and *The Case Book of Sherlock Holmes* (1928). Doyle himself regarded more highly his historical novels, e.g. *The White Company* (1891) and *Brigadier Gerard* (1896). In later life he became a convinced spiritualist and wrote a *History of Spiritualism* (1926).

Pearson, H., *Conan Doyle: His Life and Art*. 1961.

Doyle, Richard (1824–1883). British caricaturist, painter and illustrator, born in London. The son of **John Doyle** (1797–1868), a famous caricaturist, he was taught by his father, and at 15, published the *Eglington Tournament or The Days of Chivalry Revived*. From 1843 he was a regular contributor to *Punch*. He illustrated many books, e.g. *Thackeray's *The Newcomes* and *Dickens' Christmas books, and painted landscapes, in particular, fantastic fairyland scenes, in watercolour and oils, e.g. *In Fairyland, Pictures of the Elf-World*.

Hambourg, D., *Richard Doyle*. 1948.

D'Oyly Carte, Richard (né Richard Carte) (1844–1901). English impresario. His background was a family music-publishing and instrument-making business, from which he progressed to become a concert agent and impresario. His success with *Gilbert and *Sullivan's *Trial by Jury* in 1875 inspired him to form a syndicate for future productions of their operas and for this he built the Savoy Theatre (1881). His later venture, building the Palace Theatre for grand opera, failed. The rights of the D'Oyly Carte family over the Gilbert and Sullivan operas ended in 1961, when the libretto copyright expired.

Drabble, Dame Margaret (1939–). English novelist, biographer and editor, born in Sheffield. Educated at Cambridge, she was a sister of the novelist A. S. *Byatt, and married **(Sir) Michael Holroyd**, biographer of G. B. *Shaw. Her novels include *The Millstone* (1965), *The Middle Ground* (1980), *The Radiant Way* (1987) and *The Gates of Ivory* (1991). She edited *The Oxford Companion to English Literature* (1985).

Draco (7th century BCE). Athenian lawmaker. The word 'draconian' preserves his memory. His code of laws (621 BCE) was of such severity that even laziness was punishable by death.

Draghi, Mario (1947–). Italian economist, banker and administrator, born in Rome. An academic and civil servant he was President of the European Central Bank 2011–19 and became Prime Minister of Italy as a non-party technocrat 2021–22. He took a strong line on Covid, declined election to the Presidency,

tried to reform taxation, was an early supporter of *Zelenskyy in Ukraine, but became a victim of party hostility and resigned.

Drake, Sir Francis (c.1540–1596). English sailor, explorer, privateer and slave trader, born in Tavistock, Devon. From 1565 he took part in expeditions organised and led by his kinsman, Sir John *Hawkins, to carry slaves from West Africa to the West Indies. Later he was active in the unofficial sea war with Spain secretly encouraged by Queen *Elizabeth, who shared in the plunder but denounced it as piracy if occasion demanded. On one such voyage he raided Spanish settlements on the Panama Isthmus (1572) and was the first Englishman to sight the Pacific. He aimed to reach this ocean when he set out with four small ships in December 1577. Two were still with him when (August 1578) he entered the Straits of Magellan, but when at last after being driven south he was able to sail northward up the South American coast he was, through the loss of one vessel and the return of the other, reduced to a single ship. After provisioning himself from coastal settlements and capturing a rich prize, he crossed the Pacific, eventually reached Java and headed for the Cape of Good Hope and home, which he reached in September 1580, having been the first Englishman to circumnavigate the globe. Despite Spanish protests, Elizabeth knighted him on board his ship. After another voyage to the Indies in search of plunder (1585–86), in the course of which he picked up and brought back 180 disillusioned colonists from Virginia, he turned to the task of forestalling the Armada by destroying as many Spanish ships as he could before they sailed. In 1587 he 'singed the King of Spain's beard' by entering Cadiz harbour and destroying, without loss, 33 enemy ships. When the Armada finally appeared (1588) Drake, who according to the familiar story was playing bowls at Plymouth, declared that there was time 'to win this game and to thrash the Spaniards too'. As Vice Admiral he commanded a division of the English fleet, out-fought the enemy in the Channel (he captured the *Rosario* off Portland) and later pursued them northwards up the east coast. The next few years were peaceful but in 1595 he left with Hawkins for the West Indies on a last unsuccessful voyage, but both died of dysentery. Drake was buried at sea in the Caribbean, off Portobelo, Panama. Drake Passage (Spanish: *Pasaje de Drake*), connecting the Pacific and Atlantic oceans, is named for him.

Williams, N., *Francis Drake*. 1973; Sugden, J., *Sir Francis Drake*. 1990; Cummins, J., *Francis Drake*. 1995.

Drayton, Michael (1563–1631). English poet, born in Warwickshire. He owed support and education to the patronage of Sir Henry Goodere, whose daughter Anne was named 'Idea' in his sonnets. Already as a child he was writing verse and in time attempted almost every kind of verse, eclogues in the manner of *Spenser, pastorals, odes, sonnets (including the famous 'Since there's no help, come let us kiss and part'), historical poems (e.g. *Piers Gaveston*, c.1593), imaginary exchanges of letters in verse between such famous lovers as *Henry II and Fair Rosamund and finally the unique *Poly-olbion* (i.e. having many blessings, 1612–22), a poetic topographical survey of England.

Berthelot, J. A., *Drayton*. 1961.

Dreiser, Theodore (1871–1945). American novelist, born in Indiana. Brought up in a poor and strict religious family, his own sexual repression and experience as a reporter of sordid life in St Louis, Chicago, New York and other cities gave him an insight into the problems of sex and ambition which are the themes for his frank and realistic novels, which offended his contemporaries. His first novel, *Sister Carrie*, appeared in 1900 and was followed by e.g. *Jennie Gerhardt* (1911), *The Genius* (1915) and his best known work, *An American Tragedy* (1925), which tells how obsession with sex and money leads a weak-willed boy to plan murder. He also wrote several autobiographical works, e.g. *A Book about Myself* (1922). Dreiser's later socialism inspired his *Tragic America* (1931).

Swanberg, W. A., *Dreiser*. 1965.

Dresser, Christopher (1834–1904). British product designer, born in Glasgow. Trained as a botanist, with a PhD from Jena, he pioneered design as an essential aspect of mass production in furniture, metalwork, ceramics, glassware, carpets and wallpaper, was influenced by Owen *Jones and Japanese art but was attacked by *Ruskin.

Dreyfus, Alfred (1859–1935). French soldier, born in Mulhouse. Victim of a famous miscarriage of justice, son of a Jewish industrialist, at the time of the *affaire* (1894) he was an army captain in the War Office, suspected of being the author of a letter (known as the bordereau and extracted from the German Embassy by a French agent) announcing the dispatch to the German military attaché of certain secret documents. On flimsy evidence based on similarity of handwriting Dreyfus was arrested, found guilty of 'collusion with a foreign power', sentenced to life imprisonment, stripped of his rank, degraded and transported to Devil's Island, remaining there 1895–99. In 1896 evidence was found by Colonel Georges Picquart indicating that the real culprit was Major Ferdinand Walsin *Esterhazy. Anti-Semitic prejudice in the army, combined with the effect on discipline of admitting the facts, prevented the case being reopened. A massive counter-campaign, in the course of which Émile *Zola wrote his famous open letter *J'accuse*, at last secured a retrial (1899). By the use of forged documents Dreyfus was again found guilty, but President *Loubet at once ordered a pardon and his release, subject to an implicit admission of guilt. In 1906 after a full review held in Rennes, his conviction was finally quashed and Dreyfus was restored to his

army rank. He took part in World War I. In 1930 the published papers of Colonel Schwarzkoppen, the German military attaché of the time, confirmed Esterhazy's guilt.

Chapman, G., *The Dreyfus Trials*. 1972; Read, P. P., *The Dreyfus Affair*. 2012.

Drinkwater, John (1882–1937). English dramatist, poet, actor and critic, born in Birmingham. One of the leading Georgian poets, now unread, he was a co-founder of the Birmingham Repertory Theatre and wrote some successful historical plays, notably *Abraham Lincoln* (1918), which was filmed (1930) by D. W. *Griffith. He wrote two volumes of autobiography, *Inheritance* (1931) and *Discovery* (1932).

Drucker, Peter F(erdinand) (1909–2005). American social scientist, born in Vienna. In the US from 1937, he taught in New York and California and wrote important texts on management, shrewdly predicting major social changes: they included *The Age of Discontinuity* (1969) and *Management for the Future* (1992).

Drummond, (James) **Eric, 16th Earl of Perth** (1876–1951). British diplomat. After serving as private secretary to H. H. *Asquith, Sir Edward *Grey and A. J. *Balfour, he was the first Secretary-General of the League of Nations 1919–33, became Ambassador to Italy 1933–39 and succeeded to his peerage in 1937.

Drummond, William (1585–1649). Scottish poet. Known as 'Drummond of Hawthornden', he studied at Edinburgh and abroad and succeeded his father as laird of Hawthornden in 1610. He was a Royalist and Episcopalian, though he played no active political part, and became the friend of Michael *Drayton and Ben *Jonson, whose visit to Hawthornden in the winter of 1618–19 is recalled in Drummond's lively *Conversations*. He wrote learned and ornate verses, religious, amatory and pastoral, in a style that belongs rather to the age of Spenser than to his own and which derives from his study of Petrarch and the Pléiade (*Ronsard). His best known prose work is *The Cypress Grove* (1623), a meditation on death. He also wrote a history of Scotland.

Fogle, F. R., *A Critical Study of William Drummond*. 1952.

Dryden, John (1631–1700). English poet and dramatist, born in Aldwinkle, Northamptonshire. From a well established family, he was educated at Westminster, under the famous Dr Richard Busby and at Trinity College, Cambridge. He seems to have had some secretarial post in *Cromwell's Government but was quite ready to welcome *Charles II (*Astraea Redux*, 1660) and was a consistent Tory for the rest of his life. His marriage (1663) to Lady Elizabeth Howard, daughter of the Earl of Berkshire and sister of his friend Sir Robert Howard, the dramatist, assured his place in the literary world. He retired to his father-in-law's house in the country in the plague year of 1665 and remained there to write *Annus Mirabilis* (1667), which relates the events of the Dutch War of 1665–66 and the Great Fire. In 1668 he became Poet Laureate. He had already written plays, but the success of *The Indian Emperor* (1667), a tragedy about the love of *Montezuma's daughter for *Cortez, the conqueror of Mexico, encouraged him to continue, and over 20 plays, tragedies, comedies and satires followed. The one best remembered is *All for Love* (1678), a version of the Antony and Cleopatra story. His earlier plays were written in rhyming couplets. This was his first in blank verse.

In 1679 he was attacked and beaten in the street as a result of another of his activities, political satire. His best known poem in this field is the allegorical mock-epic *Absolam and Achitophel* (1681), in which the title parts represent *Monmouth and *Shaftesbury. Charles II is David, *Buckingham is Zimri and so on. Many of Dryden's best lyrical poems appear as songs in his plays, but he also wrote odes, including *Alexander's Feast* (1679), which he thought the best of his poetry. His *Hind and the Panther* (1678) indicated his conversion to Roman Catholicism which, after the expulsion of *James II, cost him his laureateship. His much admired translation of *Virgil's *The Aeneid* (1697) remains in print. Much of his voluminous prose writing was on historical subjects or literary criticism, his *Essay on Dramatic Poesie* was published as early as 1668. His last major work was a collection of *Fables* (1699), of which the preface is a fine example of late 17th-century prose. Dryden's greatness was fully acknowledged by the time of his death and he was buried in Westminster Abbey.

Myers, W., *Dryden*. 1973.

Drysdale, Sir (George**) Russell** (1912–1981). Australian painter, born in Sussex to an Anglo-Australian pastoral family. His spare, harsh landscapes captured the outback and the people who lived there.

Du Barry, Marie Jeanne Bécu, Countess (1743–1793). French mistress. She was a dressmaker's daughter who rose to fortune by her good looks and vivacity. Her association with *Louis XV lasted from 1769 until his death (1774) but she took no part in politics. On the outbreak of the Revolution (1789) she fled to England but rashly returned in 1793, when she was arrested and guillotined.

Laski, P. M., *Trial and Execution of Madame du Barry*. 1969.

Dubcek, Alexander (1921–1992). Czechoslovak politician, born in Uhrovec, Slovakia. Partly educated in Russia, he became a factory worker, joined the resistance movement in World War II and fought in the 1944–45 Slovak uprising against the Germans. After World War II he graduated in

law and worked his way up in the CP hierarchy. In 1960 he was appointed industrial secretary of the Central Committee of the Communist Party of Czechoslovakia and in 1962 made a full member of the Presidium. He replaced Karol Bacilek as Slovak Communist Party leader in 1963 and was Czechoslovak party leader 1967–69. After student riots in Prague in 1968, President **Antonin Novotny** resigned, and in the so-called 'Prague spring' Dubcek offered 'socialism with a human face', granted press freedom and rehabilitated political victims of the Stalinist years. On 9 April 1968 a reform program entitled 'Czechoslovakia's Road to Socialism' was announced and these moves aroused Soviet concern about a possible domino effect in Eastern Europe. The *'Brezhnev Doctrine', asserting that the USSR had the right to intervene in the affairs of its satellites, led to immediate invasion. Dubcek was replaced as Secretary-General of the CP by **Gustav Husak**, made Ambassador to Türkiye 1969–70, expelled from the CP (1970) and worked in the forestry industry (1971–88). After the 'velvet revolution' of 1989 (*Havel), Dubcek became President of the Federal Parliament 1990–91.

Shawcross, W., *Dubcek*. 1970.

Du Bellay, Joachim (1522–1560). French poet. Born to a noble family, he became a leader of the group of poets who called themselves La Pléiade, after the constellation, first used by Alexandrian writers (c.280 BCE). The group included his friend and fellow student*Ronsard. Du Bellay wrote many ardent and melancholic Petrarchan love sonnets and an important literary treatise, *La Deffence et illustration de la langue françoyse* (1549), the manifesto of the Pléiade. He was the friend and fellow student of Ronsard.

Du Bois, W(illiam) **E**(dward) **B**(urghardt) (1868–1963). Afro-American scholar and civil rights leader, born in Great Barrington, Massachusetts. He taught economics and history at Atlanta University (1897–1910) and devoted himself to sociological research into Afro-Americans. He published *Souls of Black Folk* (1903) in which he opposed Booker T. *Washington's accommodation strategy and in 1905 founded the Niagara Movement, whose members, black intellectuals, agitated for African-American rights. This merged with the National Association for the Advancement of Colored People (NAACP), which he helped form. He was editor of its journal, *Crisis*, but resigned from the movement in 1934, to return to writing and teaching. However, he rejoined the NAACP in 1944 as research director. His membership of the Communist Party dated from 1961 and in 1962 he emigrated to Accra, Ghana, and renounced US citizenship. Earlier he had advocated independence for African colonies.

Weinberg, M. (ed.), *W. E. B. Du Bois: A Reader*. 1970; Lewis, D. L., *W.E.B. DuBois: A Biography*, 2009; Horne, G., *W.E.B. DuBois: A Biography*. 2010.

Du Bois-Reymond, **Emil Heinrich** (1818–1896). German physiologist, born in Berlin. His early researches were into the well-known phenomenon of discharges from electric fish. He then moved on to investigate the presence of electrical charges in nervous impulses in general, particularly in muscle contractions. By devising ever more sensitive apparatus he was able to detect discharges in very localised muscle tissues, and he laid the foundations for almost all subsequent work in electro-physiology. He had strongly held views about scientific metaphysics, condemned the vitalist theory currently prevalent in Germany, and denied that Nature contained life-forces independent of matter, insisting that all force resided at some place in the material world. He promoted *Darwin's ideas and was an expert epistemologist.

Dubos, René (Jules) (1901–1982). French-American microbiologist. Working at Rockefeller University from 1927, he conducted early research into the isolation of antibacterial substances from various soil micro-organisms, which led to the discovery of major antibiotics. His publications included *Bacterial and Mycotic Infections in Man* (1948), *Pasteur and A Modern Medicine* (1960) and *Man, Medicine, and Environment* (1968). He was editor of the *Journal of Experimental Medicine*. He won the Pulitzer Prize for *So Human an Animal* (1968) and coined the maxim: 'Think globally, act locally.'

Dubuffet, Jean (1901–1985) French painter, born in Le Havre. He worked in the wine trade until 1942, then developed his own *art brut*, influenced by *Klee and the Surrealists, rough, dreamy and often child-like collages.

Duccio di Buoninsegna (c.1255–c.1319). Italian (Sienese) painter. His influence on the Sienese school was comparable with that of *Giotto in Florence. He has been called 'the last and greatest representative of the Byzantine tradition', but he imparted to his figures a liveliness and individuality quite unlike Byzantine portraiture. Duccio was a master of narrative, his finest work, the *Maestà,* painted for Siena Cathedral, consisting of 26 scenes from the Passion of Christ. He used much gold and surface pattern. An earlier work of his, the *Rucellai Madonna*, in Florence, was once ascribed to *Cimabue.

Duchamp, Marcel (1887–1968). French-American painter. Associated with several modern movements including Futurism and Cubism, he became one of the leading Dadaists, the anti-aesthetics, anti-'art' protesters and precursors of Surrealism. His *Nude Descending a Staircase* (two versions, 1913) caused a sensation in New York in 1913. He lived in the US from 1915 and spent eight years working on *The Bride Stripped Bare by her Bachelors Even* (1915–23, Philadelphia), a famous and controversial 3-metre-high glass and metal composition. He became an American citizen in 1955.

Lebel, R., *Marcel Duchamp*. 1959.

Duda, Andrzej Sebastian (1972–). Polish politician, born in Kraków. Head of the Law and Justice Party, he was a conservative nationalist and President of Poland 2015– . He worked closely with *Xi and *Trump but outraged *Netanyahu by denying that Poland had any complicity in the Holocaust. He opposed gender equality and gay rights.

Dudamel (Ramirez), Gustavo Adolfo (1981–). Venezuelan conductor and violinist. He was an outstanding product of El Sistema, the music education program, begun in 1975 by **José Antonio Abreu** (1939–2018), which has trained many thousands of young instrumentalists to professional standards. Dudamel conducted the Simón Bolívar Orchestra 1999– and was appointed as music director of the Los Angeles Philharmonic 2009– .

Dudley, Edmund (c.1462–1510). English lawyer. One of the main instruments through whom *Henry VII made his financial exactions, he was executed by *Henry VIII. His son, John Dudley, became Duke of *Northumberland. John's elder son, Lord Guildford Dudley, married and shared the fate of Lady Jane *Grey, and his younger son became Elizabeth's favourite, the Earl of *Leicester.

Dufay, Guillaume (c.1400–1474). Flemish composer, probably born in Hainaut. Founder of the Burgundian School, a chorister at Cambrai Cathedral (1409), c.1420 he entered the service of Carlo Malatesta of Rimini, and in 1428 became a member of the Papal Choir at Rome. As a canon of Cambrai (from 1426), he supervised the cathedral music. The greatest composer of his time of Church and secular music, he created the style which is characteristic of the Burgundian composers and links late medieval music with that of the Renaissance, and the later Franco-Flemish composers. His works include 87 motets, 59 French chansons and seven Masses.

Dufferin and Ava, Frederick Temple Hamilton-Temple-Blackwood, 1st Marquess of (1826–1902). British politician and diplomat, born in Florence. A great-grandson of *Sheridan, he was educated at Eton and Oxford, held junior office under *Russell, *Palmerston and *Gladstone, and was Governor-General of Canada 1872–78 and Ambassador to Russia 1879–81. As Ambassador to the Ottoman Empire 1881–84, he went to Egypt and was involved in the reconstruction (*Cromer) after the defeat of Arabi Pasha's rebellion (1882). As Viceroy of India 1884–88, he dealt diplomatically with the Russian threat through Afghanistan and was confronted with the quarrel with King Thibaw of Upper Burma, which led to that country's annexation. His career ended with two more ambassadorial posts, in Rome 1888–91 and Paris 1891–96. He died under a cloud after the collapse of the London and Globe Finance Corporation (1901), which he chaired.

Du Fu (Tu Fu in Wade-Giles) (712–770). Chinese poet, born in Honan Province. He came from a family of scholars and public servants under the Tang dynasty but failed examinations and suffered professional frustration, isolation and poverty. He met and admired *Li Bo and may have been a Daoist. Generally considered the greatest of all Chinese poets, his densely packed 'regulated verse' is full of haunting images, such as his self-description as a 'shabby parrot'.

Hung, W. *Tu Fu, China's Greatest Poet.* 1952.

Dufy, Raoul (1877–1953). French painter. One of the original 'Fauves' (*Derain, *Matisse), Dufy was noted for his varied use of colour, lively subjects (e.g. race meetings, regattas, flag-bedecked streets) and simplified form. He also designed wall decorations, textiles and ceramics. His drawing is swift and calligraphic. His *La Fée electricité* (1936–37), the world's biggest mural (60m x 10m), is now in the Musée d'Art Moderne, Paris.

Cogniat, R., *Raoul Dufy*. 1962.

Du Gard, Roger Martin (1881–1958). French novelist and dramatist. He won the 1937 Nobel Prize for Literature for his long series of novels about middle-class life in France, *Les Thibault* (1922–40).

Du Guesclin, Bertrand *see* **Guesclin, Bertrand du**

Duhamel, Georges (1884–1966). French novelist. He studied medicine, and his *La Vie des Martyrs* (1917) describes his experiences as an army surgeon in World War I. Among his best known novels are those in the *Chronique des Pasquier* (10 vols, 1933–43), in which every character in the circle of the Pasquier family is portrayed with observation, humour and understanding. Duhamel was elected to the Académie française in 1935.

Dukakis, Michael Stanley (1933–). American Democratic politician. Of Greek descent, he was educated at Harvard, became a lawyer and lectured at Harvard 1979–82. He was Governor of Massachusetts 1975–79, 1983–91, and defeated Jesse *Jackson to win the Democratic nomination for president in 1988. He was beaten by George H. W. *Bush.

Dukas, Paul Abraham (1865–1935). French composer. He studied and afterwards taught (1910–13, 1928–35) at the Paris Conservatoire. The orchestral piece *The Sorcerer's Apprentice* (1897) is his best known work. The opera *Ariadne and Bluebeard* (1907), based on *Maeterlinck's play, and the dance-poem *La Peri* (1912) are still performed.

Dulles, John Foster (1888–1959). American lawyer and diplomat, born in Washington. Son of a Presbyterian minister, he was educated at Princeton University and the Sorbonne. Two relatives were Secretary of State: his grandfather John W. Foster and uncle Robert *Lansing. He practised law in

New York from 1911 but developed a keen interest in foreign affairs, in which, through a number of official and unofficial posts, he gradually became an acknowledged expert. Thomas *Dewey appointed him to a vacancy as US Senator 1949, but he lost the ensuing election. Although a Republican he was employed (1950–51) by President *Truman to negotiate the treaty with Japan, and when *Eisenhower won the presidency he became Secretary of State 1953–59. His resistance to any concession to the communist countries, carried sometimes to the brink of war (hence the word 'brinkmanship' applied to his tactics) sometimes alarmed his allies. Britain and France were angered by his strong opposition to their Suez intervention in 1956. Colon cancer forced him to resign. His son, **Avery Robert Dulles** (1918–2008), became a Catholic, a Jesuit theologian and a Cardinal. His brother, **Allan Welsh Dulles** (1893–1969), was director of the Central Intelligence Agency, 1953–61.

Hooper, T., *The Devil and John Foster Dulles*. 1973.

Dumas, Alexandre (1803–1870). French novelist, known as Dumas *père*. His father, the illegitimate son of the Marquis de la Pailleterie, dropped this name for that of Dumas, the name of Alexandre's mother, a woman of African descent. His father was a general in the Revolutionary armies who left his family in poverty. Alexandre came to Paris to seek his fortune, which he achieved with a number of long-forgotten historical melodramas. From 1836 he turned to historical romances and built up what amounted to a factory for their production. In a single year (1844) it is said that more than 40 complete works were issued. 1500 novels were published under his name, most by hackwriters (his *nègres*). Dumas used his astonishing fertility of invention to supply plots, outline the sequence of events and write any purple passages that were required: a motley and changing collection of assistants did the rest. Nevertheless the best of his books have that remarkable gusto and vitality, which are Dumas' own special contribution. Foremost are *The Three Musketeers* (1844) with its sequels *Twenty Years After* (1845) and *The Viscount of Bragelonne* (1850). Of almost equal popularity are *The Count of Monte Cristo* (1845), *The Man in the Iron Mask* (1845), *The Queen's Necklace* and *Black Tulip* (both of 1848). His vitality spread to other fields, he travelled widely, made love prodigiously, and took part in the wars of Italian reunification (1859–60).

Craig Bell, A., *Alexandre Dumas*. 1950.

Dumas, Alexandre (1825–1894). French playwright, known as Dumas *fils*. Illegitimate son of the elder *Dumas, of the many successful plays he wrote between 1852 and 1887, only one, the first (which began as a novel), *La Dame aux Camelias* (1852), is still remembered. It is the affecting love story of a dying courtesan, and later provided a magnificent part for Sarah *Bernhardt, and Greta *Garbo on film. *Verdi's opera *La Traviata* (1853) was based on the play. Although, like his father, the younger Dumas led an irregular life, all his plays point a moral, made abundantly clear (from 1867) in provocative prefaces. Dumas *fils* was elected to the Académie française in 1875.

Du Maurier, Dame Daphne (1907–1989). English novelist and playwright, born in London. Daughter of Sir Gerald *Du Maurier, in 1932 she married (Sir) Frederick Browning, later a general. Her sexuality is mysterious but she and her father had a mutual obsession. Her novels, usually stories with a Gothic or menacing theme are mostly set in Cornwall, where she lived. They include *The Loving Spirit* (1931), her first, and *Rebecca* (1938), her most successful. Alfred *Hitchcock filmed *Jamaica Inn* (1939), *Rebecca* (1940) and *The Birds* (1963) and Nicolas Roeg *Don't Look Now* (1973). Other works (some also filmed) include *Frenchman's Creek* (1942), *My Cousin Rachel* (1951), *The Scapegoat* (1957) and her father's biography *Gerald* (1934).

Du Maurier, George Louis Palmella Busson (1834–1896). English novelist and cartoonist, born in Paris. In London from 1860, he illustrated several books and became a cartoonist on *Punch*. He also wrote the novels *Peter Ibbetson* (1892) and *Trilby* (1894), the story of the hypnotist Svengali, later dramatised and filmed several times. His son, **Sir Gerald Du Maurier** (1873–1934), was a famous London theatrical manager and actor, knighted in 1923, noted for his delicate understatement in comedies.

Ormond, L., *George du Maurier*. 1969.

Dumont d'Urville, Jules-Sebastian-César (1790–1842). French navigator and naturalist. He brought the Venus de Milo to France (1820) and *Charles X to England (1830). He explored the Pacific (1826–29) and Antarctic waters (1838–39, 1840), sighting Terre Adélie, named for his wife. He was killed, with his family, at Meudon in France's first major railway accident.

Dumouriez, Charles François (1739–1823). French soldier. He served with distinction in the Seven Years War, but it is as the general who saved Revolutionary France from the Prussians and Austrians that he is remembered. By skilful manoeuvres he stemmed the enemy onrush in Champagne and after he had successfully withstood the Prussian cannonade at Valmy (September 1792) he forced a retreat. He followed this up with a victory (November 1792) at Jemappes near Mons, which put the Austrian Netherlands (Belgium) in French power, but in the next year he was defeated near the Belgian village of Neerwinden and, in fear of the consequences, defected to the enemy, settling in England in 1804.

Dunant, (Jean) **Henry** (or **Henri**) (1828–1910). Swiss philanthropist, born in Geneva. Founder of the Red Cross, he organised emergency aid services

for those wounded in the Battle of Solferino (1859), and proposed in *Un Souvenir de Solferino* (1862) the formation of voluntary relief societies in all countries. He also advocated an international agreement relating to war wounded. In February 1863 the International Committee of the Red Cross was established and the first conference, with representation from 16 nations, was held in October. The first Geneva Convention was adopted in August 1864.

Dunant was regarded as too ambitious and idealistic by pragmatists on the committee and he became isolated. His business ventures in Algeria collapsed, he was forced into bankruptcy in 1867 and left Geneva, never to return, living in Paris 1870–74. He founded the Common Relief Society and the Common Alliance for Order and Civilization. He argued for the abolition of slavery, disarmament, creating an international court arbitration, fair treatment of prisoners of war, the creation of an independent Palestine and a 'world library', which anticipated both UNESCO and the internet. Originally a Calvinist, he became deeply anti-clerical.

Between 1875 and 1895, he was isolated, forgotten, and assumed dead. From 1892 he lived alone in a nursing home at Heiden, where he died, and which is now a museum. He was 'rediscovered' by a newspaper interview in 1895, which was reprinted throughout Europe. He received many honours and shared the first Nobel Peace Prize in 1901, with Frédéric *Passy, a pacifist. He spent none of his prize money. He was, understandably, paranoid and depressive in his last decades, pursued by creditors. He insisted that there should be no funeral ceremony: 'I wish to be carried to my grave like a dog … I am a disciple of Christ as in the first century, and nothing more.' He was buried in Zürich.

The Henry Dunant Medal, created in 1963, funded by Australia, is the highest international award by Red Cross.

Pandit, H. N., *The Red Cross and Henry Dunant*. 1969.

Dunbar, William (c.1459–c.1513). Scottish 'makar' (i.e. poet), probably born in East Lothian. He studied at St Andrews University, was ordained as a priest, served on some diplomatic missions, then, from 1500, in the court of *James IV was a well-paid 'servitour'. He wrote voluminously in Scots and his poetry appeared in the first books printed in Scotland (1508). About 90 of his poems survive, and his range is exceptionally diverse: religious ('The Dance of the Sevin Deidlie Synnis'), contemplative, courtly love, commemorative ('The Thrissil and the Rois'), satirical, comic and scurrilous. 'The Lament for the Makaris' mourns of *Chaucer and his successors. Dunbar was a metrical artist, who wrote with vigour, enjoyment and with humour, sometimes of a Rabelaisian kind.

Scott, T., *Dunbar*. 1966; Bawcutt, P., *The Poems of William Dunbar*. 1999.

Duncan I (Donnchad mac Crinain) (c.1001–c.1040). King of Scots 1034–40. He succeeded his grandfather, Malcolm II, but little is known of him except for his murder by *Macbeth, which provided the theme for *Shakespeare's tragedy.

Duncan, Isadora (1878–1927). American dancer. She lived in Europe from 1906 and her interpretative dancing, with bare feet and in flowing draperies, caused a sensation, as did her eccentric behaviour. She married the Russian poet Sergei *Yesenin (1922) but they separated in 1923. She died in an accident when her scarf caught in the wheel of a moving car.

Duncan, I., *Isadora*. 1968.

Dundas, Henry, 1st Viscount Melville (1742–1811). Scottish politician, born in Edinburgh. Lawyer, active in the Scottish Enlightenment, he won a judgment in 1776 declaring slavery illegal in Scotland. MP 1774–1802, he was a close ally of *Pitt and held Cabinet office 1782–1801; 1804–05, with responsibilities for Admiralty, India, War and Home Affairs. He became the most powerful politician in Scotland. In 1792 he succeeded in amending *Wilberforce's bill to abolish the slave trade by inserting the word 'gradual'. His partisans argue that he acted pragmatically to secure the bill's passage, while detractors insist that he extended the slave trade for another fifteen years, to 1807. His statue, on a huge plinth, dominates central Edinburgh and is the subject of ongoing, bitter controversy about his ambiguous role.

Dundee, John Graham of Claverhouse, 1st Viscount (known as 'Bonnie Dundee') (1649–1689). Scottish soldier. He won the name 'Bonnie Dundee' when, after the revolution that brought *William III and *Mary to the throne, he raised the Highlanders in the cause of *James II. At the battle fought in the pass of Killiecrankie, Perthshire, he out-manoeuvred and out-fought the enemy but was killed in the moment of victory. Earlier in his career the Scottish Presbyterians, whom he harried by order of the royal government, had bestowed on him the sobriquet of 'Bloody Claverhouse', but he does not seem to have shown exceptional cruelty by the standards of the time.

Scott, A.M., *Bonnie Dundee*. 1989.

Dundonald 10th Earl *see* **Cochrane, Thomas**

Dunlop, Sir (Ernest) **Edward** ('Weary') (1907–1993). Australian surgeon. He acquired heroic status for his leadership of Australian prisoners of war held by the Japanese in Java and on the Thailand-Burma railway, recorded in *The War Diaries of Weary Dunlop* (1986). He urged reconciliation with the Japanese and closer links between Australia and Asia.

Ebury, S., *Weary; the Life of Sir Edward Dunlop*. 1995.

Dunlop, John Boyd (1840–1921). Scottish inventor. Originally a veterinary surgeon, he invented (1887) the first successful pneumatic tyre, made of rubber tubing bound with linen tape, as a result of trying to improve one of his son's toys. The invention was patented in 1888 and in 1889 he was associated with Harvey du Gros (to whom he later assigned the patent) in setting up a factory in Dublin. Dunlop himself never made a large sum from his invention, nor was he closely associated with its development.

Dunois, Jean d'Orléans, Comte de (1402–1468). French soldier. Natural son of Louis, brother of *Charles VI, he was known as the 'Bastard of Orléans'. Comrade-in-arms of *Joan of Arc, he was the most successful of the French leaders who fought the English in France. He defended Orléans until the French, inspired by Joan, forced the English to raise the siege, and, in 1429, won with her the Battle of Patay. After Joan's death he took Chartres, freed Paris, and had soon reduced the English hold on France to Normandy and Guienne; the former he regained in 1448–50, the latter in 1455.

Duns Scotus, Johannes (c.1265–1308). Scottish theologian, born near Roxburgh. He joined (c.1280) the Franciscans at Dumfries and was ordained priest at Northampton in 1291. By this time he seems to have been studying at Oxford and spent almost all the rest of his life studying or teaching there and in Paris and, briefly, just before he died, at Cologne. His work consisted mainly of commentaries on the Bible, *Aristotle and the *Sentences* of Peter *Lombard. He gained an immense reputation for learning and owed his appellation *doctor subtilis* to the manner in which he criticised Thomas *Aquinas' views concerning the harmony of faith and reason. He argued that assent to such concepts as the immortality of the soul cannot be attained by reason but must spring from a wish to believe. In theology he was orthodox and gave the strongest support to the doctrine of the Virgin Mary's Immaculate Conception. Realism was the basis of his philosophy and he accepted the theory that a universal matter forms a common basis of everything that exists. His followers assailed the new learning of Renaissance humanists and in turn were attacked for pedantry and casuistry. The word 'dunce', derived from his name, thus unfairly came to mean a blockhead.

Dunstable (or **Dunstaple), John** (d.c.1453). English composer. He worked for the English courts in England and France, under the patronage of the Duke of *Bedford. Rhythmically and harmonically radical, interested in mathematics and astrology, he challenged *Pythagoras' harmony by writing chords using 3rds and 6ths.

Dunstan, St (c.924–988). English prelate and statesman, born at Glastonbury. Abbot of Glastonbury for many years, after *Athelstan's death (939), Dunstan's advice was constantly sought by his successors, but it was only when *Edgar became king (959) that, as Archbishop of Canterbury, he attained full power. A great scholar himself, he encouraged education, but his greatest achievements were the revival of monasticism and association of the monasteries with the life of the lay community. The peace and prosperity associated with Edgar's reign was largely due to Dunstan's influence.

Duckett, E. S., *Saint Dunstan of Canterbury*. 1955.

Dunstan, Don(ald Allan) (1926–1999). Australian Labor politician, born in Fiji. Premier of South Australia 1967–68, 1970–79 he had a national reputation as a reformer, campaigning against White Australia, sexual discrimination and the death penalty, and promoting Indigenous causes, multiculturalism and the arts.

Duparc, (Marie Eugène) **Henri** (1848–1933). French composer. He studied law, then composition under *Franck, and destroyed all his works except for 13 magnificent songs (1868–84). From the age of 36 he was crippled by hyperaesthesia and withdrew to the country, maintaining an interest in literature, painting and his family.

Dupleix, Joseph François (1697–1763). French administrator. When he was 23 years old his father, a shareholder in the French East India Company, arranged for him to be given a post on the Council at Pondicherry, the company's headquarters near Madras. He was so successful there, and later in Bengal, that in 1741 he was made Governor-General of all the French Indies. He now set about the fulfilment of his great ambition of creating a French empire in India. To this end he impressed the Indians by adopting oriental luxury, intervened in the local intrigues and supported, with diplomacy and troops, rulers in Hyderabad and the Carnatic upon whom he could rely. War between France and England, and Clive's military victories, transformed the situation and as Dupleix's difficulties increased his enemies in Paris became increasingly active until in 1754 he was recalled. He died in 1763 with his reputation tarnished and fortune gone.

Du Pont de Nemours, Eleuthère Irénée (1771–1834). French-American industrialist, born in Paris. His father, **Pierre Samuel du Pont de Nemours** (1739–1817), a Huguenot, political economist and publisher, was a moderate Jacobin, arrested during the Reign of Terror. Eleuthère had studied chemistry in Paris with *Lavoisier. In 1799 the family left France, arriving in Rhode Island on 1 January 1800. In April 1801 Eleuthère established E. I. du Pont de Nemours & Company and began setting up Eleutherian Mills at Wilmington, Delaware, where from 1804 gunpowder, vastly superior in quality, was manufactured and soon dominated the US market.

The DuPont corporation was a major shareholder in General Motors (GM) 1914–57, produced explosives, herbicides, paints, and refrigerants, was involved with the development of the atomic bomb, developed polymers, including nylon, Teflon, Kevlar, orlon, and lycra, then ventured into electronics and agribusiness. In Germany, DuPont gave early support to the Nazi regime.

The du Pont family withdrew from corporate management in the 1960s, but continued to promote horticulture, heritage preservation, thoroughbred horses and support charities.

Durant, William C(rapo) (1861–1947). American industrialist. A speculator and promoter, he worked with David *Buick and founded General Motors in 1908 as a cooperative, decentralised competitor to *Ford, including such brand names as Chevrolet, Buick, Pontiac and Oldsmobile. He lost control of GM (1920) and the corporation had to be rescued by the *du Ponts.

Durant, Will(iam James) (1885–1981). American historian. Educated at Columbia University, his *The Story of Philosophy* (1926) became a bestseller. His 11-volume series *The Story of Civilization* (1935–75), completed with his wife **Ariel Durant** (née Chaya Kaufman) (1898–1981), was detailed, comprehensive, analytical, tolerant and readable, reflecting their socialist utopianism.

Dürer, Albrecht (1471–1528). German painter and engraver, born in Nuremberg. Son of an immigrant Hungarian goldsmith, he was apprenticed to Martin Wolgemut, a painter and engraver. He travelled in Italy, Germany, Switzerland and possibly the Netherlands, contributing woodcuts to the *Nuremberg Chronicle* (1493) and about 70 to Sebastian *Brant's *The Ship of Fools* (1494). In 1494 he returned to Nuremberg to marry Agnes Frey and they were unhappy every after. He won an early reputation for engravings, woodcuts and book illustration, but his transition to painting was extraordinary. His *Self-portrait* (1498), now in the Prado, is an assured, even arrogant, masterpiece showing confidence in his capacity and social standing. Most of his life was spent in Nuremberg, except for visits to Venice (1494–95 and 1505–07), after which his paintings (e.g. the *Rosenkranz altar-piece*, and *The Ascension of the Virgin* and the later 'Four Apostles', now in Munich), show the marked influence of Venetian painters such as Giovanni *Bellini. The best of his portraits suggest the simplicity of sculpture, and his characterisation can, at least, be compared with that of *Holbein.

In general, Dürer stands between the Gothic and Renaissance periods, more interested in new techniques than new subjects. This is especially evident in his woodcuts and engravings, where the medieval preoccupation with the macabre is often combined with mathematical exactitude in reproducing the proportions of the human figure and a mastery of perspective. By a number of technical improvements he was able, too, to give a much greater flexibility to these branches of his art. His most important engravings include *The Knight, Death and the Devil* (1513), *Melancholia* (*Melencolia I*) and *St Jerome in His Study* (both 1514). In woodcuts he abandons the colour of tradition and achieves contrast by making the figures stand out from a hatched background. He used the woodcut process even for pictures of great size. *The Triumphal Arch of the Emperor* contained 92 blocks and was over 3m. high. His output was enormous, with book illustrating and designing for the fine arts to be added to his other works. In addition, over 1,000 drawings exist in the great public collections of the world. His animal and plant studies in watercolour are the first known. He wrote treatises on artistic theory, and a diary.

Wölfflin, H., *The Art of Albrecht Dürer*. 1971; Campbell-Hutchinson, J., *Albrecht Dürer: A Biography.* 1990; Bartrum, J., *Albrecht Dürer and his Legacy.* 2002; Wolf, N., *Albrecht Dürer.* 2010.

Durham, John George Lambton, 1st Earl of (1792–1840). English administrator. He came of an old Durham family and was MP for the county 1813–28, when he was created a baron (the earldom came in 1833). 'Radical Jack', as he came to be called, was one of the most progressive members in the Cabinet of his father-in-law, the Whig leader Lord *Grey, and he took a prominent part in the drafting of the Reform Bill (1832). After a short spell as Ambassador to Russia 1835–37, he was appointed Governor-General of the provinces of Canada (1838) with a mission to report and advise on the situation arising from the French-Canadian rebellion. E. G. *Wakefield was one of his advisors. The famous Durham Report (1839) recommended the union of Upper and Lower Canada, as a means of integrating the English and French, and local self-government for all the provinces. He also envisaged the federation of the provinces, which took place in 1867.

Cooper, L., *Radical Jack*. 1959.

Durrell, Lawrence George (1912–1990). British novelist and poet. He spent part of his youth in Corfu, and during World War II was a press officer in several parts of the Middle East. This background helped him to write a highly successful series of novels *The Alexandria Quartet* (1956–59) beginning with *Justine*, which gave a vivid and atmospheric portrayal of Alexandria, and some of the odder personalities among its inhabitants. His brother **Gerald Durrell** (1925–1995), author and naturalist, wrote *My Family and Other Animals* (1956) and similar books describing their life in Corfu. He founded the Jersey Wildlife Preservation Trust in 1963.

Dürrenmatt, Friedrich (1921–1990). Swiss playwright and novelist. His tragi-comic plays include *Romulus the Great* (1949), *The Marriage of Mr. Mississippi* (1952), *The Visit* (1956) and *The Physicists* (1962).

Duryea, Charles Edgar (1861–1938) and **J**(ames) **Frank** (1869–1967). American automobile pioneers and inventors, born in Illinois. In September 1893, in Springfield, Mass., the brothers produced the first US motor vehicle, with a one-cylinder internal combustion engine, just ahead of Henry *Ford. The brothers quarrelled bitterly with each other over claims to priority.

Duse, Eleonora (1859–1924). Italian actor. She came of a family of Venetian actors, appeared on the stage at the age of four, played Juliet when she was 14, and at the age of 20 was acclaimed as great. Thereafter, whether in Italy or in the capitals and great cities of the world, where she frequently toured, her fame was rivalled only by that of Sarah *Bernhardt. She thought *Ibsen the greatest dramatist of her time and played many of his parts, *Maeterlinck's plays too, attracted her, while her love for the poet Gabriele *D'Annunzio, the subject of his novel *Il Fuoco* (1900), made her the ideal interpreter of his dramatic poems.

Signorelli, O., *Eleonora Duse*. 1959.

Duterte, Rodrigo Rao (also known as **Digong**) (1945–). Filipino lawyer and politician. He boasted of his role in extra-judicial killings of suspected drug offenders, became Mayor of Davao City 2013–16 and a popular hero. He was President of the Philippines 2016–22, the oldest person to have been elected, and the first from Mindinao. His claims to have killed drug dealers seem to have been exaggerated. His daughter **Sara Zimmerman Duterte-Carpio** (1978–) became Vice President of the Philippines 2022– .

Dutilleux, Henri (1916–2013). French composer. His music, reflecting the influences of *Debussy, *Ravel, *Stravinsky and *Bartók, brilliantly orchestrated and imaginative, includes a violin concerto written for Isaac *Stern, a cello concerto for *Rostropovich, two symphonies, chamber music, piano works, song cycles and *Mystère de l'instant* (1989) for strings, percussion and cembalon.

Dutton, Peter Craig (1970–). Australian Liberal politician, born in Brisbane. After service in the Queensland police, he was a Federal MP 2001– and a minister under *Abbott, *Turnbull and *Morrison. He took a hard line on asylum seekers, became an icon of the Right, challenged Turnbull's prime ministership but lost narrowly to Scott Morrison. He became Liberal Leader 2022– , after Morrison's heavy defeat, promising to reveal his gentler characteristics.

Duval, Claude (1643–1670). French highwayman. He went to England at the restoration of *Charles II, and by the gallant manner and daring with which he carried out his robberies became a hero of ballad and legend. He was hanged at Tyburn.

Duvalier, François (1907–1971). Haitian politician. Known as 'Papa Doc', and a physician by profession, he did much good work in combating malaria before entering politics. Before becoming President (the sixth in 10 months) in 1957 he had held the ministries of Labour and Public Health. Once in power his personality seemed to change. He violated the constitution by extending his term of office, became increasingly dictatorial in his methods and, unable to trust the army, he raised a force of brutal police known as the Tonton Macoute ('bogeymen'), to bolster his reign of terror. His son **Jean-Claude Duvalier** (1951–2014), known as 'Baby Doc', succeeded as President for Life 1971–86, moderated his father's excesses but was exiled (February 1986).

Diederich, B. and Burt, A., *Papa Doc! Haiti and its Dictator François Duvalier*. 1972.

Duveen, Joseph, 1st Baron Duveen (1869–1939). English art dealer, born in Hull. His father **Sir Joseph Joel Duveen** (1843–1906), born in the Netherlands, was a successful importer, who financed the Turner wing at the Tate Gallery (opened 1910) and presented many paintings to the nation. The son achieved an almost legendary success in inducing European owners to sell, and wealthy Americans to buy, many of the most important pictures in the world still in private possession. He continued the family tradition of making munificent gifts to British public collections and received a knighthood in 1919, baronetcy in 1927 and peerage in 1933. His role in the remorseless cleaning of the Parthenon (a.k.a. Elgin) marbles in the British Museum became notorious.

Behrman, S. N., *Duveen*. 1952; Secrest, M., *Duveen: A Life in Art.* 2005.

Dvořák, Antonin Leopold (1841–1904). Czech (Bohemian) composer, born near Prague. Son of a butcher and innkeeper, familiar from boyhood with the folk music of the countryside, he learnt to play the organ, piano and viola, studied at the Prague Organ School (later the Conservatoire), and at 21 became a viola player (under *Smetana) in the orchestra of the National Theatre. His overture to an opera, *King and Charcoal Burner*, secured his first public recognition. From 1880 he was a friend of *Brahms, who admired his early works, helped to secure their publication and tried to persuade him to live in Vienna. In his vigorous and warmly emotional music, Dvořák extensively used Czech and Moravian folk dances; his *Slavonic Rhapsodies* were performed throughout Europe and America. He wrote 14 operas, few still in the repertoire. However, *Wagner's works encouraged a late revival of interest with *Dimitrij* (1882), *Jacobin* (1897), *Kate and the Devil* (1899), *Rusalka* (1900) and *Armida* (1903). Other works include 12 string quartets, the exhilarating Piano Quintet No. 2 (1887), many songs, e.g. *Songs my mother taught me* and religious music, e.g. *Stabat Mater* (1883). From 1884 he visited England seven times and wrote *The Spectre's Bride*, the *Requiem*, an oratorio, *St Ludmilla*, and Symphony No. 7 in D minor especially for English audiences. He conducted in Russia in 1890

and received an honorary doctorate from Cambridge in 1891. Director of the New York National Conservatorium 1892–95, works from this period include the most performed of his nine symphonies, No. 9 in E Minor, *From the New World* (1893), String Quartet in F major, *The American* (1893) and Cello Concerto in B Minor, Op. 104 (1895), the greatest in the repertoire. Dvořák was exposed to, and influenced by, African-American and First Nations music. He directed the Prague Conservatoire 1901–04.

Hughes, G., *Dvořák. His Life and Music*. 1967; Butterworth, N., *Dvořák, his life and times*. 1980; Horowitz, J., *Dvořák in America*. 2003; Taruskin, R., *Music in the Nineteenth Century*. 2010.

Dyck, Sir Anthony Van *see* **Van Dyck, Sir Anthony**

Dyer, Reginald Edward Harry (1864–1927). British soldier, born in Murree, Pakistan. He rose to the rank of brigadier in the Indian army. In April 1919, in the Sikh holy city of Amritsar, following a general strike, Dyer ordered his troops, without provocation or warning, to machine gun crowds at a festival in the Jallianwala Bagh gardens. There was a high death toll: 379 in the British account, more than 1,000 in the Indian. The Amritsar massacre transformed *Gandhi's role and he began his campaign to end British rule in India. Dyer had strong imperialist supporters in Britain, but was censured and forced to retire in 1920. Even *Churchill condemned him, but *Kipling remained a supporter.

Wagner, W. A., *Amritsar 1919: An Empire of Fear and the Making of a Massacre*. 2019.

Dylan, Bob (né Robert Zimmerman) (1941–). American singer and composer, born in Duluth. Minnesota. After a turbulent childhood, he travelled round the country, imitating the folk singer Woody Guthrie in his life and singing style. He adopted his professional name from the poet Dylan *Thomas. He first performed professionally in coffeehouses, but was not recognised as a musician of real talent until the release of his first record albums (1962–64). Two of his songs, *Blowin' in the Wind* and *The Times They are A Changin'* were adopted by the civil rights movement. His melodies and angry and sometimes cynical lyrics were tremendously popular and he became a cult figure. Some of his songs were considered by critics to be serious poetry (e.g. in *Highway 61 Revisited*, 1965). In 1965 he adopted electronic instruments and a new musical form: folk rock. After a motorcycle accident, he released an album *John Wesley Harding* (1968) which furthered his growing tendency to introspection and used country and western arrangements, as did his *Nashville Skyline* (1969). The 1970s saw what some consider to be some of his finest mature work, e.g. in the albums *Blood on The Tracks* (1974) and *Desire* (1975). In 1979 Dylan, now divorced, professed himself to be a Christian. Awarded the Nobel Prize in Literature 2016 'for having created new poetic expressions within the great American song tradition', he was slow to acknowledge it.

Grey, M., *Song and Dance Man*. 1973.

Dyson, Sir Frank Watson (1868–1939). English astronomer. Educated at Trinity College, Cambridge, he worked on the distribution and movement of the stars and with the structure of the universe. As Astronomer Royal 1910–33, he persuaded the BBC (1924) to broadcast the six pip signals that were the first accurate time checks available to the general public. In observing an eclipse of the sun in Brazil in 1919 he tested and confirmed *Einstein's theory of the effect of gravity on the path of light.

Dyson, Freeman John (1923–2020). Anglo-American theoretical physicist and mathematician. Son of the composer George Dyson, he was educated at Cambridge, and worked at the Institute of Advanced Study, Princeton, from 1952, and had an exceptional range of disciplines, notably quantum field theory, prime numbers and space exploration. He was a contrarian on many issues (including climate change and ESP) and was a powerful writer.

Schewe, P. F., *Maverick Genius*. 2013.

Dyson, Sir James (1947–). English inventor and industrial designer. His inventions include the 'dual cyclone' bagless vacuum cleaner, the air-blade hand dryer and a hairdryer. Elected FRS in 2015 and given the OM in 2016, he supported Brexit.

Dzerzhinsky, Felix Edmundovich (1877–1926). Russian Communist politician. Of Polish noble descent, he was imprisoned for revolutionary activities several times, and was the first head of the post-revolutionary secret police (Cheka) 1917–24, and of its successors the OGPU and GPU.

E

Eakins, Thomas (1844–1916). American painter, photographer and sculptor, born Philadelphia, Pennsylvania. He studied art and anatomy, then studied in Paris under Jean-Leon Gérome at the École des Beaux-Arts (1866–69). He then visited Spain and was deeply influenced by the works of *Velázquez and *Ribera. Returning to the US, he was professor of, and lecturer on, anatomy and painting at Pennsylvania Academy. A realist, called 'the American Courbet', his most famous picture *The Gross Clinic* (1875) provoked great revulsion, though his paintings are for the most part portraits of friends and depictions of outdoor sports. He was criticised for his teaching innovations which included working from live nude models. His unwillingness to abandon the use of models resulted in his resignation in 1896. He was deeply interested in multiple image photography.

Eames, Charles (1907–1978). American industrial designer. Trained as an architect, he designed the 'Eames chair' (1946), moulded plywood supported by a tubular metal frame. His industrial and domestic creations were universally adopted.

Eames, Robin Henry Alexander, Baron Eames (1936–). Irish prelate. Anglican Primate of All Ireland and Archbishop of Armagh 1986–2006, he received the OM (2007), presumably in recognition as his role as a reconciler both in doctrinal and community issues.

Earhart, Amelia Mary (1898–1937?). American aviator. A nurse, then a social worker, she married the publisher George P. Putnam in 1931. She was the first woman to fly solo across the Atlantic (1932) and from Hawaii to California (1935). She disappeared between New Guinea and Howland Island on an attempted round the world flight with Fred Noonan in a Lockheed Electra 10E. Her fate was the subject of extensive speculation, including capture and execution by the Japanese, or defection to the Japanese, becoming a US spy, assuming a new identity. There is an extensive literature. Claims that bones found on Nikumaroro Island are hers are controversial. She has been much memorialised.

Davis, B., *Amelia Earhart*. 1977.

Early, Jubal Anderson (1816–1894). American soldier, born in Virginia. A lawyer, he rose to the rank of Lieutenant General in the Confederate army in the Civil War. He made a rapid advance down the Shenandoah Valley in July 1864, which threatened Washington. He continued to be valuable in several campaigns and proved a formidable opponent even when his forces were outnumbered. After 1865 he fled to Mexico, then Canada, returning to practise law. He refused to swear an oath of allegiance to the US Government.

Eastman, George (1854–1932). American inventor. His invention of the first practicable roll film (1884) and his development of cheap, mass-produced 'Kodak' cameras made photography a popular hobby. Experiments conducted jointly with *Edison did much to overcome the early difficulties of making motion pictures. He gave away $125 million: major beneficiaries were the Massachusetts Institute of Technology, the University of Rochester and the Eastman School of Music. He never married, and shot himself in the heart after two years suffering from an agonising spinal deterioration.

Brayer, E., *George Eastman*. 1995.

Eastwood, Clint (1930–). American film actor and director. The films he directed include *Play Misty for Me* (1971), *Firefox* (1982), *Bird* (1988), *Unforgiven* (1992), *Midnight in the Garden of Good and Evil* (1997), *Mystic River* (2003) and *Million Dollar Baby* (2004). As an actor, he starred as 'Dirty Harry' in a series of five films, and *In the Line of Fire* (1993).

Ebert, Friedrich (1871–1925). German Socialist politician, born in Heidelberg. A saddler by trade, and a lapsed Catholic, he became a journalist, secretary-general of the SDP 1905–19, and a Reichstag member 1912–19. When August *Bebel died, he became joint leader of the SDP in 1913, and voted (reluctantly) for war credits. The SDP split three ways in 1917, with Ebert leading the anti-Communists. When the Imperial Government collapsed, he became Chancellor (November 1918–February 1919) and Prime Minister of Prussia for two days (November 1918). The armed forces, encouraged by *Gröner, supported a Black-Red-Gold (Catholic Centre, Democrat and SDP) coalition in 1919, and Ebert was elected first President of the German Republic 1919–25. His rule was compromised from the outset, using the army and a *Freikorps*, units of unemployed ex-soldiers, in 1919 to crush the Spartacists (Rosa *Luxemburg) and suppress a Socialist Republic in Bavaria. He died of appendicitis.

Peters, M., *Friedrich Ebert*. 1954.

Eça de Queirós, José Maria de (1845–1900). Portuguese novelist, born in Pavoa do Varzim. He graduated in law from Coimbra University (1866) and settled in Lisbon. He began a career in law but his real interest lay in literature. He wrote for the *Gazeta de Portugal* (1866–67) and contributed a satirical review to *As Farpas* (1871). By 1871 he was closely associated with the 'generation of '70', rebellious Portuguese intellectuals who advocated social and artistic reform. Joining the foreign service he was Consul in Cuba 1872–76 and England 1874–79, when he wrote the novels for which he is best

remembered,*O Crime do Padre Amaro* (1875), then *O Primo Basilio* (1878), stories of sexual misdeeds. In 1888 he wrote *Os Maias*, by which time he was designated the 'Portuguese *Zola'. This novel was, like its predecessors, an attempt to bring about social reform by exposing the evils of contemporary society. His other novels show a change of style: *O Mandarim* (1880) is a fantasy, *A Reliquia* (1887) a satire and *A Cidade e as Serras* (1901) a picture of rural life, praising the beauty of the countryside. He was Consul in Paris 1888–1900. Of aristocratic temperament, he was contemptuous of the backwardness of Portugal, but his last novel expresses a sentimental feeling for the country. He introduced naturalism and realism in literature to Portugal and was a master of character analysis and is generally regarded as Portugal's greatest novelist.

Eccles, Sir John Carew (1903–1997). Australian physiologist, born in Melbourne. Educated at Melbourne High School and Melbourne University, he undertook research on the spinal cord at Oxford (1925–37). He was professor of physiology at Otago University 1944–51 and at The Australian National University 1951–66. In Canberra he discovered the chemical means by which signals are communicated or repressed by nerve cells, for which he was awarded the Nobel Prize in physiology and medicine in 1963 (with A. L. *Hodgkin and A. F. *Huxley). His work has had considerable influence on the medical treatment of nervous diseases, and research on the function of kidney, heart and brain. His publications include *Reflex Activity of the Spinal Cord* (1932) and *The Physiology of Nerve Cells* (1957). He was President of the Australian Academy of Science 1957–61 and received the AC in 1990.

Eckert, John Presper Jr (1919–1995). American inventor, born in Philadelphia. With **John W. Mauchly**, professor of electrical engineering at the University of Pennsylvania, he improved computing equipment needed by the US War Department to recompute artillery firing tables (1943). They also won a government contract to build a digital computer (completed 1946), and ENIAC (Electronic Numerical Integrator and Computer) was the prototype for most modern computers. In 1948 Eckert and Mauchly established a computer manufacturing firm and in 1949 produced Binac (Binary Automatic Computer) which stored information on magnetic tape rather than punch cards. Their third model, Univac I (Universal Automatic Computer) was widely used in the commercial world, and really began the computer boom.

Eckhart, Johannes (c.1260–1327). German theologian, usually known as Meister Eckhart. One of the most profound medieval thinkers, the mystical and abstract nature of his speculations make them difficult to understand. They have been loosely described as Christian neoplatonism. He conceives an ultimate incomprehensible Godhead, of which the Father, Son and Holy Spirit are different manifestations. The soul of man also partakes of the essence of the Godhead and on reaching a stage of self awareness is re-absorbed into the Godhead from which it came. Eckhart's mysticism did not, however, take the form of trances, visions etc. He was a powerful preacher and must have been a competent man of affairs. Two years after his death many of his teachings were condemned by the papacy. *Opus tripartitum* was his most important work.

Hustache, J. A., *Master Eckhart and the Rhineland Mystics*. 1958.

Eco, Umberto (1932–2016). Italian writer. A historian and philosopher, he taught at Bologna University, became an expert on James *Joyce and semiotics (*Barthes) and wrote the bestselling novels, *The Name of the Rose* (1980), *Foucault's Pendulum* (1988) and *The Island of the Day Before* (1995).

Eddington, Sir Arthur Stanley (1882–1944). English astronomer and astrophysicist, born in Kendal. An unmarried Quaker, deeply interested in religion, he studied at Trinity College, Cambridge, became assistant at Greenwich Observatory 1906–13, and was professor of astronomy and director of the observatory at Cambridge University 1913–44. He was a conscientious objector in World War I. In 1916 he began his work on the constitution of the stars, establishing their internal structure and bringing about a complete revision of ideas then current. In May 1919, he confirmed *Einstein's theory of general relativity by observing a solar eclipse from Principe, West Africa, and made important contributions to relativity theory, particularly in relation to cosmology. He hypothesised, correctly, in 1920, that the source of energy in the Sun and other stars was fusion of hydrogen into helium. He wrote a number of popular works expounding advances in physics. One of the best known is *The Nature of the Physical World* (1928). In 1935 he ridiculed his student Subramanyan *Chandrasekhar for proposing the existence of 'black holes' but later nominated him as FRS. He was knighted in 1930 and awarded the OM in 1938. Nominated six times for the Nobel Physics Prize, without success, a lunar crater and Asteroid 2761 Eddington were named for him.

Douglas, A. V., *Arthur Stanley Eddington*. 1956.

Eddy, Mary Baker (née Mary Morse Baker) (1821–1910). American founder of the Christian Science movement, born in Bow, New Hampshire. From childhood a devout Bible student, she married George Washington Glover in 1843, was soon widowed but had a son to bring up. She married Daniel Patterson, a dentist in 1853 but they separated and divorced. In 1862 she studied with **Phineas Parkhurst Quimby** (1802–1866), a mental healer. After a serious injury caused by a fall on ice (1866), she attributed her recovery to

applying the teaching of the healing of the palsied man in St Matthew's Gospel to her own condition. In 1875 she published *Science and Health with Key to the Scriptures* which asserted that matter was an illusion and that 'Spirit' (i.e. God) was everything. Thus all physical ailments could be overcome by prayer. In 1877 she married **Asa G**(ilbert) **Eddy** (1826–1882), a former patient and fervent supporter. In 1879 she founded the First Church of Christ, Scientist, in Boston and was pastor emeritus until her death. She founded a daily newspaper, *The Christian Science Monitor*, in 1908.

Peel, R., *Mary Baker Eddy*. 3 vols, 1966, 1971, 1977.

Edelman, Gerald Maurice (1929–2014). American molecular biologist, born in New York. He was trained at the Rockefeller University, taught there from 1960 and shared the 1972 Nobel Prize for Medicine for his determining the structure of the gamma-globulin blood molecule. Later, he developed a biological theory of mind, the Theory of Neuronal Group Selection (TNGS), and wrote *Bright Air, Brilliant Fire: On the Matter of the Mind* (1992).

Eden, (Robert) **Anthony, 1st Earl of Avon** (1897–1977). British Conservative politician, born in Co. Durham. Second son of Sir William Eden, a Durham baronet, he was educated at Eton, won an MC in World War I and studied oriental languages at Oxford (1919–22). MP for Leamington 1922–57, from the first he specialised in foreign affairs and was parliamentary private secretary to Sir Austen *Chamberlain 1926–29. His work at Geneva with the League of Nations gave him an international reputation for diplomatic skill. Undersecretary for Foreign Affairs 1931–33 and Minister for the League of Nations 1933–35, he became Foreign Secretary 1935–38 after the resignation of Sir Samuel Hoare (1st Viscount *Templewood). Attempts by the Prime Minister, Neville *Chamberlain, to bring about a *rapprochement* with Mussolini caused Eden to resign in 1938. When *Churchill formed his coalition ministry, Eden was briefly Secretary for War 1940, then Foreign Secretary 1940–45. Deputy Leader of the Conservative Opposition 1945–51, he was Foreign Secretary for a third time 1951–55. His first marriage failed and in 1952 he married Clarissa Churchill, the Prime Minister's niece. He was created a KG in 1954. When Churchill reluctantly departed, Eden succeeded as Prime Minister 1955–57, despite serious health problems (ulcers, biliary and abdominal infections). His domestic policies were mildly progressive. In October 1956, his sponsorship of the Anglo-French military intervention in Egypt, after *Nasser had refused redress for seizing the Suez Canal, provoked a violent controversy within and outside his own party, and alienated President *Eisenhower. There was a ceasefire in November. Under pressure from his colleagues, and with illness as a pretext, he resigned in January 1957. *The Eden Memoirs* (1960, 1962, 1965), ghost-written, in three volumes, sold well, although unreadable. He was awarded an earldom in 1961.

James, R. R., *Anthony Eden.* 1986.

Edgar (Eadgar) **the Ætheling** (c.1051–c.1126). English prince, born in Hungary. Son of Edward the Exile and grandson of *Edmund Ironside, he was next in the royal line of descent when *Edward the Confessor died and *Harold became King. After the Norman invasion and Harold's death, he was elected king (1066) by the Witanagemot but never crowned. After *William's conquest he submitted, but soon took refuge with his sister Margaret, who became the wife of *Malcolm III of Scotland. After the northern rising of 1069–70, in which he took part, and wanderings in Europe, he made his peace with William. He was a crusader in 1099 and fought against *Henry I at Tinchebrai, Normandy (1106). The last survivor of the royal house of Wessex, founded by *Cerdic, his date of death and place of burial are unknown.

Edgar (Eadgar) **the Peaceful** (943–975). King of England 959–75. The first king for many years to be able to exercise undisputed rule over an undivided country, he was able to reform the administration, wisely allowing the Danes of eastern England to live under their own laws. His supremacy was symbolised by the legend that he was rowed on the Dee by eight subject kings. His chief advisor was *Dunstan, who enthusiastically supported his monastic reforms.

Edgeworth, Maria (1767–1849). Anglo-Irish writer. Her father, **Richard Lovell Edgeworth** (1774–1817), a landlord of Co. Longford, was a scientist, politician and educationist, with a score of children upon whom he could try out his theories. Maria, the eldest, cooperated with him as joint author of the *Rousseau-esque *Practical Education* (1798), and herself wrote *The Parent's Assistant* (1796–1801) and *Moral Tales* (1801). Better known are her realistic novels of Irish life: *Castle Rackrent* (1800), *The Absentee* (1812) and *Ormond* (1817). Excessive moralising marred these and her other novels, e.g. *Belinda* (1801). She was a friend of Sir Walter *Scott.

Inglis-Jones, E., *The Great Maria: A Portrait of Maria Edgeworth*. 1959.

Edinburgh, Duke of, Philip Mountbatten (né Prince Philippos Andreou of Greece and Denmark) (1921–2021). British prince, consort of Queen *Elizabeth II. Born in Corfu, he was the son of Prince Andrew of Greece, but part of the Danish dynasty with the cumbersome name of *Schleswig-Holstein-Sonderburg-Glücksburg. His mother, Princess Alice of Battenberg, who became a nun, was a sister of Earl *Mountbatten of Burma, whose surname he adopted in 1947. After some precarious years as an exile, he

was educated in France, England, Germany and at Gordonstoun in Scotland. He joined the Royal Navy in 1939 and served in the Pacific during World War II. He was created Duke of Edinburgh on the morning of his marriage to Princess Elizabeth (20 November 1947). He travelled extensively, taking a keen and often controversial interest in industry, education, science, sport and conservation. He became a prince of the United Kingdom in 1957, received the OM in 1968 but was never Prince Consort. He was Chancellor of Cambridge University 1976–2011, created Lord High Admiral in 2011 and celebrated 70 years of marriage in 2017. The award of an AK to the Duke (January 2015) on Tony *Abbott's recommendation raised serious questions about his political judgment. Price Philip died in his hundredth year.

His son, **Prince Edward Antony Richard Louis Mountbatten-Windsor, Duke of Edinburgh** (1964–), taught in New Zealand, graduated from Cambridge, served in the Marines, worked in theatre, then devoted himself to charity. Created Earl of Wessex in 1999, he was given his father's title in 2023.

Hoey, B., *Philip, Duke of Edinburgh.* 1991; Eade, P., *Prince Philip*. 2011.

Edison, Thomas Alva (1847–1931). American inventor, born in Milan, Ohio. Growing up in Michigan, he spent only three months at school, was taught at home by his schoolteacher mother, becoming a voracious reader and essentially self-educated. He set up his own laboratory at home, and at the age of 12 began selling newspapers and candy on the Grand Trunk Railroad, soon employing assistants. Trained as a telegraphist, (1862) as a reward for saving a child's life, he became an expert operator (despite his growing deafness) and repairer of machines. After six years as an itinerant telegraphist, he settled in Boston (1868), working for Western Union, and after devouring *Faraday's work, devoted his free time to experiments in electricity. In 1869 he invented an improved stock market tickertape printer, his first great success, sold it for $40,000, and began manufacturing high-speed telegraphic printers in Newark, New Jersey. His quadruplex telegraph (1874) doubled transmission capacity of lines. In 1876 he established the world's first industrial research laboratory, at Menlo Park, NJ, his 'invention factory'. The concept of commercial inventiveness was probably his greatest achievement. (This laboratory moved to West Orange, NJ, in 1887.) His favourite invention, the phonograph (1877), on which sound vibrations were recorded on tinfoil wrapped around a cylinder, made him internationally famous. Edison later used wax cylinders, from which copies could be made, but the phonograph was displaced by the gramophone developed by *Berliner and others, playing discs. His dictating machine and stencil duplication (1877) revolutionised—if not created—modern office work, until the digital age. His carbon microphone (1878) was needed to make *Bell's telephone a commercial reality. (In 1877 Edison revived the relatively rare word 'Hello' by proposing it as a telephone greeting.)

General Electric, funded by J. P. *Morgan, was established in 1878; Edison sold his stock in 1894 to invest in mining. In 1879 he patented the first successful incandescent lightbulb, using a carbon filament in a vacuum (*Swan's lights burned out in a few minutes), devised a complete electrical distribution system including generators, switches, plugs and fuses, and by 1882 was supplying direct current (DC) to New York consumers on a grid. However, impatient of theory, he failed to grasp the significance of his employee Nikola *Tesla's work on alternating current (AC) which was far cheaper to distribute. His exact contemporary, George *Westinghouse adopted Tesla and AC and by 1890 Edison had lost the distribution battle: after 1892 his electrical patents were taken over by General Electric. In 1883 he made his only major scientific discovery, the 'Edison effect', one of the foundations of electronics, the flow of current between a hot and cold electrode due to the emission of electrons. The first execution by electric chair took place in New York (1890). In 1891 he developed the Kinetoscope camera which could film moving images on strips of celluloid—a technique later developed by the *Lumière brothers. Edison thought the future of land transport lay with electric cars and development of the internal combustion engine was taken up by his onetime employee, Henry *Ford. During World War I he worked for the US Government, devised an improved alkaline storage battery and tried to produce synthetic rubber from weeds. Edison was the central figure of the Second (electric) Industrial Revolution with more than 1300 patents to his credit. Einstein called him 'the greatest inventor of all time'. He was deeply disappointed, as was Tesla, not to have been awarded a Nobel Prize. A classic 'rags to riches' story, Edison (like *Franklin) is part of the American dream. He always described genius as 'one per cent inspiration, ninety-nine per cent perspiration', preferring hands on experience and repeated trial and error to theoretical speculation. On the negative side, as Isaac *Asimov noted, he 'fostered a confusion between science and invention' which inhibited public support and understanding of basic science for decades. In a feature in *Life* magazine (Fall 1997) a panel of scholars ranked Edison as No. 1 of 'the 100 most important people of the millennium 1001–2000'.

Josephson, M., *Edison: A Biography*. 1959; Clark, R. W., *Edison*, 1977; Morris, E., *Edison*. 2019.

Edmund of Abingdon, St (Edmund Rich) (c.1175–1240). English ecclesiastic, born in Abingdon. He studied at Oxford and Paris, lecturing in both places. In 1222 he became Canon of Salisbury Cathedral, and in 1227 preached for the 6th Crusade, at the request of Pope Gregory IX by whom

he was appointed Archbishop of Canterbury 1233. Outspoken, he clashed with *Henry III, criticising his reliance on favourites, and his foreign policies. Edmund averted civil war by bringing moral pressure to bear upon Henry but the threat of excommunication forced him to make concessions. Later, however, the papal legate, Otho, requested by Henry, undermined Edmund's authority, forcing him to leave England for Rome, to appeal to the Pope (1238). He died at Soissy en route to Pontigny to enter a monastery. Edmund's high ideals and virtue made him widely respected and he was canonised in 1247. Feast day: 16 Nov. His *Speculum Ecclesiae* is considered a major contribution to medieval theology.

Lawrence, C. H., *St Edmund of Abingdon: A Study in Hagiography and History*. 1960.

Edmund (Eadmund) **Ironside** (980–1016). King of England 1016. Son of *Æthelred the Unready, he led the resistance to the Danish invaders under *Cnut but after a long, and at first successful, struggle he was defeated at Ashington (1016) and had to divide his kingdom with Cnut, retaining the south for himself. After his death Cnut ruled over the whole kingdom.

Edmund (Eadmund) **the Martyr, St** (c.841–870). King of East Anglia 855/6–70). He was either slain in battle or martyred by the Danes, reputedly bound to a tree, scourged, shot with arrows and finally beheaded for refusing to renounce his Christian faith. His tomb at Bury St Edmunds, Suffolk, eventually became a shrine.

Edward (Eadweard) **the Confessor, St** (c.1003–1066). King of England 1042–66. He was the seventh son of *Æthelred the Unready by Emma, sister of the Duke of Normandy, at whose court he had been brought up for safety's sake, since England was in a state of turbulence. When he succeeded his half brother *Harthacnut, he had lived for less than two years in England. It was natural therefore that he should surround himself with Norman friends but he also took to a life of pious practice and religious observance. Westminster Abbey, which he founded and where he is buried, is his finest memorial. Meanwhile power rested with his ambitious father-in-law *Godwine, Earl of Essex, and his son *Harold. Edward had no liking for either but was unable to assert himself and he eventually agreed that Harold should succeed to the throne. He posthumously acquired a reputation as a lawgiver. He was canonised in 1161.

Edward (Eadweard) **the Elder** (870–924). King of England 899–924. Before he succeeded his father, *Alfred the Great, he defeated the Danes repeatedly but on coming to the throne he immediately had to face a revolt by his cousin Aethelwald supported by the Danes of the east and north. Edward continued his victorious career and after the death of his sister and staunch ally Aethelflaed, the 'Lady of the Mercians' (918), he was lord of all England south of the Humber, and by 921 was overlord also of the north, Wales and parts of Scotland. He maintained his power by strategically placed fortresses, some of which survive. He was succeeded by his son *Athelstan.

Edward (Eadweard) **the Martyr** (c.963–978). King of England 975–78. Son of Edgar the Peaceful, his reign was disorderly and he was murdered at Corfe Castle, Dorset, probably at the instigation of his stepmother Aelfthryth, whose son *Æthelred the Unready succeeded him. He was styled as martyr from c.1001.

Edward I (Edward Plantagenet) (1239–1307). King of England 1272–1307. Born in Westminster, son of *Henry III, he was nicknamed 'Longshanks' for his unusual height, about 1.88 m. In 1254, he married *Eleanor of Castile, to whom he remained devotedly attached. During the Barons' War (1264–65) he led his father's army and defeated and killed Simon de *Montfort at Evesham (1265). He played a minor role in the Ninth Crusade (1270–73), was wounded, and did not return to England until August 1274, two years after his father's death. He soon showed himself to be a great lawmaker. The first Statute of Westminster (1275) dealt with administrative abuses, that of *Quo Warranto*, by forcing the magnates to show warrant for the powers they claimed to exercise, was a protection against the usurpation of feudal power. The Statute of Mortmain prevented the handing over of land to the Church except under licence. Edward believed in government by consent and that those who had to find the money for wars and other emergencies should be consulted as to amounts and the methods by which it should be raised. Therefore he extended de Montfort's experiments of adding new elements to the Great Council until there actually came into existence a body which began to be known as parliament from about 1295 and had some resemblance to modern legislatures. Outside England, Edward had to contend with the French king's provocations, designed to secure control of Edward's French inheritance, and was forced into a long, expensive and indecisive contest. In Wales a rising by the prince *Llewelyn ap Gruffydd (1282) provided him with excuse and opportunity for a complete conquest secured by strategically placed castles, several of which still stand. From 1275, he took increasingly punitive measures against the Jews, leading to the Edict of Expulsion (1290), which excluded Jews from England until *Cromwell repealed the edict in 1656. His son, the future *Edward II, was declared Prince of Wales (1301). In Scotland, where the death (1290) of the three-year-old queen, *Margaret, the Maid of Norway, had left a gap in the succession, he was less successful. Edward made three expeditions in support of his candidate John de *Balliol, but though he could usually win pitched battles and hold the fortified towns, though he could even bring the Coronation

stone from Scone to Westminster (1296) and defeat and execute the patriot leader William *Wallace (1305), he could achieve no permanent conquest and was marching northwards to suppress yet another rising (under Robert *Bruce) when he died. He became known as 'the Hammer of the Scots' (*Malleus Scotorum*). He was buried in Westminster Abbey. He had a very intimidating manner, most of his wars were failures or indecisive, and his expulsion of the Jews set an appalling precedent; nevertheless, he promoted the idea of a representative parliament, governing by consent, ventilating grievances and making it easier to collect revenue. Edward I is generally regarded as one of the greatest of medieval kings.

Morris, M., *A Great and Terrible King. Edward I and the Forging of Britain*. 2009; King, A., *Edward I: A New King Arthur?* 2017.

Edward II (Edward Plantagenet, known as **Edward of Caernarfon**) (1284–1327). King of England 1307–27. He was born in Caernarfon, the fourth son of *Edward I. Though he had the magnificent Plantagenet physique and was addicted to country sports and occupations (but not the jousting and tournaments of the nobility), he was always a weak and unstable king. Presumably bisexual, he was obsessed by his 'favourites'; the first of these, the Gascon Piers *Gaveston, made Earl of Cornwall in 1307, so incited the hatred of the barons by his pride and extravagance that they had him executed (1312). Edward's authority was still further lowered when in an attempt to carry out his father's policy and bring Scotland to submission he marched northwards only to be decisively beaten by Robert *Bruce at Bannockburn (1314). For the next few years power was in the hands of a group of barons known as Lords Ordainers, under the leadership of the Earl of Lancaster. At last, in 1322, Edward regained control and secured Lancaster's execution, but, disastrously for himself, he fell once more under the domination of two favourites, the father and son, both **Hugh le Despenser**, Earl of Winchester and Baron Despenser, respectively. Once more rebellion was provoked, this time organised by Edward's wife *Isabella of France and her lover Roger de *Mortimer. In January 1327, Edward was deposed and later murdered at Berkeley Castle, presumably by Mortimer's agents, but the exact circumstances are not clear. Christopher *Marlowe wrote the play *Edward II* (1592).

Bingham, C., *The Life and Times of Edward II*. 1973; Warner, K., *Edward II: The Unconventional King*. 2014.

Edward III (Edward Plantagenet, known as **Edward of Windsor)** (1312–1377). King of England 1327–77. Born in Windsor, son of *Edward II and Isabella of France, he succeeded on his father's deposition. In 1328 he married *Philippa, daughter of the Count of Hainaut in Flanders. She gave birth to five sons who reached maturity and five daughters. In 1330 he obtained effective control by having his mother's lover Roger de *Mortimer seized and hanged, then resumed the Scottish War and by a major victory at Halidon Hill (1333) placed the son of John *de Balliol on the throne. He then turned his attention to France which provided all the justification he needed to gratify his love of chivalry and war. (The Order of the Garter, founded by him in 1348, imitated the knighthood gathered at Arthur's Round Table). Not only were there the provocations of the last two reigns but there was his own claim through his mother to the French throne, from which he was only excluded by the Salic Law debarring succession through the female line. Thus in 1337 began what became the Hundred Years' War, by no means a continuous conflict but a series of campaigns often separated by years and interrupted by treaties. In the first stages, marked by the victorious sea fight at Sluys (1340), which opened the way to the invaders, and the great battles of Crécy (1346) and Poitiers (1356), the English seemed invincible. Edward and his son, *Edward the Black Prince, achieved glory, but it was the dominance of the long bow over armoured knights that proved decisive. Calais was captured in 1347, its burghers spared, so the story goes, by the intercession of Queen Philippa. By the treaty of 1360 the English regained the duchy of Aquitaine while renouncing the claim to the French throne. But when the French renewed the war in 1369 the English were forced to give up all possessions except the district round Calais. At home Edward was not a great ruler, he maintained law and order, but in his reign parliament was considerably strengthened by its claim to grant or withhold the funds necessary for the conduct of the war. In the king's last years he became senile and the government fell into the hands of his greedy mistress, Alice Perrers, and his son, *John of Gaunt, with the result that many difficulties awaited his successor and grandson, *Richard II. Ardent and chivalrous, with a strong taste for good living, Edward III was a more venturesome warrior but a much less able administrator than *Edward I.

Johnson, P., *The Life and Times of Edward III*. 1973; Ormrod, W. M., *Edward III*. 2011; Mortimer, I., *The Perfect King. The Life of Edward III*. 2008; Davis, J. P., *The Gothic King: A Biography of Edward III*. 2013.

Edward IV (Edward Plantagenet) (1441–1483). King of England 1461–70, 1471–83, first sovereign of the House of York. Born in Rouen, he was son of Richard, Duke of *York and great-grandson of Edmund, fourth son of *Edward III. During the Wars of the Roses he was, after the death of his father at Wakefield, the Yorkist candidate for the throne. After *Henry VI's forces had been defeated in 1461 at the battles of Mortimer Cross and Towton, Edward was proclaimed king. The powerful Earl of *Warwick, later known as 'the kingmaker', sustained his rule but was antagonised in 1464 when

Edward married *Elizabeth Woodville (or Wydeville) (c.1437–1492), a widow and the first commoner to be queen since the Norman Conquest. The advancement of her family led Warwick to change allegiances and in 1470 Edward was deposed, fled to Holland, and Henry VI was restored. Having rallied support Edward returned the next year, defeated the Lancastrians at Barnet (where Warwick was killed) and Tewkesbury, and regained his throne, ensured by the murder of Henry VI. Though notorious for his indolence and love of pleasure, he proved a resourceful and capable ruler, encouraged trade and supported William *Caxton, who set up the first printing press in England. He was 193 cm tall and handsome in his prime, but became dissipated and gross in later years and died at the age of 40, probably of a stroke. His daughter **Elizabeth of York** (1466–1503) married *Henry VII.

Myers, A. R., *The Household of Edward IV*. 1959; Penn, T., *The Brothers York: An English Tragedy*. 2020.

Edward V (1470–c.1483). King of England April–June 1483. Born in Westminster, one of the 'princes in the Tower', on the death of his father, *Edward IV, he was proclaimed king under the guardianship of his uncle, Richard, Duke of Gloucester. In June 1483 an assembly of peers and commoners deposed him on the grounds that Edward IV's marriage to Elizabeth Woodville was bigamous and the offspring illegitimate and proclaimed Gloucester king, as *Richard III. Edward and his brother **Richard, Duke of York** (1473–c.1483) lived at the Tower of London, which was both a royal residence and prison. They were never seen again and while rumours abounded, there was no contemporary accusation of murder. The likeliest explanation is that they were murdered by their uncle or his agents. An alternative hypothesis is that they were later eliminated by *Henry VII, whose claims to the throne were tenuous. Thomas *More was a powerful advocate for Richard's guilt. In 1674 the bones of two boys were found in a wooden chest in the tower. Assumed to be the remains of the 'princes in the Tower', they were interred in Westminster Abbey.

Edward VI (1537–1553). King of England 1547–53. Born in London, son of *Henry VIII, whom he succeeded, by his third wife *Jane (Seymour), he was precocious in his studies, interested in the reformed religion, but seems to have had a cold shrewdness, particularly unattractive in so young a boy. This was made apparent by the way in which he accepted and acquiesced in the execution of his uncle and first 'protector', Edward Seymour, Duke of *Somerset. John Dudley, Duke of *Northumberland, the new protector, persuaded Edward, on his deathbed, to nominate Lady Jane *Grey, Northumberland's daughter-in-law, as his successor, to the exclusion of his sisters *Mary and *Elizabeth. During his reign the Church became steadily more national and Protestant and a second, more stringent Act of Uniformity was passed. He died of tuberculosis.

Jordan, W. K., *Edward VI*. 2 vols, 1968, 1971.

Edward VII (Albert Edward von Wettin) (1841–1910). King of the United Kingdom of Great Britain, Ireland and the British Dominions beyond the Seas, Emperor of India 1901–10. Born in London, he was the second child and eldest son of Queen *Victoria and Prince *Albert. Probably dyslexic, he was subject to extreme discipline and restraints on his natural inclinations in youth but had a brief encounter with education at Edinburgh University, Christ Church, Oxford, and Trinity College, Cambridge. As Prince of Wales he was entirely excluded by his mother from any share in, or indeed acquaintance with, affairs of state. He visited the US (1860) and India (1861) and married the beautiful Princess *Alexandra of Denmark in 1863. Reacting against his parents' rigid morality, he was renowned as a lover of wine, women and gambling. However, he was vaguely sympathetic to *Gladstone, philosemitic, but also interested in *Wagner's operas. As king, he came to terms with democracy and gained surprising popularity. He pushed the *entente-cordiale* with France (1905) and his nickname 'the Peacemaker' had some validity. His nephew, Kaiser *Wilhelm II, called him 'an old peacock'; Henry *James dubbed him 'Edward the Caresser'. His eldest son *Albert Victor, Duke of Clarence, died in 1892. He died of emphysema and heart failure at the age of 69 and was succeeded by his second son *George V.

Magnus, P., *Edward VII*. 1967; Weintraub, S., *The Importance of Being Edward*. 2000; Ridley, J., *Bertie. A Life of Edward VII*. (2013).

Edward VIII (Edward Albert Christian George Andrew Patrick David Windsor, né von Wettin) (1894–1972). King of Great Britain, Ireland and the British Dominions beyond the Seas, Emperor of India January–December 1936, later **Duke of Windsor**. Born in Richmond, eldest son of *George V and Queen *Mary, he was created Prince of Wales in 1910, given a naval education at Dartmouth College and proceeded to Magdalen College, Oxford. During World War I he served on the staff in France. From 1919 he toured the world constantly, winning adulation from vast crowds. He succeeded his father in January 1936. His long association with an American divorcee, **Mrs Wallis Simpson** (née Warfield) (1896–1986), was suppressed by the British press and the BBC. He advised *Baldwin of his intention to marry Mrs Simpson after her second divorce. The British and Dominion governments opposed her becoming queen and would not agree to legislation providing for a morganatic marriage. After 325 days, he abdicated in favour of his brother Albert, Duke of York, who became *George VI. Created Duke of Windsor, in June 1937 he married Mrs Simpson in France. He served unhappily as Governor of the

Bahamas 1940–45, where his major challenge was the murder of Sir Harry Oakes (July 1943). He lived in Paris from 1945 and died there. His autobiography, *A King's Story*, appeared in 1951. The Duke and Duchess were both buried at the royal mausoleum at Frogmore, Windsor.

Ziegler, P., *King Edward VIII.* 1990.

Edward 'the Black Prince' (Edward Plantagenet)**, Duke of Cornwall, Prince of Aquitaine** (1330–1376). English prince and soldier, born in Woodstock. Eldest son of *Edward III, he became the first duke created in England (1337) and was an original KG (1348). He won his spurs at Crécy (1346) and proved his ability as a commander at Poitiers (1356), where he captured the French king, *Jean II. Less successful as ruler (from 1362) of his father's French possessions, Aquitaine and Gascony, he again proved his military prowess when he made a chivalrous incursion into Spain in aid of *Pedro ('the Cruel') of Castile and won another great victory at Najara (1367). This was the end of his glory. He returned ill and despondent to England in 1371, having had to yield during the previous two years to rebellions among his subjects and encroachments from France, by which the English possessions were gradually whittled away. He died before his father, and his son, by his wife Joan, the 'Fair Maid of Kent', succeeded Edward III to the throne as *Richard II. He was buried at Canterbury Cathedral where his armour can still be seen.

Edward, Duke of Edinburgh *see* **Edinburgh, Edward, Duke of**

Edwards, Jonathan (1703–1758). American theologian and philosopher, born in Connecticut. He became a pastor of Northampton, Mass., where his powerful preaching and writing kindled the religious revival known as 'the Great Awakening'. His doctrinal inspiration came from *Calvin and he was the last of the great New England Calvinists, advocating acceptance of the doctrine of predestination. For the last years of his life he worked as a missionary among the Native Americans, becoming President of the College of New Jersey (Princeton University) just before his death.

Miller, P., *Jonathan Edwards*. 1949; Jenson, R., *America's Theologian*. 1988; Hatch, N. and Stout, H. O. (eds), *Jonathan Edwards and the American Experience*. 1988.

Edwards, Sir Robert Geoffrey (1925–2013). English physiologist, born in Yorkshire. A pioneer in in vitro fertilisation (IVF), working with **Patrick Steptoe** (1911–1988), the birth of Louise Brown, in Oldham, in 1978 was the first resulting from the procedure. Further births soon followed in Melbourne, following the work of **Carl Wood** (1929–2011). Edwards won the 2010 Nobel Prize for Medicine and was knighted in 2011.

Edwin (Eadwine or Æduinus) (c.585–633). King of Northumbria 616–33. Son of Ælle, King of Deira, he spent his youth in exile, probably in Wales, but was installed as king of Deira and Bernicia in 616 under the protection of Raedwald, King of East Anglia. He gradually expanded his kingdom to the borders of Scotland, and became overlord of the Anglo-Saxon kingdoms except Kent. His second wife was Æthelburh, sister of Eadbald, King of Kent. Through her and her confessor Paulinus, later the first Archbishop of York, he became a Christian. Edwin was killed in battle against an alliance of the Mercian king *Penda and Cadwallon, King of North Wales.

Egalité, Philippe *see* **Orléans, Philippe, Duc d'**

Egbert (Ecgberth) (771/5–839). King of Wessex 802–39. A descendant of *Cerdic, the founder of the house of Wessex, as a young man he was an exile at the court of *Charlemagne. Though he returned to become king in 802, almost nothing is known of him until he defeated the kingdom of Mercia at the battle of Ellendun (825), a victory so decisive that it brought Mercian supremacy to an end and all southeast England under the control of Wessex. Egbert conquered Mercia in 829 and received Northumbria's submission in the same year. He could not hold his gains, however, and Mercia again had its own king the following year. But Egbert's reign pointed the way to the future destiny of the Wessex kings as rulers of all England.

Egk, Werner (1901–1983). German composer and conductor. He wrote the operas *Peer Gynt* (1938), *Columbus* (1948) and *Der Revisor* (1957), based on *Gogol's *The Government Inspector*. His role during the Nazi regime has been described as 'enigmatic opportunism' and he received significant commissions. Later compositions include the concertos *Moira* (1973) and *Temptation* (1977). He was President of the International Confederation of Authors and Composers 1976–78.

Egmont, Lamoral, Count d' (1522–1568). Netherlandish soldier and statesman. One of the great lords of the century, he served the emperor *Charles V (who had acquired the Burgundian inheritance in the Netherlands) with great distinction, and in 1546 was made a knight of the Golden Fleece. When *Felipe II of Spain succeeded Charles (1556), the persecution of Protestants and imposition of the Inquisition by his minister in the Netherlands, Cardinal Antoine de Granvelle, intensified. *William the Silent became an exile but Egmont went to Madrid trying to secure redress for their grievances from Felipe himself. The extravagance of the language with which Egmont, on his return, expressed his anger at the failure of his mission gave Granvelle's successor, the Duke of *Alba, an excuse to crush opposition. Egmont and his ally Philip de Montmorency, Count of Hoorn, were arrested for heresy and publicly beheaded in Brussels. Their execution was

a chief factor in sparking off open rebellion against Spanish rule. Egmont's life was celebrated in a play by *Goethe, with music by *Beethoven.

Ehrenburg, Ilya Grigorevich (1891–1967). Russian writer. A war correspondent in World War I, he supported the Russian Revolution but spent most of his time between the wars in Paris (from 1934) as a correspondent for *Izvestia*. He was a most prolific writer of novels, of which *The Adventures of Jullio Jurenito*, satirising decadent western civilisation, is among the best known. He won the *Stalin Prize in 1947 with *The Storm*, a major novel about World War II. *The Thaw* (1954) commented on the oppressions of Stalin's regime.

Ehrlich, Paul (1854–1915). German-Jewish bacteriologist, born in Silesia (now Poland). He graduated in medicine at Leipzig in 1878. After returning (1890) from treatment in Egypt for tuberculosis, he worked at the new Institute for Infectious Diseases in Berlin. He developed staining techniques (using *Perkin's synthetic mauve dyes) for the tuberculosis bacillus, assisting *Koch's work. With Emil von *Behring, he perfected a diphtheria serum. In 1896 he became director of the State Institute for Serum Research and in 1906 of the Royal Institute for Experimental Therapy at Frankfurt-on-Main. He investigated blood cells and immunity to infection, including the 'chemical affinity' theory in which the 'side-chains' or receptors of cells can be stimulated chemically to promote immunity from toxins. He shared the 1908 Nobel Prize for Medicine with Êlie *Metchnikoff for their 'work on the theory of immunity'. In 1910, with **Hata Sahachiro**, he developed an arsenical compound, originally numbered '606' and named 'salvarsan', which proved effective in treating syphilis – an early form of chemotherapy. 'Neosalvarsan' ('914'), much less toxic, was produced in 1912. He was renominated for the Nobel Prize in 1912 and 1913. The film *Dr Ehrlich's Magic Bullet* (1940), starring Edward G. Robinson, was a sympathetic account of his life and work.

Loewe, H., *Paul Ehrlich*. 1950.

Ehrlich, Paul (Ralph) (1932–) American population biologist. He taught at Stanford University from 1959 and wrote *The Population Bomb* (1968), warning of a global population explosion and calling for ZPG ('zero population growth'). With his wife **Anne Howland**, he wrote *The Population Explosion* (1990) and *Healing the Planet* (1991).

Eichmann, (Karl) **Ado1f** (1906–1962). Austrian Nazi bureaucrat. As head of the Gestapo's Jewish extermination department in World War II he suggested a 'final solution of the Jewish problem'. In 1960 he was found living in Argentina under an assumed name, kidnapped by Israeli agents, tried in Israel, condemned and executed (1962) for crimes against the Jewish people and against humanity.

Arendt H., *Eichmann in Jerusalem*. 1964.

Eiffel, (Alexandre) **Gustave** (originally Bonickhausen) (1832–1923). French engineer, born in Dijon. He designed a long bridge across the Duoro, near Oporto (1876–77), an elegant iron bridge—span of 162 metres, 120 metres high—across the Truyère river at Garabit (1880–84) and the structure for New York's Statue of Liberty (1885). He designed and built (1887–89) the famous 300.5 metre Eiffel Tower for the 1889 Paris Exposition. It was the world's tallest structure until 1930. The collapse of locks he designed for the first Panama Canal scheme involved him in a scandal (1893) which brought a fine and imprisonment. Later he conducted pioneer researches in aerodynamics and the use of wind tunnels.

Eijkman, Christiaan (1858–1930). Dutch physician. Professor of hygiene at Utrecht University 1898–1928, he was the co-discoverer, with Sir Frederick *Hopkins, of the 'accessory food factors' (later called vitamins) which combat beri-beri. He shared the Nobel Prize for Medicine (1929) with Hopkins.

Einaudi, Luigi Numa Lorenzo (1874–1961). Italian politician and economist. He was Governor of the Bank of Italy 1945–48 and President of Italy 1948–55.

Einstein, Albert (1879–1955). German-Jewish-Swiss-American theoretical physicist, born in Ulm. An only son (a sister was born in 1881), he attended school in Munich, spent some time in Milan and Pavia with his parents and from 1896 studied at the Federal Technical High School (Eidgenössische Technische Hochschule—ETH), Zürich. He became a Swiss citizen in 1901 and was a specialist examiner at the patent office in Berne 1902–09. In January 1903 he married **Mileva Maric** (1875–1948), a Serb, who played an important (but largely unrecognised) role in his early work. His obsession with research meant that he neglected his children seriously. Hendrik *Lorentz was a major intellectual influence. In 1905, aged 26, he received his PhD from Zürich University and published three great papers that changed theoretical physics profoundly: on the photo-electric effect, asserting that light is composed of discrete quanta or photons, and accounting for anomalies in *Planck's work, explaining Brownian motion, the random movement of particles in suspension (Robert *Brown) as due to molecular bombardment, and the Special Theory of Relativity. The last paper argued that energy and matter are inter-convertible, proposing the famous equation $E = mc^2$ (where E is energy, m is mass and c the speed of light), that the motion of a body can only be measured relative to another body, since nothing is absolutely at rest, that nothing can exceed the speed of light, and that measuring

space and time are also relative, since the observer's motion is also involved (a thesis later developed by *Heisenberg). Six major papers expanding his 1905 work appeared in 1906. An associate professor at Zürich University 1909–11, he became professor of physics in Prague 1911–12, at the Zürich Institute 1912–13, at Berlin University 1913–33 and Director of the Kaiser Wilhelm Institute for Physics 1917–33. In 1916 he published his General Theory of Relativity and became world famous in 1919 after observations of a solar eclipse (Arthur *Eddington) confirmed his contention that light was bent by gravity.

In 1916 Einstein debated with Willem *de Sitter about whether the universe was expanding but thought the evidence was inconclusive until Edwin *Hubble demonstrated (in 1929) what was later described as 'the big bang', which displaced the 'steady state' theory. He concluded that 'dark energy' was a central factor in gravitation, then retreated from the idea, which was later confirmed by Brian *Schmidt, Saul Perlmutter and Adam Riess. In 1919 he divorced his first wife and married his cousin **Elsa Lowenthal** (1876–1936).

From 1910, he received 62 nominations for the Nobel Prize for Physics, until in 1922 he was awarded the Prize for 1921 'for his discovery of the law of the photoelectric effect', a relatedly minor part of his unique achievement. He received the Royal Society's Copley Medal in 1925. From 1927 he engaged in long unresolved debate with Niels *Bohr about the foundations of quantum mechanics. He speculated about the hypothesis of an expanding universe but only accepted it in 1929 (*Lemaître, *Hubble). In December 1932 he left Germany for the US, resigning his Berlin post in 1933 and became an American citizen in 1940. A life member of the Institute for Advanced Studies, Princeton, NJ, he was a professor there 1933–45. He doubted that a mechanism for generating energy on a large scale by atomic fission was possible until he learned in 1939 that Otto *Hahn and Lise *Meitner had split a uranium isotope in Germany and that chain reaction had been confirmed by Leo *Szilard, and others, in New York. In October 1939 he sent President *Roosevelt a letter, drafted by Szilard, warning of the military implications of splitting the uranium atom. This led directly to the 'Manhattan Project' and the atomic bomb. Einstein was uninformed and uninvolved in further developments. Horrified by the dropping of atomic bombs on Hiroshima and Nagasaki, he campaigned actively for the international control of atomic power. For 30 years he attempted, without success, to reconcile gravitation, electromagnetism, general relativity and quantum theory in a 'unified field theory'. He was the last scientist to be a household name and his image is found as an icon in laboratories throughout the world. Generally regarded as the greatest mathematical physicist of all time, he declined the presidency of Israel (1952) on *Weizmann's death (to the relief of David *Ben-Gurion). Element 99 einsteinium (Es) and the main belt Asteroid 2001 Einstein were named for him. His hypothesis about gravitational waves was confirmed by observations in 2015 and 2017.

Clark, R. W., *Einstein. The Life and Times*. 1971; Fölsing, A., *Albert Einstein*. 1997; Pais, A., *Subtle is the Lord …* 1982; Isaacson, W., *Einstein. His Life and Universe*. 2007; Stone, A. D., *Einstein and the Quantum*. 2013.

Eisenhower, Dwight D(avid) **('Ike')** (1890–1969). American general and 34th President of the US 1953–61. Born in Denison, Texas, of Swiss-German descent, he grew up in Abilene, Kansas, and graduated from the West Point Military Academy, ranking 61st of 164, became a training instructor and remained in the US during World War I. He was ADC to General Douglas *MacArthur in Washington 1933–35 and in the Philippines 1935–37, then had a series of very rapid promotions. As Chief of the War Plans Division in the War Department 1941–42 he showed a remarkable grasp of global strategy. In June 1942 General George *Marshall promoted him to be General Commanding US Forces in Europe, and, a month later, Supreme Commander, Allied Forces in North Africa. This led to the successful invasion of French North Africa, and, as Supreme Commander, Mediterranean, the invasion of Sicily (July 1943), working with *Alexander. In December 1943, President *Roosevelt appointed him as Supreme Commander, Allied Expeditionary Force in Europe, a job Marshall had hoped for. (*Churchill would have preferred *Alanbrooke.) The Normandy landing took place on D-Day, 6 June 1944. Eisenhower's strategy has been criticised as over-cautious (especially by his prickly rival *Montgomery), but he showed superior political, diplomatic and strategic skills, maintaining working relations with prima donna generals who suspected 'Ike' less than each other and remained popular with troops. He was promoted as a five-star General of the Army (1944) and awarded the British GCB and OM in 1945. After a short period as Military Governor of the US Zone of Germany, President *Truman appointed him as Chief of Staff, US Army 1945–48, and suggested he should run for the Democratic presidential nomination in 1948. His memoir *Crusade in Europe* (1948) was a bestseller. President of Columbia University, New York 1948–51, following the establishment of NATO he was appointed Supreme Commander, Allied Powers in Europe 1951–52. He won the Republican nomination for president in 1952 with liberal support, defeating Robert *Taft, then won the election with 55 per cent of the vote over the Democrat Adlai *Stevenson. He defeated Stevenson again in 1956 with 57 per cent. (Richard *Nixon was elected Vice President for both terms.) He took a more passive role as President than Roosevelt or Truman, but resisted 'old guard' pressures to dismantle the New Deal-Fair Deal welfare structures. For most of his term he worked with a Congress dominated by

moderate Democrats. He helped to end the Korean War and *Stalin's death eased Cold War tensions. He took a moderate stand against Joe *McCarthy and avoided military involvement in Indo-China. In 1953 he appointed Earl *Warren as Chief Justice (a choice he later regretted) and gave cautious support to enforcement of civil rights for black people, sending troops into Arkansas in 1957. In the 1960 presidential campaign his tepid endorsement of Nixon assisted *Kennedy's election. In his farewell address (January 1961), he gave a surprising warning 'against the acquisition of unwarranted influence … by the military-industrial complex'. His reputation has risen since his death and in 19 Presidential ranking lists by historians and political scientists, he scored No. 9 in the aggregate.

Ambrose S. E., *Eisenhower*. 2 vols, 1985; Newton, J., *Eisenhower: The White House Years.* 2011; Smith, J. E., *Eisenhower in War and Peace.* 2012.

Eisenstein, Sergei Mikhailovich (1898–1948). Russian film director. He served as an engineer in the civil wars and later trained in Moscow as a stage designer and producer. He made his first film in 1924. He developed consummate skill in the direction of crowds and the dramatic use of cutting, notably in such films as *The Battleship Potemkin* (1925), *Alexander Nevsky* (1938), his first talking picture, and *Ivan the Terrible* (1944–45).

Barna, K., *Eisenstein*. 1973.

Eleanor of Aquitaine (c.1122–1204). Duchess of Aquitaine 1137–1204, Queen consort of France 1137–52 and of England 1154–89. Born in Bordeaux, a member of the Ramnulfid dynasty, rulers of Poitiers, she was Duchess of Aquitaine in her own right. After her marriage (1137–52) to *Louis VII was annulled, she soon married the future *Henry II of England. She brought much of southwestern France as her dowry. This became the cause of a struggle between the two countries which lasted, with intervals, for 300 years. A masterful woman, she supported her sons (the future *Richard I and *John) against her unfaithful husband, was imprisoned 1174–89, and after his death (1189) prevented them quarrelling. Her eldest son, Henry, died as a child, her third son was Geoffrey, who died before his father and whose son *Arthur of Brittany, was murdered in the Tower of London, probably on the instructions of John. She was buried at Fontevraud-l'Abbaye, Anjou.

Pernoud, R., *Eleanor of Aquitaine*. 1967.

Eleanor of Castile (1246–1290). English queen consort 1272–90. She married the future *Edward I in 1254. Before his accession (1272) she went with him on a crusade, but the story that she sucked poison from his wound is probably legendary. Edward showed his devotion to her memory by erecting crosses at each place where the funeral procession rested when her body was conveyed from Lincoln to Westminster. A replica of the final one stands at Charing Cross, London.

Elegabalus (originally Sextus Varius Avitus Bassianus, as Emperor Marcus Aurelius Antoninus Augustus) (c.204–222). Roman Emperor 218–22. Known, but only after his death, by the name of the Syrian Sun God, of whom he was hereditary high priest, he owed his elevation to the throne to the troops in Syria whom the intrigues of his grandmother (a sister of Julia, wife of the emperor *Septimius Severus) had suborned. The fame of the young emperor rests on his reputation as a bisexual and his gaudy extravagance. The rites of the Sun God, whom he claimed to personify, were introduced by him to Rome and were so obscene that they scandalised the citizens. After an attempt to assassinate his cousin, *Alexander Severus, whom he feared as a potential usurper, Elegabalus was murdered by the praetorian guard.

Elgar, Sir Edward (William), **1st Baronet** (1857–1934). English composer, born in Broadheath, Worcestershire. He succeeded his father as organist of St George's Roman Catholic Church, Worcester. Apart from violin lessons, he was self-taught: he read widely and became an amateur scientist. Although he made no use of the folksong tradition he was one of the pioneers of the English musical revival at the beginning of the 20th century, the first outstanding English composer since *Purcell. His earliest work, including pieces composed for the Worcester festivals, attracted only local attention, but he won an international reputation almost overnight when Richard *Strauss acclaimed his *Variations on an original theme (Enigma)* for orchestra (1899). *The Dream of Gerontius* (1900), an oratorio based on Cardinal Newman's poem, was even more highly praised. *The Apostles* (1903) and *The Kingdom* (1906) belong to an uncompleted trilogy on the early Christian Church. Other works include Symphony No 1 (1908) and No 2 (1911), and the *Introduction and Allegro for strings* (1905). The violin concerto in B Minor was first performed by *Kreisler (1910). His more popular works, such as the five *Pomp and Circumstanc*e marches (1901–07) and the concert overture *Cockaigne* (1901), are warmly extrovert and reflect something of the vitality of Edwardian England. His last major work was the cello concerto in E minor (1919) and after his wife died (1920) he practically abandoned composition. Professor of music at Birmingham University 1905–08 and Master of the King's Musick 1924–34, he was awarded a knighthood (1904), the OM (1911), a baronetcy (1931) and a GCVO (1933), although he yearned for a peerage. His sketches for Symphony No. 3, completed and elaborated by Andrew Payne, were published in 1997 and soon performed and recorded, to critical approval.

Maire, B., *Elgar, His Life and Work*. 1973; Grimley, D. and Rushton, J. (eds), *The Cambridge Companion to Elgar*. 2004.

Elgin, 7th Earl of, and 11th Earl of Kincardine (both Scottish peerages)**, Thomas Bruce** (1766–1841). Scottish soldier and diplomat, born in Fife. Claiming descent from the Scottish royal house of Bruce, educated in Harrow, Westminster and Paris, he was Minister to Brussels 1792–95 and to Berlin 1795–99. As Ambassador to Constantinople 1799–1803, when Greece was under Ottoman rule, in 1801 he acquired, under dubious circumstances, about half of the frieze metopes, and pedimental sculptures on the Parthenon at Athens, at a cost of about £75,000 (bribes + costs of removal), an act denounced at the time by Lord *Byron. In 1816 he sold the statues, known as 'the Elgin marbles' to the British Museum where they, controversially, remain. Promoted to general in 1837, he appears to have been singularly uninvolved in military activity. He died in Paris. His son **James Bruce, 8th Earl of Elgin, 12th Earl of Kincardine** (1811–1863), educated at Oxford, was Governor of Jamaica 1842–43, Governor-General of Canada 1846–54, and was given a UK barony in 1849. As High Commissioner and Plenipotentiary in China 1857–59; 1860–61, he ordered the destruction of the Old Summer Palace in Beijing by Charles *Gordon in 1860. *Palmerston appointed him as Viceroy of India 1862–63, the first directly chosen by government and subordinate to the Secretary of State for India. He died in India, after a heart attack. His son, **Victor Alexander Bruce, 9th Earl of Elgin, 13th Earl of Kincardine** (1849–1917), born in Montréal, and educated at Eton and Oxford, held minor offices under *Gladstone and was chosen by *Rosebery to become Viceroy of India 1894–99. Colonial Secretary 1905–08, he was dropped by *Asquith.

Robertson, G., *Who Owns History?* 2019.

El Greco *see* **Greco, El**

Elijah (Eliyahu) (fl. c.870–840 BCE). Israelite prophet. He denounced *Ahab and his Phoenician wife *Jezebel for trying to establish Baal worship, and for ordering the death of Naboth in order to secure his coveted vineyard. He appears in the Bible story as a worker of miracles and he is said to have been carried to heaven in a chariot of fire. The belief that he would return to earth, combined with the Messianic doctrine, led to his identification in the New Testament with *John the Baptist, Christ's forerunner.

Elion, Gertrude ('Trudy') Belle (1918–1999). American pharmacologist, born in New York. Of Lithuanian-Polish-Jewish descent, she studied at Hunter College and New York University, worked as a secretary, in schools and a supermarket, and became a researcher with Burroughs Wellcome 1944–83, collaborating with George *Hitchings. A pioneer of rational drug design, analysing purines, she developed allopurinol (Zyloprim) to reduce the impact of gout, which was widely adopted from 1966. Other drugs included AZT, used to treat HIV/AIDS, and the immunosuppressant azathioprine. She shared the Nobel Prize for Medicine in 1988 with Hitchings and James *Black.

Eliot, George (pen name of Mary Ann Evans, in 1880 Mary Ann Cross) (1819–1880). English novelist, poet, translator and journalist, born in Warwickshire. Daughter of an estate agent she left school at the age of 16, when her mother died, and while looking after her father's household studied Latin, Greek, German and Italian under visiting teachers. She was brought up as a strict evangelical but at the age of 22 reacted violently against religion. After her father's death she went to London and became assistant editor (1851–53) of the *Westminster Review* under John Chapman. She was influenced by Thomas *Carlyle and J. S. *Mill and translated *Spinoza. Herbert *Spencer introduced her to George Henry *Lewes, a versatile literary journalist who had written a well known history of philosophy and was preparing a biography of *Goethe. Separated from his wife, he was unable to secure a divorce. He lived happily with Mary Ann from 1854 until his death (1878). Hitherto, her published literary work had been confined to translations from the German but the encouragement of Lewes, who had seen and liked her story 'Amos Barton', which appeared later with two others as *Scenes from Clerical Life* under her pseudonym George Eliot, decided her career. The novels which followed are considered among the greatest of their epoch. Social criticism and moral values are seldom lost sight of and her wide knowledge is a constant spur to the intellect, but it is the humour, compassion and understanding with which she builds up and probes her characters that give her novels their unique and lasting value. *Adam Bede* appeared in 1859, followed by *The Mill on the Floss* (1860), *Silas Marner* (1861), *Romola* (1863), set in Renaissance Florence, *Felix Holt* (1866), *Middlemarch* (1872) and, last and least successful, *Daniel Deronda* (1876), a novel about Judaism that anticipated Zionism and the creation of Israel. Minor works include a dramatic poem, *The Spanish Gipsy* (1868). In the year of her death she married **John Walter Cross** (1840–1924), an old friend of Lewes and herself. Henry *James described her as 'magnificently ugly'.

Laski, M., *George Eliot and Her World*. 1973; Karl, F., *George Eliot*. 1995; Carlisle, C., *The Marriage Question. George Eliot's Double Life*. 2024.

Eliot, Sir John (1592–1632). English parliamentarian. He entered Parliament in 1614. Originally a protégé of the King's favourite, *Buckingham, he later turned against him and took part in his impeachment. He opposed *Charles I's forced loans and was instrumental in obtaining assent to the Petition of Right (1628). In 1629, with eight other members, he was sent to the Tower of London where he died. He left several manuscript works, including *The Monarchie of Man*, paradoxically, a defence of kingship.

Hulme, H., *The Life of Sir John Eliot*. 1957.

Eliot, T(homas) **S**(tearns) (1888–1965). Anglo-American poet, critic and playwright, born in St Louis, Missouri. He studied philosophy at Harvard, the Sorbonne (with *Bergson) and Oxford. He taught at schools and at Birkbeck College in London, worked at Lloyd's Bank 1917–25, then became an editor with the publishers Faber and Gwynne, later Faber and Faber, where he became a director. From 1915 he was unhappily married to **Vivien Haigh-Wood** (1888–1947), a gifted woman who suffered from a variety of mental and physical problems.

His early poetry, e.g., *The Love Song of J. Alfred Prufrock* (1917), is sometimes satirical and often appears flippant:

> I grow old … I grow old …
> I shall wear the bottoms of
> my trousers rolled.

Influenced by Charles *Maurras and the writings of Henry *Adams, he became conservative, authoritarian and anti-Semitic, rejecting the values of modern secular society. This was reinforced by the waste, disruption and upset of values caused by World War I. This is most apparent in *Gerontion* (1920) and in his longest poem *The Waste Land* (1922). Broadly based on the theme of the Holy Grail it is characterised by deep disillusion with contemporary spiritual blindness. The poem, edited and cut by his friend Ezra *Pound, uses quotations from or allusions to 31 authors in six languages.

> April is the cruellest month, breeding
> Lilacs out of the dead land, mixing
> Memory and desire, stirring
> Dull roots with spring rain.
> *The Waste Land*

He edited the literary journal *Criterion* for its entire life 1922–39. In 1927 he converted from Unitarianism to the Church of England, describing himself as an Anglo-Catholic, and became a British subject. After the 1930s Eliot's poetry became increasingly metaphysical and the religious influences, especially in the case of Christian symbolism, are more apparent. Pessimism has been replaced by 'penitential hope' e.g. in *Ash Wednesday* (1930) and *Four Quartets* (1943), philosophical poems which echo *Beethoven's late compositions.

> We shall not cease from exploration
> And the end of all our exploring
> Will be to arrive where we started
> And know the place for the first time.'
> 'Little Gidding', from *Four Quartets*

His witty *Old Possum's Book of Practical Cats* (1939) was later dramatised in Andrew *Lloyd W *Lloyd Webber's musical *Cat*s (1981). As essayist and critic he had gained a great and increasing influence especially in reviving interest in *Dryden and metaphysical poets such as *Donne. Lectures, as Charles Eliot Norton professor of poetry at Harvard, were reprinted as *The Use of Poetry and the Use of Criticism* (1933). Yet a third reputation awaited him as a dramatist. *The Rock* (1934), written as the words of a Church pageant, was followed by the verse drama *Murder in the Cathedral* (1935). After World War II he adapted verse drama to contemporary themes (with allegorical significance) in the very successful *The Cocktail Party* (1950), *The Confidential Clerk* (1954) and *The Elder Statesman* (1958). In 1948 Eliot was awarded the OM and the Nobel Prize for Literature.

Ackroyd, P., *T. S. Eliot*. 1984.

Elisabeth (Elisabeth Amalie Eugenie von Habsburg-Lothringen, née von Wittelsbach) (1837–1898). Empress consort of Austria, Queen consort of Hungary 1854–98. Born in Munich, to a branch of the Bavarian royal family, known as 'Sisi' or 'Sissi', and a great beauty, she married the emperor *Franz Joseph in 1854, but her lively and wayward nature found the formality of court life in Vienna increasingly irksome. An expert equestrienne, accomplished linguist and aspiring poet, she spent much time in France, Italy, England and Switzerland and built herself a palace on Corfu. In 1889 her only son, *Rudolf, was found dead with his mistress, Marie Vetsera, in a shooting-box at Mayerling. She was stabbed to death by an anarchist, Luigi Lucheni, in Geneva. She appears as a character in many books and films.

Haslip. J., *The Lonely Empress*. 1965, repr. 1987.

Elisabeth (Elisabeth Gabriel Valérie Marie de Belgique, née von Wittelsbach) (1876–1965). Queen consort of the Belgians 1909–34. A Bavarian duchess, named for her aunt, the Empress of Austria, she married *Albert, later King of the Belgians, in 1900. She worked as a nurse, became a patron of the arts, especially music, was a friend of *Einstein, helped Jews to escape during the German occupation, and—known as 'the Red Queen'—supported some radical causes and visited Russia and China.

Elizabeth (Erzebét), **St** (1207–1231). Hungarian princess in Germany. Daughter of András II, King of Hungary, she was brought up at the court of the Landgrave of Thuringia, to whose son she was betrothed at the age of 4. Though the court at the Wartburg was famed for its gatherings of poets and minstrels, she gave herself up, from childhood, to religious austerity and charity. When 14 she married and, under her influence, her young husband went on a crusade but died on the way. Elizabeth, expelled from court for wasting the revenues on charity, went to Marburg where, encouraged in an overstrict asceticism by a harsh confessor, she soon died. She was canonised in 1235.

Elizabeth I (1533–1603). Queen of England and Ireland 1558–1603. Born in Greenwich, daughter of *Henry VIII and *Anne Boleyn, on her mother's execution Henry declared her illegitimate, but his will reinstated her in the line of succession. Before

she came to the throne, either from compulsion or from prudence, she remained in studious retirement but she was for a time imprisoned in the Tower of London and later confined by her half-sister *Mary I**,** at Woodstock**,** on suspicion of being involved in *Wyatt's rebellion (1554). Highly intelligent, she had good teachers (mostly exponents of Erasmian 'new learning' e.g. Roger *Ascham) and was proficient in Latin, Greek and the Romance languages. Basically indifferent in matters of religion, when she came to the throne on Mary's death she favoured a conciliatory religious policy: her aim was to be governor of a Church whose doctrines would be acceptable to all but the most extreme. But she realised that to strengthen her position she must range herself with the Protestant rulers in Europe although her aim was to secure peace and prosperity and avoid foreign entanglement. Her Church Settlement was based on parliamentary statute (1559). Within three days of her accession she made William Cecil, later Lord *Burghley, her chief secretary, and she relied on his sage judgment until he died (1598). One crucial decision was expected of her—to choose a husband and to provide the country with an heir. Despite many suitors this she never did. Her sister's widower *Felipe II of Spain was an early suitor and well into her middle age others appeared, including two of *Catherine de'Medici's sons, Henri, Duc d'Anjou (later *Henri III) and François, Duc d'Alençon. Her attitudes to her suitors were highly ambiguous. Her inclinations turned to Robert Dudley, Earl of *Leicester, who remained at her side and served her at court and in the field, but she did not marry him. Known as the Virgin Queen (Walter *Raleigh named the colony of Virginia to honour this attribute), she was preoccupied with matrimonial schemes or affairs of apparent passion from her teens to her fifties. The heir to her throne was *Mary, Queen of Scots, who, expelled from her own country, had taken refuge in England. Too dangerous to be left at large she was confined to a succession of country houses from 1568, the centre of many plots to kill Elizabeth which the indefatigable Francis *Walsingham unravelled. In 1580 Pope *Gregory XIII proclaimed that eliminating Elizabeth would not be a sin and she felt exposed after the murder of her ally *William the Silent in 1584. Under pressure from Parliament and her Council, Mary was tried and convicted of treason, and Elizabeth signed a death warrant (1587). She later protested that she had not intended the sentence to be executed; but it was. Meanwhile captains *Drake, *Frobisher and *Hawkins carried out piracy and undeclared war against the merchant fleets and overseas possessions of Spain with the queen's tacit approval. In 1588 Felipe of Spain organised a vast Armada to overwhelm England (while the parsimonious Elizabeth delayed her own preparations) which her sea captains, with their superior gunnery and tactics, put to rout. The defeat of the Armada did not mean the end of the war with Spain, which became one of attrition, lasting until her successor *James I made peace (1604). Late in the 1590s there was an Irish uprising, and in 1601 the Earl of *Essex, a former favourite, attempted an unsuccessful rebellion. But the period was also one distinguished by an unrivalled flowering of literature, especially drama (*Shakespeare, *Marlowe). Elizabeth said of herself that she had 'the heart and stomach of a king' but she was also vain and capricious, could be fickle and even callous. Yet she had a gift for holding the affection and esteem of her subjects and for choosing wise advisors.

Neale, J. E., *Queen Elizabeth I.* 1971; MacCaffrey, W., *Elizabeth I.* 1993.

Elizabeth II (Elizabeth Alexandra Mary Windsor) (1926–2022). Queen of the United Kingdom and Head of the Commonwealth 1952–2022. Born in London, elder daughter of the Duke and Duchess of York (later King *George VI and Queen *Elizabeth), she was educated privately, and during World War II was commissioned in the Auxiliary Territorial Service. In November 1947 she married Lt Philip Mountbatten, Duke of *Edinburgh. Their children were Charles, later Prince of Wales, then *Charles III (b. 1948), *Anne (b. 1950), *Andrew (b. 1960) and Edward, later Earl of Wessex, then Duke of *Edinburgh (b. 1964). On a visit to Kenya she learned of the sudden death of her father and her own accession (February 1952). She was crowned at Westminster Abbey in June 1953. In the course of her duties she toured every part of the Commonwealth and entertained many heads of state. Horse racing was prominent among her leisure interests and she was a successful owner. Her Silver Jubilee was celebrated in 1977 and she remained personally popular. The *'annus horribilis'* of 1992 was marked by intense media scrutiny of the failed marriage of Charles, Prince of Wales and *Diana, a fire at Windsor Castle and the ending of tax exemption. In September 2015 she became the longest-reigning British monarch, passing Queen *Victoria. The Duke of Edinburgh died in April 2021, during the Covid pandemic. The queen's Platinum Jubilee in 2022 marked a reign of 70 years (close to *Louis XIV).

Lacey, R., *Majesty.* 1977; Pimlott, B., *The Queen: A Biography of Elizabeth II*. 1996; Bradford, S., *Queen Elizabeth II: Her Life in Our Times*. 2012.

Elizabeth (Elizabeth Stuart, later Wittelsbach) (1596–1662). Queen of Bohemia 1619–20. Daughter of James VI of Scotland (*James I of England), she provided the future link between the Stuart and Hanoverian dynasties. In 1613 she married *Frederick V of the Palatinate and after his brief period as King of Bohemia (1619) she was known as the 'Winter Queen'. After their expulsion the family lived in Holland. Among her 13 children were the dashing Prince *Rupert, and *Sophia who married Ernst August, later elector of Hanover, and became the mother of Great Britain's *George I. Elizabeth, who returned to England after *Charles II's

restoration, was a vivacious fascinating creature who became known as the Queen of Hearts, the subject of a famous poem by Sir Henry *Wotton.

Elizabeth (Elizabeth Angela Marguerite, née Bowes-Lyon) (1900–2002). British queen consort 1936–52, known as the Queen Mother. Born in London, daughter of the 14th Earl of Strathmore and Kinghorne, she was educated by governesses. In 1923 she married Albert, Duke of York, later King *George VI and had two daughters, *Elizabeth (b.1926) and *Margaret Rose (b.1930). She retained her popularity well into her 10th decade and was the longest lived of British queens. Lord Warden of the Cinque Ports 1978–2002, she became the royal family's first centenarian on 4 August 2000.

Elizabeth (author of *Elizabeth and her German Garden*) *see* **Arnim, Elizabeth von**

Elizabeth (née Woodville or Wydville) (c.1437–1492). Queen consort of England 1464–70; 1471–83. In 1452 she married Sir John Grey (d. 1461), a Lancastrian in the Wars of the Roses. In 1464, unexpectedly, she married King *Edward IV, a Yorkist, and was mother of the future *Edward VI. In 1469 her father and brother were executed by Richard Neville, Earl of *Warwick. She actively supported the deposition of *Richard III in 1485, and her eldest daughter, Elizabeth of York, married *Henry VII. She was regarded as a great beauty.

Elizabeth of York (1465–1503). English queen consort 1486–1503. Daughter of *Edward IV, by her marriage to *Henry VII she linked the dynasties of York and Lancaster. She is said to have died of grief at the death of her elder son, Arthur.

Elizabeth (Yelizaveta) **Petrovna** (1709–1762). Tsarina (Empress) of Russia 1741–62. Daughter of *Peter the Great and his second wife, Empress *Catherine I, she became empress after a group of guards officers had deposed the infant Ivan VI. She built the Winter Palace in St Petersburg and introduced French culture and language into court circles. When the Seven Years War broke out (1756) she joined the Franco-Austrian alliance against *Friedrich II (the Great) of Prussia, a policy reversed by her nephew and successor, *Peter III. She never married.

Ellenborough, Edward Law, 1st Baron (1750–1818). English lawyer. He made a great name for himself by his defence of Warren *Hastings during his long impeachment (1788–95), became Attorney-General 1801–02 and Lord Chief Justice 1802–18. His judgments were an odd mixture: harsh and progressive. His son **Edward Law, 1st Earl of Ellenborough** (1790–1871) was President of the Board of Control for India 1828–30, 1834–35, 1841, 1858; and Governor-General of India 1842–44. His term in India was brief, controversial and violent. Despite instructions to withdraw from Afghanistan, he directed his forces to occupy Kabul (1842), annexed Sind (1842) and conquered Gwalior (1844). Dismissed by the East India Company, he was created earl on his return to England and campaigned for India to be controlled directly by the Crown.

Ellet, Charles (1810–1862). American engineer, born Penn's Manor, Penn. He worked for three years as a surveyor and assistant engineer, then studied at the École Polytechnique, Paris, and travelled widely in Europe, returning to the US in 1832. In 1842 he completed the first wire suspension bridge in the US, at Fairmount, Pennsylvania and between 1846–49 redesigned and built the world's first longspan wire cable suspension bridge, over the Ohio River at Wheeling, with a central span of 308 metres (1,010 feet). It failed in 1854 due to aerodynamic instability. He invented naval rams and in the US Civil War he equipped nine Mississippi river steamboats as rams, which defeated a fleet of Confederate rams. He died in the battle.

Ellington, 'Duke' (Edward Kennedy) (1899–1974). American composer, pianist and bandleader, born in Washington DC. Grandson of a slave, he worked in 'swing', but primarily in jazz, achieving national recognition from 1927 at the Cotton Club in Harlem. He composed about 900 works, including *Mood Indigo*; *Don't Get Around Much Any More*; *Black, Brown and Beige*; and the ballet *The River*. He made many recordings, toured constantly with his big band, appeared in a few films and on television, and wrote some film scores. He was recognised on a coin and a stamp, and received the Presidential Medal of Freedom (1969), 15 Emmys and a posthumous Pulitzer Prize.

Lambert, G. E., *Duke Ellington*. 1959; Hasse, J. E., *Beyond Category: The Life and Genius of Duke Ellington*. 1995; Teachout, T., *Duke*. 2015.

Ellis, (Henry) **Havelock** (1859–1939). English writer. He taught in rural New South Wales 1875–79, then studied medicine in London and devoted himself to a scientific analysis of sex, leading to his pioneering work, *Studies in the Psychology of Sex*, published from 1898 onwards. Among his other works were a series of books on science (1889–1914) and essays on Elizabethan and Jacobean drama.

Calder-Marshall, A., *Havelock Ellis: A Biography*. 1959.

Ellroy, James (1948–). American novelist. His dark crime novels include *L.A. Confidential* (1990), *American Tabloid* (1995), and *My Dark Places* (1996).

Ellsberg, Daniel (1931–2023). American analyst, economist and whistle blower, born in Chicago. Educated at Cambridge and Harvard, he served as a marine in Vietnam, then worked for the Rand Corporation. In 1971 he leaked what became known as the Pentagon Papers; documents demonstrating that US policy makers had long recognised that the Vietnam war was unwinnable but continued to engage in pointless destruction and death. Charged

with conspiracy and theft in 1973, Ellsberg's trial collapsed following the exposure of illegal actions by the prosecution.

Ellsworth, Lincoln (1880–1951). American explorer. In 1926 he flew over the North Pole with Amundsen and Nobile in the airship *Norge*. He made a pioneering flight over Antarctica in 1935.

Elssler, Franjziske (or Fanny) (1810–1884). Austrian dancer. One of the most celebrated of 19th-century dancers, she was regarded as the chief rival of *Taglioni and, whether she was performing in London, Paris or America, she was equally acclaimed. She was seen at her best in Spanish dances, which demanded the particular exuberance for which she was famed.

Guest, I., *Fanny Elssler, The Pagan Ballerina*. 1970.

Elyot, Sir Thomas (c.1490–1546). English humanist, translator, essayist and lexicographer. He worked with *Wolsey as Clerk of the Privy Council 1523–30 and envoy to the Emperor *Charles V 1531 but was ambiguous about major changes in the relationship of church and state. His great enthusiasm was for the use of the vernacular in public documents. *The Boke Named the Governour* (1531) set out a system of popular education for the gentry stressing their social and political role. A translator and coiner of new words (e.g. 'encyclopaedia'), he compiled a Latin into English dictionary (1536).

Elzevir, Louis (c.1540–1617). Dutch printer. His family became famous printers for many generations in Leyden. His son **Bonaventura Elzevir** (1583–1682), who took his nephew Abraham into partnership, produced (1634–36) beautiful editions of the classics, *Caesar, *Livy, *Tacitus, etc. Other members of the family established themselves in Amsterdam where they produced a famous French Bible (1669).

Emerson, Ralph Waldo (1803–1882). American essayist and poet, born in Boston. One of six children of a Unitarian minister, on his father's death (1811) he was brought up by his mother and an intellectual aunt. Educated at Harvard, like his father he joined the ministry, but after his first wife died he abandoned it in 1832. He travelled in Europe and in England (1833), met *Wordsworth, *Coleridge and other writers, finding a kindred spirit and lasting friend in *Carlyle. After returning to America, he settled in Concord and in 1835 married Lydia Jackson. In *Nature* (1836) he set out his philosophy of transcendentalism, developed after years of study, including elements of German idealism, Greek and Hindu culture, centred on the concept of the immanence of the divine in the real world, linked with pantheism, celebrating individualism, rejecting materialism and empiricism. His essays were deeply influenced by *Montaigne. His later works, for example *Representative Men* (1850), were often based on his notes for the long series of popular lectures for which he became famous. He regarded himself primarily as a poet but is chiefly remembered for his essays on politics, religion and literature. He was also an active abolitionist. He influenced *Whitman and *Thoreau, was noticed by *Nietzsche, but irritated *Melville, Henry *James and T. S. *Eliot. *The Conduct of Life* (1860) summarises and clarifies, in a series of essays, his philosophic views on such subjects as worship, fate, power, etc. Later essays are contained in, for example, *Society and Solitude* (1870). His *Journals* were published in 1909–14.

Richardson, R. R., *Emerson. The Living Fire*. 1995.

Eminence Grise *see* **Joseph, Père**

Emin Pasha, Mehmed (Eduard Schnitzer) (1840–1892). German doctor and explorer. He remained in the Equatorial province of Sudan after the death of *Gordon, whom he had served. He was eventually killed by Arab slave traders about 160 km east of Stanley Falls.

Emmet, Robert (1778–1803). Irish patriot. A Protestant radical, he joined the United Irishmen while still at Trinity College, Dublin. Compelled to leave, he went to France but returned (1802) convinced that he would have French support for an Irish rising. This, when it took place (1803), was premature and ineffective. Fifty men were killed and Emmet himself was betrayed, condemned and executed.

Landreth, H., *The Pursuit of Robert Emmet*. 1948.

Empedocles (c.493–433 BCE). Greek philosopher, born in Sicily. In his theory of matter he postulates four indestructible elements, fire, air, water, and earth, of which, variously blended and compounded, all material substances are composed. He also worked out an important system of sense perception. His long poems, *On Nature and Purification*, in which his philosophic and religious theories were set out only survive in part. The legend ascribing his death to a fall or plunge into the crater of Mount Etna has attracted several writers: *Milton, *Meredith, and Matthew *Arnold (*Empedocles on Etna*, 1852) refer variously to the theme.

Empson, Sir William (1906–1984). English literary critic and poet, born in Yorkshire. Educated at Winchester and Magdalen College, Cambridge, he studied mathematics and English with I. A. *Richards. His first book *Seven Types of Ambiguity* (1930), argued that the multiplicities of meaning in literature arose from ambiguities in the language used, drawing on *Freud and *Marx, and became an influential text of New Criticism. He taught English literature at the universities of Tokyo 1931–34, Beijing 1937–39, 1947–52 and Sheffield 1953–71 and worked for the BBC during World War II. His terse, witty, complex and emotional poetry was published in *Poems* (1930) and *The Gathering Storm* (1940) and he wrote studies of *Shakespeare and *Milton.

Haffenden, J., *William Empson*, 2 vols, 2005, 2006.

Enders, John Franklin (1897–1985). American bacteriologist. He studied English literature at Harvard, then turned to bacteriology, joined the faculty of the Harvard Medical School in 1932, worked at the Boston Children's Hospital and became a full professor only in 1956. In 1954 he shared the Nobel Prize for Medicine with T. H. Weller and F. C. Robbins for their discovery of the ability of the poliomyelitis virus to grow in cultures of different tissues. This led to the discovery of *Salk's polio vaccine. He also helped to develop a vaccine against measles (1962).

Enescu, George (**Georges Enesco** in France) (1881–1955). Romanian composer, conductor, violinist, pianist and teacher. He studied in Vienna (graduating at 13) and Paris, with *Massenet and *Fauré. He wrote a powerful Octet for strings (1900). His two *Romanian Rhapsodies* (1901), strongly influenced by folk music, were an instant success, which he came to regret. He conducted frequently in the US and became the teacher of Yehudi *Menuhin. He wrote two symphonies, piano sonatas and the opera *Œdipe* (1931). Pablo *Casals described Enescu as 'the greatest musical phenomenon since Mozart'.

Engels, Friedrich (1820–1895). German socialist, born in Barmen. Son of a cotton manufacturer, he became (1842) the Manchester agent of his father's business and collected information for his *The Condition of the Working Classes in England* (1844). Meanwhile his lifelong friendship with *Marx had begun. In 1845 he gave up his business to be with him and they jointly produced the famous *Communist Manifesto* (1848) in London. Thereafter he sustained Marx with constant financial support, even re-entering the business to do so and, when after his father's death he finally sold his partnership (1870), he joined Marx in London and stayed with him until he died (1883). The remaining years of his life were spent in editing and translating Marx's works. His *The Origin of the Family, Private Property and the State* (1884, English translation 1902) touches on what he called 'the woman problem'. Simone de *Beauvoir thought it superficial.

Mayer, G., *Friedrich Engels*. 1969; Green, J., *Engels. A Revolutionary Life*. 2008; Hunt, T., *The Frock-Coated Communist. The Revolutionary Life of Friedrich Engels*. 2009.

Enghien, Louis Antoine Henri de Bourbon, Duc d' (1772–1804). French soldier. Eldest son of the Prince de Condé and related to the French royal family, he left France in 1792 during the Revolution to join the emigré army. In 1804 *Napoléon, on the assumption or pretence that he was implicated in a conspiracy, sent agents to abduct him from neutral territory and had him tried and executed. The effect upon Napoléon's reputation proved it to be a blunder as well as a crime.

English, Sir Bill (né Simon William) (1961–). New Zealand National politician. A farmer and public servant, he was twice Leader of the National Party 2001–03; 2016– , served as John *Key's Deputy and Finance Minister 2008–16 and succeeded him as Prime Minister 2016–17, losing office after Winston *Peters formed a coalition with Labour.

Ennius, Quintus (239–169 BCE). Latin poet. He wrote 22 tragedies, borrowing his themes mainly from *Euripides, and his *Annals,* written in hexameters, which relate the history of Rome from earliest times. Only fragments of his works survive.

Ensor, James, Baron (1860–1949). Belgian painter. His father was English but he spent almost all his life at Ostend. His grotesque and satirical pictures, reminiscent of *Bruegel and *Bosch but painted in the technique of *Manet or *Courbet, gained recognition very slowly, but in 1929 he was created a baron. Among his best known pictures were *Christ's Entry into Brussels* in 1889 (1888) and *Dangerous Cooks* (1896). He often painted masquerades and skeletons, and was a forerunner of Expressionism.

Tannenbaum, L., *James Ensor*. 1951.

Enver Pasha (1881–1922). Turkish soldier and politician, born in Istanbul. As a leader of the 'Young Turks' he was prominent in the revolution of 1908 which restored the 1876 constitution. In 1913 he led a *coup d'état*, resulting in power passing to a pro-German triumvirate of *Taalat Pasha, Jamal Pasha and himself. As War Minister 1914–18 he brought the Ottoman Empire into World War I on Germany's side and with Talaat, bears main responsibility for the genocide of between 0.8 and 1.5 million Armenians from 1915. He was a political opponent of Mustafa Kemal (*Atatürk). He fled to Russia in 1918. Sent to Turkestan to establish Bolshevik power, he raised a revolt in his own interest and was murdered by Soviet agents in Bukhara.

Eötvös, Péter (1944–). Hungarian composer and conductor. He studied with *Stockhausen, and his works include *Psychokosmos* (1993), for chamber orchestra, and the opera *The Three Sisters* (1998), based on *Chekhov.

Epaminondas (d.362 BCE). Theban soldier and statesman. He destroyed Spartan supremacy by his victory at Leuctra (371) in Boeotia and subsequent march south. He built a fleet to keep that of the Athenians in check and one more success against them would probably have enabled him to achieve his aims. Such victory was achieved (362) at Mantinea in the Peloponnese but at the cost of his life. But for his death at the moment of final victory he might have achieved his statesmanlike vision of a federation of all Greece.

Epictetus of Hierapolis (c.55–135 CE). Greek Stoic philosopher, born in Phrygia. A freed slave, he went to Rome to teach but was banished, with other

philosophers, by *Domitian and settled in Eporus. His moral view was that one ought to escape the slavery of desire and so become free to act in accord with divine providence. His maxims were collected by his pupil Arrian in the Enchiridion and in eight books of commentaries.

Epicurus (c.342–270 BCE). Greek philosopher, born in Samos. He founded the Epicurean system, the great rival of Stoicism in the Graeco-Roman world. He first opened a school at Mytilene in 310 but moved it to Athens in 306. Epicureanism, in which the senses, the only arbiters of reality, are judged infallible, has been widely misunderstood since it equates 'pleasure' with moral good. Pleasure, however, Epicurus regards as absence of pain in matters concerned with ethics and morals, an untroubled mind, a state only to be reached through the practice of virtue. He both practised and preached moderation in physical pleasures. Epicurus adapted the atomic theory of *Democritus to the needs of his own system, e.g. by postulating that some soul atoms may depart from strict mathematical precision and swerve in their paths, thus allowing for free will. Little remains of his writings, but his doctrines were presented by the Roman poet *Lucretius in the philosophical poem *De rerum natura*.

Epimenides of Knossos (fl. c.600 BCE). Cretan philosopher. Epimenides' paradox, 'All Cretans are liars', demonstrates a self-referential problem in logic that contributed to developments in mathematics and computing in the 20th century. Kurt *Gödel discussed it in his 'incompleteness theorem' (1931).

Hofstadter, D. R., *Gödel, Escher, Bach: An Eternal Golden Braid*. 1980.

Epstein, Sir Jacob (1880–1959). American-British sculptor, born in New York. Of Jewish-Russian-Polish parentage, he lived in England from 1905. His massive monumental pieces, in which distortion is used as a conscious technique for purposes of composition or emphasis, aroused at first much public protest. They include Oscar *Wilde's tomb in Paris (1912), *Rima*, a memorial to W. H. *Hudson in Hyde Park (1925), *Genesis*, a stone carving of a pregnant woman (1931), *Ecce Homo* a controversial figure of Christ (1933), and *Adam* (1938–39). *Christ in Majesty,* for Llandaff Cathedral (1957) and *Victory over the Devil*, at Coventry Cathedral (1958) are very powerful. He made vigorous and realistic bronze busts, in the manner of *Rodin, of such celebrities as *Shaw, *Einstein and *Churchill.

Buckle, R., *Jacob Epstein, Sculptor*. 1963; Gardiner, S., *Epstein.* 1993.

Erasmus, Desiderius ('the desired beloved', originally Geert Geerts) (1466?–1536). Dutch humanist scholar and theologian, born probably in Rotterdam. He was the illegitimate son of a clerk Rogier Geert (or Gerard) in whose home at Gouda he was brought up. After the death of his father (1484) his guardians induced him to enter an Augustinian monastery, an experience which left him with a deep dislike of monastic life. Later he became a secular priest and was secretary to the Bishop of Cambrai, who sent him (1495) to the University of Paris where he acquired an unrivalled command of Latin. He remained in Paris to teach until invited by one of his pupils to visit England (1499–1500), where he first gained the friendship of Thomas *More and John *Colet. A second brief visit (1505–06) followed and after some years in Italy he was invited to return once more and became a Reader in Greek and Fellow of Queen's College, Cambridge 1511–14. He spent the years 1514–21 mainly in Basle, and from 1517 was in Louvain where the introduction of the new humanist studies gained his approving encouragement. Already he had written his most notable work, *Adages*, a collection of classical proverbs (1500), *Praise of Folly* (1509), a witty and satirical attack on the corruption, ignorance and superstition of both society and the Church, and *Colloquies* (1519) a collection of dialogues, which incidentally throw much light on his own life and convey a vivid and detailed picture of the times he lived in. In 1516 appeared his edition of the Greek text of the New Testament together with a Latin translation. After leaving Louvain he returned to Basle where he spent most of the rest of his life engaged in violent religious controversies, letter writing and preparing critical editions of the works of early Fathers of the Church such as St *Jerome and St *Augustine. He often attacked the shortcomings of the clergy and abuses within the Church but he refused to join *Luther's schismatic movement and constantly appealed for moderation. Erasmus, witty and provocative, but not an original thinker or writer, stood for reasoned debate and examination, opposing confrontation. His influence among contemporary scholars and theologians of his day was immense and no one of his time was held in greater esteem.

Bainton, R. H., *Erasmus.* 1970; Jardine, L., *Erasmus, Man of Letters.* 1993.

Erastus (originally Lüber or Liebler), **Thomas** (1524–1583). German-Swiss theologian and philosopher. A qualified physician, he went to Heidelberg University as professor of medicine (1557), then to Basle (1580). A follower of the Protestant reformer *Zwingli, he denied that excommunication, whether the sentence was imposed by the Pope or, for example, Presbyterian elders, was valid, claiming that the state has supreme authority over a Church in matters (except those concerned with doctrines) arising within its boundaries. This tenet (known as Erastianism) was later used to justify complete subordination of ecclesiastical to secular authority.

Eratosthenes of Cyrene (c.276–194 BCE). Greek astronomer, geographer, mathematician, historian, poet and polymath, born in Cyrene (Shahat, Libya).

Educated by the Stoics in Athens and at the Platonic Academy in Athens, he was appointed by *Ptolemy III, c. 245, to direct the great Library at Alexandria.

Following *Pythagoras, *Aristarchus of Samos and *Aristotle, he accepted that the earth was a sphere, making an extraordinarily accurate calculation of its circumference at the poles (the metric equivalent of 40,000 km), within 1 per cent of the exact figure, by measuring the angle of the shadow cast by the sun at Alexandria and Aswan. However, Ptolemy preferred an estimate of 29,000 km by Poseidonius. He accurately determined the earth's axial tilt, produced a detailed star map and was the first to propose a leap year. (He did not challenge the concept of a geocentric universe.)

Eratosthenes coined the word 'geography'. His *Geographika*, three volumes, now lost, survives in part through fragments recorded by Greek and Roman historians. His famous map of the known world (c. 225 BCE), of which no early copies survive, extended 9,000 km from North-West to South-East, from Ireland (unnamed), to 'Brettania', Spain and North Africa, Ethiopia, Arabia, Persia, to the southern tip of India. 4,000 km from North to South, omitting northern Asia and China, and surrounded by the Northern and Atlantic Oceans, it was the first map to use a grid of parallels and meridians to indicate distances. (It was the model for *Strabo's map). He also identified different climate zones: torrid, temperate and frigid.

He produced a system for determining prime numbers ('the sieve of Eratosthenes'), tried to establish a precise chronology of the ancient world, beginning with the Trojan War, and wrote treatises on poetry and music. Blind and tired of life, he starved himself to death in Alexandria. A crater on the moon is named for him.

Erckmann-Chatrian. French literary partnership of **Emile Erckmann** (1822–1899) and **Alexandre Chatrian** (1826–1890). They both came from Lorraine, and some of their stories and novels reveal their local associations; others recall the macabre fantasies of Edgar Allan *Poe. The best known, e.g. *Histoire d'un conscrit* (1864) and *Waterloo* (1865), present a common soldier's attitude to the Revolutionary and Napoléonic wars.

Erdoğan, Recep Tayyip (1954–). Turkish politician, born in Istanbul. Mayor of Istanbul 1994–98, he was imprisoned briefly for breaking rigid anticlerical laws and in 2001 he founded the Justice and Development Party (AK Parti), a moderate Islamist group, critical of the *Atatürk secularist tradition. He was Prime Minister of Türkiye 2003–14. He maintained diplomatic relations with Israel, denounced the *Assad regime in Syria and sought close ties with the US. Massive protests in Istanbul against the AKP by radicals and secularists in June 2013 were violently suppressed by police. Erdoğan was elected as President of Türkiye 2014– after the office was changed to provide for direct popular voting.

Following a referendum in 2017, an executive Presidency was created and after Erdoğan's re-election in June 2018 the regime became increasingly authoritarian and Islamist. Aya Sofia became a mosque again in 2020. In 2021 he protested at *Biden's characterisation of the Armenian massacres in 1915 as 'genocide'.

Erdös, Pál (1913–1996). Hungarian mathematician, born in Budapest. A child prodigy, in 1934 he left Hungary for Britain, then to the US in 1938, and later Israel, becoming notorious as an eccentric itinerant, publishing 1525 papers with 511 collaborators. He wrote important papers on phase transitions, complexity theory, probability, and prime numbers, won the Wolf Prize for Mathematics in 1985, was elected FRS in 1996 and died attending a conference in Warsaw.

Hoffman, P., *The Man Who Loved Only Numbers*. 1998.

Erhard, Ludwig (1897–1977). German economist and Christian Democratic politician. He was a teacher and later director of the Nuremberg Trade High School 1928–42. Entering politics in 1945, he was Bavarian Minister for Economic Affairs (1946), Economic Director in the American and British zone of occupation 1947–49 and, under Chancellor *Adenauer, became Federal Minister for Economic Affairs 1949–63. He was an ardent advocate of competitive 'free market' economy and gained wide praise for his major contribution to the remarkable postwar recovery (the 'economic miracle') of West Germany. He succeeded Adenauer as Chancellor of the German Federal Republic 1963–66.

Eric the Red (c.950–c.1003). Norse explorer. According to the Icelandic saga that bears his name, he was banished from Iceland (982) on a charge of homicide, then, again outlawed, he discovered and named Greenland, and spent three years (982–985) exploring the southwest coast. He established two colonies there that survived until the 14th century. His son was *Leif Ericcson.

Ericsson, John (né Johan) (1803–1889). Swedish-American engineer and inventor. He invented a hot-air engine and moved to England in 1826 to exploit it, remaining there 13 years. His locomotive *Novelty* competed (unsuccessfully) with *Stephenson's *The Rocket*. His outstanding contribution was his screw propeller for ships (patented 1836). In 1839 he went to the US where he applied his propeller to merchant and war ships. He is particularly remembered for designing the *Monitor*, a new type of turreted ironclad warship with very low free-board which proved its worth in the Civil War. In his later years he constructed a sun-motor.

Erigena, Johannes Scotus (c.810–870). Scots-Irish theologian and philosopher. He became head of a school at the court of the Frankish king *Charles the Bald. He was deeply versed in Platonism and derived from it the doctrine that all that exists emanates from a divine source. His attempt to reconcile Greek sources with the Bible and works by the Christian Fathers was later misunderstood and he was denounced by the Council of Paris (1210) and by Pope Honorius III (1225). Erigena's work prepared the way for medieval scholasticism.

Erlander, Tage Fritiof (1901–1985). Swedish Socialist politician. Originally a journalist, he worked on an encyclopaedia for nine years, and entered the Riksdag in 1933. He initiated major educational reforms, and was Prime Minister of Sweden 1946–60, a period of great prosperity.

Ernst August, King of Hanover *see* **Cumberland, Ernest Augustus, Duke of**

Ernst, Max (1891–1976). German artist, born in the Rhineland. With *Arp, he brought Dadaism (1916–22) from Paris to Cologne. With Arp, too, he made the transition to Surrealism. In his earlier work he had made much use of *frottages*. i.e. rubbings taken from, e.g., floorboards or any surface that would create interesting patterns, and collages, pictures composed of pieces of paper, cloth etc. stuck to a background, not so much for their plastic value as to combine disparate, anecdotal elements. For his later Surrealistic work he developed the techniques of painting. His paintings, more perhaps than those of any of his Surrealist contemporaries, evoke the emotional atmosphere of dreams.

Waldberg, P., *Max Ernst*. 1958.

Erskine, Thomas Erskine, 1st Baron (1750–1823). Scottish advocate and politician, born in Edinburgh. Son of the Earl of Buchan, he served in the navy and army, studied at Trinity College, Cambridge, was called to the bar in 1778, and rapidly won a great reputation. In 1779 he successfully defended Admiral Augustus Keppel, who was charged with incompetence, and in 1781 secured the acquittal of Lord George *Gordon, who was charged with treason following the riots that bear his name. He was a Whig MP 1783–84, 1790–1800, 1801–06. Some of his later defences of unpopular characters, such as Tom *Paine, cost him temporary loss of favour. In 1806–07 he was Lord Chancellor. He advocated the emancipation of black slaves, and in the 1820s he supported the independence of Greece, Queen *Caroline's cause and campaigned against animal cruelty.

Erté (né Romain de Tirtoff) (1892–1990). Russian-French designer and artist, born in St Petersburg. In Paris from 1912, he was a prolific designer of sets and costumes for opera and ballet, then turned to furniture, posters, lithography and fashion.

Esarhaddon (d.669 BCE). King of Assyria 681–669 BCE. After succeeding his murdered father *Sennacherib, he appeased the Babylonians by rebuilding their city and making it into a second capital. In 675 he attacked Egypt and annexed the Nile Delta. It was while advancing to put down a rebellion there that he died. His son *Ashur-bani-pal was the last of the great Assyrian kings.

Esau. Old Testament character, son of *Isaac and Rebecca, elder twin of *Jacob, and ancestor of the Edomites according to Hebrew tradition. His name means 'hairy'. He became a nomadic hunter, and Jacob a shepherd. Jacob, though the younger, was the dominant character, and he persuaded Esau into selling him his birthright for some red pottage; he also took the father's blessing intended for the first born. He fled to escape the furious Esau, but on his return, 20 years later, Esau forgave him.

Escher, Maurits Cornelis (1898–1972). Dutch graphic artist. His lithographs, engravings and drawings explored visual paradoxes such as three-dimensional representation, the ambiguity of relations between substance and shadow or upper and lower planes on cubes, and the phenomenon of 'strange loops' (e.g. quasi-fugal forms such as the representation of two hands, each drawing the other, or a waterfall in which the source is lower than the base but where each isolated element of the design is logically consistent: only the totality is impossible). He achieved considerable posthumous fame.

Hofstadter, D. R., *Gödel, Escher, Bach: An Eternal Golden Braid*. 1980.

Escoffier, (Georges) **Auguste** (1846–1935). French master chef. After being chef on the staff of *Napoléon III in the Franco-Prussian War, he went to London, where he gained an international reputation as chef at the Carlton and Savoy hotels. At the Savoy he invented the famous Pêche Melba in honour of the soprano Nellie *Melba.

Henboden, E., and Thalamas. P., *G. A.Escoffier*. 1955.

Escrivá de Balaguer, St Josemaría (1902–1975). Spanish cleric. He founded Opus Dei ('The work of God') as a lay movement in 1928, and it received papal approval in 1950. A charismatic but controversial figure, he was beatified in 1992 and canonised in 2002.

Esenin, Sergei Aleksandrovich *see* **Yesinin, Sergei Alexandrovich**

Esher, 2nd Viscount, Reginald Baliol Brett (1852–1930). English official and courtier. Son of a judge, educated at Eton and Trinity College, Cambridge, he was a Liberal MP 1880–85, then played a mysterious, influential but sometimes enlightened role as an advisor to Queen *Victoria, *Edward VII and *George V, especially on army and civil service reform and arranging funerals. He persuaded Edward VII to

establish the Order of Merit (OM) in 1902. With A. C. Benson, he edited the highly sanitised *The Letters of Queen Victoria* (3 volumes, 1907), covering the period 1837–61, declined the viceroyalty of India (1908) and played a significant but ill-defined role with British Intelligence in France during World War I.

Lees-Milne, J. *The Enigmatic Edwardian.* 1986.

Espartero, Baldomero Joaquin Fernandez (1793–1879). Spanish soldier and politician. He fought against and was captured (1826) by *Bolívar in the War of South American Liberation. He returned to Spain, fought with distinction (1833–39) against the Carlists (*Carlos, Don) and was created Duque de la Victoria (1839). He became regent (virtually dictator) 1841–43 for the young queen *Isabella. Exiled in London 1843–48, he was again Prime Minister 1854–56. In 1870, he refused an offer of the crown following Isabella's deposition (1868).

Espronceda y Delgado, José de (1808–1842). Spanish poet and revolutionary. Often compared with *Byron, as a student he became involved in revolutionary societies and from 1827 to 1831 was an exile in London and Paris, where he came under the romantic influence of *Scott, Byron and *Hugo. He returned to Madrid (1833), where he became notorious as a man-about-town, and his growing success as a poet modified his revolutionary sentiments. His two best known works, *El Estudiante de Salamanca* (1839) and *El Diablo Mundo* (1841), are based on the legends of Don Juan and Faust.

Essex, Robert Devereux, 2nd Earl of (1566–1601). English soldier and courtier. After distinguished service in the Netherlands under his stepfather, *Leicester, he returned to England (1587) and soon became a favourite of Queen *Elizabeth I. He offended the queen by marrying Sir Philip *Sidney's widow (1590) but regained her favour by his courage in the attack on Cadiz (1596). In 1598, during one of many quarrels with the queen, he burst out with the insolent remark that the conditions she imposed were as 'crooked as her carcass' and was never really forgiven. Sent to Ireland (1599) to fight the French insurgents, he not only failed but returned to England without permission to find himself in disgrace. After some months of house arrest, early in 1601 he tried to organise a rising of the citizens of London to regain his position by force. The attempt was a hopeless failure and Essex was arrested, tried for high treason, convicted and beheaded. He was a patron of literature and himself a minor poet.

Lacey, R., *Robert, Earl of Essex, an Elizabethan Icarus*. 1971.

Essex, Robert Devereux, 3rd Earl of (1591–1646). English nobleman and soldier. Educated at Eton and Oxford, the earldom was restored to him by *James I in 1604. In 1606 he married **Frances Howard** (1590–1632); both were children, the union apparently unconsummated and annulled in 1613. Frances was involved in the murder of Sir Thomas *Overbury, go-between with her lover James I's favourite **Robert Carr, Earl of Somerset**, whom she later married. Essex gained some military experience fighting for the Protestant cause in Europe. During the Civil War, Essex was the first Captain-General and Chief Commander of the Parliamentary Army 1642–43, with varied success. He was compelled to resign in the moves which led to the formation of the New Model Army and died shortly afterwards.

Snow, V., *Essex the Rebel*. 1971.

Esterhazy, (Marie Charles) **Ferdinand Walsin** (1847–1923). French soldier, of Hungarian ancestry. He stole secret military papers and sold them to the Germans in order to pay his gambling debts. The need for a scapegoat and anti-Jewish feeling in the French army led to the wrongful arrest and conviction of *Dreyfus (1894). In 1899 Esterhazy confessed and went to live in England. He changed his name to Fitzgerald and became a grocer in Hertfordshire.

Esther (also Edissah or Hadassah) (5th century BCE?). Israelite heroine, probably legendary. In the Old Testament Book of Esther, she was queen to *Ahasuerus, King of Persia, saving her people from destruction. Her story was the subject of many paintings and an oratorio by *Händel.

Estrada, Joseph Marcelo Ejercito ['Erap'] (1937–). Filipino actor and politician. A popular movie and television star, close to the *Marcos family, he became a mayor, senator and vice president 1992–98. He succeeded *Ramos (who opposed his election) as President of the Philippines 1998–2001. Although impeachment proceedings on corruption charges collapsed, he lost support of the armed forces and resigned (January 2001) after massive demonstrations. He was arrested and jailed.

Ethelbert *see* **Æthelberht**

Ethelred I and II *see* **Æthelred I and II**

Etherege, Sir George (1635–1691). English Restoration dramatist. While working at the embassy at Constantinople he married a rich widow and was sent to the imperial court at Ratisbon. On return to England he spent much time in a court circle of witty, amoral friends. Influenced by *Molière, his comedies, e.g. *She Would If She Could* (1667–68) and *The Man of Mode or Sir Fopling Flutter* (1676), anticipated *Congreve and *Sheridan. His early work, *The Comical Revenge or Love in a Tub* (1664) was a prototype for Restoration comedy and influenced Congreve and *Goldsmith.

Underwood, D., *Etherege and the Seventeenth Century Comedy of Manners*. 1959.

Etty, William (1779–1849). English painter. He studied under *Lawrence, but owed much to the Venetian colourists seen during visits to Italy.

He became an ARA in 1824 and an RA in 1828. He was admired by *Delacroix, and is best known for luscious and voluptuous nudes and for large compositions, notable especially for their sense of design, on historical subjects or fanciful themes, e.g. *Youth at the Prow and Pleasure at the Helm* (National Gallery, London), *Cleopatra and Joan of Arc*.

Eucken, Rudolph Christian (1846–1926). German philosopher. His system, influenced by the 'Idealist' school, expounds and examines oppositions, e.g. between the spiritual life and modern materialism, which Eucken strongly attacked. Professor of philosophy 1874–1920 at Jena, he won the Nobel Prize for Literature (1908).

Euclid (c.330–260 BCE). Greek mathematician. Little is known about him except that after studying in Athens he lived in Alexandria. The 13 books of his *The Elements of Geometry* systematised existing knowledge of mathematics. The sections on geometry have remained the basis of standard textbooks for more than 2,000 years. He also wrote treatises on astronomy, optics and musical harmony, but most of his works are lost.

Berlinski, D., *The King of Infinite Space; Euclid and His Elements.*2013.

Eugène of Savoy, Prince (François Eugène de Savoie-Carignan) (1663–1736). Franco-Italian-Austrian marshal, born in Paris. Son of the Comte de Soissons and a nephew of *Mazarin, brought up in the French court, he quarrelled with *Louis XIV and joined the imperial forces in 1683. He fought with great distinction against Türkiye and, having risen to the rank of field marshal, won the brilliant and decisive Battle of Zenta (1697), as a result of which the Turks were driven from Hungary and forced to sign the Treaty of Karlowitz (1699). In the War of the Spanish Succession he fought the French first in Italy and then on the Danube, where he invited *Marlborough to join him in resisting a French threat to Vienna. The result was the great victory of Blenheim (1704) by the combined armies. Another campaign in Italy followed, after which he joined Marlborough in Flanders in the Battles of Oudenarde (1708) and Malplaquet (1709). After Marlborough's recall he was Supreme Allied Commander until the end of the war. In 1716 he was again fighting the Turks and after a victory at Petwordein he captured Belgrade. Much of the rest of his life was spent in the collection of books and pictures and the building of the Belvedere Palace in Vienna. Much admired by *Friedrich II and *Napoléon as one of 'the seven great captains', he never married.

Eugénie (Eugénie Bonaparte, née María Eugénia Ignacio Augustina de Palafox y Kirkpatrick, later Countess of Montijo) (1826–1920). Empress consort of the French 1853–71. Born in Granada, educated in Paris and Bristol, she married *Napoléon III in 1853. A celebrated beauty, she became a leader of fashion and maintained a gay and brilliant court. An ardent 'ultramontanist' (supporter of papal power), through her influence French troops preserved the pope's rule in Rome after the unification of Italy. When the emperor abdicated after defeat in the Franco-Prussian War she lived with him in England and remained there after his death. Their son *Napoléon Eugène Louis was killed fighting in the Zulu War. She commuted between Chislehurst and Menton, dying on a visit to Madrid and was buried in Farnborough.

Euler, Leonhard (1707–1783). Swiss mathematician, born at Basle. Pupil of Jean *Bernouilli, he joined him (1727) at the newly opened Academy at St Petersburg. He held professorships there from 1730 to 1741, then spent 25 years at the new Academy of Sciences at Berlin, returning (1766) to St Petersburg where, though blind, he continued to work for the rest of his life. To a great extent he laid the foundations of modern mathematics. His works include a survey of analytical mathematics, with important contributions to the theory of equations and the first complete textbook on the calculus. He also carried out notable work in astronomy and physics.

Euripides (480–406 BCE). Athenian dramatist. Younger than *Aeschyhus and *Sophocles, he reveals a more 'modern' attitude to psychology, especially that of women, but his techniques are often inferior to those of Sophocles. He makes much use of the clumsy device known as *deus ex machina* by which a god is made to appear by a mechanical device to complete the denouement. His use of a prologue to explain the legend and outline the play is in itself a confession that the action is not self-explanatory. Traditional elements of Greek tragedy, e.g. the chorus, whose singing, dancing, explaining and bewailing often hold up action, seem to irk him but he found nothing to take their place. *Aristophanes ridiculed him unmercifully and found his language often pretentious and obscure. Of more than 80 plays which he has said to have written, only 18 survive. Among the most popular is *Medea*, the story of Jason's wife who, afraid of being supplanted, poisoned her children to leave her husband childless. Phaedra's unrequited passion which brings violent death to her stepson Hippolytus is told in the play that bears his name. The legends of Agamemnon's kin are told again in *Iphigenia among the Taurians*, *Iphigenia at Aulis*, *Electra and Orestes*. The remainder include *Alcestis* and *Ion* (founder of the Ionian race), *The Trojan Women* and *Hecuba* (both revealing the poet's detestation of war), *The Bacchae*, a horrifying portrayal of the orgiastic celebrations of Dionysian rites, and *The Cyclops*, a semi-burlesque. His first plays appeared in 455 and the last probably c.408.

Murray, G., *Euripides and His Age*. 1965.

Eusebius of Caesarea (c.260/5–340). Roman-Greek theologian and historian, probably born in Caesarea Maritima. Bishop of Caesarea (c.313), he played a conciliatory part at the Council of Nicaea (325) but is best known for his *History of the Christian Church*, as a result of which he became known as the 'Father of Church History'. From *Gibbon onwards, historians have accused him of exaggerating the extent of Christian persecution and martyrdom. His *Life of Constantine*, a panegyric, asserts that the emperor was actually baptised but provides little detail. His *Chronicle* is the basis of many dates accepted in Greek and Roman history.

Wallace Wadrill, D. S., *Eusebius of Caesarea*. 1960.

Eustachio, Bartolomeo (1520–1574). Italian anatomist. After being personal physician to the Duke of Urbino and others, he taught anatomy at the Collegia della Sapienza in Rome. He rediscovered the Eustachian canal (auditory tube) of the ear, and the Eustachian valve in the foetus. He also studied and described the thoracic duct, larynx, adrenal glands and kidneys.

Evans, Sir Arthur John (1851–1941). English archaeologist. Educated at Harrow and Oxford, he went to Ragusa (Dubrovnik) in 1871 as *Manchester Guardian* correspondent, but was expelled by the Austrians (1882) for implication in a South Slav rising. Meanwhile he had developed an interest in antiquities inherited from his father, Sir John Evans. He met *Schliemann in Athens in 1883. Keeper of the Ashmolean Museum in Oxford 1884–1908, he excavated an Iron Age site in Aylesford, Kent, in 1886. His study of Cretan inscriptions stimulated a lifelong passion and in 1894 he visited Crete (under Turkish rule until 1898), bought the site of Knossos in 1897, began excavating in 1900 and continued for most years until 1930. He applied the name 'Minoan' (after the legendary King Minos) to the advanced civilization on Crete which lasted from c.2000–c.1100 BCE, and was at its peak c.1550–1450 BCE. He linked archaeology, anthropology, linguistics and mythology on Crete and much of his pioneering work still seems persuasive. However, his restorations of buildings and frescoes at Knossos were overly robust and his conclusions about linkages between Crete and Mycenae have been challenged by later excavations. He discovered and named the Minoan scripts Linear A and Linear B (1901). His books include *Scripta Minoa* (1901) and *The Palace of Minos* (5 vols., 1921–35). Elected FRS (1901) and among the founders of the British Academy (1902), he was knighted (1911) and received the Copley Medal (1936).

Evans, J., *Time and Chance*. 1943; Brown, A., *Arthur Evans and the Palace of Minos*. 1983; Marinatos, N., *Sir Arthur Evans and Minoan Crete*. 2014.

Evans, Dame Edith Mary (1888–1976). English actor. Her first parts were the title roles in *Troilus and Cressida* (1924) and later *Romeo and Juliet* and *Cleopatra*. She was perhaps seen at her best in comedy, e.g. as Millamant in *Congreve's *The Way of the World* (1924) and as Mrs Malaprop in *Sheridan's *The Rivals* (1945–46). Modern plays in which she achieved striking successes were *The Dark is Light Enough* (1954) and *The Chalk Garden* (1956). She also made films, e.g. *The Queen of Spades* (1948) and as a formidable Lady Bracknell in *The Importance of Being Earnest*. She was awarded the DBE in 1946.

Evans, Gareth John (1944–). Australian lawyer and Labor politician, born in Melbourne. Educated in Melbourne and Oxford, a barrister (QC) and academic lawyer, he was a senator 1978–96, Attorney-General 1983–84, Minister for Resources and Energy 1984–87, for Transport and Communications 1987–88 and Foreign Minister 1988–96. An architect of the peace plan for Cambodia (1979), he negotiated the passage of native title legislation in the Senate (1993). Federal MHR 1996–99, he served as Chief Executive Officer of the International Crisis Group, Brussels, 2000–09, was a prolific author and Chancellor of The Australian National University 2010–20.

Evans, Mary Ann *see* **Eliot, George**

Evatt, Herbert Vere (1894–1965). Australian lawyer, writer and Labor politician, born in East Maitland. A gold medallist from Sydney University, he became a State MP 1925–30 and a KC. A justice of the High Court 1930–40, he resigned to re-enter politics and served under *Curtin and *Chifley as Minister for External Affairs and Attorney-General 1941–49. He represented Australia in the British War Cabinet 1942–43, became one of the architects of the United Nations and was President of the UN General Assembly 1948–49. He played a central role in the adoption in 1948 of the Convention on Genocide (influenced by Raphael *Lemkin) and the Universal Declaration of Human Rights. Leader of the Opposition 1951–60, he defeated *Menzies' referendum (1951) to ban the Communist Party. However, the ALP split in 1955, partly over attitudes to Communism, with the majority reluctantly supporting Evatt's approach and an overwhelmingly Catholic minority hiving off to form the Democratic Labor Party (DLP). Evatt's erratic leadership style, and concerns raised by his response to the defection of a Russian spy, Vladimir Petrov, also contributed. Evatt was Chief Justice of New South Wales 1960–62, but his memory and intellectual powers soon failed.

Crockett, P., *Evatt: A Life*. 1993; Murphy, J. W., *Evatt. A Life*. 2016; Haigh, G., *The Brilliant Boy: Doc Evatt and the Great Australian Dissent*. 2021.

Evelyn, John (1620–1706). English diarist and gardener, born at Wotton, Surrey. He grew up on the family estate and studied at the Middle Temple, London, and Balliol College, Oxford. At heart a Royalist, during the Civil War he lived in Europe 1643–52. On returning to England he lived for nearly 50 years at Sayes Court, Deptford, spending the last

years of his life at Wotton, which he inherited in 1696. He was a foundation Fellow of the Royal Society (1660) and its secretary 1671–80. A prolific writer, on architecture, painting, engraving, sculpture, diet, horticulture, gardening, and a passionate advocate of reafforestation in *Sylva, or a Discourse of Forest-Trees* (1664), he wrote an early treatise on air pollution. His diary, discovered at Wotton in 1817, covers the period from 1641 to 1706, but not continuously, is an important record of contemporary life, discreet and cautious, in striking contrast to *Pepys' diary.

Keynes, G. L., *Evelyn, A Study in Bibliophily and a Bibliography of His Writings*. 1968; Darley, G., *John Evelyn: Living for Ingenuity*. 2006.

Everest, Sir George (1790–1866). English surveyor. Surveyor-General of India 1830–43, the world's highest mountain (Chomolungma in Tibetan, Sagamatha in Nepali) was mapped and named for him (1852).

Everett, Edward (1794–1865). American orator, scholar and administrator. He was the first American to be awarded a PhD, at Göttingen in 1817. He became the first professor of Greek at Harvard 1819–25, a Congressman 1825–35, Governor of Massachusetts 1836–40, Minister to Great Britain 1841–45, President of Harvard University 1846–49, US Secretary of State under Fillmore 1852–53 and US Senator 1853–54. When *Lincoln delivered his famous address at the opening of the military cemetery at Gettysburg (19 Nov. 1863), Everett was principal speaker.

Eyck, Hubert van (c.1366–1426) and **Jan van Eyck** (c.1390–1441). Flemish painters, born in Maaseik. There is some documentation about Jan's life, and 18 works can be confidently attributed to him. He was probably influenced, or even taught, by the so-called 'Master of Flémalle', Robert *Campin of Tournai. Jan was painter to the Count of Holland in The Hague 1422–25, worked for *Philippe le Bon (Philip the Good), Duke of Burgundy in Lille 1425–30 and went on two diplomatic missions to Spain and Portugal, living in Bruges from 1431 where he married and was buried. Hubert's reputation depends on the inscription on the frame of the great altarpiece in Sint Baafskathedral (St Bavo), Ghent, stating that he began the work, and his brother Jan completed it by 1432. Hubert's very existence has been questioned, let alone his relationship to Jan. The Ghent altarpiece is a polyptych: opened up, there are 12 paintings, dominated by *The Adoration of the Mystic Lamb* and *God the Father*, and powerful studies of Adam, Eve, the Virgin and John the Baptist. When the wings are closed, 12 smaller paintings are seen. *Durer called it 'stupendous' and the mastery of oil painting was unsurpassed to that time. His works are characterised by uncompromising realism, rich and brilliant colouring (his development of a paint that had great lasting qualities was an ancillary accomplishment), acute sensitivity to surfaces and textures, and a miniaturist's passion for detail. *The Man in the Red Turban* (1433), in London, is thought to be a self portrait, and a portrait of his wife Margaret van Eyck is in Bruges. Other masterpieces include *The Marriage of Giovanni Arnolfini and Giovanna Cenami* (1434, London), *Cardinal Albergati* (1435, Vienna), *The Virgin of Canon van der Paele* (1436, Bruges, only identified as van Eyck's work in 1847) and *The Virgin and Chancellor Rollin* (1436, Louvre). Entirely unemotional, Jan's painting moves us by its absolute truth and attention to detail and its marvellous rendering of textural effects. Returning six panels of the Ghent altarpiece which had been sold to Germany was a specific condition (Art. 247) in the Treaty of Versailles. One panel was stolen in 1934.

Baldass, L., *Van Eyck*. 1952; Dhanens, E., *Van Eyck*. 1973; Harbison, C., *Jan van Eyck. The Play of Realism*. 1991; Graham, J., *Inventing Van Eyck. The Remaking of an Artist for the Modern Age*. 2007.

Eyre, Edward John (1815–1901). English explorer and administrator, born in Bedfordshire. He emigrated to Australia in 1833, became a grazier and made the first direct crossing from Sydney to Adelaide (1838). In 1840 his most famous expedition advanced northwards from Adelaide into the interior. When unable to proceed further he turned westward and reached the head of the Great Australian Bight. Having sent the expedition back, he set out for Albany, in the extreme southwest, with his overseer and three Aboriginal men. He arrived there with a single Aboriginal man in July 1841 after great hardships. Publication of his experiences brought him a Royal Geographical Society medal and considerable fame. He became a magistrate and 'protector of the aborigines', studying their language and customs. He was Lieutenant Governor of New Zealand 1846–53 and worked to improve relations between whites and Maoris. As Governor of Jamaica 1864–66, he suppressed a black revolt led by George Gordon at Morant Bay (October 1865), imposed martial law and more than 400 were executed. He was recalled and never given official employment again. Attempts were made to have him tried for murder (1867, 1869) and British intellectuals were bitterly divided between his opponents (*Mill, *Spencer, *Darwin *Huxley) and supporters (*Carlyle, *Dickens, *Ruskin, *Tennyson).

Dutton, G., *The Hero as Murderer*. 1967.

Eyre, Sir Richard Charles Hastings (1943–). English theatre, film and opera director, born in Devon. Educated in Cambridge, he was director of the National Theatre, London, 1987–97, and showed exceptional versatility, from *Shakespeare, *Ibsen, *Williams and *Stoppard to *Guys and Dolls*. He directed his first opera in 1994, and his triumphs include *Carmen* and *The Marriage of Figaro* at the New York Met.

Ezekiel (fl. c.590–610 BCE). Hebrew prophet. Little is known of his life except that he was among those deported by *Nebuchadnezzar to Babylon (597). The book of the Bible ascribed to him presents problems of authorship. The first 25 chapters, though apparently written in Babylon, predict the fall of Jerusalem, which actually took place in 586. This portion denounces neighbouring nations, while Chapters xxxiii–xxxix predict the reunification of Israel and Judah under a king of the House of *David. The last chapters paint an idealised picture of the restored state with its temple worship renewed and reformed. Much of this last section may well have been added later, though the earlier portions were probably written by Ezekiel himself, confusion being caused by an editor's attempt to weld together parts written at different times.

Ezra (5th century BCE). Hebrew priest and scribe. He led a group of returning exiles from the court of the Persian king *Artaxerxes I or II. He revived the Jews' conception of themselves as an exclusive and chosen people bound together by their unique religious observances. The Biblical book of Ezra is believed to be part of a larger whole containing also Chronicles and Nehemiah.

This text is taken from *Dictionary of World Biography, Tenth Edition*, by Barry Jones, published 2025 by ANU Press, The Australian National University, Canberra, Australia.

doi.org/10.22459/DWB.2025.04